


1590

Phantastes Chapter 23: The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia

Philip Sidney

Follow this and additional works at: https://digitalcommons.snc.edu/phantastes_influences

 Part of the [Digital Humanities Commons](#), [Fiction Commons](#), [History Commons](#), [Literature in English, British Isles Commons](#), [Other Arts and Humanities Commons](#), and the [Other Classics Commons](#)

Recommended Citation

Sidney, Philip, "Phantastes Chapter 23: The Countess of Pembroke's Arcadia" (1590). *German Romantic and Other Influences*. 28. https://digitalcommons.snc.edu/phantastes_influences/28

This Book is brought to you for free and open access by the Teaching Supplement to Phantastes: The Annotated Edition at Digital Commons @ St. Norbert College. It has been accepted for inclusion in German Romantic and Other Influences by an authorized administrator of Digital Commons @ St. Norbert College. For more information, please contact sarah.titus@snc.edu.

THE
COVNTESSE
OF PEMBROKES
ARCADIA,

WRITTEN BY SIR PHILIPPE
SIDNEI.



LONDON
Printed for William Ponsonbie.
Anno Domini, 1590.

TO MY DEARE LADIE
AND SISTER, THE COVN-
TESSE OF PEMBROKE.

Ere now haue you (most deare, and most worthy to be most deare Lady) this idle worke of mine: which I fear (like the Spiders webbe) will be thought fitter to be swept away, then worn to any other purpose. For my part, in very trueth (as the cruell fathers among the Greekes, were woont to doo to the babes they would not foster) I could well find in my harte, to cast out in some desert of forgetfulnes this child, which I am loath to father.

But you desired me to doo it, and your desire, to my hart is an absolute commandement. now, it is done onelie for you, onely to you: if you keepe it to your selfe, or to such friendes, who will weigh errors in the ballaunce of good will, I hope, for the fathers sake, it will be pardoned, perchaunce made much of, though in it selfe it haue deformities. For indeede, for seuerer eyes it is not, being but a trifle, and that triflinnglie handled. Your deare selfe can best witnes the maner, being done in loose sheetes of paper, most of it in your presence, the rest, by sheetes, sent vnto you, as fast as they were done. In summe, a young head, not so well stayed as I would it were, (and shall be when God will) hauing many more fancies begotten in it, if it had not ben in some way deliuered, would haue growen a monster, & more sorie might I be that they came in, then that they got out. But his chiefe safetie, shalbe the not walking abroad; & his chiefe protection, the bearing the liuery of your name; which (if much much good will not deceaue me) is worthy to be a sa[n]ctuary for a greater offender. This say I, because I knowe the vertue so; and this say I, because it may be euer so; or to say better, because it will be euer so. Read it then at your idle tymes, and the follies your good iudgement wiwl finde in it, blame not, but laugh at. And so, looking for no better stuffe, then, as in an Haberdashers shoppe, glasses, or feathers, you will continue to loue the writer, who doth exceedinglie loue you; and most most hartelie praies you may long liue, to be a pricipall ornament to the family of the Sidneis.

Your louing Brother
Philip Sidnei.

He diuision and summing of the Chapters was not of Sir Philip Sidneis dooing, but aduentured by the ouer-seer of the print, for the more ease of the Readers. He therefore submits himselfe to their iudgement, and if his labour answeere not the worthines of the booke, desireth pardon for it. As also if any defect be found in the Eclogues, which although they were of Sir Phillip Sidneis writing, yet were they not perused by him, but left till the worke had bene finished, that then choise should haue bene made, which should haue bene taken, and in what manner brought in. At this time they haue bene chosen and disposed as the ouer-seer thought best.

THE C O U N T E S S E O F
P E M B R O K E S A R C A D I A W R I T -
T E N B Y S I R P H I L I P
S I D N E I.

THE FIRST BOOKE.

CHAP. I.

1 *The shepherdish complaints of the absented louers Strephon and Claius.* 2 *The second shipwrack of Pyrocles and Musidorus. Their strange sauing,* 3 *enteruiew, and* 4 *parting.*

T was in the time that the earth begins to put on her new apparel against

the approach of her loue, and that the Sun
ru[n]ning a most eue[n] course becums an
indifferent arbiter betweene the night and the day; when
the hopelesse shepheard *Strephon* was come to the
sandes, which lie against the Island of *Cithera*; where
viewing the place with a heauy kinde of delight, and
sometimes casting his eyes to the Ileward, he called his
friendly riuall, the pastor *Claius* vnto him, and setting

1
first downe in his darkened countenance a dolefull copie of what he would speake: O my *Claius*, said he, hether we are now come to pay the rent, for which we are so called vnto by ouer-busie Remembrance, restlesse Remembrance, which claymes not onely this dutie of vs, but for it will haue vs forget our selues. I pray you when wee were amid our flocke, and that of other shepehardes some were running after their sheep strayed beyond their bounds, some delighting their eyes with seeing them nibble vpon the short and sweete grasse, some medicining their sick ewes, some setting a bell for an ensigne of a sheepish squadron, some with more leasure inuenting new games of exercising their bodies & sporting their wits: did Remembrance grout vs any holiday, eyther for pastime or deuotion, nay either for necessary foode or naturall rest? but that still it forced our thoughts to worke vpo[n] this place, where we last (alas that the word last should so long last) did gaze our eyes vpon her euer flourishing beautie: did it not still crie within vs? Ah you base minded wretches, are your thoughts so deeply bemired in the trade of ordinary worldlings, as for respect of gaine some paultry wooll may yeeld you, to let so much time passe without knowing perfectly her estate, especially in so troublesome a season? to leaue that shore vnsaluted, from whence you may see to the Island where she dwelleth? to leaue those steps vnkissed wherein *Vrania* printed the farewell of all beautie? Wel then, Remembraunce commaunded, we obeyed, and here we finde, that as our remembraunce came euer cloathed vnto vs in the forme of this place, so this place giues newe heate to the feauer of our languishing remembrance. Yonder my *Claius*, *Vrania* lighted, the verie horse (me thought) bewayled to be so disburdened: and as

for thee, poore *Claius*, when thou wentst to help her downe, I saw reuerence and desire so deuide thee, that thou didst at one instant both blushe and quake, and in stead of bearing her, weart ready to fall downe thy selfe. There shee sate, vouchsafing my cloake (then most gorgeous) vnder her: at yonder rising of the ground she turned her selfe, looking backe toward her woonted abode, and because of her parting bearing much sorrow in hir eyes, the lightsomnes whereof had yet so naturall a cherefulness, as it made euen sorrow seeme to smile; at that turning she spake vnto vs all, opening the cherrie of hir lips, & Lord how greedily mine eares did feed vpon the sweete words she vttered? And here she laide her hand ouer thine eyes, when shee saw the teares springing in them, as if she would conceale them from other, and yet her selfe feele some of thy sorrow: But woe is me, yonder, yonder, did she put her foote into the boate, at that instant as it were deuiding her heauenly beautie, betweene the Earth and the Sea. But when she was imbarked, did you not marke how the windes whistled, & the seas daunst for ioy, how the sailes did swel with pride, and all because they had *Vrania*? O *Vrania*, blessed be thou *Vrania*, the sweetest fairenesse and fairest sweetenesse: with that worde his voice brake so with sobbing, that he could say no further; and *Claius* thus answered. Alas my *Strephon* (said he) what needes this skore to reckon vp onely our losses? What doubt is there, but that the light of this place doth call our thoughtes to appeare at the court of affection, held by that racking steward, Remembraunce? Aswell may sheepe forget to feare when they spie woolues, as wee can misse such fancies, when wee see any place made happie by her treading. Who can choose that saw her but thinke where she stayed, where she walkt, where she turned, where she spoke? But what is all this? truly no more, but as this place serued vs to thinke of those thinges, so those thinges serue as places to call to memorie more excellent matters. No, no, let vs thinke with consideration, and consider with acknowledging, and acknowledge with admiration, and admire with loue, and loue with ioy in the midst of all woes: let vs in such sorte thinke, I say, that our poore eyes were so inriched as to behold, and our low hearts so exalted as to loue, a maide, who is such, that as the greatest thing the world can shewe, is her beautie, so the least thing that may be prayed in her, is her beautie. Certainly as her eye-lids are more pleasant to behold, then two white kiddes climing vp a faire tree, and browsing on his tendrest braunches, and yet are nothing, compared to the day-shining starres contayned in them; and as her breath is more sweete then a gentle South-west wind, which comes creeping ouer flowrie fieldes and shaddowed waters in the extreeme heate of summer, and yet is nothing, compared to the hony flowing speach that breath doth carrie: no more all that our eyes can see of her (though when they haue seene her, what else they shall euer see is but drie stuble after clouers grasse) is to bee matched with the flocke of vnspeakable vertues laid vp delightfully in that best builded folde. But in deede as wee can better consider the sunnes beautie, by marking how he guides those waters, and mountaines them by looking vpon his owne face, too glorious for our weake eyes: so it may be our conceits (not able to beare her sun-stayning excellencie) will better

way it by her workes vpon some meaner subiect employed. And alas, who can better witness that then we, whose experience is grounded vpon feeling? hath not the onely loue of her made vs (being silly ignorant shepherds) raise vp our thoughts about the ordinary leuell of the worlde, so as great clearkes do not disdain our conference? hath not the desire to seeme worthie in her eyes made vs when others were sleeping, to sit vewing the course of heauens? when others were running at base, to runne ouer learned writings? when other marke their sheepe, we to marke our selues? hath not shee throwne reason vpon our desires, and, as it were giuen eyes vnto *Cupid*? hath in any, but in her, loue-fellowship maintained friendship betweene riuals, and beautie taught the beholders chastitie? He was going on with his praises, but *Strephon* bad him stay, & looke: & so they both perceaued a thing which floted drawing nearer and nearer to the banke; but rather by the fauourable working of the Sea, then by any selfe industrie. They doubted a while what it should be; till it was cast vp euen hard before the[m]: at which time they fully saw that it was a man: Wherupon running for pitie sake vnto him, they found his hands (as it should appeare, constanter frends to his life then his memorie) fast griping vpon the edge of a square small coffer, which lay all vnder his breast: els in him selfe no shew of life, so as the boord seemed to bee but a beere to cary him a land to his Sepulchre. So drew they vp a young man of so goodly shape and well pleasing fauour, that one would think death had in him a louely countenance; and, that though he were naked, nakednes was to him an apparell. That sight increased their compassion, and their compassion called vp their care; so that lifting his feete about his head, making a great deale of salt water to come out of his mouth, they layd him vpon some of their garments, and fell to rub and chafe him, till they brought him to recouer both breath the seruant, & warmth the companion of liuing. At length, opening his eyes, he gaue a great groane, (a dolefull note but a pleasant dittie) for by that, they found not onely life, but strength of life in him. They therefore continued on their charitable office, vntil (his spirits being well returned,) hee (without so much as thanking them for their paines) gate vp, and looking round about to the vttermost lymittes of his sight, and crying vpon the name of *Pyrocles*, nor seeing nor hearing cause of comfort: what (said he) and shall *Musidorus* liue after *Pyrocles*? therewithall he offered willfully to cast destruction & himselfe againe into the sea: a strange sight to the shepherds, to whom it seemed, that before being in apparance dead had yet saued his life, and now comming to his life, shoulde be a cause to procure his death; but they ranne vnto him, and pulling him backe, (then too feeble for them) by force stickled that vnnatural fray. I pray you (said he) honest men, what such right haue you in me, as not to suffer me to doe with my self what I list? and what pollicie haue you to bestow a benefite where it is counted an iniury? They hearing him speake in Greeke (which was their naturall language) became the more tender hearted towards him; and considering by his calling and looking, that the losse of some deare friend was great cause of his sorow, told hime they were poore men that were bound by course of humanitie to preuent so great a mischiefe, and that they

wisht him, if opinion of some bodies perishing bred such desperate anguish in him, that he should be comforted by his owne prooffe, who had lately escaped as aparant danger as any might be. No, no (said hee) it is not for me to attend so high a blissefulnessse: but since you take care of mee, I pray you finde meanes that some Barke may be prouided, that will goe out of the hauen, that if it be possible we may finde the body farre farre too precious a foode for fishes: and for the hire (said he) I haue within this casket, sufficient to content them. *Claius* presently went to a Fisherman, & hauing agreed with him, and prouided some apparell for the naked stranger, he imbarked, and the Shepheards with him: and were no sooner gone beyond the mouth of the hauen, but that some way into the sea they might discerne (as it were) a stayne of the waters colour, and by times some sparkes and smoke mounting thereout. But the young man no sooner saw it, but that beating his brest, he cried, that there was the beginning of his ruine, intreating them to bend their course as neere vnto it as they could: telling, how that smoake was but a small relique of a great fire, which had driue[n] both him & his friend rather to committe themselues to the cold mercie of the sea, then to abide the hote crueltie of the fire: and that therefore, though they both had abandoned the ship, that he was (if any where) in that course to be met withall. They steared therefore as neere thetherward as they could: but when they came so neere as their eies were ful masters of the obiect, they saw a sight full of piteous strangenes: a ship, or rather the carkas of the shippe, or rather some few bones of the carkas, hulling there, part broken, part burned, part drowned: death hauing vsed more then one dart to that destruction. About it floted great store of very rich thinges, and many chestes which might promise no lesse. And amidst the precious things were a number of dead bodies, which likewise did not onely testifie both eleme[n]ts violence, but that the chiefe violence was growen of humane inhumanitie: for their bodies were ful of grisly wounds, & their bloud had (as it were) filled the wrinckles of the seas visage: which it seemed the sea coude not washe away, that it might witnes it is not alwaies his fault, when we condemne his crueltie: in summe, a defeate, where the conquered kept both field and spoile: a shipwrack without storme or ill footing: and a wast of fire in the midst of water.

But a litle way off they saw the mast, whose proude height now lay along; like a widdow hauing lost her make of whom she held her honor: but vpon the mast they sawa yong man (at least if he were a man) bearing shew of about 18. yeares of age, who sate (as on horsback) hauing nothing vpon him but his shirt, which being wrought with blew silk & gold; had a kind of resemblance to the sea: on which the sun (then neare his Westerne home) did shoote some of his beames. His haire (which the young men of Greece vsed to weare very long) was stirred vp & down with the wind, which seemed to haue a sport to play with it, as the sea had to kisse his feet; himselfe full of admirable beautie, set foorth by the strangenes both of his seate & gesture: for, holding his head vp full of vnmoued maiestie, he held a sworde aloft with his faire arme, which often he waued about his crowne as though he would threaten

the world in that extremitie. But the fishermen, when they came so neere him, that it was time to throwe out a rope, by which hold they might draw him, their simplicity bred such amasement, & their amasement such a superstitio[n], that (assuredly thinking it was some God begotten betweene *Neptune* and *Venus*, that had made all this terrible slaughter) as they went vnder sayle by him, held vp their hands, and made their prayers. Which when *Musidorus* sawe, though he were almost as much rauished with ioy, as they with astonishment, he lept to the Mariner, and tooke the rope out of his hande and (saying, doest thou liue, and arte well? who answered, thou canst tell best, since most of my well beyng standes in thee,) throwe it out, but alreadie the shippe was past beyond *Pyrocles*: and therefore *Musidorus* could doo no more but perswade the Mariners to cast about againe, assuring them that hee was but a man, although of most diuine excellencies, and promising great rewardes for their paine.

And now they were alreadie come vpon the staies, when one of the saylers descried a Galley which came with sayles and oares directlie in the chase of them; and streight perceuaed it was a well knowne Pirate, who hunted not onely for goodes but for bodies of menne, which hee imployed eyther to bee his Galley slaues, or to sell at the best market. Which when the Maister vnderstood, he commaunded forthwith to set on all the canuasse they could, and flie homeward, leauing in that sort poore *Pyrocles* so neere to be rekewed. But what did not *Musidorus* say? what did he not offer to perswade them to venture the fight? But feare standing at the gates of their eares, put back all perswasions: for that hee had nothing to accompanie *Pyrocles*, but his eyes; nor to succour him, but his wishes. Therefore praying for him, and casting a long look that way he saw the Galley leaue the pursuite of them, & turne to take vp the spoiles of the other wrack: and lastly he might well see them lift vp the yong man; and alas (said he to himselfe) deere *Pyrocles* shall that bodie of thine be enchayned? shall those victorious handes of thine be commaunded to base offices? shall vertue become a slaue to those that be slaues to viciousnes? Alas, better had it bene had it bene thou hadst ended nobly thy noble daies: what death is so euill as vnworthy seruitude? But that opinion soone ceased when he saw the gallie setting vpon an other ship, which held long and strong fight with her: for then he began a fresh to feare the life of his friende, and to wish well to the Pirates whome before he hated, least in their ruyne hee might perish. But the fishermen made such speed into the hauen, that they absented his eyes from beholding the issue: where being entred, he could procure neither them nor any other as then to put themselues into the sea: so that beyng as full of sorrow for being vnable to doe any thing, as voide of counsell how to doe any thing besides, that sicknesse grew something vpon him, the honest shepherds *Strephon* and *Claius* (who being themselues true friendes, did the more perfectly iudge the iustnesse of his sorrowe) aduise him, that he should mitigate somewhat of his woe, since he had gotten an amendment in fortune, being come from assured persuasion of his death, to haue no cause to dispaire of his life. as one that had

lamented the death of his sheepe, should after know they were but strayed, would receiue pleasure though readily hee knew not where to finde them.

CHAP. 2.

1 *The pastors comfortes to the wracked Musidorus. 2 His passage into Arcadia. The descriptions of 3 Laconia, 4 Arcadia, Kalanders 5 person, 6 house, and 7 entertainment to Musidorus, now called Palladius. His 8 sicknes, recouery, 9 and perfections.*

Ow sir (saide they) thus for our selues it is. Wee are in profession but shepherds,

and in this countrie of Laconia little better then strangers, and therefore neither in skill, nor habilitie of power greatly to stead you. 1

But what we can present vnto you is this: Arcadia, of which countrie wee are, is but a little way hence, and euen vpon the next confines.

There dwelleth a Gentleman, by name *Kalander*, who vouchsafeth much fauour vnto vs: A man who

for his hospitalitie is so much haunted, that no newes sturre, but comes to his eares, for his vpright dealing so beloued of his neighbours, that he hath many euer readie to doe him their vttermost seruice, and by the great good will our Prince beares him, may soone obtaine the vse of his name and credit, which hath a principall swaie, not only in his owne Arcadia but in al these cou[n]tries of *Peloponnesus*: and (which is worth all) all these things giue him not so much power, as his nature giues him will to benefit: so that it seemes no Musicke is so sweet to his eare as deserued thankes. To him we will bring you, & there you may recouer againe your helth, without which you can[n]ot be able to make any diligent search for your friend: and therefore but in that respect, you must labour for it. Besides, we are sure the co[m]fort of curtesie, & ease of wise counsell shall not be wanting. 5

Musidorus (who

besides he was meere vnaacquainted in the cou[n]trie had his wits astonished with sorow) gaue easie consent to that, fro[m] which he saw no reason to disagree: & therefore (defraying the Mariners with a ring bestowed vpon the[m]) they tooke their iourney together through *Laconia*; *Claius* & *Strephon* by course carying his chest for him, *Musidorus* only bearing in his cou[n]tenance euident marks of a sorrowful mind supported with a weak bodie, which they perceiuing, & knowing that the violence of sorow is not at the first to be striue[n] withal: (being like a mighty 2

beast, sooner tamed with following, than overthrowed by withstanding) they gave way unto it for that day & the next; neuer troubling him, either with asking questions, or finding fault with his melancholie, but rather fitting to his dolorous discourses of their own & other folks misfortunes. Which speeches, though they had not a lively entrance to his senses shut vp in sorrow, yet like one half asleep, he took hold of much of the matters spoken unto him, so as a man may say, ere sorrow was aware, they made his thoughts beare away something else beside his own sorrow, which wrought so in him, that at length he grew content to mark their speeches, then to marvel at such wit in shepherdes, after to like their company, & lastly to vouchsafe conference: so that the 3. day after, in the time that the morning did strow roses & violets in the heavenly floore against the coming of the Sun, the nightingales (striving one with the other which could in most dainty variety recount their wrong-caused sorrow) made them put of their sleepe, & rising from vnder a tree (which that night had bin their pavilion) they went on their iourney, which by & by welcomed *Musidorus* eyes (wearied with the wasted soyle of Laconia) with delightful prospects. There were hills which garnished

their proud heights with stately trees: humble valleys, whose base estate seemed comforted with refreshing of siluer riuers: meadows, enameld with all sorts of eye-pleasing flowers: thickets, which being lined with most pleasant shade, were witnessed so to by the cheerful depositio[n] of many well-tuned birds: each pasture stored with sheep feeding with sober security, while the pretty lambs with bleating oratory craved the dame comfort: here a shepherds boy piping, as though he should neuer be old: there a yong shepherdesse knitting, and withall singing, & it seemed that her voice comforted her hands to work, & her hands kept time to her voices musick. As for the houses of the country (for many houses came vnder their eye) they were all scattered, no two being one by th'other, & yet not so far off as that it barred mutual succour: a shew, as it were, of an accompanable solitarines, & of a ciuill wildnes. I pray you (said *Musidorus*, then first vnsealing his long silent lips) what countries be these we passe through, which are so diuers in shew, the one waiting no store, th'other hauing no store but of want.

The country (answered

Claius) where you were cast a shore, & now are past through, is Laconia, not so poore by the barrennes of the soyle (though in it selfe not passing fertill) as by a ciuill warre, which being these two yeares within the bowels of that estate, betweene the gentlemen & the peasants, (by them named *Helots*) hath in this sorte as it were disfigured the face of nature, and made it so vnhospitall as now you haue found it: the townes neither of the one side nor the other, willingly opening their gates to strangers, nor strangers willingly entring for feare of being mistaken.

But this countrie (where

now you set your foote) is Arcadia: and euen harde by is the house
of *Kalander* whether we lead you: this cuntry being thus decked with peace, and
(the childe of peace) good husbandrie. These houses you see so scattered are of men,
as we two are, that liue vpon the commoditie of their sheepe: and therefore in the
diuision of the Arcadian estate are termed shepherds; a happie people, wanting litle,
because they desire not much. What cause then, said *Musidorus*, made you venter to
leau this sweete life, and put your selfe in yonder vnpleasant and dangerous realme?
Garded with pouertie (answered *Strephon*) & guided with loue: But now (said *Claius*)
since it hath pleased you to aske any thing of vs whose basenes is such as the very
knwledge is darknes: geue vs leau to know somthing of you, & of the young
man you so much lament, that at least we may be the better instructed to
enforme *Kalender*, and he the better know how to proportion his
entertainment. *Musidorus* (according to the agreement betweene *Pyrocles* and him to
alter thier names) answered, that he called himself *Palladius*, and his
friend *Daiphantus*; but till I haue him againe (said he) I am in deed nothing: and
therefore my storie is of nothing, his entertainment (since so good a man he is)
cannot be so lowe as I account my estate: and in summe, the summe of all, his curtesie
may be to helpe me by some meanes to seeke my frend.

They perceiued he was not willing to open himselfe further, and therefore without
further questioning

brought him to the house: about which they might see (with fitte consideration
both of the ayre, the prospect, and the nature of the ground) all such necessarie
additions, to a great house, as might well shewe, *Kalender* knew that provision is the
foundation of hospitalitie, and thrift the fewell of magnificence. The house it selfe was
built of faire and strong stone, not affecting so much any extraordinarie kinde of
finenes, as an honorable representing of a firme statelines. The lightes, doores and
staires, rather directed to the vse of the guest, then to the eye of the Artificer: and yet
as the one cheefely heeded, so the other not neglected; each place handsome without
curiositie, and homely without lothsomnes: not so daintie as not to be trode on, nor yet
slubberd vp with good fellowshippe: all more lasting then beautifull, but that the
consideration of the exceeding lastingnesse made the eye beleue it was exceeding
beautifull. The seruants not so many in number, as cleanlie in apparell, and
seruiceable in behauour, testifying euen in their countanaunces, that their maister
tooke aswell care to be serued, as of the[m] that did serue. One of them was forth-with
readie to welcome the shepherds, as men, who though they were were poore, their
master greatly faouored: and vnderstanding by them, that the young man with whrm
was to be much accounted of, for that they had seene tokens of more then common
greatnes, how so euer now eclipsed with fortune: He ranne to his master, who came
presentlie foorth, and pleasantly welcomming the shepherdes, but especially
applying him to *Musidorus*, *Strephon* priuately told him allwhat he knew of him, and

particularly that hee found this stranger was loath to be knowen.

No said *Kalander*

(speaking aloud) I am no herald to enquire of mens pedegrees, it sufficeth me if I know their vertues: which (if this young mands face be not a false witnes) doe better apparell his minde, then you haue done his body. While hee was speaking, there came a boy in shew like a Merchants prentice, who taking Strephon by the sleeue, deliuered him a letter written ioyntly both to him and Claius from Vrania: which they no sooner had read, but that with short leaue-taking of *Kalander* (who quickly ghest and smiled at the matter) and once againe (though hastely) recommending the yong man vnto him, they went away, leauing *Musidorus* euen lothe to part with them, for the good conuersation he had of them, & obligation he accounted himselfe tied in vnto them: and therefore, they deliuering his chest vnto him, he opened it, and would haue presented the[m] with two very rich iewels, but they absolutelie refused them, telling him they were more then enough rewarded in the knowing of him, and without herkening vnto a replie (like men whose harts disdained all desires but one) gate speedely away, as if the letter had brought wings to make them flie. But by that sight *Kalander* soone iudged that his guest was of no meane calling, and therefore the more respectfullie entertaining him, *Musidorus* found his sicknes (which the fight, the sea, and late trauell had layd vpon him) grow greatly: so that fearing some suddaine accident, he deliuered the chest to *Kalander*; which was full of most pretious stones, gorgeously & cunningly set in duerse maners, desiring him he would bestow so much of it as was needfull, to finde out and redeeme a young man, naming himselfe *Daiphantus*, as then in the handes of Laconia pirates.

But *Kalander* seeing him faint more and more, with carefull speede conueyed him to the

most com[m]odious lodging in his house: where being possest with an extreeme burning feuer, he co[n]tinued some while with no great hope of life: but youth at length got the victorie of sicknesse, so that in six weekes the excellencie of his returned beautie was a credible embassadour of his health; to the great ioy of *Kalander*: who, as in this time he had by certaine friendes of his that dwelt neare the Sea in Messenia, set foorth a shippe and a galley to seeke and succour *Daiphantus*: so at home did hee omit nothing which he thought might eyther profite or gratifie *Palladius*.

For hauing found in

him (besides his bodily giftes beyond the degree of Admiration) by dayly discourses which he delighted him selfe to haue with him, a mind of most excellent composition (a pearcing witte quite voide of ostentation, high erected thoughts seated in a harte of courtesie, an eloquence as sweete in the vttering, as slowe to come to the vttering, a behauiour so noble, as gaue a maiestie to aduersitie:

and all in a man whose age could not be about one & twenty yeares,) the good old man was euen enamoured with a fatherly loue towards him; or rather became his seruaunt by the bondes such vertue laid vpon him; once hee acknowledged him selfe so to be, by the badge of diligent attendance.

CHAP. 3.

The 1 pictures of Kalanders dainty garden-house. His narration of the 2 Arcadian estate, 3 the King, 4 the Queene, 5 their two daughters, and 6 their guardians, with their qualities, which is the ground of all this storie.

Vt *Palladius* hauing gotten his health, and onely staying there to be in place, where he might heare answer of the shippes set forth, *Kalander* one afternoone led him abroad to a wel arayed ground he had behind his house, which hee thought to shewe him before his going, as the place him selfe more then in any other delighted: the backside of the house was neyther field, garden, nor orchard; or rather it was both fielde, garden, and orcharde: for as soone as the descending of the stayres had deliuered them downe, they came into a place cunninglie set with trees of the moste tast-pleasing fruites: but scarcely they had taken that into their consideration, but that they were suddainely stept into a delicate greene, of each side of the greene a thicket bend, behinde the thickets againe new beddes of flowers, which being vnder the trees, the trees were to them a Paulion, and they to the trees a mosaical floore: so that it seemed that arte therein would needes be delightfull by counterfaiting his enimie error, and making order in confusion.

In the midst of all the place, was a faire ponde, whose shaking christall was a perfect mirrour to all the other beauties, so that it bare shewe of two gardens; one in deede, the other in shaddowes: and in one of the thickets was a fine fountaine made thus. A naked *Venus* of white marble, wherein the grauer had vsed such cunning, that the naturall blew veines of the marble were framed in fitte places, to set forth the beautifull veines of her bodie. At her brest she had her babe *Aeneas*, who seemed (hauing begun to sucke) to leaue that, to looke vpon her fayre eyes, which smiled at the babes follie, the meane while the breast running. Hard by was a house of pleasure builte for a Sommer retiring place, where *Kalander* leading him, he found a square roome full of delightfull pictures, made by the most excellent workeman of Greece. There was *Diana* when *Actæon* sawe her bathing, in whose cheekes the painter had set such a colour, as was mixt betweene shame & disdaine; & one of her foolish Nymphes, who weeping, and withal lowring, one might see the workman meant to set forth teares of anger. In another table was *Atalanta*; the posture

of whose lims was so liuelie expressed, that if the eyes were the only iudges, as they be the onely seers, one would haue sworne the very picture had runne. Besides many mo, as of *Helena, Omphale, Iole*: but in none of them all beautie seemed to speake so much as in a large table, which contained a comely old man, with a lady of midle age, but of excelle[n]t beautie; & more excelle[n]t would haue bene deemed, but that stood betweene the[m] a yong maid, whose wonderfulesse tooke away all beautie from her, but that, which it might seeme she gaue her backe againe by her very shadow. And such differe[n]ce, being knowne that it did in deed counterfeit a person liuing, was there betweene her and al the other, though Goddesses, that it seemd the skill of the painter bestowed on the other new beautie, but that the beautie of her bestowed new skill of the painter. Though he thought inquistiuenes an vncomely guest, he could not choose but aske who she was, that bearing shew of one being in deed, could with natural gifts go beyond the reach of inuentio[n]. *Kalander* answered, that it was made by *Philoclea*, the yonger daughter of his prince, who also with his wife were contened in that Table: the painter meaning to represent the present condition of the young Ladie, who stood watched by an ouer-curious eye of her parents: & that he would also haue drawne her eldest sister, esteemed her match for beautie, in her shepherdish attire; but that the rude clown her gardia[n] would not suffer it: nether durst he aske leaue of the Prince for feare of suspitio[n] *Palladius* perceaued that the matter was wrapt vp in some secrecie, and therefore would for modestie demaund no further: but yet his countenance could not but with dumme Eloquence desire it: Which *Kalander* perceauing, well said he, my deere guest, I know your minde, and I will satisfie it: neyther will I doo it like a niggardly answerer, going no further then the boundes of the question, but I will discouer vnto you, aswell that wherein my knowledge is common with others, as that which by extraordinarie means is deliuered vnto me: knowing so much in you, though not long acquainted, that I shall find your eares faithfull treasurers. So then sitting downe in two chaires, and sometimes casting his eye to the picture, he thus spake.

This countrie

Arcadia among all the prouinces of Greece, hath euer beene had in singular reputation: partly for the sweetnesse of the ayre, and other natural benefites, but principally for the well tempered minds of the people, who (finding that the shining title of glorie so much affected by other nations, doth in deed helpe little to the happinesse of life) are the onely people, which as by their Iustice and prudence geue neither cause nor hope to their neyghbours to annoy them, so are they not sturred with false praise to trouble others quiet, thinking it a small reward for the wasting of their owne liues in rauening, that their posteritie should long liue after saie, they had done so. Euen the Muses seeme to approue their good determinatio[n], by chosing this countrie for their chiefe repairing place, & by bestowing their perfections so largely here, that the very shepherds haue their fancies lifted to so high conceits, as the

learned of other nations are content both to borrow their names, and imitate their cunning.

Here dwelleth, and raigneth this Prince (whose picture you see) by name *Basilus*,

a Prince of sufficient skill to gouerne so quiet a countrie, where the good minds of the former princes had set down good lawes, and the well bringing vp of the people doth serue as a most sure bond to hold the[m]. But to be plaine with you, he excels in nothing so much, as in the zealous loue of his people, wherein he doth not only passe al his owne fore-goers, but as I thinke al the princes liuing. Wherof the cause is, that though he exceed not in the vertues which get admiration; as depth of wisdome, height of courage and largenesse of magnificence, yet is hee notable in those whiche stirre affection, as trueth of worde, meekenesse, courtesie, mercifulnesse, and liberalitie.

He being already

well stricken in yeares, married a young princes, named *Gynecia*, daughter to the king of Cyprus, of notable beautie, as by her picture you see: a woman of great wit, and in truth of more princely vertues, then her husband: of most vnspotted chastitie, but of so working a minde, and so vehement spirits, as a man may say, it was happie shee tooke a good course: for otherwise it would haue beene terrible.

Of these two are brought

to the world two daughters, so beyond measure excellent in all the gifts allotted to reasonable ceatures, that wee may thinke they were borne to shewe, that Nature is no stepmother to that sex, how much so euer some men (sharpe witted onely in euill speaking) haue sought to disgrace them. The elder is named *Pamela*; by many men not deemed inferiour to her sister: for my part, when I marked them both, me thought there was (if at least such perfections may receyue the worde of more) more sweetnesse in *Philoclea*, but more maiestie in *Pamela*: mee thought loue plaide in *Philocleas* eyes, and threatned in *Pamelas*; me thought *Philocleas* beautie onely perswaded, but so perswaded as all harts must yeelde: *Pamelas* beautie vsed violence, and such violence as no hart could resist: and it seemes that such proportion is betweene their mindes; *Philoclea* so bashfull as though her excellencies had stolne into her before shee was aware: so humble, that she will put all pride out of countenance: in summe, such proceeding as will stirre hope, but teach good man[n]ers. *Pamela* of high thoughts, who auoides not pride with not knowing her excellencies, but by making that one of her excellencies to be voide of pride; her mothers wisdome, greatnesse, nobilitie, but (if I can ghesse aright) knit with a more constant temper. Now then, our *Basilus* being so publickly happie as to be a Prince, and so happie in that happinesse as to be a beloued Prince, and so in his priuate blessed as to haue so excellent a wife, and so ouer-excellent children, hath of late taken a course which yet makes him more spoken of then all these blessings. For,

hauing made a iourney to *Delphos*, and safely returned, within shor[t] space hee brake vp his court, and retired himself, his wife, and children into a certaine Forrest hereby, which hee calleth his desart, where in (besides a house appointed for stables and lodgings for certaine persons of meane calling, who do all household seruices,) hee hath builded two fine lodges. In the one of them him self remaines with his younger daughter *Philoclea*, which was the cause they three were matched together in this picture, without hauing any other creature liuing in that lodge with him.

Which though it be

straunge, yet not so straunge, as the course he hath taken with the
princesse *Pamela*, whom hee hath placed in the other lodge: but how thinke you
accompanied? truly with none other, but one *Dametas*, the most arrant doltish clowne, 6
that I thinke euer was without the priuiledge of a bable, with his wife *Miso*, and
daughter *Mopsa*, in whome no witt can deuise anie thing wherein they maie pleasure
her, but to exercise her patience, and to serue for a foile of her perfections. This
loutish clowne is such, that you neuer saw so ill fauourd a visar; his behaiour such,
that he is beyond the degree of ridiculous; and for his apparel, euen as I would wish
him; *Miso* his wife, so handsome a beldame, that onely her face and her splayfoote
haue made her accused for a witch; onely one good point she hath, that she obserues
decoru[m], hauing a froward mind in a wretched body. Betweene these two
personages (who neuer agreed in any humor, but in disagreeing) is issued forth
mistresse *Mopsa*, a fitte woman to participate of both their perfections: but because a
pleasant fellow of my acquaintance set forth her praises in verse, I will only repeate
them, and spare mine owne tongue, since she goes for a woman. These verses are
these, which I haue so often caused to be song, that I haue them without booke.

*What length of verse can serue braue Mopsas good to show?
Whose vertues strange, & beuties such, as no ma[n] may know
Thus shrewdly burdned the[n], how ca[n] my muse escape?
The gods must help, and pretious things must serue to shew her shape.
Like great god Saturn faire, and like faire Venus chaste:
As smoothe as Pan, as Iuno milde, like goddess Iris faste.
With Cupid she fore-sees, and goes god Vulcans pace:
And for a tast of all these giftes, she steales god Momus grace.
Her forhead iacinth like, her cheekes of opall hue,
Her twinkling eies bedect with pearle, her lips as Saphir blew:
Her haire like Crapal-stone, her mouth O heauenly wyde;
Her skin like burnisht gold, her hands like siluer vre vntryde.
As for her parts vnknowne, which hidden sure are best:
Happie be they which well beleeeue, & neuer seeke the rest.*

Now truely hauing made these descriptions vnto you, me thinkes you should imagine that I rather faine some pleasant deuise, then recount a truth, that a Prince (not banished from his own wits) could possibly make so vnworthie a choice. But truely (deare guest) so it is, that Princes, (whose doings haue beene often soothed with good successe) thinke nothing so absurde, which they cannot make honourable. The beginning of his credite was by the Princes straying out of the way, one time he hunted, where meeting this fellow, and asking him the way, & so falling into the other questio[n]s, he found some of his aunswers (as a dog sure if he could speake, had wit enough to describe his kennel) not vnsensible, & all vttered with such rudenes, which he enterpreted plainnesse (though there be great difference betweene them) that *Basilius* conceauing a sodaine delight, tooke him to his Court, with apparant shew of his good opinion: where the flattering courtier had no sooner take[n] the Princes minde, but that there were straight reasons to confirme the Princes doing, & shadowes of vertues found for *Dametas*. His silence grew wit, his bluntnesse integritie, his beastly ignorance vertuous simplicitie: & the Prince (according to the nature of great persons, in loue with that he had done himselfe) fancied, that his weaknesse with his presence would much be mended. And so like a creature of his owne making, he liked him more and more, and thus hauing first giuen him the office of principall heardman, lastly, since he tooke this strange determination, he hath in a manner put the life of himselfe and his children into his hands. Which authoritie (like too great a sayle for so small a boate) doth so ouer-sway poore *Dametas*, that if before he were a good foole in a chamber, he might be allowed it now in a comedie: So as I doubt mee (I feare mee in [deede]) my master will in the end (with his cost) finde, [that] his office is not to make men, but to vse men as men are; no more then a horse will be taught to hunt, or an asse to mannage. But in sooth I am afraid I haue geuen your eares too great a surfette, with the grosse discourses of that heauie peece of flesh. But the zealous grrefe I conceue to see so great an error in my Lord, hath made me bestow more words, then I confesse so base a subiect deserueth.

CHAP. 4.

The 1 cause of Basilius his discourting. 2 Philanax his disswasiue letter. 3 Basilius his priuiledged companie. 4 Foure causes why old men are discoursers. 5 The state, the skil, and exercise of the Arcadian shepheards.

Hus much now that I haue tolde you, is nothing more then in effect any Arcadian

knowes. But what moued him to this strange solitarines hath bin imparted (as I thinke) but to one person liuing. My selfe ca[n]

co[n]iecture, & in deed more the coniecture, by this accident that I will tell you: I haue an onely sonne, by name *Clitophon*, who is now absent, preparing for his owne mariage, which I meane shortly shalbe here celebrated. This sonne of mine (while the Prince kept his court) was of his bed-chamber; now since the breaking vp thereof, returned home, and shewed me (among other things he had gathered) the cobby which he had taken of a letter: which when the prince had read, he had laid in a window, presuming no body durst looke in his writings: but my sonne not only tooke a time to read it, but to copie it. In trueth I blamed *Clitophon* for the curiositie, which made him break his duetie in such a kind, whereby kings secrets are subiect to be reuealed: but since it was done, I was content to take so much profite, as to know it. Now here is the letter, that I euer since for my good liking, haue caried about me: which before I read vnto you, I must tell you from whom it came. It is a noble-man of this cuntry, named *Philanax*, appointed by the Prince, Regent in this time of his retiring, and most worthie so to be: for, there liues no man, whose excellent witte more simplie imbraseth integritie, besides his vnfained loue to his master, wherein neuer yet any could make question, sauing, whether he loued *Basilus* or the Prince better: a rare temper, while most men either seruile-ly yeeld to al appetites, or with an obstinate austeritie looking to that they fansie good, in effect neglect the Princes person. This then being the man, whom of all other (and most worthie) the Prince cheefly loues, it should seeme (for more then the letter I haue not to ghesse by) that the Prince vpon his returne from Delphos, (*Philanax* then lying sick) had written vnto him his determination, rising (as euidently appeares) vpon some Oracle he had there receaued: whereunto he wrote this answer.

Philanax his letter to Basilus.

Most redouted & beloued prince, if aswel it had pleased you at your going to Delphos as now, to haue vsed my humble seruice, both I should in better season, and to better purpose haue spoken: and you (if my speech had preuayled) should haue beene at this time, as no way more in danger, so much more in quietnes; I would then haue said, that wisdome and vertue be the only destinies appointed to ma[n] to follow, whe[n]ce we ought to seeke al our knowledge, since they be such guydes as cannot faile; which, besides their inward co[m]fort, doo lead so direct a way of proceeding, as either prosperitie must ensue; or, if the wickednes of the world should oppresse it, it can neuer be said, the euil hapneth to him, who falles accompanied with vertue: I would then haue said, the heauenly powers to be reuerenced, and not seached into; & their mercies rather by prayers to be sought, then their hidden counsels by curiositie. These kind of soothsayers (since they haue left vs in our selues sufficient guides) to be nothing but fansie, wherein there must either be vanitie, or infalliblenes, & so, either not to be respected, or not to be preuented. But since it is weaknes too much to remember what should haue been done, and that your commandeme[n]t stretcheth to

know what is to be done, I do (most deare Lord) with humble boldnes say, that the maner of your determination dooth in no sort better please me, then the cause of your going. These thirtie yeares you haue so gouerned this Region, that neither your Subiectes haue wanted iustice in you, nor you obedie[n]ce in them; & your neighbors haue found you so hurtlesly strong, that they thought it better to rest in your friendshippe, then make new triall of your enmitie. If this then haue proceeded out of the good constitution of your state, and out of a wise prouidence, generally to preuent all those things, which might enco[m]ber your happines: why should you now seeke newe courses, since your owne ensample comforts you to continue, and that it is to me most certaine (though it please you not to tell me the very words of the Oracle) that yet no destinie, nor influence whatsoever, can bring mans witte to a higher point, then wisdome and goodnes? Why should you depriue your selfe of gouernment, for feare of loosing your gouernment? like one that should kill himselfe for feare of death? nay rather, if this Oracle be to be accounted of, arme vp your courage the more against it: for who wil stick to him that abandones himselfe? Let your subiectes haue you in their eyes; let them see the benefites of your iustice dayly more and more; and so must they needes rather like of present sureties, then vncertaine changes. Lastly, whether your time call you to liue or die, doo both like a prince. Now for your second resolution; which is, to suffer no worthie prince to be a suiter to either of your daughters, but while you liue to keep the[m] both vnmarried; &, as it were, to kill the ioy of posteritie, which in your time you may enioy: moued perchance by a mis-understoode Oracle: what shall I say, if the affection of a father to his owne children, cannot plead sufficiently against such fancies? once certaine it is, the God, which is the God of nature, doth neuer teach vnnaturalnes: and euen the same minde hold I touching your banishing them from companie, least, I know not what strange loues should follow: Certainly Sir, in my ladies, your daughters, nature promiseth nothing but goodnes, and their education by your fatherly care, hath beene most fit to restraine all euill: geuing their mindes vertuous delights, and not greeuing them, for want of wel-ruled libertie. Now to fall a sodain straightning them, what can it doo but argue suspicion, a thing no more vnpleasant, then vnsure, for the preseruing of vertue? Leaue womens minds, the most vntamed that way of any: see whether any cage can pleae a bird? or whether a dogge grow not fiercer with tying? what dooth ielousie, but stirre vp the mind to thinke, what it is from which they are restrained? for they are treasures, or things of great delight, which men vse to hide, for the aptnesse they haue to catch mens fancies: and the thoughtes once awaked to that, harder sure it is to keepe those thoughts from accomplishment, then had it been before to haue kept the minde (which being the chife part, by this meanes is defiled) from thinking. Lastly, for the recommending so pricipall a charge of the Princesse *Pamela*, (whose minde goes beyond the gouerning of many thousands such) to such a person as *Dametas* is (besides that the thing in it self is strange) it comes of a very euil ground, that ignorance should be the mother of faithfulness. O no; he cannot be good, that knowes not why he is good, but stands so

farre good, as his fortune may keepe him vnassaid: but comming once to that, his rude simplicitie is either easily changed, or easily deceiued: & so growes that to be the last excuse of his fault, which seemed to haue been the first foundation of his faith. Thus farre hath your commaundement and my zeale drawn me; which I, like a man in a valley that may discern hilles, or like a poore passenger that may spie a rock, so humbly submit to your gracious consideration, beseeching you againe, to stand wholly vpon your own vertue, as the surest way to maintaine you in that you are; and to auoyd any euill which may be imagined.

By the contents of this letter you may perceiue, that the cause of all, hath beene the vanitie which possesseth many, who (making a perpetuall mansion of this poore baiting place of mans life) are desirous to know the certaintie of things to come; wherein there is nothing so certaine, as our continuall vncertaintie. But what in particular points the oracle was, in faith I know not: nether (as you may see by one place of *Philanax* letter) he himselfe distinctly knew. But this experience shewes vs, that *Basilus* iudgement, corrupted with a Princes fortune, hath rather heard then followed the wise (as I take it) counsell of *Philanax*. For, hauing lost the sterne of his gouernment, with much amazement to the people, among whom mnay strange bruits are receiued for currant, and with some apparance of daunger in respect of the valiant *Amphalus*, his nephew, & much enuy in the ambitious number of the Nobilitie against *Philanax*, to see *Philanax* so aduanced, though (to speake simply) he deserue more the[n] as many of vs as there be in Arcadia: the prince himself hath hidden his head, in such sort as I told you, not sticking plainly to co[n]fesse, that he means not (while he breathes) that his daughters shal haue any husba[n]d, but keep the[m] thus solitary with him: wher he giues no other body leue

to visit him at any time, but a certain priest, who being excellent in poetrie, he 3
makes him write out such thinges as be best likes, he being no les delightful in
co[n]uersatio[n], the[n] needfull for deuotio[n], & about twe[n]ty specified
shepheards, in who[m] (some foe exercises, & some for Eglogs) he taketh greater
recreatio[n].

And now you know as much as my self: wherin if I haue held you ouer long, lay
hardly the fault

vpon my olde age, which in the very disposition of it is talkatiue: whether it be 4
(said he smiling) that nature loues to exercise that part most, which is least
decayed, and that is our tongue: or, that knowldge being the only thing whereof we
poore old men can brag, we cannot make it knowen but by vtterance: or, that
mankinde by all meanes seeking to eternize himselfe so much the more, as he is neere
his end, dooth it not only by the children that come of him, but by speeches and
writings recommended to the memorie of hearers and readers. And yet thus much I
wil say for my selfe, that I haue not laid these matters, either so openly, or largely to

any as your selfe: so much (if I much fayle not) doo I see in you, which makes me both loue and trust you. Neuer may he be old, answered *Palladius*, that dooth not reuerence that age, whose heauines, if it waie downe the frayl and fleshly ballance, it as much lifts vp the noble and spirituall part: and well might you haue alledged another reason, that their wisdome makes them willing to profite others. And that haue I receiued of you, neuer to to be forgotten, but with vngratefulnes. But among many strange conceits you tolde me, which haue shewed effects in your Prince, truly euen the last, that he should conceiue such pleasure in shepherds discourses, would not seeme the least vnto me, sauing that you told me at the first, that this countrie is notable in those wits, and that in deed my selfe hauing beene brought not onely to this place, but to my life, by *Strephon* and *Claius*, in their conference found wits as might better become such shepherds as *Homer* speakes of, that be gouernors of peoples, then such senatours who hold their councill in a shepecoate: for them two (said *Kalander*) especially *Claius*, they are beyond the rest by so much, as learning commonlie doth adde to nature: for, hauing neglected their wealth in respect of their knowledge, they haue not so much empayred the meaner, as they bettered the better. Which all notwithstanding, it is a sporte to heare howe they impute to loue, whiche hath indewed their thoughts (saie they) with suche a strength.

But certainly, all

the people of this countrie from high to lowe, is giuen to those sportes of the witte, so as you would wonder to heare how soone euen children will beginne to versifie. Once, ordinary it is among the meanest sorte, to make Songes and Dialogues in meeter, either loue whetting their braine or long peace hauing begun it, example and emulation amending it. Not so much, but the clowne *Dametas* will stumble sometimes vpon some Songs that might become a better brayne: but no sorte of people so excellent in that kinde as the pastors; for their liuing standing but vpon the looking to their beastes, they haue ease, the Nurse of Poetrie. Neither are our shepherds such, as (I heare) they be in other countries; but they are the verie owners of the sheepe, to which eyther themselues looke, or their children giue daylie attendaunce. And then truely, it would delight you vnder some tree, or by some riuers side (when two or three of them meet together) to heare their rurall muse, how pretely it will deliuer out, sometimes ioyes, sometimes lamentations, sometimes chalengings one of the other, sometimes vnder hidden formes vttering such matters, as otherwise they durst not deale with. Then they haue most commonly one, who iudgeth the price to the best doer, of which they are no lesse gladde, then great Princes are of triumphes: and his parte is to sette downe in writing all that is saide, saue that it may be, his pen with more leasure doth polish the rudenesse of an vnthought-on songe. Now the choise of all (as you may well thinke) either for goodnesse of voice, or pleasantnesse of wit, the Prince hath: among whom also there are two or three straungers, whom inwarde melancholies hauing made weery of the worldes eyes haue

come to spende their liues among the countrie people of *Arcadia*; & their conuersation being well approued, the prince vouchsafeth them his presence, and not onely by looking on, but by great courtesie and liberalitie, animates the Shepherdes the more exquisitely to labour for his good liking. So that there is no cause to blame the Prince for somtimes hearing them; the blame-worthinesse is, that to heare them, he rather goes to solitarinesse, then makes them come to companie. Neyther doo I accuse my maister for aduauncing a countriman, as *Dametas* is, since God forbid, but where worthinesse is (as truely it is among diuers of that fellowship) any outward lownesse should hinder the hiest raying, but that he would needes make election of one, the basenesse of whose minde is such, that it sinckes a thousand degrees lower, then the basest bodie could carrie the most base fortune: Which although it might bee aunswered for the Prince, that it is rather a trust hee hath in his simple plainnesse, then any great aduauncement, beyng but chiefe heardman: yet all honest hartes feele, that the trust of their Lord goes beyond all abuauncement. But I am euer too long vpon him, when he crosseth the waie of my speache, and by the shaddowe of yonder Tower, I see it is a fitter time, with our supper to pay the duties we owe to our stomacks, the[n] to break the aire with my idle discourses: And more witte I might haue learned of *Homer* (whome euen now you mentioned) who neuer entertayned eyther gwestes or hostes with long speeches, till the mouth of hunger be throughly stopped. So withall he rose, leading *Palladius* through the gardeine againe to the parler, where they vsed to suppe; *Palladius* assuring him, that he had already bene more fed to his liking, then hee could bee by the skilfullest trencher-men of *Media*.

CHAP. 5.

The 1 sorow of Kalander for his sonne Clitophon. The 2 storie of Argalus and Parthenia, their 3 perfections, their 4 loue, their 5 troubles, her 6 impoysoning, 7 his rare constancie, 8 her straunge refusall, 9 their pathologies, her 10 flight, his 11 reuenge on his riuall the mischiefe-worker Demagoras, then Captaine of the rebell Helots, who 12 take him, and 13 Clitophon that sought to helpe him: but 14 both are kept aliue by their new captaine.

Vt beeing come to the supping place, one of *Kalanders* seruaunts rounded

in his eare; at which (his colour chaungyng) hee retired him selfe into his chamber; commaunding his men diligentlie to waite and attend vpon *Palladius*, and to excuse his absence with some neccesarie

business he had presentlie to dispatch. Which they accordinglie did, for some few dayes forcing the[m]selues to let no change appeare: but though they framed their countenaunces neuer so cunningly, *Palladius* perceaued there was some ill-pleasing accident fallen out. Whereupon, being againe set alone at supper, he called to the Steward, and desired him to tell him the matter of his suddaine alteration: who after some trifling excuses, in the ende confessed vnto him, that his maister had receiued newes, that his sonne before the daie of his neere marriage, chaunst to be at a battaile, which was to be fought betweene the Gentlemen of Lacedæmon and the Helots: who winning the victorie, hee was there made prisoner, going to deliuer a friend of his taken prysoner by the *Helots*; that the poore young Gentleman had offered great ransome for his life: but that the hate those paysaunts conceued agaynst all Gentlemen was suche, that euerie houre hee was to looke for nothing, but some cruell death: which hether-vnto had onely beene delayed by the Captaines vehement dealing for him, who seemed to haue a hart of more manlie pittie then the rest. Which losse had stricken the old Gentleman with such sorrowe, as if abundance of teares did not seeme sufficiently to witnesse it, he was alone retyred, tearing his bearde and hayre, and cursing his old age, that he had not made his graue to stoppe his eares from such aduertisements: but that his faithfull seruants had written in his name to all his friends, followers, and tenants (*Philanax* the gouernour refusing to deale in it, as a priuate cause, but yet giuing leaue to seeke their best redresse, so as they wronged not the state of Lacedæmon) of whom there were now gathered vpon the frontiers good forces, that he was sure would spende their liues by any way, to redeeme or reuenge *Clitophon*. Now sir (said he) this is my maisters nature, though his grief be such, as to liue is a grieffe vnto him, & that euen his reason is darkened with sorrow; yet the lawes of hospitality (long and holily obserued by him) giue still such a sway to his proceeding, that he will no waie suffer the straunger lodged vnder his rooffe, to receyue (as it were) any infection of his anguish, especially you, toward whom I know not whether his loue, or admiration bee greater. But *Palladius* could scarce heare out his tale with patience: so was his hart torne in peeces with compassion of the case, liking of *Kalanders* noble behauiour, kindnesse for his respect to him-ward, and desire to finde some remedie, besides the image of his deerest friend *Daiphantus*, whom he iudged to suffer eyther a like or a worse fortune: therefore rising from the boorde, he desired the steward to tell him particularly the ground, and euent of this accident, because by knowledge of many circumstaunces, there might perhaps some waie of helpe be opened. Whereunto the Steward easilie in this sorte condescended.

My Lord (said he) when our good king *Basilus*, with better successe then expectation, tooke

to wife (euen in his more then decaying yeares) the faire yong princes *Gynecia*,
there came with her a young Lord, cousin german to her selfe, named *Argalus*,
led hether, partly with the loue & honour of his noble kinswoma[n], partly with the

humour of youth, which euer thinks that good, whose goodnes he sees not: & in this court he receiued so good encrease of knowledge, that after some yeares spent, he so manifested a most vertuous mind in all his actions, that *Arcadia* gloried such a plant was

transported vnto them, being a Gentleman in deede most rarely accomplished, 3
excellencie learned, but without all vayne glory: friendly, without factiousnes:
valiaunt, so as for my part I thinke the earth hath no man that hath done more heroically
actes then hee; how soeuer now of late the fame flies of the two princes
of *Thessalia* and *Macedon*, and hath long done of our noble prince *Amphialus*: who in
deede, in our partes is onely accounted likely to match him: but I say for my part, I
thinke no man for valour of minde, and habilitie of bodie to bee preferred, if equalled
to *Argalus*; and yet so valiant as he neuer durst doo any bodie iniurie: in behauiour
some will say euer sadde, surely sober, and somewhat giuen to musing, but neuer
vncourteous; his worde euer ledde by his thought, and followed by his deede; rather
liberall then magnificent, though the one wanted not, and the other had euer good
choise of the receiuer: in summe (for I perceiue I shall easily take a great draught of
his praises, whom both I and all this countrie loue so well) such a man was (and I
hope is) *Argalus*, as hardly the nicest eye can finde a spot in, if the ouer-vehement
constancie of yet spotles affection, may not in harde wrested constructions be counted
a spot: which in this manner began that worke in him, which had made bothe him, and
it selfe in him, ouer all this country famous. My maisters sonne *Clitophon* (whose
losse giues the cause to this discourse, and yet giues me cause to beginne
with *Argalus*, since his losse proceedes from *Argalus*) beyng a young Gentleman, as
of great birth (being our kings sisters sonne) so truely of good nature, and one that can
see good and loue it, haunted more the companie of this worthie *Argalus*, then of any
other: so as if there were not a friendship (which is so rare, as it is to bee doubted
whether it bee a thing in deede, or but a worde) at least there was such a liking and
friendlines, as hath brought forth the effectes which you shall heare. About two
yeares since, it so fell out, that hee brought him to a great Ladies house, sister to my
maister, who had with her, her onely daughter, the faire *Parthenia*; faire in deede
(fame I thinke it selfe daring not to call any fayrer, if it be not *Helena* queene
of *Corinth*, and the two incomparable sisters of *Arcadia*) and that which made her
fairenesse much the fayrer, was, that it was but a faire emmassadour of a most faire
minde, full of wit, and a wit which delighted more to iudge it selfe, then to showe it
selfe: her speach being as rare as pretious; her silence without sullenness, her
modestie without affectation; her shamefastnes without ignorance: in somme, one,
that to praise well, one must first set downe with himselfe, what it is to be excellent;
for so she is.

I thinke you thinke, that these perfections meeting, could not choose but find
one another, and delight in that they found; for likenes of manners is likely in
reason to draw liking with affection: mens actions doo not alwaies crosse with
reason: to be short, it did so in deed. They loued, although for a while the fire
thereof (hopes winges being cut of) were blowen by the bellowes of dispaire,
vpon this occasion. 4 5

There had beene a good while before, and so continued, a suter to this same lady, a
great noble ma[n], though of Laconia, yet neere neighbour to *Parthenias* mother,
named *Demagoras*: A man mightie in riches & power, and proude thereof, stubbornly
stout, louing no bodie but him selfe, and for his owne delights sake *Parthenia*; and
pursuing vehemently his desire, his riches had so guilded ouer all his other
imperfections, that the olde Ladie (though contrarie to my Lord her brothers miinde)
had giuen her consent; and vsing a mothers authorie vpon her faire daughter, had
made her yeelded thereunto, not because shee liked her choise, but because her
obedient minde had not yet taken vpon it to make choise; and the daie of their
assurance drew neere, when my young Lord *Clitophon* brought this noble *Argalus*,
perchance principallie to see so rare a sight, as *Parthenia* by all well iudging eyes was
iudged.

But though fewe dayes were before the time of assurance appointed, yet loue that
sawe hee had a great iourney to make in shorte time, hasted so him selfe, that before
her worde could tie her to *Demagoras*, her harte hath vowed her to *Argalus*, with so
gratefull a receipte in mutuall affection, that if shee desired aboue all thinges to
haue *Argalus*, *Argalus* feared nothing but to misse *Parthenia*. And now *Parthenia* had
learned both liking and misliking, louing and lothing, and out of passion began to take
the authoritie of iudgement; in so much, that when the time came
that *Demagoras* (full of proude ioy) thought to receaue the gifte of her selfe, shee with
woordes of resolute refusall (though with teares shewing she was sorie she must
refuse) assured her mother, she would first be bedded in her graue, then wedded
to *Demagoras*. The chaunge was no more straunge, then vnpleasant to the mother:
who beyng determinately (least I shoulde say of a great Lady, willfully) bent to marrie
her to *Demagoras*, tryed all wayes which a wittie and hard-harted mother could vse,
vpon so humble a daughter in whome the onely resisting power was loue. But the
more shee assaulted, the more shee taught *Parthenia* to defende: and the
more *Parthenia* defended, the more she made her mother obstinate in the assault: who
at length finding, that *Argalus* standing betweene them, was it that most eclipsed her
affection from shining vpon *Demagoras*, she sought all meanes how to remoue him,
so much the more, as he manifested himselfe an vnremouable suiter to her daughter:
first, by imploying him in as many da[n]gerous enterprises, as euer the euill
stepmother *Iuno* recommended to the famous *Hercules*: but the more his vertue was
tried, the more pure it grew, while all the things she did to ouerthrow him, did set him
vp vpon the height of honor; inough to haue moued her harte, especially to a man

euery way so worthy as *Argalus*: but she strugling against all reason, because she would haue her will, and shew her authoritie in matching her with *Demagoras*, the more vertuous *Argalus* was, the more she hated him: thinking her selfe conquered in his co[n]quests, and therefore still imploying him in more and more dangerous attempts: meane while, she vsed all extremities possible vpon her faire daughter, to make her geue ouer her selfe to her direction. But it was hard to iudge, whether he in doing, or she in suffering, shewed greater constancie of affection: for, as to *Argalus* the world sooner wanted occsions, then he valour to goe thorow them; so to *Parthenia*, malice sooner ceased, the[n] her vnchanged patience. Lastly, by treasons, *Demagoras* and she would haue made away *Argalus*: but hee with prouidence & courage so past ouer all, that the mother tooke such a stitefull grief at it, that her hart brake withall, and she died.

But then, *Demagoras* assuring himselfe, that now *Parthenia* was her owne, she would neuer be his, and receiuing as much by her owne determinate answer, not more desiring his owne hapines, then enuying *Argalus*, whom he saw with narrow eyes, euen ready to enioy the perfection of his desires; strengthening his conceite with all the mischieuous counsels which disdayned loue, and enuious pride could geue vnto him; the wicked wretch (taking a time that *Argalus* was gone to his countrie, to fetch some of his principall frendes to honour the mariage, which *Parthenia* had most ioyfully consented vnto,) the wicked *Demagoras* (I say) desiring to speake with her, with vnmercifull force, (her weake armes in vaine resisting) rubd all ouer her face a most horrible poyson: the effect whereof was such, that neuer leaper lookt more vgly the[n] she did: which done, hauing his men & horses ready, departed away in spite of her serua[n]ts, as redy to reuenge as they could be, in such an vnexpected mischiefe. But the abhominableness of this fact beinig come to my L. *Kalander*, he made such meanes, both by our kings intercession & his own, that by the king, & senat of Lacedæmo[n], *Demagoras* was vpon paine of death, banished the countrie: who hating the punishment, where he should haue hated the fault, ioynde himselfe, with all the powers he could make, vnto the Helots, lately in rebellion against that state: and they (glad to haue a man of such authority among the[m]) made him their general: & vnder him haue committed diuers the most outrageous villanies, that a base multitude (full of desperate reuenge) can imagine.

But within a while after this pitifull fact committed vpon *Parthenia*, *Argalus* returned (poore gentleman) hauing her faire image in his heart, and already promising his eies the vttermost of his felicitie, when they (no bodie els daring to tell it him) were the first messengers to themselues of their owne misfortune. I meane not to moue passions with telling you the grieffe of both, when he knew her, for

at first he did not, nor at first knowlsdge could possibly haue Vertues aide so ready, as not euen weakly to lament the losse of such a iewell, so much the more, as that skilful men in that arte assured it was vnrecouerable: but within a while, trueth of loue (which still held the first face in his memorie) a vertuous constancie, and euen a delight to be constant, faith geuen, and inward worthines shining through the foulest mistes, tooke so full holde of the noble *Argalus*, that not onely in such comfort which witty arguments may bestow vpon aduersitie, but euen with the most abundant kindnesse that an eye-rauished loue can expresse, he laboured both to driue the extremity of sorow from her, & to hasten the celebration of their mariage: whereunto he vnfainedly shewed himself no lesse cherefully earnest, then if she had neuer been disinherited of that goodly portion, which nature had so liberally bequeathed vnto her: and for that cause deferred his inte[n]ded reuenge vpon *Demagoras*, because he might continually be in her presence; shewing more hu[m]ble seruiceablenes, and ioy to content her, then euer before.

But as he gaue the rare ensa[m]ple, not to be hoped for of any other, but of another *Argalus*: so of the other side, she tooke as strange a course in affection: 8
for, where she desired to enioy him, more then to liue; yet did she ouerthrow both her owne desire, and his, and in no sorte would yeeld to marry him; with a strange encounter of loues affects, and effects: that he by an affection sprong from excessiue beautie, should delight in horrible foulnesse, and she, of a vehement desire to haue him, should kindly build a resolution neuer to haue him: for trueth is, that so in heart she loued him, as she could not finde in her heart he should be tied to what was vnworthy of his presence.

Truely Sir, a very good Orator might haue a fayrefield to vse eloquence in, if he 9
did but onely repeate the lamentable, and truely affectionated speeches, while he coniured her by remembrance of her affection, & true oathes of his owne affection, not to make him so vnhappy, as to think he had not only lost her face, but her hart; that her face, when it was fayrest, had been but as a marshall, to lodge the loue of her in his minde; which now was so well placed, as it needed no further help of any outward harbinger: beseeching her, euen with teares, to know, that his loue was not so superficial, as to go no further then the skin; which yet now to him was most faire, since it was hers: how could hee be so vngratefull, as to loue her the lesse for that, which she had onely receiued for his sake? that he neuer beheld it, but therein he saw the louelines of of her loue towarde him: protesting vnto her, that he would neuer take ioy of his life, if he might not enioy her, for whom principally he was glad he had life. But (as I heard by one that ouerheard them) she (wringing him by the hand) made no other answeare but this: my Lord (said she) God knowes I loue you: if I were Princesse

of the whole world, and had, withal, al the blessings that euer the world brought forth, I should not make delay, to lay my selfe, & them, vnder your feete: or if I had continued but as I was, though (I must co[n]fesse) far vnworthy of you, yet would I, (with too great a ioy for my hart to think of) haue accepted your vouchsafing me to be yours, & with faith and obediace would haue supplied all other defects. But first let me be much more miserable then I am, ere I match *Argalus* to such a *Parthenia*: liue happy, deare *Argalus*, I geue you full libetie, and I beseech you take it; and I assure you I shall reioyce (whatsoever become of me) to see you so coupled, as may be fitte, both for your honor, and satisfaction. With that she burst out in crying and weeping, not able longer to containe her selfe from blaming her fortune, and wishing her owne death.

But *Argalus* with a most heauie heart still pursuing his desire, she fixt of mind 10
to auoid further intreatie, & to flie all companie; which (euen of him) grew
vnpleasant vnto her; one night she stole away: but whether, as yet is vnknown,
or in deede what is become of her. 11

Argalus sought her long, and in many places: at length (despairing to finde 12
her, and the more he despaired, the more enraged) weerie of his life, but first
determining to be reuenged of *Demagoras*, hee went alone disguyused into the
chiefe towne held by the Helots: where comming into his presence, garded
about by many of his souldiers, he could delay his fury no lo[n]ger for a fitter time,
but setting vpon him, in despight of a great many that helped him, gaue him diuers
mortall wounds,
and himself (no question) had been there presently murthered, but
that *Demagoras* himselfe desired he might be kept aliue; perchaunce with intention to
feed his owne eyes with some cruell execution to bee layd vpon him, but death came
soner then he lookt for; yet hauing had leisure to appoint his successor, a young man,
not long before deliuered out of the prison of the King of *Lacedæmon*, where hee
should haue suffered death for hauing slaine the kings Nephew: but him he named,
who at that time was absent, making roades vpon the *Lacedæmonians*, but being
returned, the rest of the *Helots*, for the great liking they conceiued of that yong man,
(especially because they had none among themselues to whom the others would
yeeld) were co[n]tent to follow *Demagoras* appointment. And well hath it succeeded
with them, he hauing sinice done things beyond the hope of the youngest heads; of
whom I speak the rather, because he hath hetherto preserued *Argalus* aliue, vnder
pretence to haue him publiquely, and with exquisite tormentes executed, after the ende
of these warres, of which they hope for a soone and prosperous issue.

And he hath likewise hetherto kept my young Lord *Clitophon* aliue, who (to redeme his friend) went with certaine other noble-men of *Laconia*, and forces gathered by them, to besiege this young and new successor: but he issueing out (to the wonder of all men) defeated the *Laconians*, slew many of the noble-men, & tooke *Clitophon* prisoner, whom with much a doo he keepeth aliue: the *Helots* being villanously cruell; but he tempereth the[m] so, sometimes by folowing their humor, sometimes by striuing with it, that hetherto hee hath sau'd both their liues, but in different estates; *Argalus* being kept in a close & hard prison, *Clitophon* at some libertie. And now Sir, though (to say the truth) we can promise our selues of their safeties, while they are in the *Helots* hands, I haue deliuered all I vnderstande touching the losse of my Lords sonne, & the cause therof: which, though it was not necessarie to *Clitophons* case, to be so particularly told, yet the stra[n]genes of it, made me think it would not be vnpleasant vnto you.

CHAP. 6.

1 *Kalanders expedition against the Helots.* 2 *Their estate.*
 3 *Palladius his stratageme against them:* 4 *which pre-
 uayleth.* 5 *The Helots resisitance, discomfiture, and re-
 -enforce by the returne of thei new captaine* 7 *The com-
 bat and* 8 *enterknowledge of Daiphantus & Palladius,
 and by their* 9 *meanes a peace, with the release of Ka-
 lander and Clitophon.*



Palladius thanked him greatly for it, being euen passionately delighted with hearing so strange an accide[n]t of a knight so famous ouer the world, as *Argalus*, with whome he had himselfe a long desire to meet: so had famed poured as noble emulation in him, towards him.

But the[n] (wel bethinking himselfe) he called for armour, desiring them to prouide him of horse & guide, and armed al

sauing the head, he we[n]t vp to *Kala[n]der*, whom he found lying vpo[n] the grou[n]d, hauing euer since banished both sleepe and foode, as enemies to the mourning which passion perswaded him was reasonable. But *Palladius* rased him vp, saying vnto him[:] No more, no more of this, my Lord *Kalander*; let vs labour to finde, before wee lament the losse: you know my selfe misse one, though he be not my sonne, I would disdayn the fauour of life after him: but while there is hope left, let not the weaknes of sorow, make the strength of it languish: take comfort, and good successe will folow. And with those wordes, comfort seemed to lighten in his eyes, and that in his face and gesture was painted victorie. Once, *Kalanders* spirits were so reuiued withal, that (receiuing some sustenance, and taking a little rest) he armed

himselfe, and those few of his seruants he had left vnsent, and so himselfe guyded *Palladius* to the place vpon the frontiers: where already there were assembled betweene three and four thousand men, all well disposed (for *Kalanders* sake) to abide any perill: but like men disused with a long peace, more determinate to doo, then skilfull how to doo: lusty bodies, and braue armours: with such courage, as rather grew of despising their enimies, whom they knew not, then of any confidence for any thing, which in them selues they knew not; but neither cunning vse of their weapons, nor arte shewed in their marching, or incamping. Which *Palladius* soone perceiuing, he desired to vnderstand (as much as could be deliuered vnto him) the estate of the *Helots*.

And he was answered by a man well acquainted with the affaires of Laconia, 2
that they were a kinde of people, who hauing been of old, freemen and possessioners, the Lacedemonians had conquered them, and layd, not onely tribute, but bondage vpon them: which they had long borne, till of late the *Lacedemonians* through greedinesse growing more heauie then they could beare, anf through contempt lesse carefull how to make them beare, they had with a generall consent (rather springing by the generalnes of the cause, then of any artificiall practise) set themselues in armes, and whetting their courage with reuenge, and grounding their resolutio[n] vpon despaire, they had proceeded with vnloked-for succes: hauing already take[n] diuers Towns and Castels, with the slaughter of many of the gentry; for whom no sex nor age could be accepted for and excuse. And that although at the first they had fought rather with beastly furie, then any soldierly discipline, practise had now made [them] comparable to the best of the *Lacedemonians*; & more of late then euer, by reason, first of *Demagoras* a great Lord, who had made him self of their partie, and since his death, of an other Captaine they had gotten, who had brought vp their ignorance, and brought downe their furie, to such a meane of good gouernment, and withall led them so valourouslie, that (besides the time whwerein *Clitophon* was taken) they had the better in some other great co[n]flicts: in such wise, that the estate of *Lacedæmon* had sent vnto them, offering peace with most reasonable and honorable conditions. *Palladius* hauing gotten this generall knowledge of the partie against whom, as hee had already of the party for whom he was to fight, he went to *Kalander*, and told him plainlie, that by playne force there was small apparaunce of helping *Clitophon*: but some deuce was to be taken in hand, wherein bo lesse discretion then valour was to vsed.

Whereupon, the council of the chiefe men was called, and at last, this 3
way *Palladius* (who by some experience, but especiallie by reading Histories, was acquainted with stratagemes) inuented, and was by all the rest approued: that all

the men there shoulde dresse themselues like the poorest sorte of the people in *Arcadia*; hauing no banners, but bloudie shirtes hanged vpon long staues, with some bad bagge pipes in stead of drumme and fife, their armour they should aswell as might be, couer, or at least make them looke so rustilie, and ill-fauouredly as might well become such wearers; and this the whole number should doo, sauing two hundred of the best chosen Gentlemen, for courage and strength, whereof *Palladius* him selfe would be one, who should haue their armes chayned, and be put in cartes like prisoners. This being performed according to the agreement, they marched on towards the towne of *Cardamila* where *Clitophon* was captiue; and being come two houres before Sunne set within vewe of the walles, the *Helots* alreadie descrying their number, and beginning to sound the Allarum, they sent a cunning fellow, (so much the cunninger as that he could maske it vnder rudenes) who with such a kind of Rhetorike, as weeded out all flowers of Rhetorike, deliuered vnto the *Helots* assembled together, that they were countrie people of *Arcadia*, no lesse oppressed by their Lords, & no lesse desirous of liberty then they, & therefore had put themselues in the field, & had alreadie (besides a great number slaine) taken nine or ten score Gentlemen prisoners, who they had there well & fast chained. Now because they had no strong retiring place in *Arcadia*, & were not yet of number enough to keepe the fielde against their Princes forces, they were come to them for succor; knowing, that daily more & more of their qualities would flock vnto the[m], but that in the mean time, lest their Prince should pursue the[m], or the *Lacedæmonian* King & Nobilitie (for the likenes of the cause) fall vpon them, they desired that if there were not roome enough for them in the towne, that yet they might encampe vnder the walles, and for surety haue their prisoners (who were such me[n] as were euer able to make their peace) kept within the towne.

The *Helots* made but a short consultatio[n], being glad that their contagion had spread it selfe into *Arcadia*, and making account that if the peace did not fall out betweene them and their King, that it was the best way to set fire in all the parts of *Greece*; besides their greedinessee to haue so many Gentlemen in their handes, in whose taunsoms they meant to haue a share; to which hast of concluding, two thinges wel helped; the one, that their Captaine with the wisest of them, was at that time absent about confirming or breaking the peace, with the state of *Lacedæmon*: the second, that ouer-many good fortunes began to breed a proude recklesnesse in them: therefore sending to view the campe, and finding that by their speach they were *Arcadians*, with whom they had no warre, neuer suspecting a priuate mans credite could haue gathered such a force, and that all other tokens witnessed them to be of the lowest calling (besides the chaines vpon the Gentlemen) they graunted not onely leaue for the prisoners, but for some others of the companie, and to all, that they might harbour vnder the walles. So opened they the gates, and receiued in the carts; 4

which being done, and *Palladius* seeing fit time, he gave the signe, and shaking of their chaynes; (which were made with such arte, that though they seemed most strong and fast, he that wore them might easily loose them) drew their swordes hidden in the cartes, and so setting vpon the ward, made them to flie eyther from the place, or from their bodies, and so giue entrie to all the force of the *Arcadians*, before the *Helots* could make any head to resist them.

But the *Helots* being men hardened against daungers, gathered as (well they 5 could) together in the market place, and thence would haue giuen a shrewd welcome to the *Arcadians*, but that *Palladius* (blaming those that were slow, hartning the[m] that were forward, but especially with his owne ensample leading them) made such an impression into the squadron of the *Helots*, that at first the great bodie of them beginning to shake, and stagger; at length, euery particular bodie recommended the protection of his life to his feet. Then *Kalander* cried to go to the prison, where he thought his sonne was, but *Palladius* wisht him (first scouring the streates) to house all the *Helots*, and make themselues maisters of the gates.

But ere that could be accomplished, the *Helots* had gotten new hart, and with 6 diuers sortes of shot from corners of streats, and house windowes, galled them; which courage was come vnto them by the returne of their Captaine; who though he brought not many with him (hauing disperst most of his companies to other of his holds) yet meeting a great nu[m]ber ru[n]ning out of the gate, not yet possessed by the *Arcadians*, he made them turne face, & with banners displayed, his Trumpets giue the lowdest testimonie he could of his returne, which once heard, the rest of the *Helots* which were otherwise scattered, bent thetherward, with a new life of resolution: as if their Captaine had bene a roote, out of which (as into braunches) their courage had sprong. Then began the fight to grow most sharpe, and the encounters of more cruell obstinacie. The *Arcadians* fighting to keepe that they had wonne, the *Helots* to recouer what they had lost. The *Arcadians*, as in an vnknowne place, hauing no succour but in their handes; the *Helots*, as in their own place, fighting for their liuings, wiues, & children. There was victory & courage against reuenge and despaire: safety of both sides being no otherwise to be gotten, but by destruction.

At length, the left winge of the *Arcadians* began to loose ground; which *Palladius* seeing, he streight thrust himselfe with his choise bande against the throng that oppressed the[m], with such an ouerflowing of valour, that the Captaine of the *Helots* (whose eies soon iudged of that wherwith the[m]selues were gouerned) saw that he alone was worth al the rest of the *Arcadians*. Which he so wondred at, that it was hard to say, whether he more liked his doings, or misliked the effects of his doings: but determining that vpon that cast the game lay, and disdainng to fight with

any other, sought onely to ioine with him: which minde was no lesse in *Palladius*, hauing easily marked, that he was as the first mouer of al the other handes. And so their thoughts meeting in one point, they consented (though not agreed) to trie each others fortune: & so drawing themselues to be the vttermost of the one side, they began a combat, which was so much inferior to the battaile in noise and number, as it was surpassing in brauery of fighting, & (as it were) delightful terriblenes. Their courage was guided with skill, and their skill was armed with courage; neither did their hardinesse darken their witte, nor their witte coole their hardines: both valiant, as men despising death; both confident, as vnwonted to be ouercome; yet doutefull by their present feeling, and respectfull by what they had already seene. Their feete stedy, their hands diligent, their eyes watchfull, & their harts resolute. The partes either not armed, or weakly armed, were well knowen, and according to the knowledge should haue bene sharpely visited, but that the aunswere was as quicke as the obiection. Yet some lighting; the smart bred rage, and the rage bred smarte agaiine: till both sides beginning to waxe faint, and rather desirous to die accompanied, then hopeful to liue victorious, the Captaine of the *Helots* with a blow, whose violence grew of furie, not of strength, or of strength proceeding of furie, strake *Palladius* vpon the side of the head, that he reeled stonied: and withall the helmet fell of, he remayning bare headed: but other of the Arcadians were redie to shield him from any harme that might arise of that nakednes.

But little needed it, for his chiefe enemy in steed of pursuing that aduantage, 8
kneeled downe, offering to deliuer the pommel of his sworde, in token of
yeelding, with all speaking aloud vnto him, that he thought it more libertie to be his
prisoner, then any others generall. *Palladius* standing vpon him selfe, and
misdoubting some craft, and the *Helots* (that were next their captaine) wauering
betweene looking for some stratageme, or fearing treason, What, said the captaine,
hath *Palladius* forgotten the voice of *Daiphantus*?

By that watche worde *Palladius* knew that it was his onely friende *Pyrocles*, 9
whome he had lost vpon the Sea, and therefore both most full of wonder, so to be
mett, if they had not bene fuller of ioye then wonder, caused the retraite to be
sounded, *Daiphantus* by authoritie, and *Palladius* by persuasion; to which helped well
the little aduantage that was of eyther side: and that of the *Helots* partie their
Captaines behaiour had made as many amazed as sawe or heard of it: and of the
Arcadian side the good olde *Kalander* striuing more than his old age could atchieue,
was newly taken prisoner. But in deede, the chiefe parter of the fraye was the night,
which with her blacke armes pulled their malicious sightes one from the other. But he
that tooke *Kalander*, meant nothing lesse then to saue him, but onelie so long, as the

Captaine might learne the enemies secrets: towards whom he led the old Gentleman, when he caused the retreat to be sounded: looking for no other deliuerie from that captiuitie, but by the painfull taking away of all paine: when whom should he see next to the Captaine (with good tokens how valiantly he had fought that daie against the *Arcadians*) but his sonne *Clitophon*? But nowe the Captaine had caused all the principall *Helots* to be assembled, as well to deliberate what they had to do, as to receiue a message from the *Arcadians*; Amo[n]g whom *Palladius* vertue (besides the loue *Kalander* bare him) hauing gotte[n] principall authoritie, he had persuaded them to seeke rather by parley to recouer the Father and the Sonne, then by the sword: since the goodnes of the Captain assured him that way to speed, and his value (wherewith he was of old acquainted[]) made him thinke any other way dangerous. This therefore was donne in orderly manner, giuing them to vnderstand, that as they came but to deliuer *Clitophon*, so offering to leaue the footing they already had in the towne, to goe away without any further hurte, so as they might haue the father, & the sonne without raunsome deliuered. which conditions beyng heard and conceaued, by the *Helots*, *Daiphantus* perswaded them without delay to accept them. For first (sayd he) since the strife is within our owne home, if you loose, you loose all that in this life can bee deare vnto you: if you winne, it will be a blouddy victorie with no profite, but the flattering in our selues that same badde humour of reuenge. Besides, it is like to stirre *Arcadia* vpon vs, which nowe, by vsing these persons well, maie bee brought to some amitie. Lastly, but especially, least the king and nobilitie of *Laconia* (with whom now we haue made a perfect peace) should hope, by occasion of this quarrell to ioyne the *Arcadians* with them, & so breake of the profitable agreement alreadie concluded. In summe, as in al deliberations (waying the profite of the good successe with the harme of the euill successe) you shall find this way most safe and honorable.

The *Helots* asmuch moued by his authoritie, as perswaded by his reasons, were 10 content therewith. Whervpon, *Palladius* tooke order that the *Arcadians* should presently march out of the towne, taking with them their prisoners, while the night with mutual diffidence might keepe them quiet, and ere day came they might be well on of their way, and so auoid those accidents which in late enemies, a looke, a word, or a particular mans quarrel might enge[n]der. This being on both sides concluded on, *Kalander* and *Clitophon*, who now (with infinite ioy did knowe each other) came to kisse the hands and feet of *Daiphantus*: *Clitophon* telling his father, how *Daiphantus* (not without danger to himselfe) had preserued him from the furious malice of the *Helots*: & euen that day going to conclude the peace (least in his absence he might receiue some hurt) he had taken him in his companie, and geuen him armour, vpon promise he should take the part of the *Helots*, which he had in this fight performed, little knowinig it was against his father: but (said *Clitophon*) here is he, who (as a father) hath new-begotten me, and (as a God) hath saued me from many

deaths, which already laid hold on me: which *Kalander* with teares of ioy acknowledged (besides his owne deliuerance) onely his benefite. But *Daiphantus*, who loued doing well for it selfe, and not for thanks, brake of those ceremonies, desiring to know how *Palladius* (for so he called *Musidorus*) was come into that companie, & what his present estate was: whereof receiuing a brief declaration of *Kalander*, he sent him word by *Clitophon*, that he should not as now come vnto him, because he held himselfe not so sure a master of the *Helots* minds, that he would aduenture him in their power, who was so well knowen with an vnfriendly acquaintance; but that he desired him to return with *Kalander*, whether also he within few daies (hauing dispatched himselfe of the *Helots*) would repaire. *Kalander* would needes kisse his hande againe for that promise, protesting, he would esteme his house more blessed the[n] a temple of the gods, if it had once receiued him. And then desiring pardon for *Argalus*[:] *Daiphantus* assured them that hee would die, but hee woulde bring him, (though till then kept in close prison, indeed for his safetie, the *Helots* being so animated against him as els hee could not haue liued) and so taking their leaue of him, *Kalander*, *Clitophon*, *Palladius* and the rest of the *Arcadians* swearing that they would no further in any sort molest the *Helots*, they straight way marched out of the towne, carying both their dead and wounded bodies with them; and by morning were alreadie within the limits of *Arcadia*.

CHAP. 7[.]

The articles of peace betwene the Lacedæmonians & Helots, 2 Daipha[n]tus his departure fro[m] the Helots with Argalus to Kalanders house. 3 The offer of a straunge Lady to Argalus, 4 his refusal, and 5 who she was.

He *Helots* of the other side shutting their gates, gaue them selues to burye their dead, to cure their woundes, and rest their weered bodies: till (the next day bestowing the chereful vse of the light vpon them) *Daiphantus* making a generall conuocation spake vnto them in this manner. We are first (said he) to thanke the Gods, that (further then wee had either cause to hope; or reason to imagine) haue diliuered vs out of this gulfe of daunger, wherein we were alredie swallowed. For all being lost, (had they had not directed, my return so iust as they did) it had bene too late to recouer that, which being had, we could not keep. And had I not happened to know one of the principall men among them, by which meanes the truce beganne betweene vs, you may easily conceiue, what little reason we haue to think, but that either by some supplie out of *Arcadia*, or from the Nobilitie of this Country (who would haue made fruites of wisdome grow out of this occasion,) wee should haue had our power

turned to ruine, our pride to repentance and sorow. but now the storme, as it fell out, so it ceased: and the error committed, in retaining *Clitophon* more hardly then his age or quarrel deserued, becomes a sharply learned experience, to vse in other times more moderation.

Now haue I to deliuer vnto you the conclusion between the Kings with the Nobilitie of *Lacedæmon*, and you; which is in all points as your selues desired: 1
aswell for that you would haue graunted, as for the assurance of what is graunted. The Townes and Fortes you presently haue, are still left vnto you, to be kept either with or without garrison, so as you alter not the lawes of the Countrie, and pay such dueties as the rest of the *Laconians* do. Your selues are made by publique decree, free men, and so capable both to giue and receiue voice in election of Magistrates. The distinction of names betweene *Helots* and *Lacedæmonians* to bee quite taken away, and all indifferently to enioy both names and priuiledges of *Laconians*. Your children to be brought vp with theirs in *Spartane* discipline: and so you (framing your selues to be good members of that estate) to bee hereafter fellowes, and no longer seruaunts. [W]hich conditions you see, cary in themselues no more contentation then assurance. For this is not a peace which is made with them, but this is a peace by which you are made of them. Lastly, a forgetfulnes decreed of all what is past, they shewing the[m]selues glad to haue so valiant men as you are, ioyned with them: so that you are to take mindes of peace, since the cause of war is finished; and as you hated them before like oppressours, so now to loue them as brothers; to take care of their estate because it is yours, and to labour by vertuous doing, that the posteritie may not repent your ioyning. But now one Article onely they stood vpon, which in the end I with your commissioners haue agreed vnto, that I should no more tarry here, mistaking perchance my humor, and thinking me as sedicious as I am young, or els it is the king *Amiclas* procuring, in respect that it was my il hap to kill his nephew *Eurileon*; but how soeuer it be, I haue condescended. But so will not wee cryed almost the whole assemblie, cou[n]celling one an other; rather to trye the vttermost euent, then to loose him by who[m] they had beene victorious. But he as well with generall orations, as particular dealing with the men of most credit, made them throughly see how necessary it was to preferr[e] such an opportunity before a vaine affection; but yet could not preuaile, til openly he sware, that he would (if at any time the *Lacedæmonians* brake this treatie) come back againe, and be their captaine.

So then after a few dayes, setting them in perfect order, hee tooke his leaue of 2
them, whose eyes bad him farwell with teares, & mouthes with kissing the places where he stept, and making temples vnto him as to a demi-God: thinking it beyond the degree of humanitie to haue a witt so farre ouergoing his age, and such dreadful terror

proceed from so excellent beutie. But he for his sake obtayned free pardon for *Argalus*, whom also (vppon oath neuer to beare armes against the Helots) he deliuered: and taking onely with him certaine principall Iewells of his owne, he would haue parted alone with *Argalus*, (whose countenaunce well shewed, while *Parthenia* was lost he counted not himselfe deliuered) but that the whole multitude would needs gard him into *Arcadia*. Where again leauing the[m] all to lament his departure, he by enquirie gotte to the wel-knowne house of *Kalander*: There was he receiued with louing ioye of *Kalander*, with ioyfull loue of *Palladius*, with humble (though doulful) demeanor of *Argalus* whom specially both he and *Palladius* regarded) with gratefull seruisablenes of *Clitophon*, and honourable admiration of all. For being now well veiwed to haue no haire of his face, to witnes him a man, who had done acts beyond the degree of a man, and to looke with a certaine almost bashfull kinde of modestie, as if hee feared the eyes of men, who was vnmooued with sight of the most horrible countenaunces of death; and as if nature had mistaken her woorke to haue a *Marses* heart in a *Cupides* bodye: All that beheld him (and al that might behold him, did behold him) made their eyes quicke messengers to their minds, that there they has seene the vttermost that in mankind might be seene. The like wonder *Palladius* had before stirred, but that *Daiphantus*, as younger and newer come, had gotten now the aduantage in the moyst and fickle impressioin of eye-sight. But while all men (sauing poore *Argalus*) made the ioy of their eyes speake for their harts towards *Daiphantus*: Fortune (that belike was bid to that banket, & ment then to play the good fellow) brought a pleasa[n]t aduenture among the[m].

It was that as they had newly dined, there came in to *Kalander* a messenger, 3
that brought him word, a young noble Lady, neere kinswoman to the
fair *Helen* Queene of *Corinth*; was come thether, and desired to be lodged in his
house. *Kalander* (most glad of such an occasion) went out, and all his other worthie
guests with him, sauing onely *Argalus*, who remained in his chamber, desirous that
this company were once broken vp, that he might goe in his solitarie quest
after *Parthenia*. But when they met this Lady; *Kalander* streight thought he sawe his
niece *Parthenia*, and was about in such familiar sorte to haue spoken vnto her: But
she in graue and honorable manner giuing him to vnderstand that he was mistaken, he
halfe ashamed, excused himselfe with the exceeding likenes was betwene them,
though indeede it seemed that his Lady was of the more pure and daintie complexion;
shee said, it might very well be, hauing bene many times taken one for an other. But
assoone as she was brought into the house, before she would rest, she desired to
speake with *Argalus* publickly, who she heard was in the house. *Argalus* came in
hastely, and as hastelie thought as *Kalander* had done, with sodaine chaunges of ioye
into sorrow. But she whe[n] she had stayd their thoughts with telling them her name,
and qualitie in this sort spake vnto him. My Lord *Argalus*, sayd she, being of late left

in the court of Queene *Helen* of *Corinth*, as chiefe in her absence (she being vpo[n] some occasion gone the[n]ce) there came vnto me the Lady *Parthenia*, so disguysed, as I thinke Greece hath nothing so oughly to behold. For my part, it was many dayes, before with vehement oathes, and some good proofes, she could make me thinke that she was *Parthenia*. Yet at last finding certainly it was she, and greatly pitying her misfortune, so much the more, as that all men had euer told me, (as now you doo) of the great likenes betweene vs, I tooke the best care I could of her and of her vnderstood the whole tragicall historie of her vnderdeserued aduenture: and therewithall, of that most noble constancie in you my Lord *Argalus*: which whosoever loues not, shewes himselfe to be a hater of vertue, and vnworthie to liue in the societie of mankind. But no outward cherishing could salue the inward sore of her minde, but a fewe dayes since shee died: before her death earnestly disiring, and perswading me, to thinke of no husbände but of you; as of the onely man in the world worthie to be loued; with-all, she gaue me this Ring to deliuer you; desiring you, & by the authoritie of loue co[m]maunding you, that the affection you bare her you should turne to me: assuring you, that nothing can please her soule more, then to see you and me matched together. Now my L. though this office be not (perchance) sutable to my estate nor sex, who shuld rather looke to be desired; yet, an extraordinarie desert requires an extraordinarie proceeding: and therefore I am come (with faithfull loue built vpo[n] your worthines) to offer my self, & to beseech you to accept the offer: & if these noble ge[n]tleme[n] prese[n]t will say it is great folly, let the[m] withal, say it is great loue. And then she staid, earnestly attending *Argalus* his answer, who (first making most hartie sighes do such obsequies as he could, to *Parthenia*) thus answered her.

Madame (said he) infinitely bound am I vnto you, for this, no more rare, then 4
noble courtesie; but most bound for the goodnes I perceiue you shewed to the
lady *Parthenia*, (with that the teares ranne downe his eyes; but he followed on) and as
much as so vnfortunat a man, fitte to be the spectacle of miserie, can doo you seruice;
determine you haue made a purchase of a slaue (while I liue) neuer to fayle you. But
this great matter you propose vnto me, wherein I am not so blind, as not to see what
happines it should be vnto mee; Excellent Ladie, know, that if my hart were mine to
giue, you before al other, should haue it; but *Parthenias* it is, though dead: there I
began, there I end all matter of affection: I hope I shall not long tarry after her, with
whose beautie if I had onely been in loue, I should be so with you, who haue the same
beautie: but it was *Parthenias* selfe I loued, and loue; which no likenes can make one,
no co[m]maundement dissolue, no foulnes defile, nor no death finish. And shall I
receiue (said she) such disgrace, as to be refused? Noble Ladie (said he) let not that
harde word be vsed; who know your exceeding worthinesse farre beyond my desert:
but it is onely happinesse I refuse, since of the onely happines I could and can desire, I

am refused.

He had scarce spoken those words, when she ranne to him, and imbrasing him, 5
Why then *Argalus* (saide she) take thy *Parthenia*; and *Parthenia* it was indeede.
But because sorow forbad him too soon to beleeeue, she told him the trueth, with all
circumstances; how being parted alone, meaning to die in some solitarie place, as she
happed to make her complaint, the Queen *Helen* of *Corinth* (who likewise felt her part
of miseries) being then walking alone in that lo[n]ely place, heard her, and neuer left,
till she had knowen the whole discourse. Which the noble Queene greatly pittying, she
sent her to a Physition of hers, the most excellent man in the worlde, in hope he could
helpe her: which in such sorte as they saw perfourmed, and she taking with her of the
Queenes seruaunts, thought yet to make this triall, whether he would quickly forget
his true *Parthenia*, or no. Her speach was confirmed by the *Corinthian* Gentlemen,
who before had kept her counsell, and *Argalus* easily perswaded to what more then
ten thousand yeares of life he desired: and *Kalander* would needes haue the mariage
celebrated in his house, principallie the longer to hold his deare gwestes, towards
whom he was now (besides his owne habite of hospitalitie) carried with loue and
dutie: & therefore omitted no seruice that his wit could inuent, and his power minister.

CHAP. 8.

*The aduentures 1 first of Musidorus, 2 then of Pyrocles since
their shipwracke, to their meeting. 3 The mariage of Ar-
galus and Parthenia.*

Vt no waie he sawe he could so much pleasure them, as by leauing the
two friends alone, who being

shruncke aside to the banqueting house where the pictures were; 1
there *Palladius* recounted vnto him, that after they had both
aba[n]doned the burning ship (& either of them taken some thing vnder
him the better to supporte him to the shore) he knew not how, but either with ouer-
labouring in the fight and sodaine colde, or the too much receauing of salt water, he
was past himselfe: but yet holding fast (as the nature of dying men is to doo) the chest
that was vnder him, he was cast on the sandes, where he was taken vp by a couple of
Shepherds, and by them brought to life againe, and kept from drowning him selfe,
when he despaired of his safetie. How after hauing failed to take him into the fisher
boate, he had by the Shepherds persuasion come to this Gentlemans house; where
being daungerouslie sicke, he had yeelded to seeke the recouery of health, onely for
that he might the sooner go seeke the deliuerie of *Pyrocles*: to which

purpose *Kalander* by some friends of his in *Messenia*, had alreadie set a ship or two abroad, when this accident of *Clitophons* taking had so blessedly procured their meeting. The[n] did he set foorth vnto him the noble entertainment and careful cherishing of *Kalander* towards him, & so vpon occasio[n] of the pictures present deliuered with the franknesse of a friends tongue, as neere as he could, word by word what *Kalander* had told him touching the strange storie (with al the particularities belonging) of *Arcadia*, which did in many sortes so delight *Pyrocles* to heare; that he would needs haue much of it againe repeated, and was not contented till *Kalander* him selfe had answered him diuers questions.

But first at *Musidorus* request, though in brief man[n]er, his mind much running 2 vpo[n] the strange storie of *Arcadia*, he did declare by what course of adue[n]tures he was come to make vp their mutuall happinesse in meeting. When (cosin, said he) we had stript our selues, and were both leapt into the Sea, and swom a little toward the shoare, I found by reason of some wounds I had, that I should not be able to get the lande, and therefore turned backe againe to the mast of the shippe, where you found me, assuring my selfe, that if you came aliue to the shore, you would seeke me; if you were lost, as I thought it as good to perishe as to liue, so that place as good to perish in as an other. There I found my sworde among some of the shrowds, wishing (I must confesse) if I died, to be found with that in my hand, and withall wauing it about my head, that saylers by it might haue the better glimpse of me. There you missing me, I was taken vp by Pyrates, who putting me vnder boorde prisoner, presentlie sett vppon another shippe, and mainteining a long fight, in the ende, put them all to the sworde. Amongst whom I might heare them greatlie prayse one younge man, who fought most valiantlie, whom (as loue is carefull, and misfortune subiect to doubtfulnes) I thought certainly to be you. And so holding you as dead, from that time till the time I sawe you, in trueth I sought nothing more then a noble ende, which perchance made me more hardie then otherwise I would haue bene. Triall whereof came within two dayes after: for the Kinges of *Lacedæmon* hauing sett out some Galleys, vnder the charge of one of their Nephews to skowre the Sea of the Pyrates, they met with vs, where our Captaine wanting men, was driuen to arme some of his prisoners, with promise of libertie for well fighting: among whom I was one, and being boarded by the Admirall, it was my fortune to kil *Eurileon* the Kings nephew: but in the end they preuailed, & we were all take prisoners: I not caring much what became of me (onely keeping the name of *Daiphantus*, according to the resolution you know is betweene vs,) but beyng laid in the iayle of *Tenaria*, with speciall hate to me for the death of *Eurileon*, the popular sort of that towne conspired with the *Helots*, and so by night opened them the gates; where entring and killing all of the gentle and riche faction, for honestie sake brake open all prisons, and so deliuered me; and I mooued with gratefulnessse, and encouraged with carelesnesse of life, so behaued my selfe in

some conflictes they had in fewe dayes, that they barbarouslie thinking vnsensible wonders of mee, and withall so much they better trusting mee, as they heard I was hated of the Kinge of *Lacedæmon*, (their chiefe Captayne beyng slaine as you knowe by the noble *Argalus*, who helped thereunto by his perswasion) hauing borne a great affection vnto me, and to auoyde the dangerous emulation whiche grewe among the chiefe, who should haue the place, and all so affected, as rather to haue a straunger then a competitour, they elected mee, (God wotte little prowde of that dignitie,) restoring vnto mee such thinges of mine as being taken first by the pyrates, and then by the *Lacedæmonians*, they had gotten in the sacke of the towne. Now being in it, so good was my successe with manie victories, that I made a peace for them to their owne liking, the verie daie that you deliuered *Clitophon*, whom I with much adoo had preserued. And in my peace the King *Amiclas* of *Lacedæmon* would needes haue mee bannished, and depriued of the dignitie whereunto I was exalted : which (and you may see howe much you are bounde to mee) for your sake I was content to suffer, a newe hope rising in mee, that you were not dead: and so meaning to trauaile ouer the worlde to seeke you; and now here (my deere *Musidorus*) you haue mee. And with that (embracing and kisseing each other) they called *Kalander*, of whom *Daiphantus* desired to heare the full storie, which before hee had recounted to *Palladius*, and to see the letter of *Philanax*, which hee read and well marked.

But within some daies after, the marriage betweene *Argalus* and the faire *Parthenia* beyng to be celebrated, *Daiphantus* and *Palladius* selling some of their iewels, furnished themselues of very faire apparell, meaning to doo honour to their louing hoste; who as much for their sakes, as for the marriage, set foorth each thing in most gorgeous manner. But all the cost bestowed did not so much enrich, nor all the fine deckinges so much beautifie, nor all the daintie deuises so much delight, as the fairenesse of *Parthenia*, the pearle of all the maydes of *Mantiniæa*: who as shee went to the Temple to bee married, her eyes themselues seemed a temple, wherein loue and beautie were married: her lippes, although they were kepte close with modest silence, yet with a pretie kinde of naturall swelling, they seemed to inuite the guesstes that lookt on them; her cheekes blushing, and withal when shee was spoken vnto, a little smilyng, were like roses, when their leaues are with a little breath stirred : her hayre being layed at the full length downe her backe, bare shewe as if the voward fayled, yet that would conquere. *Daiphantus* marking her, O *Iupiter* (said he speaking to *Palladius*) how happens it, that Beautie is onely confined to *Arcadia*? But *Palladius* not greatly attending his speach, some daies were continued in the solemnising the marriage, with al conceipts that might deliuer delight to mens fancies.

CHAP. 9.

[1] Pyrocles *his inclination to loue.* 2 *His, and Musidorus
disputation thereabouts* 3 *broken of by Kalander.*

Vt such a chaunge was growen in *Daiphantus*, that (as if cheerefulnesse
had bene tediousnesse, and good

entertainment were turnd to discourtesie) he would euer get him
selfe alone, though almost when he was in companie he was alone, 1
so little attention he gaue to any that spake vnto him: euen the colour
and figure of his face began to receaue some alteration; which he shewed little to
heede: but euerie morning earlie going abroad, either to the garden, or to some woods
towards the desert, it seemed his only comfort was to be without a co[m]forter. But
long it could not be hid from *Palladius*, whom true loue made redy to marke, & long
knowledge able to marke; & therefore being now grow[n]e weary of his abode
in *Arcadia*, hauing informed himselfe fully of the strength & riches of the cou[n]try,
of the nature of the people, and manner of their lawes: and, seing the courte could not
be visited, prohibited to all men, but to certaine sheapheardish people, he greatly
desired a speedy returne to his own countrie, after the many mazes of fortune he had
troden. But perceauing this great alteration in his friend, he thought first to breake
with him thereof, and then to hasten his returne; whereto he founde him but smally
enclined: whereupon one day taking him alone with certaine graces and countenances,
as if he were disputing with the trees, began in this manner to say vnto him.

[]A mind wel trayned and long exercised in vertue (my sweete and worthy cosin)
doth not easily chaunge any course it

once vndertakes, but vpon well grounded & well wayed causes. For being witnes 2
to it selfe of his owne inward good, it findes nothing without it of so high a price,
for which it should be altered. Euen the very countenance and behaiour of such a
man doth shew forth Images of the same constancy, by maintaining a right harmonic
betwixt it and the inward good, in yeelding it selfe sutable to the vertuous resolution
of the minde. This speech I direct to you (noble friend *Pyrocles*) the excellencie of
whose minde and well chosen course in vertue, if I doo not sufficiently know, hauing
scene such rare demonstrations of it, it is my weakenes, and not your vnworthines.
But as in deede I know it, and knowing it, most dearely loue both it, and him that hath
it; so must I needs saye, that since our late comming into this country, I haue marked
in you, I will not say an alteratio[n], but a relenting truely, & a slacking of the maine
career, you had so notably begon, & almost performed; and that in such sorte, as I
cannot finde sufficient reason in my great loue toward you how to allow it; for (to
leaue of other secreter arguments which my acquaintaunce with you makes me easily
finde) this in effect to any manne may be manyfest, that whereas you were wont in all
places you came, to giue your selfe vehemently to the knowledge of those thinges
which might better your minde; to seeke the familiaritie of excellent men in learning

and souldiery : and lastly, to put all these thinges in praftise both by continuall wise proceedinge, and worthie enterprises, as occasion fell for them; you now leaue all these things vndone: you let your minde fal a sleepe: beside your countenance troubled (which surely comes not of vertue; for vertue like the cleare heauen, is without cloudes) and lastly you subiect your selfe to solitarines, the slye enimie, that doth most separate a man from well doing. *Pyrocles* minde was all this while so fixed vpon another deuotion, that he no more attentiuely marked his friends discourse, then the childe that hath leaue to playe, markes the last part of his lesson; or the diligent Pilot in a daungerous tempest doth attend the vnskilful words of a passinger: yet the very sound having imprinted the general point of his speech in his hart, pierced with any mislike of so deerely an esteemed friend, and desirous by degrees to bring him to a gentler consideration of him, with a shamefast looke (witnessing he rather could not helpe, then did not know his fault) answered him to this purpose.

Excellent *Musidorus*, in the praise you gaue me in the beginning of your spech, I easily acknowledge the force of your good will vnto mee, for neither coulde you haue thought so well of me, if extremitie of loue had not made your iudgement partiall, nor you could haue loued me so intierlie, if you had not beene apt to make so great (though vnderdeserued) iudgements of me; and euen so must I say to those imperfections, to which though I haue euer through weaknes been subiect, yet you by the daily me[n]ding of your mind haue of late bin able to looke into them, which before you could not discern; so that the change you speake of, falles not out by my impairing, but by your betring. And yet vnder the leaue of your better iudgement, I must needes say thus much, my deere cosin, that I find not my selfe wholy to be condemned, because I do not with continuall vehemecy folow those knowledges, which you call the bettering of my minde; for both the minde it selfe must (like other thinges) sometimes be vn bent, or else it will be either weakned, or broken: And these knowledges, as they are of good vse, so are they not all the minde may stretch it selfe vnto: who knowes whether I feede not my minde with higher thoughts? Trulie as I know not all the particularities, so yet I see the bounds of all these knowledges: but the workings of the minde I finde much more infinite, then can be led vnto by the eye, or imagined by any, that distract their thoughts without themselues. And in such contemplation, or as I thinke more excellent, I enioye my solitarines; and my solitarines perchaunce is the nurse of these contemplations. Eagles we see fly alone; and they are but sheepe, which alwaies heard together; co[n]demne not therefore my minde somtime to enioy it selfe; nor blame not the taking of such times as serue most fitte for it. And alas, deere *Musidorus*, if I be sadde, who knowes better then you the iust causes I haue of sadnes? And here *Pyrocles* sodainly stopped, like a man vnsatisfied in himselfe, though his witte might wel haue serued to haue satisfied another. And so looking with a countenance, as though he desired he should know his minde without hearing him speake, and yet desirous to speake, to breath out some part of his inward euill, sending againe new blood to his face, he continued his speach

in this manner. And Lord (dere cosin, said he) doth not the pleasauntnes of this place carry in it selfe sufficient reward for any time lost in it? Do you not see how all things conspire together to make this cou[n]try a heauenly dwelling? Do you not see the grasse how in colour they excell the Emeralds, euerie one striuing to passe his fellow, and yet they are all kept of an equal height? And see you not the rest of these beautifull flowers, each of which would require a mans wit to know, and his life to expresse? Do not these stately trees seeme to maintaine their flourishing olde age with the onely happines of their seat, being clothed with a continuall spring, because no beautie here should euer fade? Doth not the aire breath health, which the Birds (delightfull both to eare and eye) do dayly solemnize with the sweet co[n]sent of their voyces? Is not euery eccho therof a perfect Musicke? and these fresh and delightful brookes how slowly they slide away, as loth to leaue the company of so many things vnited in perfection? and with how sweete a murmure they lament their forced departure? Certainelie, certainly, cosin, it must needes be that some Goddesse enhabiteth this Region, who is the soule of this soile: for neither is any, lesse then a Goddesse, worthie to be shrined in such a heap of pleasures: nor any lesse the a Goddesse, could haue made it so perfect a plotte of the celestiaall dwellings. And so ended with a deep sigh, rufully casting his eye vpon *Musidorus*, as more desirous of pittie the[n] pleading. But *Musidorus* had all this while helde his looke fixed vpon *Pyrocles* countenance; and with no lesse louing attention marked how his words proceeded from him: but in both these he perceiued such strange diuersities, that they rather increased new doubts, then gaue him ground to settle any iudgement: for, besides his eyes sometimes euen great with teares, the oft cha[n]ging of his colour, with a kind of shaking vnstayednes ouer all his body, he might see in his countenance some great determinatio[n] mixed with feare; and might perceiue in him store of thoughts, rather stirred then digested; his words interrupted continually with sighes (which serued as a burthen to each sentence) and the tenor of his speech (though of his wo[n]ted phrase) not knit together to one consta[n]t end, but rather dissolued in it selfe, as the vehemencie of the inwarde passion preuayled: which made *Musidorus* frame his aunswere nearest to that humor, which should soonest put out the secret. For, hauing in the beginning of *Pyrocles* speech which defe[n]ded his solitarines, framed in his minde a replie against it, in the praise of honourable action, in shewing that such a kind of co[n]teplatio[n] is but a glorious title to idlenes; that in actio[n] a man did not onely better himself, but benefit others; that the gods would not haue deliuered a soule into the body, which hath armes & legges, only instrume[n]ts of doing, but that it wer inte[n]ded the mind should imploy the[m] & that the mind should best know his own good or euill, by praftise: which knowledge was the onely way to increase the one, and correct the other: besides many other argumentes, which the plentifulnesse of the matter yeilded to the sharpnes of his wit. When he found *Pyrocles* leaue that, and fall into such an affected praising of the place, he left it likewise, and ioyned with him therein: because he found him in that humor vtter more

store of passion; and euen thus kindly embrasing him, he said: Your words are such (noble cousin) so sweetly and strongly handled in the praise of solitarinesse, as they would make me likewise yeeld my selfe vp into it, but that the same words make me know, it is more pleasant to enioy the companie of him that can speake such words, then by such wordes to be perswaded to follow solitarines. And euen so doo I giue you leaue (sweet *Pyrocles*) euer to defend solitarines; so long, as to defende it, you euer keep companie. But I maruell at the excessiue praises you giue to this countrie; in trueth it is not vnpleasant: but yet if you would returne into Macedon, you should see either many heauens, or find this no more then earthly. And eue[n] *Tempe* in my *Thessalia*, (where you & I to my great happinesse were brought vp together) is nothing inferiour vnto it. But I think you will make me see, that the vigor of your witte can shew it selfe in any subiect: or els you feede sometimes your solitarines with the conceites of the Poets, whose liberall pennes can as easilie trauaile ouer mountaines, as molehils: and so like wel disposed men, set vp euery thing to the highest note; especially, when they put such words in the mouths of one of these fantasticall mind-infected people, that children & Musitia[n]s cal Louers. This word, Louer, did no lesse pearce poore *Pyrocles*, then the right tune of musicke toucheth him that is sick of the *Tarantula*. There was not one part of his body, that did not feele a sodaine motion, while his hart with panting, seemed to daunce to the sounde of that word; yet after some pause (lifting vp his eyes a litle from the ground, and yet not daring to place them in the eyes of *Musidorus*) armed with the verie cou[n]tenance of the poore prisoner at the barr, whose aunswere is nothing but guiltie: with much a do he brought forth this question. And alas, saide he, deare cosin, what if I be not so much the Poet (the freedome of whose penne canne exercise it selfe in any thing) as euen that miserable subiect of his conning, whereof you speake ? Now the eternall Gods forbid (mainely cryed out *Musidorus*) that euer my eare should be poysoned with so euill newes of you. O let me neuer know that any base affectio[n] shuld get any Lordship in your thoughts. But as he was speaking more, *Kalander* came, and brake of their discourse, with inuiting the[m] to the hunting of a goodly stagge, which beeing harbored in a wood therby, he hoped would make them good sporte, and driue away some part of *Daiphantus* melancholy. They condescended, & so going to their lodgings, furnished the[m] selues as liked them *Daiphantus* writing a fevv vvordes which he left in a sealed letter against their returne.

CHAP. 10.

1 *Kalanders hunting.* 2 *Daiphantus his close departure,* 3 *and letter* 4 *Palladius his care,* and 5 *quest after him,* 6 *accompanied with Clitophon.* 7 *His finding and taking on Amphilus his armor* 8 *Their encounter*

with *Queene Helens attendants*. 9 *Her mistaking Pal-*
ladius.

Then went they together abroad, the good *Kalander* entertaining the[m], with pleasaunt discoursing, howe well he loued the sporte of hunting vwhen he was a young man, how much in the comparison thereof he disdained all chamber delights; that the Sunne (how great a iornie soeuer he had to make) could neuer preuent him with earlines, nor the Moone (with her sober countenance) disswade him from watching till midnight for the deeres feeding[.] O, saide he, you will neuer liue to my age, without you kepe your selues in breath with exercise, and in hart with ioyfullnes: too much thinking doth consume the spirits: & oft it falles out, that while one thinkes too much of his doing, he leaues to doe the effect of his thinking. Then spared he not to remember how much *Arcadia* was chaunged since his youth : actiuitie & good fellowship being nothing in the price it was then held in, but according to the nature of the old growing world, still worse & worse. The[n] would he tell them stories of such gallaunts as he had knowen: and so with pleasant company beguiled the times hast, and shortned the wayes length, till they came to the side of the wood, where the houndes were in couples staying their comming, but with a whining Accent crauing libertie: many of them in colour and marks so resembling, that it showed they were of one kinde. The huntsmen handsomely attired in their greene liueries, as though they were children of Sommer, with staues in their hands to beat the guiltlesse earth, when the houndes were at a fault, and with hornes about their neckes to sounde an alarum vpon a sillie fugitiue. The houndes were straight vncoupled, and ere long the Stagge thought it better to trust the nimblenes of his feete, then to the slender fortification of his lodging: but euen his feete betrayed him; for howsoeuer they went, they themselues vttered themselues to the sent of their enimies; who one taking it of an other, and sometimes beleeuing the windes aduertisements, sometimes the view of (their faithfull councillors) the huntsmen, with open mouthes then denounced warre, when the warre was already begun. Their crie being composed of so well sorted mouthes, that any man would perceiue therein some kind of proportion, but the skilfull woodmen did finde a musick. Then delight and varietie of opinion drew the horsmen sundrie wayes; yet cheering their houndes with voyce and horn, kept still (as it were) together. The wood seemed to conspire with them against his own citzens, dispersing their noise through all his quarters; and euen the Nymph *Echo* left to bewayle the losse of *Narcissus*, and became a hunter. But the Stagge was in the end so hotly pursued, that (leauing his flight) he was driuen to make courage of despaire; & so turning his head, made the hounds (with change of speech) to testifie that he was at bay: as if from hotte pursuite of their enimie, they were sodainly come to a parley.

But *Kalander* (by his skill of coasting the Countrey) was among the first that came in to the besiged Deere; whom when some of the younger sort would haue killed with

their swordes, he woulde not suffer: but with a Crossebowe sent a death to the poore beast, who with teares shewed the vnkindnesse he tooke of mans crueltie.

But by the time that the whole companie was assembled, and that the Stagge had bestowed himselfe liberally among

them that had killed him, *Daiphantus* was mist, for whom *Palladius* carefully 2
enquiring, no newes could be giuen him, but by one that sayd, he thought he was returned home; for that he markt him, in the chiefe of the hunting, take a by-way, which might lead to *Kalanders* house. That answer for the time satisfying, and they hauing perfourmed all dueties, as well for the Stagges funeral, as the hounds triumph, they returned: some talking of the fatnes of the Deeres bodie; some of the fairenes of his head; some of the hounds cunning; some of their speed; and some of their cry: til comming home (about the time that the candle begins to inherit the Suns office) they found *Daiphantus* was not to bee found. Whereat *Palladius* greatly maruailing, and a day or two passing, while neither search nor inquirie could help him to knowledge, at last he lighted vpon the letter, which *Pyrocles* had written before hee went a hunting, and left in his studie among other of his writings. The letter was directed to *Palladius* himselfe, and conteyned these words.

My onely friend, violence of loue leades me into such a course, wherof your 3
knowledge may much more vexe you, then help me. Therefore pardon my concealing it from you, since: if I wrong you, it is in respect I beare you. Returne into *Thessalia*, I pray you, as full of good fortune, as I am of desire: and if I liue, I will in short time follow you; if I die, loue my memorie.

This was all, and this *Palladius* read twice or thrise ouer,

Ah (said he) *Pyrocles*, vvhat meanes this alteratio[n]? vvhat haue I deserued of 4
thee, to be thus banished of thy counsels? Heretofore I haue accused the sea, condemned the Pyrats, and hated my euill fortune, that depriued me of thee; But now thy self is the sea, vvwhich drounes my comfort, thy selfe is the Pirat that robbes thy selfe of me: Thy owne vvill becomes my euill fortune. The[n] turned he his thoughts to al forms of ghesses that might light vpon the purpose and course of *Pyrocles*: for he

was not so sure by his wordes, that it was loue, as he was doubtful where the loue was. One time he thought, some beautie in *Laconia* had layed hold of his eyes; an other time he feared, that it might be *Parthenias* excellencie, which had broken the bands of all former resolution. But the more he thought, the more he knew not what to thinke, armies of obiections rising against any accepted opinion.

Then as carefull he was what to doo himselfe: at length determined, neuer to leaue seeking him, till his search

should be either by meeting acco[m]plished, or by death ended. Therefore (for all the vnkindnesse bearing tender respect, that his friends secrete determination should be kept from any suspition in others) he went to *Kalander*, and told him, that he had receaued a message from his friend, by which he vnderstood he was gone backe againe into *Laconia*, about some matters greatly importing the poore men, whose protection he had vndertaken, and that it was in any sorte fit for him, to follow him, but in such priuate wise, as not to be knowne, and that therefore he would as then bid him farewell: arming him selfe in a blacke armour, as either a badge, or prognostication of his mind: and taking onely with him good store of monie, and a fewe choise iewels, leauing the greatest number of them, & most of his apparell with *Kalander*: which he did partly to giue the more cause to *Kalander* to expect their return, & so to be the lesse curiously inquisitiue after the[m]: and partly to leaue those honorable thanks vnto him, for his charge & kindnes, which he knew he would no other way receaue. The good old man hauing neither reason to dissuade, nor hope to persuade, receaued the things, with mind of a keeper, not of an owner; but before he went, desired he might haue the happines, fully to know what they were: which he said, he had euer till then delaid, fearing to be any way importune: but now he could not be so much anemie to his desires as any longer to imprison the[m] in silence. *Palladius* tolde him that the matter was not so secrete, but that so worthie a friend deserued the knowledge, and shuld haue it as soone as he might speak with his frie[n]d: without whose consent (because their promise bound him otherwise) he could not reueale it: but bad him hold for most assured, that if they liued but a while, he should find that they which bare the names of *Daipha[n]tus* and *Palladius*, would giue him & his cause to thinke his noble courtesie wel imploied. *Kala[n]der* would presse him no further: but desiring that he might haue leaue to go, or at least to sende his sonne and seruauents with him, *Palladius* brake of all ceremonies, by telling him; his case stood so, that his greatest fauour should be in making lest adoo of his parting. Wherewith *Kalander* knowing it to be more cumber then courtesie, to striue, abstained from further vrging him, but not from hartie mourning the losse of so sweet a conuersation.

Onely *Clitophon* by vehement importunitie obteyned to go

with him, to come againe to *Daiphantus*, whom he named and accou[n]ted his Lord. And in such priuate guise departed *Palladius*, though hauing a companio[n] to talke with all, yet talking much more with vnkindnesse. And first they went to *Mantinæa*; whereof because *Parthenia* was, he suspected there might be some cause of his abode. But finding there no newes of him he went to *Tegæa*, *Ripa*, *Enispæ*, *Stimphalus*, and *Pheneus*, famous for the poisonous *Stygian* water, and through all the rest of *Arcadia*, making their eyes, their eares, and their tongue serue almost for nothing, but that enquirie. But they could know nothing but that in none of those places he was knowne. And so went they,

making one place succeed to an other, in like vncertaintie to their search, manie times encountring strange adue[n]tures, worthy to be registred in the roulles of fame; but this may not be omitted. As they past in a pleasant valley, (of either side

of which high hils lifted vp their beetle-browes, as if they would ouer looke the 7
pleasantnes of their vnder-prospect) they were by the daintines of the place, & the wearines of the[m]selues, inuited to light fro[m] their horses; & pulling of their bits, that they might something refresh their mouths vpon the grasse (which plentifully grewe, brought vp vnder the care of those wel shading trees,) they the[m]selues laid the[m] downe hard by the murmuring musicke of certain waters, which spouted out of the side of the hils, and in the bottome of the valley, made of many springs a pretie brooke, like a common-wealth of many families: but when they had a while harkened to the persuasion of sleepe, they rose, and walkt onward in that shadie place, till *Clitophon* espied a peece of armour, & not far of an other peece: and so the sight of one peece teaching him to looke for more, he at length found all, with headpeece & shield, by the deuse whereof, which was he streight knew it to be the armour of his cousin, the noble *Amphialus*. Wherupon (fearing some inco[n]uenience hapned vnto him) he told both his doubt, and his cause of doubt to *Palladius*, who (considering therof) thought best to make no longer stay, but to follow on: least perchance some viole[n]ce were offered to so worthy a Knight, whom the fame of the world seemed to set in ballance with any Knight liuing. Yet with a sodaine conceipt, hauing long borne great honour to the name of *Amphialus*, *Palladius* thought best to take that armour, thinking thereby to learne by them that should know that armour, some newes of *Amphialus*, & yet not hinder him in the search of *Daiphantus* too. So he by the help of *Clitophon* quickly put on that armour, whereof there was no one piece wanting, though hacked in some places, bewraying some fight not long since passed. It was some-thing too great, but yet serued well enough.

And so getting on their horses, they trauailed but a little way, when in opening of the mouth of the valley into a faire field,

they met with a coach drawne with foure milke-white horses, furnished all in 8
blacke, with a black a more boy vpo[n] euery horse, they al apparelled in white, the coach it self very richly furnished in black & white. But before they could come so neere as to discerne what was within, there came running vpo[n] them aboute a dozen horsmen, who cried to the[m] to yeeld the[m]selues prisoners, or els they should die. But *Palladius* not accustomed to grant ouer the possessio[n] of him self vpon so vniust titles, with sword drawne gaue them so rude an answer, that diuers of the[m] neuer had breath to reply again: for being wel backt by *Clitophon* & hauing an excelle[n]t horse vnder him, when he was ouerprest by some, he auoided them, and ere th'other thought of it, punished in him his fellowes faults: and so, ether with

cunning or with force, or rather with a cunning force, left none of them either liuing, or able to make his life serue to others hurt. Which being done, he approched the coach, assuring the black boies they should haue no hurt, who were els readie to haue run away, & looking into the coach, he fou[n]d in the one end a Lady of great beaulie, & such a beautie, as shewed forth the beames both of wisdome & good nature, but al as much darkened, as might be, with sorow. In the other, two Ladies, (who by their demeanure shewed well, they were but her seruants) holding before them a picture; in which was a goodly Ge[n]tleman (whom he knew not) painted, hauing in their faces a certaine waiting sorrow, their eies being infected with their mistres weeping.

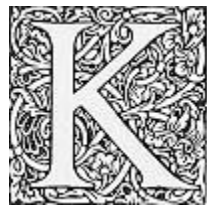
But the chiefe Ladie hauing not so much as once heard the

noise of this coflict (so had sorow closed vp al the entries of her mind, & loue 9
tied her se[n]ces to that beloued picture) now the shadow of him falling vpo[n]
the picture made her cast vp her eie, and seeing the armour which too wel she knew,
thinking him to be *Amphialus* the Lord of her desires, (bloud coming more freely into
her cheekes, as though it would be bold, & yet there growing new againe pale for
feare) with a pitiful looke (like one vniustly conde[m]ned) My Lord *Amphialus* (said
she) you haue enough punished me: it is time for cruelty to leaue you, & euil fortune
me; if not I pray you, (& to graunt, my praier fitter time nor place you can haue)
accomplish the one euen now, & finish the other. With that, sorrow impatient to be
slowly vttered in her ofte staying speeches, poured it self so fast in teares,
that *Palladius* could not hold her longer in error, but pulling of his helmet, Madame
(said he) I perceau you mistake me: I am a stranger in these parts, set vpon (without
any cause giue[n] by me) by some of your seruants, whom because I haue in my iust
defence euill entreated, I came to make my excuse to you, whom seing such as I doo, I
find greater cause, why I should craue pardon of you. When she saw his face, & heard
his speech, she looked out of the coach, and seing her men, some slaine, some lying
vnder their dead horses, and striuing to get from vnder them, without making more
account of the matter, Truely (said she) they are well serued that durst lift vp their
armes against that armour. But Sir Knight, (said she) I pray you tell me, how come
you by this armour? for if it be by the death of him that owed it, then haue I more to
say vnto you. *Palladius* assured her it was not so; telling her the true manner how he
found it. It is like enough (said she) for that agrees with the manner he hath lately
vsed. But I beseech you Sir (said she) since your prowes hath bereft me of my
co[m]pany: let it yet so farre heale the woundes it selfe hath giuen, as to garde me to
the next towne. How great so euer my businesse be fayre Ladie (said he) it shall
willingly yeeld to so noble a cause: But first euen by the fauour you beare to the
Lorde of this noble armour, I coniure you to tell me the storie of your fortune herein,
lest hereafter when the image of so excellent a Ladie in so straunge a plight come
before mine eyes, I condemne my selfe of want of consideration in not hauing
demaunded thus much. Neither aske I it without protestation, that wherein my sworde

and faith may auaille you, they shall binde themselues to your seruice. Your coniuration, fayre Knight (said she) is too strong for my poore spirite to disobey, and that shall make me (without any other hope, my ruine being but by one vnrelieueable) to graunt your wil herein: and to say the truth, a straunge nicenesse were it in me to refraine that from the eares of a person representing so much worthinesse, which I am glad euen to rockes and woods to vtter.

CHAP. 11.

The story of Queene Helen 2 Philoxenus her suiter 3 Amphialus an intercessor for his friende. 4 His praises, 5 birth, and 6 education . 7 Her love wonne to himselfe 8 His refusall and departure 9 Philoxenus wronge-rage against him. 10 Their fight. 11 The death of sonne and father. 12 Amphialus his sorrow and detestation of the Queene. 13 A new onset on Palladius for Amphialus his Armour : 14 whose grieffe is amplified by meeting his dead frends dog. 15 Palladius his parting with Helen and Clitophon.



Now you then that my name is *Helen*, Queene by birth : and hetherto possession of the faire Citie and territorie of *Corinth*. I can say no more of my selfe, but beloued of my people: and may iustly say, beloued, since they are content to beare with my absence, and folly. But I being left by my fathers death, and accepted by my people, in the highest degree, that countrie could receiue; assoone, or rather, before that my age was ripe for it; my court quickly swarmed full of suiters; some perchance louing my state, others my person, but once I know all of them, howsoeuer my possessions were in their harts, my beauty (such as it is) was in their mouthes; many strangers of princely and noble blood, and all of mine owne country, to whom ether birth or vertue gaue courage to auowe so high a desire.

Among the rest, or rather before the rest, was the Lord *Philoxenus*, sonne and heire to the

vertuous noble man *Timotheus* : which *Timotheus* was a man both in power, riches, parentage, and (which passed all these) goodnes, and (which followed all these) loue of the people, beyond any of the great men of my countrie. Now this sonne of his I must say truly, not vnworthy of such a father, bending himselfe by all meanes of seruiseablenes to mee, and setting foorth of himselfe to win my fauour, wan thus farre of mee, that in truth I lesse misliked him then any of the rest: which in some

proportion my countenance deliuered vnto him. Though I must protest it was a verie false embassadour, if it deliuered at all any affection, whereof my hart was vtterly void, I as then esteeming my selfe borne to rule, & thinking foule scorne willingly to submit my selfe to be ruled.

But whiles Philoxenus in good sorte pursued my fauour, and perchaunce nourished himselfe

with ouer much hope, because he found I did in some sorte acknowledge his valew, one time among the rest he brought with him a deare friend of his. With that she loked vpon the picture before her, & straight sighed, & straight teares followed, as if the Idol of dutie ought to be honoured with such oblations, and the her speach staid the tale, hauing brought her to that loke, but that looke hauing quite put her out of her tale. But *Palladius* greatly pitying so sweete a sorrow in a Ladie, whom by fame he had already knowen, and honoured, besought her for her promise sake, to put silence so longe vnto her moning, til she had recounted the rest of this story.

Why said she, this is the picture of *Amphialus*: what neede I say more to you? what

eare is so barbarous but hath hard of *Amphialus*? who follows deeds of Armes, but euery where findes monumet of *Amphialus*? who is courteous, noble, liberall, but he that hath the example before his eyes of *Amphialus*? where are all heroicall parts, but in *Amphialus*? O *Amphialus* I would thou were not so excellent, or I would I thought thee not so excellent, and yet would I not, that I would so : with that she wept againe, til he againe solliciting the conclusion of her story. Then must you (said she) know the story of *Amphialus*: for his will is my life, his life my history: and indeed, in what can I better employ my lippes, then in speaking of *Amphialus*?

This knight then whose figure you see, but whose mind can be painted by nothing, but by

the true shape of vertue, is brothers sonne to *Basilus* King of *Arcadia*, and in his childhood esteemed his heir: till *Basilus* in his olde yeeres marrying a young and a faire Lady, had of her those two daughters, so famous for their perfection in beauty: which put by their young cosin from that expectation. Whereupon his mother (a woman of a hauty hart, being daughter to the King of *Argos*, either disdainig, or fearing, that her sonne should liue vnder the power of *Basilus*) sent him to that Lorde *Timotheus* (betwene whom and her dead husband ther had passed streight bands of mutuall hospitality to be brought vp in company with his sonne *Philoxenus*?)

A happie resolution for *Amphialus*, whose excellent nature was by this meanes trayned

on with as good education, as any Princes sonne in the world could haue, which otherwise it is thought his mother (farre vnworthie of such a sonne) would not haue giuen him. The good *Timotheus* [no lesse louing him then his owne sonne: well they grew in yeeres and shortly occasions fell aptly to trie *Amphialus*, and all occasions were but stepes for him to clime fame by. Nothing was so hard, but his

valour ouercame : which yet still he so guided with true vertue, that although no man was in our parts spoken of but he, for his ma[n]hood, yet, as though therein he excelled him selfe, he was com[m]only called the courteous *Amphialus*. An endlesse thing it were for me to tell, how many aduentures (terrible to be spoken of) he atchieued: what monsters, what Giants, what conquest of countries: sometimes vsing policy, some times force, but alwaies vertue, well followed, and but followed by *Philoxenus*: betweene whom, and him, so fast a friendship by education was knit, that at last *Philoxenus* hauing no greater matter to employ his frindship in, then to winne me, therein desired, and had his vttermost furtheraunce: to that purpose brought he him to my court, where truly I may iustly witnes with him, that what his wit could conceiue (and his wit can conceaue as far as the limits of reason stretch) was all directed to the setting forward the suite of his friend *Philoxenus*: my eares could heare nothing from him, but touching the worthines of *Philoxenus* and of the great happines it would be vnto me to haue such a husband: with many arguments, which God knowes, I cannot well remember because I did not much beleeeue.

For why should I vse many circu[m]stances to come to that where alredy I am, and euer

while I liue must continue ? In fewe wordes, while he pleaded for an other, he wanne me for himselfe: if at least (with that she sighed) he would account it a winning, for his fame had so framed the way to my mind, that his presence so full of beauty, sweetnes, and noble conuersation, had entred there before he vouchsafed to call for the keyes. O Lord, how did my soule hang at his lippes while he spake! O when he in feeling maner would describe the loue of his frend, how well (thought I) dooth loue betweene those lips! when he would with daintiest eloquence stirre pitie in me toward *Philoxenus*, why sure (said I to my selfe) *Helen*, be not afraid, this hart cannot want pitie: and when he would extol the deeds of *Philoxenus*, who indeede had but waited of him therin, alas (thought I) good *Philoxenus*, how euil doth it become thy name to be subscribed to his letter? What should I say? nay, what should I not say (noble knight) who am not ashamed, nay am delighted, thus to expresse mine owne passions ?

Dayes paste; his eagernes for his friende neuer decreased, my affection to him euer

increased. At length, in way of ordinarie courtesie, I obtained of him (who suspected no such matter) this his picture, the only *Amphialus*, I feare that I shall euer enioy: and growen bolder, or madder, or bould with madnes, I discovered my affection vnto him. But, Lord, I shall neuer forget, how anger and courtesie, at one instant appeared in his eyes, when he heard that motion: how with his blush he taught me shame. In summe, he left nothing vnassayed, which might disgrace himselfe, to grace his fre[n]d; in sweet termes making me receiue a most resolute refusal of himself. But when he found that his presence did far more perswade for himselfe, then his speeche could doo for his frend, he left my court: hoping, that forgetfulnesse

(which commonly waits vpon absence) woulde make roome for his friende: to whome he woulde not vtter thus much (I thinke) for a kinde feare not to grieue him, or perchance (though he cares little for me) of a certaine honorable gratefulnes, nor yet to discourse so much of my secrets: but as it should seeme, meant to trauell into farre countreyes, vntill his friends affection either ceased, or preuayled.

But within a while, *Philoxenus* came to see how onward the fruites were of his friends

labour, when (as in trueth I cared not much how he tooke it) he found me sitting, 9
beholding this picture, I know not with how affectionate countena[n]ce, but I am sure with a most affectionate mind. I straight found ielousie and disdain tooke hold of him: and yet the froward paine of mine owne harte made me so delight to punish him, whom I esteemed the chiefest let in my way; that when he with humble gesture, and vehement speeches, sued for my fauor; I told him, that I would heare him more willingly, if he would speake for *Amphialus*, as well as *Amphialus* had done for him: he neuer answered me, but pale and quaking, went straight away; and straight my heart misgaue me some euill successe: and yet though I had authoritie inough to haue stayed him (as in these fatall things it falles out, that the hie-working powers make second causes vnwittingly accessarie to their determinations) I did no further but sent a foot-man of mine (whose faithfulness to me I well knew) from place to place to follow him, and bring me word of his proceedings : which (alas) haue brought forth that which I feare I must euer rewe.

For he had trauailed scarce a dayes iorney out of my Countrey, but that (not farre from
this place) he ouertooke *Amphialus*, who (by succouring a distressed Lady) had 10
bene here stayed : and by and by called him to fight with him, protesting that one of the two should die: you may easily iudge how straunge it was to *Amphialus*, whose hart could accuse it selfe of no fault, but too much affection toward him, which he (refusing to fight with him) would faine haue made *Philoxenus* vnderstand, but (as my seruant since tolde me) the more *Amphialus* went back, the more he followed, calling him Traytor, and coward, yet neuer telling the cause of this strange alteration. Ah *Philoxenus* (saide *Amphialus*) I know I am no Traytor, and thou well knowest I am no coward: but I pray thee content thy selfe with this much, and let this satisfie thee, that I loue thee, since I beare thus much of thee, but he leauing words drew his sworde, and gaue *Amphialus* a great blow or two, which but for the goodnes of his armour would haue slaine him: and yet so farre did *Amphialus* containe himselfe, stepping aside, and saying to him, Well *Philoxenus*, and thus much villany am I content to put vp, not any longer for thy sake (whom I haue no cause to loue, since thou dost iniure me, and wilt not tell me the cause) but for thy vertuous fathers sake, to whom I am so much bound. I pray thee goe away, and conquer thy owne passions, and thou shalt make me soone yeeld to be thy seruant.

But he would not attend his wordes, but still strake so fiercely at *Amphialus*, that in

the end (nature preuailing aboue determination) he was faine to defend him selfe, and with-all to offend him, that by an vnluckye blow the poore *Philoxenus* fell dead at his feete; hauing had time onely to speake some wordes, whereby *Amphialus* knew it was for my sake: which when *Amphialus* sawe, he forthwith gaue such tokens of true felt sorrow; that as my seruant said, no imagination could conceiue greater woe. But that by and by, an vnhappy occasion made *Amphialus* passe himselfe in sorrow: for *Philoxenus* was but newly dead, when there comes to the same place, the aged and vertuous *Timotheus*, who (hauing heard of his sonnes sodaine and passionate manner of parting from my Court) had followed him as speedily as he could; but alas not so speedily, but that he fou[n]d him dead before he could ouer take him. Though my hart be nothing but a stage for Tragedies; yet I must confesse, it is euen vnable to beare the miserable representation thereof: knowing *Amphialus* and *Timotheus* as I haue done. Alas what sorrow, what amasement, what shame was in *Amphialus*, when he saw his deere foster father, find him the killer of his onely sonne? In my hart I know, he wished mountaines had laine vpon him, to keepe him from that meeting. As for *Timotheus*, sorow of his sonne and (I thinke principally) vnkindnes of *Amphialus* so deuoured his vitall spirits that able to say no more but *Amphialus*, *Amphialus*, haue I? he sancke to the earth, and presently dyed.

But not my tongue though daily vsed to complaints; no nor if my hart (which is nothing

but sorrow) were turned to tonges, durst it vnder-take to shew the
vnspeakeablenes of his griefe. But (because this serues to make you know my
fortune,) he threw away his armour, euen this which you haue now vpon you, which at
the first sight I vainely hoped, he had put on againe; and the[n] (as ashamed of the
light) he ranne into the thickest of the woods, lame[n]ting, & euen crying out so
pityfully, that my seruant, (though of a fortune not vsed to much tendernes) could not
refraine weeping when he tolde it me. He once ouertooke him, but *Amphialus* drawing
his sword, which was the only part of his armes (God knowes to what purpose) he
caried about him, threatned to kill him if he folowed him, and withall, bad him deliuer
this bitter message, that he wel inough fou[n]d, I was the cause of al this mischief: &
that if I were a man, he would go ouer the world to kill me: but bad me assure my
selfe, that of all creatures in the world, he most hated me. Ah Sir knight (whose eares I
think by this time are tyred with the rugged wayes of these misfortunes) now way my
case, if at lest you know what loue is. For this cause haue I left my country, putting in
hazard how my people wil in time deale by me, adue[n]turing what perils or dishonors
might ensue, only to folow him, who proclaimeth hate against me, and to bring my
neck vnto him, if that may redeem my trespas & assuage his fury. And now sir (said
she) you haue your request, I pray you take paines to guide me to the next town, that
there I may gather such of my company againe, as your valor hath left
me. *Palladius* willingly co[n]disce[n]ded: but ere they began to go, there
cam *Clitophon*, who hauing bene something hurt by one of them, had pursued him a

good way: at length ouertaking him, & ready to kill him, vnderstood they were seruants to the faire Queene *Helen*, and that the cause of this enterprise was for nothing, but to make *Amphialus* prisoner, who[m] they knew their mistresse sought; for she concealed her sorow, nor cause of her sorow from no body.

But *Clitophon* (very sorie for this accident) came back to comfort the Queene, helping

such as were hurt, in the best sort that he could, & framing fre[n]dly
co[n]struftio[n]s of this rashly vndertaken enmitie, when in comes another (till
that time vn-seene) all armed, with his beuer downe, who first looking round about
vpon the companie, as soone as he spied *Palladius* he drew his sword, and making no
other prologue, let flie at him. But *Palladius* (sorie for so much harm as had alrede
happened) sought rather to retire, and warde, thinking he might be some one that
belonged to the faire Queene, whose case in his harte he pitied.

Which *Clitophon* seeing, stept betweene them, asking the new come knight the cause
of his quarrell; who answered him, that he woulde kill that theefe, who had stollen
away his masters armour, if he did not restore it. With that *Palladius* lookt vpon him,
and sawe that he of the other side had *Palladius* owne armour vpon him: truly
(said *Palladius*) if I haue stolne this armour, you did not buy that: but you shall not
fight with me vpon such a quarrell, you shall haue this armour willingly, which I did
onely put on to doo honor to the owner. But *Clitophon* straight knewe by his words
and voyce, that it was *Ismenus*, the faithfull & diligent Page of *Amphialus*: and there-
fore telling him that he was *Clitophon* and willing him to acknowledge his error to the
other, who deserued all honour, the yong Gentleman pulled of his head-peece, and
(lighting) went to kisse *Palladius* hands; desiring him to pardon his follie, caused by
extreame grieffe, which easilie might bring fourth anger. Sweete Gentleman
(saide *Palladius*) you shall onely make me this amendes, that you shal cary this your
Lords armour from me to him, and tell him from an vnknowen knight (who admires
his worthines) that he cannot cast a greater miste ouer his glory, the[n] by being
vnkind to so excelle[n]t a princesse as this Queene is. *Ismenus* promised he would, as
soone as he durst find his maister: and with that went to doo his dutie to the Queene,
whom in all these encounters astonishment made hardy; but assoone as she
saw *Ismenus* (looking to her picture) *Ismenus* (said she) here is my Lord, where is
yours? or come you to bring me some sentence of death from him? if it be so,
welcome be it. I pray you speake; and speake quickly. Alas Madame, said *Ismenus*, I
haue lost my Lorde, (with that teares came vnto his eyes) for assoone as the vnhappie
combate was concluded with the death both of father and sonne, my maister casting of
his armour, went his way: forbidding me vpo[n] paine of death to follow him.

Yet diuers daies I followed his steppes; till lastly I found him, hauing newly met
with an


excellent Spaniel, belonging to his dead companion *Philoxenus*. The dog streight
fawned on my master for old knowledge: but neuer was there thing more pittifull

then to heare my maister blame the dog for louing his maisters murtherer, renewing a fresh his co[m]plaints, with the dumbe counseller, as if they might co[m]fort one another in their miseries. But my Lord hauing spied me, rase vp in such rage, that in truth I feared he would kill me: yet as then he said onely, if I would not displease him, I should not come neere him till he sent for me: too hard a com[m]aundement for me to disobey: I yeelded, leauing him onely waited on by his dog, and as I thinke seeking out the most solitarie places, that this or any other country can graunt him: and I returning where I had left his armour, found an other in steed thereof, & (disdaining I must confesse that any should beare the armour of the best Knight liuing) armed my selfe therein to play the foole, as eue[n] now I did. Faire *Ismenus* (said the Queen) a fitter messenger could hardly be to vnfold my Tragedie : I see the end, I see my ende.

With that (sobbing) she desired to be conducted to the next towne, where *Palladius* left her to be waited on by *Clitophon*, at *Palladius* earnest entreatie, who desired alone to take that melancholy course of seeking his friend: & therefore changing armours again with *Ismenus* (who went withal to a castle belonging to his master) he c[n]otinued his quest for his friend *Daiphantus*. 15

CHAP. 12.

1 *Palladius after long search of Daiphantus, lighteth on an Amazon Ladie.* 2 *Her habite,* 3 *song,* 4 *and who she was.* 5 *Obiections of the one against women, and loue of them.* 6 *The answeres of the other for them both.* 7 *Their passionate conclusion in relenting kindnesse.*

O directed he his course to *Laconia*, aswell among the *Helots* as *Spartans*. There indeed he found his fame flourishing, his monument engraue in Marble, and yet more durable in mens memories; but the vniuersall lamenting his absented presence, assured him of his present absence. Thence into the *Elean* prouince, to see whether at the Olympian games (there celebrated) he might in such concourse blesse his eyes with so desired an encounter: but that huge and sportfull assemblie grewe to him a tedious lonelinesse, esteeming no bodie founde, since *Daiphantus* was lost. Afterward he passed through *Achaia* and *Sicyonia*, to the *Corinthians*, prowde of their two Seas, to learne whether by the streight of that *Isthmus*, it was possible to know of his passage. But finding euerie place more dumbe then other to his demaunds, and remembring that it was late-taken loue, which had wrought this new course, he returned againe (after two months trauaile in vaine)

to make freshe searche in *Arcadia*; so much the more, as then first he bethought him selfe of the picture of *Philoclea* (in resembling her he had once loued) might perhaps awake againe that sleeping passion. And hauing already past ouer the greatest part of *Arcadia*, one day comming vnder the side of the pleasaunt mountaine *Mænalus*, his horse (nothing guiltie of his inquisitiuenesse) with flat tiring taught him, that discrete stayes make speedie iourneis. And therefore lighting downe, and vnbrideling his horse, he him selfe went to repose him selfe in a little wood he sawe thereby. Where lying vnder the protection of a shadie tree, with intention to make forgetting sleepe comfort a sorrowfull memorie, he sawe a sight which perswaded, and obteyned of his eyes, that they would abide yet a while open. It was the appearing of a Ladie, who because she walked with her side toward him, he could not perfectly see her face; but so much he might see of her, that was a suretie for the rest, that all was excellent.

Well might he perceauē the hanging of her haire in fairest qua[n]titie, in locks, 2
some curled, & some as it were forgotten, with such a carelesse care, & an arte so hiding arte, that she seemed she would lay them for a paterne, whether nature simply, or nature helped by cunning, be more excellent: the rest whereof was drawne into a coronet of golde richly set with pearle, and so ioyned all ouer with gold wiers, and couered with feathers of diuers colours, that it was not vnlike to an helmet, such a glittering shew it bare, & so brauely it was held vp fro[m] the head. Vpon her bodie she ware a doublet of skie colour sattin, couered with plates of gold, & as it were nailed with pretious stones, that in it she might seeme armed; the nether parts of her garment was so full of stuffe, & cut after such a fashion, that though the length of it reached to the ankles, yet in her going one might sometimes discernē the smal of her leg, which with the foot was dressed in a short paire of crimson veluet buskins, in some places open (as the ancient manner was) to shew the fairenes of the skin. Ouer all this she ware a certaine mantell, made in such manner, that comming vnder the right arme, and couering most of that side, it had no fastning of the left side, but onely vpon the top of the shoulder: where the two endes met, and were closed together with a very riche iewell: the deuise wherof (as he after saw) was this: a *Hercules* made in little fourme, but a distaffe set within his hand as he once was by *Omphales* commaundement with a worde in Greeke, but thus to be interpreted, *Neuer more valiant*. On the same side, on her thigh shee ware a sword, which as it witnessed her to be an *Amazon*, or one following that profession, so it seemed but a needles weapon, since her other forces were without withstanding. But this Ladie walked out-right, till he might see her enter into a fine close arbour: it was of trees whose branches so louingly interlaced one the other, that it could resist the strogest violence of eye-sight; but she went into it by a doore she opened; which moued him as warely as he could to follow her, and by and by he might heare her sing this song, with a voice no lesse beautifull to his eares, then her goodlinesse was full of harmonie to his eyes.

T*ransformd in shew, but more transformd in minde,*
I cease to striue with double conquest foild:
For (woe is me) my powers all I finde
With outward force, and inward treason spoild.

3

For from without came to mine eyes the blowe,
Whereto mine inward thoughts did faintly yeeld;
Both these conspird poore Reasons ouerthrowe;
False in my selfe, thus haue I lost the field.

Thus are my eyes still Captiue to one sight:
Thus all my thoughts are slaues to one thought still:
Thus Reason to his seruants yeelds his right;
Thus is my power transformed to your will.
What maruaile then I take a womans hew,
Since what I see, thinke, know is all but you?

The dittie gaue him some suspition, but the voice gaue him almost assurance, who the singer was. And therefore boldly thrusting open the dore, and entring into the arbour, he perceaued in deed that it was *Pyrocles* thus disguised, wherewith not receauing so much ioy to haue found him, as grieffe so to haue found him, amazedly looking vpon him (as Apollo is painted when he saw *Daphne* sodainly turned into a Laurell) he was not able to bring forth a worde. So that *Pyrocles* (who had as much shame, as *Musidorus* had sorrow) rising to him, would haue formed a substantiall excuse; but his insinuation being of blushing, and his diuision of sighes, his whole oration stood vpon a short narration, what was the causer of this Metamorphosis? But by that time *Musidorus* had gathered his spirites together, and yet casting a gastfull countenance vpon him (as if he would coniure some strange spirits) he thus spake vnto him.

4

And is it possible, that this is *Pyrocles*, the onely yong Prince in the world, formed by nature, and framed by education, to the true exercise of vertue? or is it indeed some *Amazon* that hath counterfeited the face of my friend, in this sort to vex me? for likelier sure I would haue thought it, that any outwarde face might haue bene disguised, then that the face of so excelle[n]t a mind coulde haue bene thus blemished. O sweete *Pyrocles* separate your selfe a little (if it be possible) from your selfe, and let your owne minde looke vpon your owne proceedings: so shall my wordes be needlesse, and you best instructed. See with your selfe, how fitt it will be for you in this your tender youth, borne so great a Prince, and of so rare, not onely expectation, but prooffe, desired of your olde Father, and wanted of your natiue countrie, now so neere your home, to diuert your thoughts from the way of goodnesse;

5

to loose, nay to abuse your time. Lastly to ouerthrow all the excellent things you haue done, which haue filled the world with your fame; as if you should drowne your ship in the long desired hauen, or like an ill player, should marre the last act of his Tragedie. Remember (for I know you know it) that if we wil be men, the reasonable parte of our soule, is to haue absolute commaundement; against which if any sensuall weaknes arise, we are to yeelde all our sounde forces to the ouerthrowing of so vnnaturall a rebellion, wherein how can we wante courage, since we are to deale against so weake an aduersary, that in it selfe is nothinge but weakenesse ? Nay we are to resolute, that if reason direct it, we must doo it, and if we must doo it, we will doo it; for to say I cannot, is childish, and I will not, womanish. And see how extremely euery waye you endaunger your minde; for to take this womannish habit (without you frame your behaiour accordingly) is wholly vaine: your behaiour can neuer come kindly from you, but as the minde is proportioned vnto it. So that you must resolute, if you will playe your parte to any purpose, whatsoever peeuish affections are in that sexe, soften your hart to receiue them, the very first downe-steppe to all wickednes: for doo not deceiue your selfe, my deere cosin, there is no man sodainely excellentlie good, or extremely euill, but growes either as hee holdes himselfe vp in vertue, or lets himself slide to vitiousnes. And let vs see, what power is the auctor of all these troubles: forsooth loue, loue, a passion, and the basest and fruitlessest of all passions: feare breedeth wit, Anger is the cradle of courage: ioy openeth and enhableth the hart: sorrow, as it closeth, so it draweth it inwarde to looke to the correcting of it selfe; and so all generally haue power towards some good by the direction of right Reason. But this bastarde Loue (for in deede the name of Loue is most vnworthyly applied to so hatefull a humour) as it is engendered betwixt lust and idlenes; as the matter it workes vpon is nothing, but a certaine base weakenes, which some gentle fooles call a gentle hart; as his adioyned companions be vnquietnes, longings, fond comforts, faint discomforts, hopes, ielousies, vngrounded rages, causlesse yeeldings; so is the hiest ende it aspires vnto, a litle pleasure with much paine before, and great repentaunce after. But that end how endlesse it runs to infinite euils, were fit inough for the matter we speake of, but not for your eares, in whome indeede there is so much true disposition to vertue: yet thus much of his worthie effects in your selfe is to be seen, that (besides your breaking lawes of hospitality with *Kalander* and of friendship with me) it vtterly subuertes the course of nature, in making reason giue place to sense, & man to woman. And truely I thinke heere-vpon it first gatte the name of Loue: for indeede the true loue hath that excellent nature in it, that it doth transform the very essence of the louer into the thing loued, vniting, and as it were incorporating it with a secret & inward working. And herein do these kindes of loue imitate the excellent ; for as the loue of heauen makes one heavenly, the loue of vertue, vertuous; so doth the loue of the world make one become worldly, and this effeminate loue of a woman, doth so womanish a man, that (if he yeeld to it) it will not onely make him an *Amazon*; but a launder, a distaff-spinner; or what so euer other

vile occupation their idle heads ca[n] imagin, & their weake hands performe. Therefore (to trouble you no longer with my tedious but louing words) if either you remember what you are, what you haue bene, or what you must be: if you co[n]sider what it is, that moued you, or by what kinde of creature you are moued, you shall finde the cause so small, the effect so daungerous, your selfe so vnworthie to runne into the one, or to be driue[n] by the other, that I doubt not I shall quickly haue occasion rather to praise you for hauing conquered it, then to giue you further counsell, how to doo it.

But in *Pyrocles* this speech wrought no more, but that he, who before he was espied, was afraid; after, being perceiued, was ashamed, now being hardly rubd vpon, lefte both feare and shame, and was moued to anger. But the exceeding good will he bare to *Musidorus* striuing with it, he thus, partely to satisfie him, but principally to loose the reines to his owne motions, made him answeare. Cosin, whatsoeuer good disposition nature hath bestowed vpon me, or howsoeuer that disposition hath bene by bringing vp co[n]firmed, this must I confesse, that I am not yet come to that degree of wisdome, to thinke light of the sexe, of whom I haue my life; since if I be any thing (which your friendship rather finds, the[n] I acknowledge) I was to come to it, born of a woma[n], & nursed of a woma[n]. And certe[n]ly (for this point of your speach doth neerest touch me) it is stra[n]ge to see the vnman-like cruelty of ma[n]kind; who not co[n]tent with their tyran[n]ous a[m]bition, to haue brought the others vertuous patience vnder them (like to childish maisters) thinke their masterhood nothing, without doing iniury to them, who (if we will argue by reason) are framed of nature with the same parts of the minde for the exercise of vertue, as we are. And for example, euen this estate of *Amazons*, (which I now for my greatest honor do seek to counterfaite) doth well witnes, that if generally the swetnes of their dispositio[n]s did not make them see the vainnesse of these thinges, which we accopt glorious, they nether want valor of mind, nor yet doth their fairnes take away their force. And truely we men, and praisers of men, should remember, that if we haue such excelle[n]cies, it is reason to thinke them excellent creatures, of whom we are: since a Kite neuer brought forth a good flying Hauke. But to tel you true, as I thinke it superfluous to vse any wordes of such a subiect, which is so praised in it selfe, as it needes no praises; so withall I feare lest my conceate (not able to reach vnto them) bring forth wordes, which for their vnworthines may be a disgrace vnto the[m] I so inwardly honor. Let this suffice, that they are capable of vertue: & vertue (ye your selues say) is to be loued, & I too truly: but this I willingly co[n]fesse, that it likes me much better, when I finde vertue in a faire lodging, then when I am bound to seeke it in an ill faouered creature, like a pearle in a dounghill. As for my fault of being an vnciuill guest to *Kalander*, if you could feele what an inward guest my selfe am host vnto: ye would thinke it very excuseable, in that I rather performe the dueties of an host, then the ceremonies of a guest. And for my breaking the lawes of friendship with you, (which I would rather dye, then effectually doo) truely, I could finde in my

hart to aske you pardon for it, but that your handling of me giues me reason to my former dealing. And here *Pyrocles* stayed, as to breath himselfe, hauing bene transported with a litle vehemency, because it seemed him *Musidorus* had ouerbitterly glaused against the reputation of woman-kinde: but then quieting his countenance (aswell as out of an vnquiet mind it might be) he thus proceeded on: And poore Loue (said he) deare cosin, is little beholding vnto you, since you are not contented to spoile it of the honor of the highest power of the mind, which notable me[n] haue attributed vnto it; but ye deiect it below all other passions, in trueth somewhat strangely; since, if loue receiue any disgrace, it is by the company of these passions you preferre before it. For those kinds of bitter obiections (as, that lust, idlenes, and a Weak harte, shoulde be, as it were, the matter and forme of loue) rather touch me, deare *Musidorus*, then loue: But I am good wnesse of mine own imperfections, & therefore will not defende my selfe: but herein I must say, you deale contrary to your self: for if I be so weak, then can you not with reason stir me vp as ye did, by remembrance of my own vertue: or if indeed I be vertuous, the must ye co[n]fesse, that loue hath his working in a vertuous hart: & so no dout hath it, whatsoever I be: for if we loue vertue, in whom shal we loue it but in a vertuous creature? without your meaning be, I should loue this word *vertue*, where I see it written in a book. Those troublesome effects you say it breedes, be not the faults of loue, but of him that loues; as an vnable vessel to beare such a licour: like euill eyes, not able to look on the Sun; or like an ill braine, soonest ouerthrows with best wine. Euen that heauenly loue you speake of, is accompanied in some harts with hopes, griefs, longings, & dispaire. And in that heauenly loue, since ther are two parts, the one the loue it self, th'other the excellency of the thing loued; I, not able at the first leap to frame both in me, do now (like a diligent workman) make ready the chiefe instrument, and first part of that great worke, which is loue it self; which whe[n] I haue a while practised in this sort, then you shall see me turn it to greater matters. And thus gently you may (if it please you) think of me. Neither doubt ye, because I weare a womans apparell, I will be the more womannish, since, I assure you (for all my apparrel) there is nothing I desire more, then fully to proue my selfe a man in this enterprise. Much might be said in my defence, much more for loue, and most of all for that diuine creature, which hath ioyned me and loue together. But these disputations are fitter for quiet schooles, then my troubled braines, which are bent rather in deeds to performe, then in wordes to defende the noble desire which possesseth me. O Lord (saide *Musidorus*) how sharp-witted you are to hurt your selfe? No (answered he) but it is the hurt you speake of, which makes me so sharp-witted. Euen so (said *Musidorus*) as euery base occupation makes one sharp in that practise, and foolish in all the rest. Nay rather (answered *Pyrocles*) as each excellent thing once well learned, serues for a measure of all other knowledges. And is that become (said *Musidorus*) a measure for other things, which neuer receiued measure in it selfe? It is counted without measure (answered *Pyrocles*,) because the workings of it

are without measure: but otherwise, in nature it hath measure, since it hath an end allotted vnto it. The beginning being so excellent, I would gladly know the end. Enioying, answered *Pyrocles*, with a great sigh. O (said *Musidorus*) now set ye foorth the basenes of it: since if it ende in enioying, it shewes all the rest was nothing. Ye mistake me (answered *Pyrocles*) I spake of the end to which it is directed; which end ends not, no sooner then the life. Alas, let your owne braine dis-enchaunt you (said *Musidorus*.) My hart is too farre possessed (said *Pyrocles*.) But the head giues you direction. And the hart giues me life; aunswered *Pyrocles*.

But *Musidorus* was so greeued to see his welbeloued friend obstinat, as he
7
thought, to his owne destruction, that it forced him with more then accustomed vehemency, to speake these words; Well, well, (saide he) you list to abuse your selfe; it was a very white and red vertue, which you could pick out of a painterly glosse of a visage: Confesse the truth; and ye shall finde, the vtmost was but beautie; a thing, which though it be in as great excellencye in your selfe as may be in any, yet I am sure you make no further reckning of it, then of an outward fading benefite Nature bestowed vpon you. And yet such is your want of a true grounded vertue, which must be like it selfe in all points, that what you wisely account a trifle in your selfe, you fondly become a slaue vnto in another. For my part I now protest, I haue left nothing vnsaid, which my wit could make me know, or my most entier friendship to you requires of me; I do now besech you euen for the loue betwixt vs (if this other loue haue left any in you towards me) and for the remembraunce of your olde careful father (if you can reme[m]ber him that forget your self) lastly for *Pyrocles* owne sake (who is now vpon the point of falling or rising) to purge your selfe of this vile infection; other wise giue me leaue, to leaue of this name of friendsh[i]p, as an idle title of a thing which cannot be, where vertue is abolished. The length of these speaches before had not so much cloied *Pyrocles*, though he were very vnpatient of long deliberations, as the last farewel of him he loued as his owne life, did wound his soule, thinking him selfe afflicted, he was the apter to conceiue vnkindnesse deeply: insomuch, that shaking his head, and deliuering some shewe of teares, he thus vttered his griefes. Alas (said he) prince *Musidorus*, how cruelly you deale with me; if you seeke the victory, take it; and if ye liste, triumph. Haue you all the reason of the world, and with me remaine all the imperfections; yet such as I can no more lay from me, then the Crow can be perswaded by the Swanne to cast of all his black fetters. But truely you deale with me like a Phisition, that seeing his patient in a pestilent feuer, should chide him, in steede of ministring helpe, and bid him be sick no more; or rather like such a friend, that visiting his friend condemned to perpetuall prison; and loaden with greeuous fetters, should will him to shake of his fetters, or he wuld leaue him. I am sicke, & sicke to the death; I am a prisoner, neither is any redresse, but by her to whom I am slaue. Now if you list to leaue him that loues you in the hiest degree: But remember euer to cary this with you, that you abandon your friend in his greatest extremity.

And herewith the deepe wound of his loue being rubbed afresh with this new vnkindnes, bega[n] (as it were) to bleed again, in such sort that he was not hable to beare it any longer, but gushing out abundance of teares, and crossing his armes ouer his woefull hart, as if his teares had beene out-flowing blood, his armes an ouerpressing burthen, he suncke downe to the ground, which sodaine traunce went so to the hart of *Musidorus* that falling down by him & kissing the weping eyes of his friend, he besought him not to make account of his speach; which if it had bene ouer vehement, yet was it to be borne withall, because it came out of a loue much more vehement; that he had not thought fancie could haue receiued so deep a wound: but now finding in him the force of it, hee woulde no further contrary it; but imploy all his seruice to medicine it, in such sort, as the nature of it required. But euen this kindnes made *Pyrocles* the more melte in the former vnkindnes, which his manlike teares well shewed, with a silent look vpo[n] *Musidorus*, as who should say, And is it possible that *Musidorus* should threaten to leaue me? And this strooke *Musidorus* minde and senses so dumbe too, that for grieffe being not able to say any thing, they rested, with their eyes placed one vpon another, in such sort, as might well paint out the true passion of vnkindnes to be neuer aright, but betwixt them that most dearely loue.

And thus remayned they a time; till at length, *Musidorus* embrasing him, said, And will you thus shake of your friend? It is you that shake me of (saide *Pyrocles*) being for my vnperfectnes vnworthie of your friendship. But this (said *Musidorus*) shewes you more vnperfect, to be cruell to him, that submits himselfe vnto you; but since you are vnperfect (said he smiling) it is reason you be gouerned by vs wise and perfect men. And that authoritie will I beginne to take vpon me, with three absolute com[m]andements: The first, that you increase not your euill with further griefes: the second, that you loue her with all the powers of your mind: & the last com[m]andeme[n]t shalbe, ye com[m]and me to do what seruice I can, towards the attaining of your desires. *Pyrocles* hart was not so oppressed with the mighty passio[n]s of loue and vnkindnes, but that it yeelded to some mirth at this commaundement of *Musidorus*, that he should loue: so that something cleering his face from his former shewes of grieffe; Wel (said he) deare cousin, I see by the well choosing of your commandementes, that you are fitter to be a Prince, then a Counsellor: and therefore I am resolued to imploy all my endeouour to obey you; with this condition, that the comandementes ye commaund me to lay vpon you, shall onely be, that you continue to loue me, and looke vpon my imperfections, with more affection then iudgeme[n]t. Loue you? (said he) alas, how can my hart be seperated from the true imbrasing of it, without it burst, by being too full of it? But (said he) let vs leaue of these flowers of newe begun frendship: and now I pray you againe tel me; but tell it me fully, omitting no circumstance, the storie of your affections both beginning, and proceeding: assuring your selfe, that there is nothing so great, which I will feare to doo for you: nor nothing so small, which I will disdaine to doo for you. Let me therefore receiue a cleere vnderstating, which many times we misse, while

those things we account small, as a speech, or a look are omitted, like as a whole sentence may faile of his congruities, by wanting one particle. Therefore between friends, all must be layd open, nothing being superfluous, nor tedious. You shalbe obeyed (said *Pyrocles*) and here are we in as fitte a place for it as may be; for this arbor no body offers to come into but my selfe; I vsing it as my melancholy retiring place, and therefore that respect is born vnto it; yet if by cha[n]ce any should come, say that you are a seruant sent from the Q. of the *Amazons* to seeke me, and then let me alone for the rest. So sate they downe, and *Pyrocles* thus said.

CHAP. 13.

1 *How Pyrocles fell in loue with Philoclea.* 2 *His counsell and course therein.* 3 *His disguising into Zelmane.* 4 *Her meeting with Damaetas,* 5 *Basilus,* 6 *the Queene and her daughters, & their speaches.* 7 *Her abode there ouer entreated;* 8 *and the place thereof described.*



Ousin (saide hee) then began the fatall ouerthrowe of all my libertie, when walking among the pictures in *Kalanders* house, you your selfe deliuered vnto mee what you had vnderstood of *Philoclea*, who muche resembling (though I must say much surpassing) the Ladie *Zelmane*, whom too well I loued: there were mine eyes infected, & at your mouth did I drinke my poison. Yet alas so sweete was it vnto me, that I could not be contented, til *Kalander* had made it more and more strong with his declaratio[n]. Which the more I questioned, the more pittie I conceaued of her vnworthie fortune: and when with pittie once my harte was made tender, according to the aptnesse of the humour, it receaued quickly a cruell impression of that wonderful passio[n] which to be define is impossible, because no wordes reach to the strange nature of it: they onely know it, which inwardly feele it, it is called loue. Yet did I not (poore wretch) at first know my disease, thinking it onely such a woonted kind of desire, to see rare sights; & my pitie to be no other, but the fruits of a gentle nature. But eue[n] this arguing with my selfe came of further thoughts; & the more I argued, the more my thoughts encreased. Desirous I was to see the place where she remained, as though the *Architecture* of the lodges would haue bene much for my learning; but more desirous to see her selfe, to be iudge, forsooth, of the painters cun[n]ing. For thus at the first did I flatter my selfe, as though my wound had bene no deeper: but when within short time I came to the degree of vncertaine wishes, and that the wishes grew to vnquiet longings, when I could fix my thoughts vpo[n] nothing, but that within little varying, they should end with *Philoclea*: when each thing I saw, seemed

to figure out some parts of my passions; whe[n] euen *Parthenias* faire face became a lecture to me of *Philocleas* imagined beautie; when I heard no word spoken, but that me thought it caried the sum of *Philocleas* name: then indeed, then I did yeeld to the burthen, finding my selfe prisoner, before I had leasure to arme my selfe; & that I might well, like the spaniel, gnaw vpon the chaine that ties him, but I should sooner marre my teeth, then procure liberty.

Yet I take to witness the eternall spring of vertue, that I had neuer read, heard, 2
nor seene any thing; I had neuer any tast of Philosophy, nor inward feeling in my selfe, which for a while I did not call for my succour. But (alas) what resistance was there, when ere long my very reason was (you will say corrupted) I must needs confesse, conquered; and that me thought euen reason did assure me, that all eies did degenerate from their creation, which did not honour such beautie? Nothing in trueth could holde any plea with it, but the reuerent friendship I bare vnto you. For as it went against my harte to breake any way from you, so did I feare more then anie assault to breake it to you: finding (as it is indeed) that to a hart fully resolute, counsaile is tedious, but reprehension is lothsome: & that there is nothing more terrible to a guilty hart, then the eie of a re-spected frie[n]d. This made me determine with myself, (thinking it a lesse fault in frie[n]dship to do a thing without your knowledge, then against your wil) to take this secret course: Which conceit was most builded vp in me, the last day of my parting and speaking with you; whe[n] vpo[n] your speach with me, & my but naming loue, (when els perchance I would haue gone further) I saw your voice & cou[n]tenance so chaunge, as it assured me, my reuealing it should but purchase your grieffe with my cumber: & therefore (deere *Musidorus*) eue[n] ran away fro[m] thy wel knowne chiding: for hauing writte[n] a letter, which I know not whether you found or no, & taking my chiefe iewels with me, while you were in the midst of your sport, I got a time (as I think) unmarked, to steale away, I cared not whether so I might scape you: & so came I to *Ithonia* in the prouince of *Messenia*; wher lying secret I put this in practise which before I had deuised. For reme[m]bring by *Philanax* his letter, &

Kaladers speech, how obstinately *Basilus* was determined not to mary his 3
daughters, & therefore fearing, lest any publike dealing should rather increase her captiuitie, then further my loue; Loue (the refiner of inuentio[n]) had put in my head thus to disguise my self, that vnder that maske I might (if it were possible,) get accesse, and what accesse could bring forth, commit to fortune & industry: determining to beare the countenance of an *Amazon*. Therefore in the closest maner I could, naming my selfe *Zelmane*, for that deere Ladies sake, to whose memorie I am so much bound, I caused this apparell to be made, and bringing it neere the lodges, which are harde at hand, by night, thus dressed my selfe, resting till occasion might make me found by them, whom I sought: which the next morning hapned as well, as my owne plot could haue laide it. For after I had runne ouer the whole petigree of my thoughts, I gaue my selfe to sing a little, which as you know I euer delighted in, so

now especially, whether it be the nature of this clime to stir vp Poeticall fancies, or rather as I thinke, of loue; whose scope being pleasure, will not so much as vtter his griefes, but in some forme of pleasure.

But I had song very little, when (as I thinke displeas'd with my bad musike) 4
comes master *Dametas* with a hedging bill in his hand, chafing, and swearing by the patable of *Pallas*, & such other othes as his rusticall brauery could imagine; & whe[n] he saw me, I assure you my beauty was no more beholding to him the[n] my harmony; for leaning his hands vpon his bil, & his chin vpon his ha[n]ds, with the voice of one that plaieth *Hercules* in a play, but neuer had his fancie in his head, the first word he spake to me, was, am not I *Dametas*? why, am not I *Dametas*? he needed not name him selfe: for *Kalanders* description had set such a note vpo[n] him, as made him very notable vnto me, and therefore the height of my thoughts would not discend so much as to make him any answer, but continued on my inward discourses: which (he perchaunce witnes of his owne vnworthines, & therefore the apter to thinke him selfe contened) tooke in so hainous manner, that standing vpo[n] his tip-toes, and staring as though he would haue a mote pulled out of his eie, Why (said he) thou woma[n], or boy, or both, what soeuer thou be, I tell thee here is no place for thee, get thee gone, I tell thee it is the Princes pleasure, I tell thee it is *Dametas* pleasure. I could not choose, but smile at him, seeing him looke so like an Ape that had newly taken a purgation; yet taking my selfe with the maner, spake these wordes to my selfe: O spirite (saide I) of mine, how canst thou receaue anie mirth in the midst of thine agonies, and thou mirth how darest thou enter into a minde so growne of late thy professed enimie? Thy spirite (saide *Dametas*) doost thou thinke me a spirite? I tell thee I am *Basilus* officer, and haue charge of him, and his daughters. O onely pearle (said I sobbing) that so vile an oyster should keepe thee? By the combe-case of *Diana* (sware *Dametas*) this woman is mad: oysters, and pearles? doost thou thinke I will buie oysters? I tell thee once againe get thee packing, and with that lifted vp his bill to hit me with the blunt ende of it: but indeede that put me quite out of my lesson, so that I forgat al *Zelma*-ship, and drawing out my sworde, the basenesse of the villaine yet made me stay my hande, and he (who, as *Kalander* tolde me, from his childehood euer feared the blade of a sworde) ran backe, backward (with his hands about his head) at lest twentie paces, gaping and staring, with the verie grace (I thinke) of the clownes, that by *Latonas* prayers were turned into Frogs. At length staying, finding himselfe without the compasse of blowes, he fell to a fresh scolding, in such mannerlie manner, as might well shewe he had passed through the discipline of a Tauerne. But seeing me walke vp and downe, without marking what he saide, he went his way (as I perceiued after) to *Basilus*: for within a while he came vnto mee, bearing in deed shewes in his countenaunce of an honest and well-minded gentleman, and with as much courtesie, as *Dametas* with rudenesse saluting me, Faire Lady (saide he) it is nothing strange, that such a solitary place as this should receiue solitary persons; but much do I maruaile, how such a beauty as yours is, should be suffered to

be thus alone. I (that now knew it was my part to play) looking with a graue maiestie vpon him, as if I found in my selfe cause to be reuerenced. They are neuer alone (saide I) that are accompanied with noble thoughts. But those thoughts (replied *Basilus*) canot in this your lonelines neither warrant you from suspition in others, nor defend you from melancholy in your selfe. I then shewing a mislike that he pressed me so farre, I seeke no better warraunt (saide I) then my owne conscience, nor no greater pleasures, then mine owne contentation. Yet vertue seekes to satisfie others, (saide *Basilus*.) Those that be good (saide I,) and they will be satisfied as long as they see no euill. Yet will the best in this country, (said *Basilus*) suspect so excellent a beauty being so weakely garded. Then are the best but starke nought, (aunswered I) for open suspecting others, comes of secrete condemning themselues; But in my countrie (whose manners I am in all places to maintaine and reuerence) the generall goodnes (which is nourished in our harts) makes euery one thinke the strength of vertue in an other, whereof they finde the assured foundation in themselues. Excellent Ladie (said he) you praise so greatly, (and yet so wisely) your cou[n]try, that I must needes desire to know what the nest is, out of which such Byrds doo flye. You must first deserue it (said I) before you may obtaine it. And by what meanes (saide *Basilus*) shall I deserue to know your estate? By letting me first knowe yours (aunswered I.) To obey you (said he) I will doe it, although it were so much more reason, yours should be knowen first, as you doo deserue in all points to be preferd. Know you (faire Lady) that my name is *Basilus*, vnworthily Lord of this cou[n]try: the rest, either fame hath brought to your eares, or (if it please you to make this place happie by your presence) at more leasure you shall vnderstand of me. I that from the beginning assured my selfe it was he, but would not seeme I did so, to keepe my grauitie the better, making a peece of reuerence vnto him, Mighty Prince (said I) let my not knowing you serue for the excuse of my boldnes, and the little reuerence I doe you, impute it to the manner of my cou[n]try, wh[i]ch is the inuincible Lande of the *Amazons*; My selfe neece to *Senicia*, Queene thereof, lineally descended of the famous *Penthesilea*, slaine by the bloody hand of *Pyrrhus*. I hauing in this my youth determined to make the worlde see the *Amazons* excellencies, aswell in priuate, as in publicke vertue, haue passed some daungerous aduentures in diuers cou[n]tries: till the vnmercifull Sea depriued me of my company: so that shipwrack casting me not far hence, vncertaine wandring brought me to this place. But *Basilus* (who now began to tast that, which since he hath swallowed vp, as I will tell you) fell to more cunning intreating my aboad, then any greedy host would vse to well paying passingers. I thought nothing could shoot righter at the mark of my desires; yet had I learned alredey so much, that it was aganst my womanhoode to be forward in my owne wishes. And therefore he (to proue whither intercessions in fitter mouths might better preuaile) commaunded *Dametas* to bring forthwith his wife and daughters thether; three Ladies, although of diuers, yet all of excellent beauty.

His wife in graue Matronlike attire, with countenance and gesture sutable, and 6
of such fairnes (being in the streng[t]h of her age) as if her daughters had not bene
by, might with iust price haue purchased admiration; but they being there, it was
enough that the most dainty eye would thinke her a worthy mother of such children.
The faire *Pamela*, whose noble hart I finde doth greatly disdaine, that the trust of her
vertue is reposed in such a louts hands as *Dametas*, had yet to shew an obedience,
taken on a shepeardish apparell, which was but of Russet cloth cut after their fashion,
with a straight body, open brested, the nether parte ful of pleights, with long and wide
sleeues: but beleue me she did apparell her apparell, and with the pretiousnes of her
body made it most sumptuous. Her haire at the full length, wound about with gold
lace, onely by the comparison to see how farre her haire doth excell in colour: betwixt
her breasts (which sweetly rase vp like two faire Mountainets in the pleasaunt valley
of *Tempe*) there honge a very riche *Diamond* set but in a blacke home, the worde I
haue since read is this; *yet still my selfe*. And thus particularly haue I described them,
because you may know that mine eyes are not so partiall, but that I marked them too.
But when the ornament of the Earth, the modell of heauen, the Triumphe of Nature,
the light of beauty, Queene of Loue, you[n]g *Philoclea* appeared in her Nimphe-like
apparell, so neare nakednes, as one might well discerne part of her perfections; & yet
so apparelled, as did shew she kept best store of her beuty to her self: her haire (alas
too poore a word, why should I not rather call the her beames) drawe vp into a net,
able to take Iupiter when he was in the forme of an Eagle; her body (O sweet body)
couered with a light taffeta garment, so cut, as the wrought smocke came through it in
many places, inough to haue made your restraind imaginatio[n] haue thought what
was vnder it: with the cast of her blacke eyes; blacke indeed, whether nature so made
them, that we might be the more able to behold & bear their wo[n]derfull shining, or
that she, (goddesse like) would work this miracle in her selfe, in giuing blacknes the
price aboue all beauty. Then (I say) indeede me thought the Lillies grew pale for
enuie, the roses me thought blushed to see sweeter roses in her cheekes, & the apples
me thought, fell downe fro[m] the trees, to do homage to the apples of her breast; Then
the cloudes gaue place, that the heaue[n]s .might more freshly smile vpo[n] her; at the
lest the cloudes of my thoughts quite vanished: and my sight (then more cleere and
forcible then euer) was so fixed there, that (I imagine) I stood like a well wrought
image, with some life in shew, but none in practise. And so had I beene like inough to
haue stayed long time, but that *Gynecia* stepping betweene my sight and the
onely *Philoclea*, the chaunge of obiect made mee recouer my senses: so that I coulde
with reasonable good manner receiue the salutation of her, and of the
Princesse *Pamela*, doing the yet no further reuere[n]ce then one Prince vseth to
another. But when I came to the neuer-inough praised *Philoclea*, I could not but fall
downe on my knees, and taking by force her hand, and kissing it (I must confesse)
with more then womanly ardency, Diuine Lady, (saide I) let not the worlde, nor these
great princes maruaile, to se me (contrary to my manner) do this especiall honor vnto

you, since all both men and women, do owe this to the perfection of your beauty. But she blushing (like a faire morning in Maye) at this my singularity, and causing me to rise, Noble Lady, (saide she) it is no maruaile to see your iudgement mistaken in my beauty, since you beginne with so great an error, as to do more honour vnto me then to them, whom I my selfe owe all seruice. Rather (answered I with a bowed downe countenance) that shewes the power of your beauty, which forced me to do such an error, if it were an error. You are so well acquainted (saide she sweetely, most sweetely smiling,) with your owne-beautie, that it makes you easilie fall into the discourse of beauty. Beauty in me? (said I truely sighing) alas if there be any, it is in my eyes, which your blessed presence hath imparted vnto them.

But then (as I thinke) *Basilus* willing her so do, Well (saide she) I must needs 7
confesse I haue heard that it is a great happines to be praised of them that are
most praise worthie; And well I finde that you are an inuincible *Amazon*, since you
will ouercome, though in a wrong matter. But if my beauty be any thing, then let it
obtaine thus much of you, that you will remaine some while in this co[m]panie, to
ease your owne trauail, and our solitarines. First let me dye (said I) before any word
spoken by such a mouth, should come in vaine.

And thus with some other wordes of entertaining, was my staying concluded, and I
led among them to the lodge; truely a place for pleasantnes, not vnfitte to flatter
solitarinesse; for it being set vpon such an vnsensible rising of the ground, as you are
come to a prety height before almost you perceiue that you ascend, it giues the eye
lordship ouer a good large circuit, which according to the nature of the coutry, being
diuersified betwene hills and dales, woods and playnes, one place more cleere, and the
other more darksome, it seemes a pleasant picture of nature, with louely lightsomnes
and artificiall shadowes. The Lodge is of a yellow stone, built in the forme of a starre ;
hauing round about a garden framed into like points: and beyond the gardein, ridings
cut out, each aunswering the Angles of the Lodge: at the end of one of them is the
other smaller Lodge, but of like fashion; where the gracious *Pamela* liueth: so that the
Lodge seemeth not vnlike a faire *Comete*, whose taile stretcheth it selfe to a starre of
lesse greatnes.

CHAP. 14.

1 *The deuises of the first banket to Zelmane.* 2 *Her crosses in loue,* 3 *by the loue of Basilus* 4 *and Gynecia* 5 *The conclusion between Musidorus and Zelmane.*



O *Gynecia* her selfe bringing me to my Lodging, anone after I was invited and brought downe to suppe with them in the gardein, a place not fairer in naturall ornaments, then artificiall inuentions: wherein is a banquetting house among certaine pleasant trees, whose heads seemed curled with the wrappings about of Vine branches. The table was set neere to an excellent water-worke; for by the casting of the water in most cunning maner, it makes (with the shining of the Sunne vpon it) a perfect rainbow, not more pleasant to the eye then to the mind, so sensibly to see the proof of the heauenly *Iris*. There were birds also made so finely, that they did not onely deceiue the sight with their figure, but the hearing with their songs; which the watrie instruments did make their gorge deliuer. The table at which we sate, was round, which being fast to the floore whereon we sate, and that deuided from the rest of the buildings (with turning a vice, which *Basilius* at first did to make me sport) the table, and we about the table, did all turne rounde, by meanes of water which ranne vnder, and carried it about as a Mille. But alas, what pleasure did it to mee, to make diuers times the full circle round about, since *Philoclea* (being also set) was carried still in equall distance from me, and that onely my eyes did ouertake her; which when the table was stayed, and wee beganne to feede, dranke much more eagerlie of her beautie, then my mouth did of any other licour. And so was my common sense deceiued (being chiefly bent to her) that as I dranke the wine, and withall stale a looke on her, me seemed I tasted her deliciousnesse. But alas, the one thirste was much more inflamed, then the other quenched. Sometimes my eyes would lay themselues open to receiue all the dartes she did throwe, somtimes cloze vp with admiration, as if with a contrary fancie, they woulde preserue the riches of that sight they had gotten, or cast my lidde as curtaines ouer the image of beautie, her presence had painted in them. True it is, that my Reason (now growen a seruant to passion) did yet often tel his master, that he should more moderatly vse his delight. But he, that of a rebell was become a Prince, disdayned almost to allow him the place of a Counsellor: so that my senses delights being too stro[n]g for any other resolution, I did euen loose the raines vnto them: hoping, that (going for a woman) my lookes would passe, either vnmarked, or vnsuspected.

Now thus I had (as me thought) well playd my first acte, assuring my selfe, that vnder that disguisment, I should find opportunitie to reueal my self to the owner of my harte. But who would thinke it possible (though I feele it true) that in almost eight weekes space, I haue liued here (hauing no more companie but her parents, and I being familiar, as being a woman, and watchfull, as being a louer) yet could neuer finde opportunitie to haue one minutes leasure of priuie conference: the cause whereof is as strange, as the effects are to me miserable. And (alas) this it is.

At the first sight that *Basilius* had of me (I think *Cupid* hauing headed his

arrows with my misfortune) he was stricken (taking me to be such as I professe) 3
with great affectio[n] towards me, which since is growen to such a doting loue,
that (till I was faine to gette this place, sometimes to retire vnto freely) I was euen
choaked with his tediousnes. You neuer saw fourscore yeares daunce vp and downe
more liuely in a young Louer: now, as fine in his apparrell, as if he would make me in
loue with a cloake; and verse for verse with the sharpest-witted Louer in *Arcadia*. Doo
you not think that this is a sallet of woormwood, while mine eyes feede vpon the
Ambrosia of *Philocleas* beauty.

But this is not all; no this is not the worst; for he (good man) were easy enough to be
dealt with: but (as I thinke) Loue and mischeefe hauing made a wager, which should
haue most power in me, haue set *Gynecia* also on such a fire towards me, as will
neuer (I feare) be quenched but with my destruction. For she (being a woman of
excellent witte, and of strong working thoughts) whether she suspected me by my
ouer-vehement showes of affection to *Philoclea* (which loue forced me vnwisely to
vtter, while hope of my maske foolishly encouraged me) or that she hath take some
other marke of me, that I am not a woman: or what deuil it is hath reuealed it vnto her,
I know not; but so it is, that al her countenances, words and gestures, are miserable
portraitures of a desperate affection. Whereby a man may learne, that these auoydings
of companie, doo but make the passions more violent, when they meete with fitte
subjects. Truely it were a notable dumb

shew of *Cupids* kingdome, to see my eyes (languishing with ouer-vehement 4
longing) direct themselues to *Philoclea*: & *Basilus* as busie about me as a Bee, &
indeed as cumbersome; making such suits to me, who nether could if I would; nor
would if I could, helpe him: while the terrible witte of *Gynecia*, carried with the beere
of violent loue, runnes thorow vs all. And so ielous is she of my loue to her daughter,
that I could neuer yet beginne to open my mouth to the vneuitable *Philoclea*, but that
her vnwished presence gaue my tale a co[n]clusion, before it had a beginning.

And surely if I be not deceiued, I see such shewes of liking, and (if I bee acquainted
with passions) of almost a passionate liking in the heauenly *Philoclea*, towards me,
that I may hope her eares would not abhorre my discourse. And for good *Basilus*, he
thought it best to haue lodged vs together, but that the eternall hatefulnes of my
destinie, made *Gynecias* ielousie stoppe that, and all other my blessings. Yet must I
confesse, that one way her loue doth me pleasure: for since it was my foolish fortune,
or vnfortunate follie, to be knowen by her, that keepes her from bewraying me
to *Basilus*. And thus (my *Musidorus*) you haue my Tragedie played vnto you by my
selfe, which I pray the gods may not in deede prooue a Tragedie. And there he ended,
making a full point of a hartie sigh.

Musidorus recomended to his best discourse, all which *Pyrocles* had told him. 5
But therein he found such intricatenes, that he could see no way to lead him out
of the maze; yet perceiuing his affection so grou[n]ded, that striuing against it, did
rather anger then heale the wound, and rather call his friendshippe in question, then

giue place to any friendly counsell. Well (said he) deare cosin, since it hath pleased the gods to mingle your other excellencies with this humor of loue, yet happie it is, that your loue is employed vpon so rare a woman: for certainly, a noble cause dooth ease much a grieuous case. But as it stands now, nothing vexeth me, as that I can[n]ot see wherein I can be seruisable vnto you. I desire no greater seruice of you (a[n]swered *Pyrocles*) the[n] that you remayn secretly in this country, & some-times come to this place; either late in the night, or early in the morning, where you shal haue my key to e[n]ter, bicause as my fortune, eyther amendes or empires. I may declare it vnto you, and haue your counsell and furtheraunce: & hereby I will of purpose lead her, that is the prayse, and yet the staine of all womankinde, that you may haue so good a view, as to allowe my iudgement: and as I can get the most conuenient time, I wil come vnto you ; for though by reason of yonder wood you cannot see the Lodge; it is harde at hande. But now, (said she) it is time for me to leaue you, and towards euening wee will walke out of purpose hetherward, therefore keepe your selfe close in that time. But *Musidorus* bethinking him selfe that his horse might happen to bewray them, thought it best to returne for that day, to a village not farre of, and dispatching his horse in some sorte, the next day early to come a foote thither, and so to keepe that course afterward, which *Pyrocles* very well liked of. Now farewell deere cousin (said he) from me, no more *Pyrocles*, nor *Daiphantus* now, but *Zelmane*: *Zelmane* is my name, *Zelmane* is my title, *Zelmane* is the onely hope of my aduancement. And with that word going out, and seeing that the coast was cleare, *Zelmane* dismissed *Musidorus*, who departed as full of care to helpe his friend, as before he was to dissuade him.

CHAP. 15.

1 *The Labyrinth of Zelmanes loue.* 2 *The Ladies exercises.* 3 *The challenge of Phalantus in paragon of Artexias beautie.* 4 *The description of their persons and affections:* 5 *and occasion of this challenge.* 6 *The successe thereof abroad.*



Zelmane returned to the Lodge, where (inflamed by *Philoclea*, watched by *Gynecia*, and tired by *Basilus*) she was like a horse, desirous to runne, and miserablie spurred, but so short rainde, as he cannot stirre forward: *Zelmane* sought occasion to speake with *Philoclea* ; *Basilus* with *Zelmane*; and *Gynecia* hindered them all. If *Philoclea* hapned to sigh (and sigh she did often) as if that sigh were to be wayted on, *Zelmane* sighed also; whereto *Basilus* and *Gynecia* soone made vp foure parts of sorow. Their affection increased their conuersation; and their conuersation increased their affection. The respect borne bredde due ceremonies; but the affection shined so through them, that

the ceremonies seemed not ceremonious. *Zelma*'s eyes were (like children afore sweet meate) eager, but fearefull of their ill-pleasing gouernors. Time in one instant, seeming both short, and long vnto them: short, in the pleasingnes of such presence: long, in the stay of their desires.

But *Zelma* fayled not to intice them all many times abroad, because she was desirous her friend *Musidorus* (neere whom of purpose she ledde them) might haue full sight of them. Sometimes angling to a little Riuer neere hand, which for the moisture it bestowed vpon rootes of some flourishing Trees, was rewarded with their shadowe. There would they sitte downe, & pretie wagers be made betweene *Pamela* and *Philoclea*, which could soonest beguile silly fishes; while *Zelma* protested, that the fitte pray for them was hartes of Princes. She also had an angle in her hand; but the taker was so taken, that she had forgotten taking. *Basilus* in the meane time would be the cooke him selfe of what was so caught, & *Gynecia* sit stil, but with no stil pensifnesse. Now she brought them to see a seeled Doue, who the blinder she was, the higher she straued. Another time a Kite, which hauing a gut cunningly pulled out of her, and so let flie, called all the Kites in that quarter, who (as oftentimes the worlde is deceaued) thinking her prosperous when indeed she was wounded, made the poore Kite find, that opinion of riches may wel be dangerous.

But these recreations were interrupted by a delight of more gallant shew; for one euening as *Basilus* returned from hauing forced his thoughts to please themselues in such small conquests, there came a shepheard, who brought him word that a Gentlema[n] desired leaue to do a message from his Lord vnto him. *Basilus* granted; wherupon the Gentleman came, and after the dutifull ceremonies obserued, in his maisters name tolde him, that he was sent from *Phalantus* of *Corinth*, to craue licence, that as he had done in many other courts, so he might in his presence defie all *Arcadian* Knights in the behalfe of his mistres beautie, who would besides, her selfe in person be present, to giue euident prooffe what his launce should affirme. The conditions of his chalenge were, that the defendant should bring his mistresse picture, which being set by the image of *Artesia* (so was the mistresse of *Phalantus* named) who in six courses should haue better of the other, in the iudgement of *Basilus*, with him both the honors and the pictures should remaine. *Basilus* (though he had retired him selfe into that solitarie dwelling, with intention to auoid, rather then to accept any matters of drawing company; yet because he would entertaine *Zelma*, (that she might not think the time so gainefull to him, losse to her) graunted him to pitch his tent for three dayes, not farre from the lodge, and to proclayme his chalenge, that what *Arcadian* Knight (for none els but vpon his perill was licensed to come) woulde defende what he honored against *Phalantus*, should haue the like freedome of accesse and returne.

This obteyned and published, *Zelma* being desirous to learne what this *Phalantus* was, hauing neuer knowne him further then by report of his owne

good, in somuch as he was commonly called, The faire man of armes, *Basilus* told her that he had had occasion by one very inward with him, to knowe in parte the discourse of his life, which was, that he was bastard-brother to the faire *Helen* Queene of *Corinth*, and deerly esteemed of her for his exceeding good parts, being honorable courteous, and wronglesly valiaunt, considerately pleasant in conuersation, & an excellent courtier without vn-faithfulnes; who (finding his sisters vnperswadeable melancholy, thorow the loue of *Amphialus*) had for a time left her court, and gone into *Laconia*: where in the warre against the *Helots*, he had gotte[n] the reputatio[n] of one, that both durst & knew. But as it was rather choise the[n] nature, that led him to matters of armes, so as soon as the spur of honor ceased, he willingly rested in peaceable delightes, being beloued in all copanies for his louely qualities, & (as a ma[n] may terme it) cunning cherefulnes, wherby to the Prince & Court of *Laconia*, none was more agreable the[n] *Phalantus*: and he not giuen greatly to struggle with his owne disposition, followed the gentle currant of it, hauing a fortune sufficient to content, & he content with a sufficient fortune. But in that court he sawe, and was acquainted with this *Artesia*, whose beautie he now defendes, became her seruant, said him selfe, and perchaunce thought him selfe her louer. But certainly, (said *Basilus*) many times it falles out, that these young companies make themselues beleue they loue at the first liking of a likely beautie; louing, because they will loue for want of other businesse, not because they feele indeed that diuine power, which makes the heart finde a reason in passion: and so (God knowes) as inconstantly leane vpon the next chaunce that beautie castes before them. So therefore taking loue vpon him like a fashion, he courted this Ladie *Artesia*, who was as fit to paie him in his owne monie as might be. For she thinking she did wrong to her beautie if she were not prowde of it, called her disdaine of him chastitie, and placed her honour in little setting by his honouring her: determining neuer to marrie, but him, whome she thought worthie of her: and that was one, in whome all worthinesse were harboured. And to this conceipt not onely nature had bent her, but the bringing vp she receaued at my sister in lawe *Cecropia*, had confirmed her: who hauing in her widowhood taken this young *Artesia* into her charge; because her Father had bene a deare friend of her dead husbandes, and taught her to thinke that there is no wisdom but in including heauen & earth in ones self: and that loue, courtesie, gratefulnesse, friendship, and all other vertues are rather to be taken on, then taken in ones selfe: And so good discipline she found of her, that liking the fruits of her owne planting, she was co[n]tent (if so her sonne could haue liked of it) to haue wished her in marriage to my Nephew *Amphialus*. But I thinke that desire hath lost some of his heate, since she hath knowne, that such a Queene as *Helen* is, doth offer so great a price as a kingdome, to buie his fauour; for if I be not deceaued in my good sister *Cecropia*, shee thinks no face so beautifull, as that which lookes vnder a crowne. But *Artesia* indeede liked well of my Nephew *Amphialus*; for I ca[n] neuer deeme that loue, which in hauty harts proceeds of a desire onely to please, and as it were, peacock themselves; but yet she

hath shewed vehemencie of desire that way, I thinke, because all her desires be veheme[n]t, in so much that she hath both placed her onely brother (a fine youth called *Ismenus*) to be his squire, and her selfe is content to waite vpon my sister, till she may see the vttermost what she may worke in *Amphialus*: who being of a melancholic (though I must needes saye courteous and noble) mind, seems to loue nothing lesse then Loue: & of late hauing through some adventure, or inwarde discontentment, withdrawne him selfe fro[m] any bodies knowledge, where he is: *Artesia* the easier condiscended to goe to the court of *Laconia*, whether she was sent for by the Kinges wife, to whome she is somewhat allied.

And there after the war of the *Helots*, this Knight *Phalantus*, (at least for tongue-delight) made him selfe her servaunt, and she so little caring, as not to showe mislike thereof, was content onely to be noted to haue a notable servaunt. For truely one in my court neerely acquainted with him, within these few dayes made me a pleasaunt description of their loue, while he with cheerefull lookes would speake sorowfull words, vsing the phrase of his affection in so high a stile, that Mercurie would not haue wooed Venus with more magnificent Eloquence: but els neyther in behaiour, nor action, accusing in him selfe anie great trouble in minde, whether he sped or no. And she of the other side, well finding howe little it was, and not caring for more, yet taught him, that often it falleth out but a foolishse wittinesse, to speake more then one thinkes.

For she made earnest benefite of his iest, forcing him in respect of his promise, 5
to doo her suche service, as were both cumbersome and costly vnto him, while he stil thought he went beyond her, because his harte did not commit the idolatrie. So that lastlie, she (I thinke) hauing in minde to make the fame of her beautie an oratour for her to *Amphialus*, (perswading her selfe perhaps, that it might fall out in him, as it dothe in some that haue delightfull meate before them, and haue no stomacke to it, before other folkes prayse it) she tooke the advauntage one daye vppon *Phalantus* vnconscionable praysinges of her, and certaine cast-awaie vowes, howe much he would doo for her sake, to arrest his woord assoone as it was out of his mouth, and by the vertue thereof to charge him to goe with her thorow all the courts of *Greece*, & with the challenge now made, to giue her beauty the principality ouer all other. *Phalantus* was entrapped, and saw round about him, but could not get out. Exceedinglie perplexed he was (as he confest to him that tolde mee the tale) not for doubt hee had of him selfe (for indeede he had litle cause, being accounted, with his Launce especially (whereupon the challenge is to be tryed) as perfect as any that *Greece* knoweth; but because he feared to offend his sister *Helen*, and with all (as he said) he could not so much beleeeue his loue, but that he might thinke in his hart (whatsoever his mouth affirmed) that both she, my daughters, and the faire *Parthenia* (wife to a most noble Gentleman, my wiues neere kinsman) might far better put in their clayme for that prerogatiue. But his promise had bound him prentice, and therefore it was now better with willingnes to purchase thanks, then with

a discontented doing to haue the paine, and not the reward: and therefore went on, as his faith, rather then loue, did lead him.

And now hath he already passed the courts of *Laconia*, *Elis*, *Argos* and *Corinth*: and (as many times it happes) that a good pleader makes a bad cause to preuaile; so hath his Lawnce brought captiues to the triumph of *Artesias* beauty, such, as though *Artesia* be among the fairest, yet in that company were to haue the preheminance: for in those courts many knights (that had bene in other far countries) defe[n]ded such as they had seene, and liked in their trauaile: but their defence had bene such; as they had forfayted the picture of their Ladies, to giue a forced false testimonie to *Artesias* excellencie. And now lastly is he come hether, where he hath leaue to trye his fortune. But I assure you, if I thought it not in dew & true cosideratio[n] an iniurious service & churlish curtesie, to put the danger of so noble a title in the deciding of such a da[n]gerles co[m]bat, I would make yong master *Phalantus* know, that your eyes can sharpe a blu[n]t Launce, and that age, which my graye haire (onely gotten by the louing care of others) make seeme more then it is, hath not diminished in me the power to protect an vndeniable verity. With that he bustled vp himselve, as though his harte would faine haue walked abroad. *Zelmane* with an inwarde smiling gaue him outward thanks, desiring him to reserve his force for worthier causes.

CHAP. 16.

1 *Phalantus and Artesias pompous entraunce.* 2 *The painted muster of an eleuen conquered beauties.*



SO passing their time according to their woont, they wayted for the coming of *Phalantus* who the next morning hauing alredy caused his tents to be pitched, neere to a faire tree hard by the Lodge, had vpon the tree made a shield to bee hanged vp, which the defendand should strike, that woulde call him to the mainteyning his challenge.

The *Impresa* in the shield; was a heauen full of starres, with a speech signifying, that it was *the beauty which gaue it the praise.*

Himselfe came in next after a triumphant chariot, made of Carnatio[n] velvet inriched with purl & pearle, wherein *Artesia* sat, drawne by foure winged horses with artificiall flaming mouths, and fiery winges, as if she had newly borrowed them of *Phæbus*. Before her marched, two after two, certaine footeme[n] pleasantly attired, who betweene them held one picture after another of them that by *Phalantus* well running had lost the prize in the race of beauty, and at euery pace they stayed, turning the pictures to each side, so leasurely, that with perfect iudgement they might be

discerned.

The first that came in (following the order of the time wherein they had bene
wonne) was the picture of *Andromana*, Queene of *Iberia*; whom
a *Laconian* Knight hauing sometime (and with speciall fauour) served, (though some
yeares since retourned home) with more gratefulness then good fortune defended. But
therein Fortune had borrowed witte; for indeede she was not co[m]parable to *Artesia*;
not because she was a good deale elder (for time had not yet beene able to impouerish
her store thereof) but an exceeding red haire with small eyes, did (like ill companions)
disgrace the other assembly of most commendable beauties.

Next after her was borne the counterfaite of the princesse of *Elis*, a Lady that
taught the beholders no other point of beauty, but this, that as lyking is, not
alwaies the child of beauty, so whatsoever liketh; is beautyfull; for in that visage there
was nether Maiestic, grace, fauour, nor fairenesse; yet she wanted not a seruaunt that
would haue made her fairer then the faire *Artesia*. But he wrote her praises with his
helmet in the dust, and left her picture to be as true a witnes of his ouerthrow, as his
running was of her beauty.

After her was the goodly *Artaxia*, great Q. of *Armenia*, a Lady vpon whom
nature bestowed, & wel placed her delightful colours; & withal, had proportioned
her without any fault, quickly to be discovered by the senses, yet altogether seemed
not to make vp that harmony, that Cupid delights in; the reaso[n] wherof might seem a
mannish countenance, which ouerthrew that louely sweetnes, the noblest power of
womankind, farre fitter to preuaile by parley, then by battell.

Of a farre contrary consideratio[n] was the representation of her that next
followed, which was *Erona* Queene of *Licia*, who though of so browne a haire, as
no man should haue iniuried it to haue called it blacke, and that in the mixture of her
cheeks the white did so much ouercome the redde (though what was, was very pure)
that it came neare to palenes, and that her face was a thought longer then the
exacte *Symmetrians* perhaps would allow; yet loue plaid his part so well, in euerie
part, that it caught holde of the iudgement, before it could iudge, making it first loue,
& after acknowledge it faire, for there was a certaine delicacie, which in yeelding,
conquered; & with a pitiful looke made one find cause to craue helpe himselfe.

After her came two Ladies, of noble, but not of royall birth: the former was
named *Baccha*, who though very faire, and of a fatness rather to allure, then to
mislike, yet her brests ouer-familiarly laide open, with a mad countenaunce about her
mouth, betweene simpring & smyling, her head bowed somewhat down, seemed to
la[n]guish with ouer-much idlenes, with an inviting look cast vpward, disswading
with too much perswading, while hope might seem to ouercome desire.

The other (whose name was written *Leucippe*) was of a fine daintines of beauty, her face carying in it a sober simplicitie; like one that could do much good, & ment no hurt, her eyes hauing in them such a cheerefulnes, as nature seemed to smile in them: though her mouth and cheekes obeyed that prety demurenes which the more one markes, the more one woulde iudge the poore soule apt to beleue; & therefore the more pitie to deceiue her. 6 7

Next came the Queene of *Laconia*, one that seemed borne in the confines of beauties kingdome: for all her lineame[n]ts were neither perfect possessions thereof, nor absent strangers thereto: but she was a Queene, and therefore beautyfull. 8

But she that followed, conquered indeed with being conquered; & might well haue made all the beholders waite vpo[n] her triumph, while her selfe were led captiue. It was the excelle[n]tly-faire Queene *Helen*, whose lacinth haire curled by nature, & intercurled by arte (like a fine brooke through golde sa[n]ds) had a rope of faire pearles, which now hiding, now hidden by the haire, did as it were play at fast or loose, each with other, mutually giuing & receiuing riches. In her face so much beautie & fauour expressed, as if *Helen* had not bene knowe, some would rather haue iudged it the painters exercise, to shew what he could do, the cou[n]terfaiting of any liuing patterne: for no fault the most fault finding wit could haue fou[n]d, if it were not, that to the rest of the body the face was somewhat too little: but that little was such a sparke of beauty, as was able to enflame a world of loue. For euery thing was full of a choyce finenes, that if it wa[n]ted any thing in maiestic, it supplied it with increase of pleasure; & if at the first it strake not admiration, it rauished with delight. And no indiffere[n]t soule there was, which if it could resist fro[m] subiecting it self to make it his princesse, that would not lo[n]g to haue such a playfelow. As for her attire, it was costly and curious, though the look (fixt with more sadnes the[n] it seemed nature had bestowed to any that knew her fortune) bewraied, that as she vsed those orname[n]ts, not for her self, but to preuaile with another, so she feared, that all would not serue.

Of a farre differing (though esteemed equall) beautie, was the faire *Parthenia* who next wayted on *Artesias* triumph, though farre better she might haue sitte in the throne. For in her euery thing was goodly, and stately; yet so, that it might seeme that great-mindednes was but the auncient-bearer to humblenes. For her great graie eye, which might seem full of her owne beauties, a large, and exceedingly faire forehead, with all the rest of her face and body, cast in the mould of Noblenes; was yet so attired, as might shew, the mistres thought it either not to deserve, or not to need any exquisite decking, hauing no adorning but cleanlines; and so farre from all arte, that it was full of carelesnesse: vnlesse that carelesnesse it selfe (in spite of it selfe) grew artificiall. But *Basilus* could not abstaine from praising *Parthenia*, as the perfect picture of a womanly vertue, and wiuely faithfulness: telling withall *Zelmane*, how he had vnderstoode, that when in the court of *Laconia*, 9

her picture (maintained by a certaine *Sycionian Knight*) was lost, thorow want, rather of valour, then iustice: her husband (the famous *Argalus*) would in a chafe haue gone and redeemed it with a new triall. But she (more sporting then sorrowing for her vnderdeserved champion) tolde her husbande, she desired to be beautifull in no bodies eye but his; and that she would rather marre her face as euill as euer it was, then that it should be a cause to make *Argalus* put on armour. Then would *Basilius* haue tolde *Zelmane*, that which she alredie knew, of the rare triall of their coupled affection: but the next picture made the mouth giue place to their eyes.

It was of a young mayd, which sate pulling out a thorne out of a Lambs foote, with her looke so attentiu vpon it, as if that little foote coulde haue bene the circle of her thoughts; her apparell so poore, as it had nothing but the inside to adorne it; a shephooke lying by her with a bottle vpon it. But with al that pouertie, beauty plaid the prince, and commanded as many harts as the greatest Queene there did. Her beautie and her estate made her quicklie to be knowne to be the faire shepherdesse, *Vrania*, whom a rich knight called *Lacemon*, farre in loue with her, had vnluckely defended.

The last of all in place, because last in the time of her being captiue, was *Zelmane*, daughter to the King *Plexirtus*: who at the first sight seemed to haue some resembling of *Philoclea*, but with more marking (co[m]paring it to the present *Philoclea*, who indeed had no paragon but her sister) they might see, it was but such a likenesse, as an vnperfect glasse doth giue; aunswerable enough in some feitures, & colors, but erring in others. But *Zelmane* sighing, turning to *Basilius*, Alas sir (said she) here be some pictures which might better become the to[m]bes of their Mistresses, then the triumphe of *Artesia*. It is true sweetest Lady (saide *Basilius*) some of them be dead, and some other captiue: But that hath happened so late, as it may be the Knightes that defended their beauty, knew not so much: without we will say (as in some harts I know it would fall out) that death it selfe could not blot out the image which loue hath engraue in the. But diuers besides these (said *Basilius*) hath *Phalantus* woon, but he leaues the rest, carying onely such, who either for greatnes of estate, or of beauty, may iustly glorifie the glory of *Artesias* triumph.

11

CHAP. 17.

1 *The ouerthrow of fiue Arcadian knights.* 2 *The young shepherds prettie challenge.* 3 *What passions the sixth knights foyle bredde in Zelmane.* 4 *Clitophon hardly ouermatched by Phalantus.* 8 *The ill arayed, & the black knights contention for prioritie against Phalantus.* 5 *The halting knights complaint against the black knight.* 7 *Phalantus*

fall by the ill furnisht knight. 8 The crosse-parting of Phalantus with Artesia, 9 and who the victor was.



Thus talked *Basilus* with *Zelmane*, glad to make any matter subject to speake of, with his mistresse, while *Phalantus* in this pompous manner, brought *Artesia* with her getlewome[n], into one Tent, by which he had another: where they both wayted who would first strike vpon the shielde, while *Basilus* the Judge appointed sticklers, and trumpets, to whom the other should obey. But non that day appeared, nor the next, till already it had consumed halfe his allowance of light; but then there came in a knight, protesting himselfe as contrarie to him in minde, as he was in apparrell. For *Phalantus* was all in white, hauing in his bases, and caparison imbroidered a wauing water: at each side whereof he had nettings cast ouer, in which were diuers fishes naturally made, & so pretily, that as the horse stirred, the fishes seemed to striue, and leape in the nette.

But the other knight, by name *Nestor*, by birth an *Arcadian*, & in affection vowed to the faire Shepherdesse, was all in black, with fire burning both vpo[n] his armour, and horse. His *impresa* in his shield, was a fire made of Juniper, with this word, *More easie, and more sweete*. But this hote knight was cooled with a fall, which at the third course he receiued of *Phalantus*, leauing his picture to keepe companie with the other of the same stampe; he going away remedilesly chafing at his rebuke. The next was *Polycetes*, greatly esteemed in *Arcadia*, for deedes he had done in armes: and much spoken of for the honourable loue he had long borne to *Gynecia*; which *Basilus* himselfe was content, not onely to suffer, but to be delighted with; he carried it in so honorable and open plainnes, setting to his loue no other marke, then to do her faithfull service. But neither her faire picture, nor his faire running, could warrant him from ouerthrow, and her from becomming as then the last of *Artesias* victories: a thing *Gynecias* vertues would little haue recked at another time, nor then, if *Zelmane* had not seene it. But her champion went away as much discomfited, as discomfited. Then *Telamon* for *Polixena*, & *Eurimelo* for *Elpine*, and *Lean* for *Zoana*; all braue Knights, all faire Ladies, with their going down, lifted vp the ballance of his praise for actiuitie, and hers for fairenes.

Vpon whose losse as the beholders were talking, there comes into the place where they ranne, a shepheard stripling (for his height made him more then a boy, & his face would not allow him a ma[n]) brown of co[m]plexio[n] (whether by nature, or by the Suns familiaritie) but very louely withall; for the rest so perfectly proportioned, that Nature shewed, she dooth not like men who slubber vp matters of meane account. And well might his proportion be iudged; for he had nothing vpon him but a paire of sloppes, and vpon his bodie a Gote-skinne, which he cast ouer his shoulder, doing all things with so pretie grace, that it seemed ignorance could not

make him do amisse, because he had a hart to do well, holding in his right hand a long staffe, & so coming with a looke ful of amiable fiercenes, as in whom choller could not take away the sweetnes, he came towards the king, and making a reuerence (which in him was comely because it was kindly) My liege Lord (said he) I pray you heare a few words; for my hart wil break if I say not my minde to you. I see here the picture of *Vrania*, which (I cannot tell how, nor why) these men when they fall downe, they say is not so faire as yonder gay woman. But pray God, I may neuer see my olde mother aliue, if I think she be any more match to *Vrania*, then a Goate is to a fine Lambe; or then the Dog that keepe our flock at home, is like your white Greihounde, that pulled down the Stagge last day.

[] And therefore I pray you let me be drest as they be, and my hart giues me, I shall tumble him on the earth for indeede he might aswell say, that a Couslip is as white as a Lillie: or els I care not let him come with his great staffe, and I with this in my hand, and you shall see what I can doo to him. *Basilus* sawe it was the fine shepheard *Lalus*, whom once he had afore him in Pastorall sportes, and had greatly delighted in his wit full of prety simplicitie, and therefore laughing at his earnestnesse, he bad him be content, since he sawe the pictures of so great Queenes, were faine to follow their champions fortune. But *Lalus* (euen weeping ripe) went among the rest, longing to see some bodie that would reuenge *Vranias* wronge; and praying hartely for euery bodie that ran against *Phalantus*, then began to feele pouerty, that he could not set him selfe to that triall. But by and by, euen when the Sunne (like a noble harte) began to shew his greatest countenance in his lowest estate, there came in a Knight, called *Phebilus*, a Gentleman of that cou[n]try, for whom hatefull fortune had borrowed the dart of Loue, to make him miserable by the sight of *Philoclea*. For he had euen from her infancie loued her, and was stricken by her, before she was able to knowe what quiuer of arrowes her eyes caried; but he loued and dispaired; and the more he dispaired, the more he loued. He sawe his owne vnworthines, and thereby made her excellencie haue more terrible aspect vpon him: he was so secrete therein, as not daring to be open, that to no creature he euer spake of it, but his hart made such silent complaints within it selfe, that while all his senses were attentue thereto, cunning iudges might perceauie his minde: so that he was knowne to loue though he denied, or rather was the better knowne, because he denied it. His armour and his attire was of a Sea couler, his *Impresa*, the fishe called *Sepia*, which being in the nette castes a blacke inke about it selfe, that in the darkenesse thereof it may escape: his worde was, *Not so*. *Philocleas* picture with almost an idolatrous magnificence was borne in by him. But streight ielousie was a harbinger for disdaine in *Zelma*es harte, when she sawe any (but her selfe) should be auowed a champion for *Philoclea*: in somuch that she wisht his shame, till she sawe him shamed: for at the second course he was stricken quite from out of the saddle, so full of grief, and rage withall, that he would faine with the sworde haue reuenged it: but that being contrary to the order set downe, *Basilus* would not suffer; so that wishing him selfe in the bottome of the

earth, he went his way, leauing *Zelmane* no lesse angry with his los, the[n] she would haue beene with his victory. For if she thought before a riuals prayse woulde haue angred her, her Ladies disgrace did make her much more forget what she then thought, while that passion raigned so much the more, as she saw a pretie blush in Philocleas cheekes bewray a modest discontentment. But the night commaunded truce for those sportes, & *Phalantus* (though intreated) would not leaue *Artesia*, who in no case would come into the house, hauing (as it were) suckle of *Cecropias* breath a mortall mislike against *Basilus*.

But the night measured by the short ell of sleepe, was soone past ouer, and the next morning had giuen the watchful stars leaue to take their rest, when a trumpet summoned *Basilus* to play his iudges parte: which he did, taking his wife & daughters with him; *Zelmane* hauing lockt her doore, so as they would not trouble her for that time: for already there was a Knight in the fielde, readie to proue *Helen* of *Corinth* had receaued great iniury, both by the erring iudgement of the challenger, and the vnlucky weakenesse of her former defender. The new Knight was quickly knowne to be *Clitophon* (*Kala[n]ders* sonne of *Easilus*-his sister) by his armour, which al guilt, was so well ha[n]dled, that it shewed like a glittering sande and grauell, interlaced with silver riuers: his deuice he had put in the picture of *Helen* which hee defended. It was the *Ermion*, with a speach that signified, *Rather dead then spotted*. But in that armour since he had parted fro[m] *Helen* (who would no longer his companie, finding him to enter into termes of affection,) he had performed so honourable actio[n]s, (stil seeking for his two friends by the names of *Palladius* and *Daipha[n]tus*,) that though his face were couered, his being was discovered, which yet *Basilus* (which had brought him vp in his court) would not seeme to do; but glad to see triall of him, of whom he had heard very well, he commaunded the trumpets to sound; to which the two braue knights obeying, they performed their courses, breaking their six staues, with so good, both skill in the hitting, & grace in the maner, that it bred some difficulty in the iudgement. But *Basilus* in the ende gaue sentence against *Clitophon*, because *Phalantus* had broken more staues vpo[n]the head, & that once *Clitophon* had receiued such a blowe, that he had lost the raines of his horse, with his head well nie touching the crooper of the horse. But *Clitophon* was so angry with the iudgeme[n]t, (wherin he thought he had receiued wro[n]g) that he omitted his duty to his Prince, & vncke; and sodainly went his way, still in the quest of them, whom as then he had left by seeking: & so yeilded the field to the next commer.

Who comming in about two houres after, was no lesse marked then al the rest before, because he had nothing worth the marking. For he had neither picture, nor deuice, his armour of as old a fashion (besides the rustic poorenesse,) that it might better seeme a monument of his graundfathe[r]s courage: about his middle he had in steede of bases, a long cloake of silke, which as vnhandsomely, as it needes must, became the wearer: so that all that lookt on, measured his length on the earth alreadie,

since he had to meete one who had bene victorious of so many gallants. But he went on towards the shielde, and with a sober grace strake it; but as he let his sworde fall vpon it, another Knight, all in blacke came rustling in, who strake the shield almost assoone as he, and so strongly, that he brake the shield in two: the ill appointed Knight (for so the beholders called him) angrie with that, (as he accounted,) insolent iniurie to himselfe, hit him such a sound blowe, that they that looked on saide, it well became a rude arme. The other aunswered him againe in the same case, so that Launces were put to silence, the swordes were so busie.

But *Phalantus* angry of this defacing his shield, came vpon the blacke Knight, and with the pommell of his sworde set fire to his eyes, which presently was reuenged, not onely by the Blacke, but the ill apparelled Knight, who disdained another should enter into his quarrell, so as, who euer sawe a matachin daunce to imitate fighting, this was a fight that did imitate the matachin: for they being but three that fought, euerie one had adversaries, striking him, who strooke the third, and reuenging perhaps that of him, which he had receaued of the other. But *Basilus* rising himselfe to parte them, the sticklers authoritie scarslie able to perswade cholerike hearers; and parte them he did.

But before he could determine, comes in a fourth, halting on foote, who complained to *Basilus*, demaunding iustice on the blacke Knight, for hauing by force taken away the picture of *Pamela* from him, whiche in little forme he ware in a Tablet, and couered with silke had fastened it to his Helmet, purposing for want of a bigger, to paragon the little one with *Artesias* length, not doubting but in that little quantitie, the excellencie of that would shine thorow the weakenesse of the other: as the smallest starre dothe thorow the whole Element of fire. And by the way he had met with this blacke Knight, who had (as he said) robbed him of it. The iniurie seemed grieuous, but when it came fully to be examined, it was found, that the halting Knight meeting the other, asking the cause of his going thetherward, and finding it was to defend *Pamelas* diuine beautie against *Artesias*, with a prowde iollitie commaunded him to leaue that quarrell onely for him, who was onely worthy to enter into it. But the blacke Knight obeying no such comandements, they fell to such a bickering, that he gat a halting, & lost his picture. This vnderstood by *Basilus*, he told him he was now fitter to looke to his owne bodie, then an others picture: & so (uncomforted therein) sent him away to learn of *Æsculapius* that he was not fit for *Venus*.

But then the question arising who should be the former against *Phalantus*, of the blacke, or the ill apparelled Knight (who now had gotten the reputation of some sturdy loute, he had so well defended himselfe) of the one side, was alleged the hauing a picture which the other wanted: of the other side, the first striking the shield; but the conclusion was, that the ill apparelled Knight should haue the precedence, if he deliuered the figure of his mistresse to *Phalantus*; who asking him for it, Certainly (said he) her liueliest picture, (if you could see it) is in my hart, & the best co[m]parison I could make of her, is of the Sunne & of all other the heauenly

beauties. But because perhaps all eyes cannot taste the Diuinitie of her beautie, and would rather be dazeled, then taught by the light, if it bee not clouded by some meaner thing; know you then, that I defend that same Ladie, whose image *Phebilus* so feebly lost yesternight, and in steede of an other (if you ouercome mee) you shall haue me your slaue to carrie that image in your mistresse triumphe. *Phalantus* easilie agreed to the bargaine, which already he made his owne.

But when it came to the triall, the ill apparelled Knight choosing out the greatest stauces in all the store, at the first course gaue his head such a remembrance, that he lost almost his remembrance, he him selfe receyving the incounter of *Phalantus* without any extraordinarie motion. And at the seconde gaue him such a counterbuffe, that because *Phalantus* was so perfite a horseman, as not to be driuen from the saddle, the saddle with broken girthes was driuen from the horse: *Phalantus* remaining angrie and amazed, because now being come almost to the last of his promised enterprise, that disgrace befell him, which he had neuer before knowne.

But the victorie being by the iudges giuen, and the trumpets witnessed to the ill apparelled Knight; *Phalantus* disgrace was ingriued in lieu of comferte by *Artesia*; who telling him she neuer lookt for other, bad him seeke some other mistresse. He excusing himselfe, and turning ouer the fault to Fortune, Then let that be your ill Fortune too (saide she) that you haue lost me.

Nay truly Madame (saide *Phalantus*) it shall not be so: for I thinke the losse of such a Mistresse will prooue a great gaine: and so concluded; to the sporte of *Basilus*, to see young folkes loue, that came in maskt with so great pompe, goe out with so little constancie. But *Phalantus* first professing great service to *Basilus* for his curteous intermitting his solitary course for his sake, would yet conduct *Artesia* to the castle of *Cecropia*, whether she desired to goe: vowing in himselfe, that neither hart, nor mouth-loue, should euer any more intangle him. And with that resolution he left the company.

Whence all being dismissed (among whom the black knight went away repynning at his luck, that had kept him from winning the honor, as he knew he should haue don, to the picture of *Pamela*) the ill apparelled knight (who was only desired to stay, because *Basilus* meant to shew him to *Zelmane*) pulled of his Helmet, & then was knowe himselfe to be *Zelmane*: who that morning (as she told) while the others were busie, had stolne out to the Princes stable, which was a mile from the Lodge, had gotten a horse (they knowing it was *Basilus* pleasure she should be obeyed) & borrowing that homely armour for want of a better, had come vpon the spur to redeem *Philocleas* picture, which she said, she could not beare, (being one of that little wilderness-company) should be in captiuitie, if the cunning she had learned in her cuntrye of the noble *Amazons*, could withsta[n]d it: & vnder that pretext faine she would haue giue a secret passport to her affection. But this act painted at one instant rednesse in *Philocleas* face, and palenesse in *Gynecias*, but broght forth no

other coutena[n]ces but of admiratio[n], no speches but of com[m]ed[n]atio[n]s: al these few (besides loue) thinking they honoured them selves, in honouring so accomplished a person as *Zelmane*: whom dayly they sought with some or other sports to delight, for which purpose *Basilus* had in a house not farre of, servaunts, who though they came not vncalled, yet at call were redye.

CHAP. 18.

1 *Musidorus disguised.* 2 *His song.* 3 *His loue,* 4 *the cause thereof.* 5 *His course therein.*



And so many daies were spent, and many waies vsed, while *Zelmane* was like one that stode in a tree waiting a good occasio[n] to shoot, & *Gynecia* a blauncher, which kept the dearest deere from her. But the day being come, which according to an apointed course, the sheapheards were to asse[m]ble, & make their pastorall sports afore *Basilus*: *Zelmane* (fearing, lest many eyes, and comming diuers waies, might hap to spy *Musidorus*) went out to warne him thereof.

But before she could come to the Arbour, she sawe walking from her-ward, a man in sheapperdish apparrel who being in the sight of the Lodge it might seeme he was allowed there. A lo[n]g cloke he had on, but that cast vnder his right arme, wherein he held a shephooke, so finely wrought, that it gaue a brauery to pouerty; & his rayments, though they were meane, yet receiued they hansomnes by the grace of the wearer; though he himselfe went but a kinde of languishing pace, with his eies somewhat cast vp to heauen, as though his fancies straued to mount higher; sometimes throwne downe to the ground, as if the earth could not beare the burthens of his sorrowes; at length, with a lame[n]table tune, he songe these fewe verses.

*Come shepheards weedes, become your masters minde:
Yeld outward shew, what inward chance he tryes:
Nor be abasht, since such a guest you finde,
Whose strongest hope in your weake comfort lyes.*

*Come shepheards weedes, attend my woefull cryes :
Disuse your selues from sweete Menalcas voice:
For other be those tunes which sorrow tyes,
From those cleere notes which freely may reioyce.
Then power out plaint, and in one word say this:
Helples his plaint, who spoyles himselfe of blisse.*

And hauing ended, he strake himselfe on the brest; saying, O miserable wretch, whether do thy destenies guide thee? The voice made *Zelmane* hasten her pace to ouertake him: which hauing done, she plainly perceaued that it was her deare friend *Musidorus*, whereat marvailing not a little, she demaunded of him, whether the Goddesses of those woods had such a powre to trasforme euery body, or whether, as in all enterprises else he had done, he meant thus to match her in this newe alteration.

3

Alas, (said *Musidorus*) what shall I say, who am loth to say, and yet faine would haue said? I find indeed, that all is but lip-wisdome, which wants experience. I now (woe is me) do try what loue can doo. O *Zelmane*, who will resist it, must either haue no witte, or put out his eyes? can any man resist his creation? certainly by loue we are made, and to loue we are made. Beasts onely cannot discern beauty, and let them be in the role of Beasts that doo not honor it. The perfect friendship *Zelmane* bare him, and the great pitie she (by good triall) had of such cases, coulde not keepe her from smiling at him, remembring how vehemently he had cryed out against the folly of louers. And therefore a litle to punish him, Why how now deere cousin (said she) you that were last day so hie in Pulpit against louers, are you now become so meane an auditor? Remember that loue is a passion; and that a woorthie mans reason must euer haue the masterhood. I recant, I recant (cryed *Musidorus*,) and withall falling downe prostrate, O thou celestial, or infernal spirit of Loue, or what other heauely or hellish title thou list to haue (for effects of both I finde in my selfe) haue compassion of me, and let thy glory be as great in pardoning them that be submitted to thee, as in conquering those that were rebellious. No, no saide *Zelmane*, I see you well enough: you make but an enterlude of my mishaps, and doo but counterfaite thus, to make me see the deformitie of my passions: but take heede, that this iest do not one day turne to earnest. Now I beseech thee (saide *Musidorus* taking her fast by the hand) euen for the truth of our friendship, of which (if I be not altogether an vnhappy man) thou hast some remembraunce, & by those sacred flames which (I know) haue likewise neerely touched thee; make no iest of that, which hath so earnestly pearced me thorow, nor let that be light to thee, which is to me so burdenous, that I am not able to beare it. *Musidorus* both in words & behauiour, did so liuely deliuer out his inward grief, that *Zelmane* found indeede, he was thorowly wou[n]ded: but there rose a new ielousy in her minde, lest it might be with *Philoclea*, by whom, as *Zelmane* thought, in right all hartes and eyes should be inherited. And therefore desirous to be cleared of that doubt, *Musidorus* shortly (as in hast and full of passionate perplexednes,) thus recounted his case vnto her.

The day (said he) I parted from you, I being in mind to returne to a towne, from whence I came hether, my horse being before tired, would scarce beare me a mile hence: where being benighted, the light of a candle (I saw a good way of) guided me to a young shepherds house, by name *Menalcas*, who seing me to be a straying

4

stra[n]ger, with the right honest hospitality which seemes to be harboured in the *Arcadian* breasts, & though not with curious costlines, yet with cleanly sufficiencie, entertained me: and hauing by talke with him, found the manner of the countrie, something more in particular, then I had by *Kalanders* report, I agreed to sojourne with him in secret, which he faithfully promised to observe. And so hether to your arbour diuers times repaired: & here by your meanes had the sight (O that it had neuer bene so, nay, O that it might euer be so) of a Goddesse, who in a definite compasse can set forth infinite beauty. All this while *Zelmane* was racked with ieaousie. But he went on, For (saide he) I lying close, and in truth thinking of you, and saying thus to my selfe, O sweet *Pyrocles*, how art thou bewitched? where is thy vertue? where is the vse of thy reason? how much am I inferior to thee in the state of the mind ? And yet know I, that all the heauens cannot bring me to such thraldome. Scarcely, thinke I, had I spoken this word, when the Ladies came foorth; at which sight, I thinke the very words returned back again to strike my soule; at least, an vnmeasurable sting I felt in my selfe, that I had spoken such words. At which sight? said *Zelmane*, not able to beare him any longer. O (sayd *Musidorus*) I know your suspition; No, no, banish all such feare, it was, it is, and must be *Pamela*. Then all is safe (sayd *Zelmane*) proceede, deare *Musidorus*. I will not (said he) impute it to my late solitarie life (which yet is prone to affections) nor, to the much thinking of you (though that cald the consideratio[n] of loue into my mind, which before I euer neglected) nor to the exaltation of *Venus*; nor reuenge of *Cupid*; but euen to her, who is the Planet, nay, the Goddesse, against which, the onely shielde must be my Sepulchre. When I first saw her, I was presently striken, and I (like a foolish child, that when any thing hits him, wil strike himselfe again vpon it) would needs looke againe as though I would perswade mine eyes, that they were deceiued. But alas, well haue I found, that Loue to a yeelding hart is a king; but to a resisting, is a tyrant. The more with arguments I shaked the stake, which he had planted in the ground of my harte, the deeper still it sanke into it. But what meane I to speake of the causes of my loue, which is as impossible to describe, as to measure the backside of heauen? Let this word suffice, I loue.

And that you may know I doo so, it was I that came in black armour to defende her picture, where I was both prevented, and beaten by you. And so, I that waited here to do you service, haue now my self most need of succor. But wherupon got you your self this apparel? said *Zelmane*. I had forgotten to tel you (said *Musidorus*) though that were one principall matter of my speech; so much am I now master of my owne minde. But thus it happened: being returned to *Menalcas* house, full of tormenting desire, after a while faynting vnder the weight, my courage stird vp my wit to seeke for some releefe, before I yeelded to perish. At last this came into my head, that very euening, that I had to no purpose last vsed my horse and armour. I tolde *Menalcas*, that I was a *Thessalian* Gentleman, who by mischaunce hauing killed a great fauorit of the Prince of that cou[n]try, was pursued so cruelly, that in no place, but either by

fauour, or corruption, they would obtaine my destruction; and that therefore I was determined (till the fury of my persecutions might be asswaged) to disguise my selfe among the shephards of *Arcadia*, & (if it were possible) to be one of them that were allowed the Princes presence; Because if the woorst should fall, that I were discouered, yet hauing gotten the acquaintance of the Prince, it might happen to moue his hart to protect me. *Menalcas* (being of an honest dispositio[n]) pittied my case, which my face through my inward torment made credible; and so (I giuing him largely for it) let me haue this rayment, instructing me in all the particularities, touching himselfe, or my selfe, which I desired to know: yet not trusting so much to his constancie, as that I would lay my life, and life of my life, vpon it, I hired him to goe into *Thessalia* to a friend of mine, & to deliuer him a letter fro[m] me; coniuring him to bring me as speedy an answeere as he could, because it imported me greatly to know, whether certaine of my friendes did yet possesse any fauour, whose intercessio[n]s I might vse for my restitution. He willingly tooke my letter, which being well sealed, indeed conteyned other matter. For I wrote to my trustie servant *Calodoulus* (whom you know) that assoone as he had deliuered the letter, he should keep him prisoner in his house, not suffering him to haue conference with any body, till he knewe my further pleasure: in all other respects that he should vse him as my brother. And thus is *Menalcas* gone, and I here a poore shepheard; more proud of this estate, the[n] of any kingdom: so manifest it is, that the highest point outward things can bring one vnto, is the contentme[n]t of the mind: with which, no estate; without which, all estates be miserable. Now haue I chosen this day, because (as *Menalcas* tolde me) the other shepherds are called to make their sports, and hope that you wil with your credite, finde meanes to get me allowed among them. You neede not doubt (answered *Zelmane*) but that I will be your good mistresse: marrie the best way of dealing must be by *Dametas*, who since his blunt braine hath perceiued some fauour the Prince dooth beare vnto me (as without doubt the most servile flatterie is lodged most easilie in the grossest capacitie; for their ordinarie conceite draweth a yeelding to their greaters, and then haue they not witte to learne the right degrees of duetie) is much more serviceable vnto me, then I can finde any cause to wish him. And therefore dispaire not to winne him: for euery present occasion will catch his senses, and his senses are masters of his sillie mind; onely reuerence him, and reward him, and with that bridle and saddle you shall well ride him. O heauen and earth (said *Musidorus*) to what a passe are our mindes brought, that from the right line of vertue, are wryed to these crooked shifts ? But ô Loue, it is thou that doost it: thou changest name vpo[n] name; thou disguisest our bodies, and disfigurest our mindes. But in deed thou hast reason, for though the wayes be foule, the iourneys end is most faire and honourable.

CHAP. 19.

1 *The meanes of Musidorus his apprenticeship vnto Dametas.*
 2 *The preparation and place of the Pastorals.* 3 *The Lyons assault on Philoclea, and death by Zelmane.* 4 *The shee beares on Pamela, and death by Dorus.* 5 *The Io Pæan of Dametas,* 6 *and his scape from the beare.* 7 *The victors praises.* 8 *Whence those beasts were sent.*



NO more sweete *Musidorus* (said *Zelmane*) of these philosophies; for here comes the very person of *Dametas*. And so he did in deed, with a sword by his side, a forrest-bill on his neck, and a chopping-knife vnder his girdle: in which provided sorte he had euer gone, since the feare *Zelmane* had put him in. But he no sooner sawe her, but with head and armes he laid his reuerence afore her; inough to haue made any man forswear all courtesie. And then in *Basilus* name, he did invite her to walke downe to the place, where that day they were to haue the Pastoralles.

But when he spied *Musidorus* to be none of the shepherds allowed in that place, he would faine haue perswaded himselfe to vtter some anger, but that he durste not; yet muttering, and champing, as though his cudde troubled him; he gaue occasion to *Musidorus* to come neare him, and feine this tale of his owne life: That he was a younger brother of the shepheard *Menalcas*, by name *Dorus*, sent by his father in his tender age to *Athens*, there to learne some cunning more then ordinarie, that he might be the better liked of the Prince: and that after his fathers death, his brother *Menalcas* (latelie gone thether to fetch him home) was also deceased: where (upon his death) he had charged him to seek the service of *Dametas*, and to be wholly, and euer guded by him; as one in whose iudgement and integritie, the Prince had singular confidence. For token whereof, he gaue to *Dametas* a good summe of golde in redy coine, which *Menalcas* had bequeathed vnto him, vpon condition he should receiue this poore *Dorus* into his service, that his mind and manner might grow the better by his dayly example. *Dametas*, that of all manners of stile could best conceiue of golden eloquence, being withall tickled by *Musidorus* prayses, had his brayne so turned, that he became slaue to that, which he, that shewed to be his servant, offered to giue him: yet for countenance sake, he seemed very squeimish, in respect of the charge he had of the Princesse *Pamela*. But such was the secrete operation of the golde, helped with the perswasion of the *Amazon Zelmane*, (who sayde it was pittie so handsome a young man should be any where els, then with so good a master) that in the ende he agreed (if that day he behaued himselfe so to the lyking of *Basilus*, as he might be co[n]tented) that then he would receiue him into his service.

And thus went they to the Lodge, where they fou[n]d *Gynecia* and her daughters ready to go to the field, to delight themselves there a while, vntill the

1

2

shepherds comming: whether also taking *Zelmane* with them, as they went, *Dametas* told them of *Dorus*, and desired he might be accepted there that day, in steed of his brother *Menalcas*. As for *Basilus*, he staid behind to bring the shepherds, with whom he meant to co[n]fer, to breed the better *Zelmanes* liking (which he onely regarded) while the other beautifull band came to the faire field, appointed for the shepherdish pastimes. It was indeed a place of delight; for thorow the middest of it, there ran a sweete brooke, which did both hold the eye open with her azure streams, & yet seeke to close the eie with the purling noise it made vpon the pibble stones it ran ouer: the field it self being set in some places with roses, & in all the rest constantly preserving a flourishing greene; the Roses added such a ruddy shew vnto it, as though the field were bashfull at his owne beautie: about it (as if it had bene to inclose a Theater) grew such a sort of trees, as eyther excellency of fruit, statelines of growth, continuall greenes, or poetically fancies haue made at any time famous. In most part of which there had bene framed by art such pleasant arbors, that (one tree to tree, answering another) they became a gallery aloft from almost round about, which below gaue a perfect shadow, a pleasant refuge then from the cholericke looke of *Phæbus*.

In this place while *Gynecia* walked hard by them, carying many vnquiet co[n]tentions about her, the Ladies sate them downe, inquiring many questio[n]s of the shepherd *Dorus*; who (keeping his eie still vpon *Pamela*) answered with such a trembling voice, & abashed cou[n]tenance, & oftentimes so far from the matter, that it was some sport to the young Ladies, thinking it want of education, which made him so discountenaunced with vnwoonted presence. But *Zelmane* that saw in him the glasse of her owne miserie, taking the hande of *Philoclea*, and with burning kisses setting it close to her lips (as if it should stande there like a hand in the margine of a Booke, to note some saying worthy to be marked) began to speake these wordes. O Loue, since thou art so changeable in mens estates, how art thou so consta[n]t in their torments? when sodainly there came out of a wood a monstrous Lion, with a she Beare not far from him, of litle lesse fiercenes, which (as they ghest) hauing bene hu[n]ted in Forests far of, were by chau[n]ce come thether, where before such beastes had neuer bene seene. Then care, not feare; or feare, not for themselves, altered some thing the cou[n]tenances of the two Louers, but so, as any man might perceiue, was rather an assembling of powers, then dismaiednes of courage. *Philoclea* no sooner espied the Lio[n], but that obeying the com[m]andement of feare, she leapt vp, & ran to the lodge-ward, as fast as her delicate legs could carrie her, while *Dorus* drew *Pamela* behind a tree, where she stood quaking like the Partridge, on which the Hawke is eue[n] ready to seaze. But the Lion (seing *Philoclea* run away) bent his race to her-ward, & was ready to seaze him selfe on the pray, when *Zelmane* (to whome daunger then was a cause of dreadlesnes, all the co[m]positions of her elemets being nothing but fierie) with swiftnesse of desire crost him, and with force of affection strake him such a blow vpon his chine, that she

opened al his body: wherwith the valiant beast turning vpo[n]her with open iawes, she gaue him such a thrust thorow his brest, that al the Lio[n] could do, was with his paw to teare of the mantle and sleeue of *Zelmane*, with a little scratch, rather then a wound; his death-blow hauing take away the effect of his force. But there withall he fell downe, & gaue *Zelmane* leasure to take of his head, to carrie it for a present to her Ladie *Philoclea*: who all this while (not knowing what was done behind her) kept on her course, like *Arethusa* when she ran from *Alpheus*; her light apparell being carried vp with the winde, that much of those beauties she would at another time haue willingly hidden, was present to the sight of the twise wounded *Zelmane*. Which made *Zelmane* not folow her ouer hastily, lest she should too soone depriue her selfe of that pleasure: But carying the Lions head in her hand, did not fully ouertake her, till they came to the presence of *Basilius*. Nether were they lo[n]g there, but that *Gynecia* came thether also: who had bene in such a traunce of musing, that *Zelmane* was fighting with the Lion, before she knew of any Lions coming: but then affection resisting, and the soone ending of the fight preuenting all extremitie of feare, she marked *Zelmanes* fighting. And when the Lions head was of, as *Zelmane* ran after *Philoclea* so she could not find in her hart but run after *Zelmane*: so that it was a new sight, Fortune had prepared to those woods, to see these great personages thus runne one after the other: each carried forward with an inwarde violence: *Philoclea* with such feare, that she thought she was still in the Lions mouth: *Zelmane* with an eager and impatient delight, *Gynecia* with wings of Loue, flying they neither knew, nor cared to know whether. But now, being all come before *Basilius* amazed with this sight, and feare hauing such possessio[n] in the faire *Philoclea*, that her bloud durst not yet to come to her face, to take away the name of palenesse from her most pure whitenes, *Zelmane* kneeled down, and presented the Lions head vnto her. Only Ladie (said she) here see you the punishment of that vnnatural beast, which co[n]trary to her owne kind wold haue wronged Princes bloud, guided with such traiterous eies, as durst rebell against your beauty. Happy am I, and my beautie both (answered the sweete *Philoclea* then blushing, for feare had bequeathed his roome to his kinsman bashfulnes) that you excellent *Amazon*, were there to teach him good manners. And euen thanks to that beautie (answered *Zelmane*) which can giue an edge to the bluntest swordes?

There *Philoclea* told her father, how it had hapned: but as she had turned her eyes in her tale to *Zelmane*, she perceiued some bloud vpo[n] *Zelmanes* shoulder, so that starting with the louely grace of pittie, she shewed it to her Father and mother: who, as the nurse sometimes with ouer-much kissing may forget to giue the babe sucke, so had they with too much delighting, in beholding and praysing *Zelmane*, left of to marke whether she needed succour. But then they ran both vnto her, like a father and mother to an onely childe, and (though *Zelmane* assured them, it was nothing) would needes see it; *Gynecia* hauing skill in surgery, an arte in those daies much esteemed, because it served to vertuous courage, which eue[n] Ladies would (eue[n] with the

conte[m]pt of courage) seeme to cherish. But looking vpon it (which gaue more inward bleeding wou[n]ds to *Zelmane*, for she might sometimes feele *Philocleas* touch, whiles she helped her mother) she found it was indeed of no great importance: yet applied she a pretious baulme vnto it, of power to heale a greater grieffe.

But euen then, & not before, they reme[m]bred *Pamela*,
therefore *Zelmane* (thinking of her friend *Dorus*) was running back to be satisfied, whe[n] they might all see *Pamela* coming between *Dorus* & *Dametas*, hauing in her ha[n]d the paw of a Beare, which the shepheard *Dorus* had newly presented vnto her, desiring her to accept it, as of such a beast, which though she deserved death for her presumption, yet was her will to be esteemed, since she could make so sweet a choice. *Dametas* for his part came piping and dauncing, the meriest man in a parish. But whe[n] he came so neere, as he might be heard of *Basilus*, he would needs breake thorow his eares with this ioyfull song of their good successe.

5

Now thanked be the great God Pan,
which thus preserves my loued life:
Thanked lie I that keepe a man,
who ended hath this fearefull strife:
For if my man must praises haue,
what then must I that keepe the knaue?

For as the Moone the eies doth please,
with gentle beames not hurting sight:
Yet hath sir Sunne the greatest praise,
because from him doth come her light:
So if my man must praises haue,
what then must I that keepe the knaue?

Being al now come together, & all desirous to know each others adve[n]tures, *Pamelas* noble hart would needs gratefully make knowne the valia[n]t mean of her safety: which (directing her speach to her mother) she did in this ma[n]ner. As soone (said she) as ye were all run away, and that I hoped to be in safetie, there came out of the same woods a foule horrible Beare, which (fearing belike to deale while the Lion was present, as soone as he was gone) came furiously towards the place where I was, and this young shepheard left alone by me; I truly (not guilty of any wisdom, which since they lay to my charge, because they say, it is the best refuge against that beast, but eue[n] pure feare bringing forth that effect of wisdom) fell downe flat of my face, needing not cou[n]terfait being dead, for indeed I was litle better. But this shepheard hauing no other weapon, but that knife you see,

4

standing before the place where I lay, so behaued him selfe, that the first sight I had (when I thought my selfe nearer *Charons* ferry,) was the shepheard shewing me his bloody knife in token of victory. I pray you (saide *Zelmane*, speaking to *Dorus*, whose valour she was carefull to haue manifested) in what sorte, so ill weaponed, could you atchiue this enterprise? Noble Ladie (saide *Dorus*) the manner of these beastes fighting with any man, is to stande vp vpon their hinder feete: and so this did, & being ready to giue me a shrewd imbracement, I thinke, the God *Pan*, (euer carefull of the chiefe blessings of *Arcadia*) guided my hand so iust to the hart of the beast, that neither she could once touch me, nor (which is the only matter in this worthy reme[m]bra[n]ce) breed any da[n]ger to the Princesse. For my part, I am rather (withall subiected humblenes) to thanke her excellencies, since the duety thereunto gaued me harte to saue my selfe, then to receiue thanks for a deede, which was her onely inspiring. And this *Dorus* spake, keeping affection as much as he could, backe from coming into his eyes and gestures. But *Zelmane* (that had the same Character in her heart) could easily discerne it, and therefore to keepe him the longer in speach, desired to vnderstand the conclusion of the matter; and how the honest *Dametas* was escaped.

Nay (said *Pamela*) none shall take that office from my selfe, being so much bound to him as I am, for my education. And with that word (scorne borrowing the countenance of myrth) somewhat she smiled, and thus spake on? When (said she) *Dorus* made me assuredly perceiue, that all cause of feare was passed (the truth is) I was ashamed to finde my selfe alone with this shepheard: and therefore looking about me, if I could see any bodie; at length we both perceiued the gentle *Dametas*, lying with his breast and head as farre as he could thrust himselfe into a bush: drawing vp his legges as close vnto him as hee coulde: for, like a man of a very kind nature, soone to take pittie of himselfe, he was full resolved not to see his owne death. And when this shepheard pushed him, bidding him to be of good cheere; it was a good while, ere we could perswade him, that *Dorus* was not the beare: so that he was faine to pull him out by the heeles, & shew him the beast, as deade as he could wish it: which you may beleue me, was a very ioyful sight vnto him. But then he forgate al curtesie, for he fel vpon the beast, giuing it many a manfull wound: swearing by much, it was not wel such beastes shuld be suffered in a com[m]o[n]welth. And then my gouernour, as full of ioy, as before of feare, came dauncing and singing before vs as euen now you saw him. Well wel (said *Basilus*) I haue not chosen *Dametas* for his fighting, nor for his discoursing, but for his plainenesse and honestie and therein I know he will not deceaue me.

But then he told *Pamela* (not so much because she should know it, as because he would tell it) the wonderfull act *Zelmane* had perfourmed, which *Gynecia* likewise spake [of], both in such extremitie of praising, as was easie to be seene, the constructions of their speach might best be made by the Grammer rules of affection. *Basilus* told with what a gallant grace shee ranne with the Lyons head in

her hand, like another *Pallas* with the spoiles of *Gorgon*. *Gynecia* sware, shee sawe the face of the young *Hercules* killing the *Nemean* Lion, & all with a grateful assent confirmed the same praises: onely poore *Dorus* (though of equall desert, yet not proceeding of equall estate) should haue bene left forgotten, had not *Zelmana* againe with great admiration, begun to speake of him; asking, whether it were the fashion or no, in *Arcadia*, that shepherds should performe such valorous enterprises.

This *Basilus* (hauing the quicke sense of a louer) tooke, as though his Mistres had giuen a secret reprehension, that he had not shewed more gratefulnesse to *Dorus*; and therefore (as nymblicke as he could) enquired of his estate, adding promise of great rewards: among the rest, offering to him, if he would exercise his courage in souldierie, he would commit some charge vnto him vnder his Lieutenant *Philanax*.

But *Dorus* (whose ambition clymed by another stayre) hauing first answered touching his estate, that he was brother to the shepheard *Menalcas*; who among other, was wont to resort to the Princes presence, & excused his going to souldierie, by the vnaptnesse he found in himselfe that way: he told *Basilus*, that his brother in his last testament had willed him to serve *Dametas*; and therefore (for due obedience thereunto) he would thinke his service greatly rewarded, if he might obtaine by that meane to liue in the sight of his Prince, and yet practise his owne chosen vocation. *Basilus* (liking well his goodly shape and handsome manner) charged *Dametas* to receiue him like a sonne into his house: saying, that his valour, and *Dametas* truth would be good bulwarkes against such mischiefes, as (he slicked not to say) were threatned to his daughter *Pamela*.

Dametas, no whit out of countenance with all that had bene said (because he had no worse to fal into then his owne) accepted *Dorus*: and with all, telling *Basilus*, that some of the shepherds were come; demaunded in what place he would see their sports: who first curious to know whether it were not more requisite for *Zelmana*s hurt to rest, then sit vp at those pastimes; and she (that felt no wound but one) earnestly desiring to haue Pastorals, *Basilus* commanded it should be at the gate of the lodge: where the throne of the Prince being (according to the auncient manner) he made *Zelmana* sit betweene him & his wife therin, who thought her selfe betweene drowning and burning: and the two young Ladies of either side the throne, and so prepared their eyes and eares to bee delighted by the shepherds. 2

But before al of them were assembled to begin their sports, there came a fellow, who being out of breath (or seeming so to be for haste) with humble hastines told *Basilus*, that his Mistres, the Lady *Cecropia*, had sent him to excuse the mischance of her beastes ranging in that dagerous sort, being happened by the folly of the keeper; who thinking himself able to rule them, had caried them abroad, & so was deceiued: whom yet (if *Basilus* would punish for it) she was readie to deliuer. 8
Basilus made no other answere, but that his Mistres if shee had any more such beastes, should cause them to be killed: and then he told his wife & *Zelmana* of it, because they should not feare those woods; as though they harbored such beasts,

where the like had neuer bene seene. But *Gynecia* tooke a further conceit of it, mistrusting *Cecropia*, because shee had heard much of the diuellish wickednesse of her heart, and that particularly she did her best to bring vp her sonne *Amphialus* (being brothers sonne to *Basilus*) to aspire to the crowne, as next heire male after *Basilus*; and therefore saw no reason, but that she might coniecture, it proceeded rather of some mischieuous practise, than of misfortune. Yet did she onely vtter her doubt to her daughters, thinking, since the worst was past, shee would attend a further occasion, least ouer much haste might seeme to proceede of the ordinarie mislike betweene sisters in Lawe: onely they marvelled, that *Basilus* looked no further into it; who (good man) thought so much of his late conceiued common wealth, that all other matters were but digressions vnto him. But the shepherds were ready, and with wel handling themselves, called their senses to attend their pastimes.

The first Eclogues

B A S I L I V S, because *Zelmane* so would haue it, vsed the artificiall day of torches, to lighten the sports their inue[n]tions could minister. And yet because many more shepherds were newly come, then at the first; he did in a gentle manner chastise the cowardise of the fugitiue shepherds: with making them (for that night) the Torch-bearers, and the others later come, he willed with all freedome of speech and behaiour, to keepe their accustomed method. Which while they prepared to do, *Dametas*, who much disdained (since his late authority) all his old companions, brought his servant *Dorus* in good acquaintance and allowance of the[m]; & himselfe stood like a directer ouer the[m], with nodding, gaping, winking, or stamping shewing how he did like, or mislike those things he did not vnderstand. The first sports the shepherds shewed, were full of such leapes & gambols, as being accorded to the Pipe (which they bare in their mouthes, euen as they daunced) made a right picture of their chiefe god *Pan*, and his companions the *Satyres*. Then would they cast away their Pipes; and holding hand in hand, daunce as it were in a braule, by the onely cadence of their voices, which they would vse in singing some short coplets, whereto the one halfe beginning, the other halfe should answer. As the one halfe saying,

We loue, and haue our loues rewarded.

The others would aunswere.

We loue, and are no whit regarded.

The first againe.

We finde most sweete affections snare,

With like tune it should be as in quire sent back againe.

That sweete, but sower despairefull care.

A third time likewise thus:

Who can despaire, whom hope doth beare ?
The aunswere.

And who can hope, that feeles despaire?
Then all ioyning their voyces, and dauncing a faster measure, they would conclude with some such words:
As without breath, no pipe doth moue,
No musike kindly without loue.

Hauing thus varied both their songs and daunces into diuers sorts of inventions; their last sport was one of them to prouoke another to a more large expressing of his passions: which *Lalus* (accounted one of the best singers amongst them) hauing marked in *Dorus* dauncing, no lesse good grace & handsome behaiour, then extreame tokens of a trauelled minde; began first with his Pipe, and then with his voice, thus to challenge *Dorus*, and was by him answered in the vnderwritten sort.

Lalus and Dorus.

C*ome Dorus, come, let songs thy sorowes signifie:*
And if for want of vse thy minde ashamed is,
That verie shame with Loues high title dignifie.
No stile is held for base, where Loue well named is:
Ech eare suckes vp the words, a true loue scattereth,
And plaine speach oft, then quaint phrase, better framed is.

Dorus.

Nightingales seldome sing, the Pie still chattereth:
The wood cries most, before it thoroughly kindled be,
Deadly wounds inward bleed, ech sleight sore mattereth.
Hardly they heard, which by good hunters singled be.
Shallow brookes murmure most, deep silent slide away;
Nor true loue loues those loues with others mingled be.

Lalus

If thou wilt not be scene, thy face goe hide away, .
Be none of vs, or els maintaine our fashion:
Who frownes at others feastes, dooth better bide away,
But if thou hast a Loue, in that Loues passion,
I challenge thee by shew of her perfection,
Which of vs two deserveth most compassion.

Dorus.

Thy challenge great, but greater my protection:
Sing then, and see (for now thou hast inflamed me)

Thy health too meane a match for my infection.

*No, though the heau'ns for high attempts haue blamed me,
Yet high is my attempt, O Muse historifie
Her praise, whose praise to learne your skill hath framed me.*

Lalus.

*Muse hold your peace: but thou, my God Pan, glorifie
My Kalas giftes: who with all good gifts filled is.*

Thy pipe, ô Pan, shall helpe, though I sing sorilie.

A heape of sweetes she is, where nothing spilled is;

Who though she be no Bee, yet full of home is:

A Lillie field, with plowe of Rose which tilled is.

Milde as a Lambe, more daintie then a Conie is:

Her eyes my eyesight is, her conversation

More gladde to me, then to a miser monie is.

What coye account she makes of estimation?

How nice to touch[,] how all her speeches peized be ?

A Nymph thus turnde, but mended in translation.

Dorus.

*Such Kala is: but ah, my fancies raysed be
In one, whose name to name were high presumption,
Since vertues all, to make her title, pleased be.*

O happie Gods, which by inward assumption

Enioy her soule, in bodies faire possession,

And keep it ioynde, fearing your seates consumption.

How oft with raine of teares skies make confession,

Their dwellers rapt with sight of her perfection

From heau'nly throne to her heau'n vse digression?

Of best things then what world can yeeld confection

To liken her? Decke yours with your comparison:

She is her selfe, of best things the collection.

Lalus.

How oft my dolefull Sire cried to me, tarrie sonne

When first he spied my loue ? how oft he said to me,

Thou art no souldier fitte for Cupids garrison?

My sonne, keepe this, that my long toyle hath laide to me:

Loue well thine owne: me thinkes, woolles whitenes passeth all,

I neuer found long loue such wealth hath paide to me.

This winde he spent: but when my Kala glasseth all

My sight in her faire limmes, I then assure my selfe,

Not rotten sheepe, but high crownes she surpasseth all.

Can I be poore, that her golde haire procure my selfe?

*Want I white wooll, whose eyes her white skinne garnished?
Till I get her, shall I to keepe enure my selfe?*

Dorus.

*How oft, when reason saw, loue of her harnised
With armour of my hart, he cried, O vanitie,
To set a pearle in steele so meanely varnished ?
Looke to thy selfe; reach not beyond humanitie:
Her minde, beames, state farre from thy weake wings banished:
And Loue, which louer hurts is inhumanitie.
Thus Reason said: but she came, Reason vanished;
Her eyes so maistering me, that such obiection
Seemde but to spoyle the foode of thoughts long famished.
Her peereles height my minde to high erection
Drawes vp; and if hope-fayling ende liues pleasure,
Of fayrer death how can I make election?*

Lalus.

*Once my well-waiting eyes espied my treasure,
With sleeues turnde vp, loose haire, and brest enlarged,
Her fathers corne (mouing her faire limmes) measure.
O cried I, of so meane worke be discharged:
Measure my case, how by thy beauties filling
With seede of woes my hart brimme-full is charged.
Thy father bids thee saue, and chides for spilling.
Saue then my soule, spill not my thoughts well heaped,
No louely praise was euer got by killing.
These bolde words she did heare, this fruite I reaped,
That she, whose looke alone might make me blessed,
Did smile on me, and then away she leaped.*

Dorus.

*Once, ô sweete once, I saw with dread oppressed
Her whom I dread; so that with prostrate lying
Her length the earth in Loues chiefe clothing dressed.
I saw that riches fall, and fell a crying;
Let not dead earth enioy so deare a couer,
But deck therewith my soule for your sake dying.
Lay all your feare vpon your fearefull louer:
Shine eyes on me, that both our liues be guarded;
So I your sight, you shall your selves recouer.
I cried, and was with open rayes rewarded:
But straight they fledde, summond by cruell honor,*

Honor, the cause, desart is not regarded.

*This mayde, thus made for ioyes, ô Pan bemone her,
That without loue she spends her yeares of loue:
So faire a fielde would well become an owner.*

*And if enchantment can a harde hart moue,
Teach me what circle may acquaint her sprite,
Affections charmes in my behalfe to proue.*

*The circle is my (round about her) sight:
The power I will invoke dwelles in her eyes:
My charme should be, she haunt me day and night.*

Lalus.

*Farre other care, ô Muse, my sorrow tries,
Bent to such one, in whom, my selfe must say,
Nothing can mend that point that in her lies.*

*What circle then in so rare force beares swaye?
Whose sprite all sprites can spoile, raise, damne, or saue:
No charme holdes her, but well possesse she may;*

*Possesse she doth, and makes my soule her slaue:
My eyes the bandes, my thoughts the fatall knot.
No thralles like them that inward bondage haue.*

Dorus.

*Kala at length conclude my lingring lotte:
Disdaine me not, although I be not faire.
Who is an heire of many hundred sheep
Doth beauties keep, which neuer Sunne can burne,
Nor stormes doo turne: fairenes serves oft to wealth.
Yet all my health I place in your good-will.
Which if you, will (& doo) bestow on me,
Such as you see, such still you shall me finde.
Constant and kind: my sheep your foode shall breed,
Their wooll your weede, I will you Musique yeeld
In flowrie fielde; and as the day begins
With twenty ginnes we will the small birds take,
And pastimes make, as Nature things hath made.
But when in shade we meet of mirtle bowes,
Then Loue allowes, our pleasures to enrich,
The thought of which doth passe all worldly pelfe.*

Lalus.

Lady your selfe, whom nether name I dare,

Dorus.

*And titles are but spots to such a worthe,
Heare plaints come forth from dungeon of my minde.
The noblest kinde reiects not others woes.
I haue no shewes of wealth: my wealth is you,
My beauties hewe your beames, my health your deeds;
My minde for weeds your vertues liuerie weares.
My foode is teares; my tunes waymenting yeeld:
Despaire my fielde; the flowers spirits warrs :
My day newe cares; my ginnes my daily sight,
In which do light small birds of thoughts orethrowne:
My pastimes none: time passeth on my fall:
Nature made all, but me of dolours made:
I finde no shade, but where my Sunne doth burne:
No place to turne; without, within it fryes :
Nor helpe by life or death who liuing dyes.*

Lalus.

*But if my Kala this my suite denies,
Which so much reason beares,
Let crowes picke out mine eyes, which saw too much:
If still her minde be such,
My earthy moulds will melte in watrie teares.*

Dorus.

*My earthy moulde doth melte in watrie teares,
And they againe resolue
To aire of sighes, sighes to the hartes fire turne,
Which doth to ashes burne:
So doth my life within it selfe dissolue.*

Lalus

*So doth my life within it selfe dissolue, .
That I am like a flower
New plucked from the place where it did breed,
Life showing, dead indeed:
Such force hath Loue aboute poore Natures power.*

Dorus.

*Such force hath Loue aboute poore Natures power,
That I growe like a shade,
Which being nought seems somewhat to the eyen,
While that one body shine.
Oh he is mard that is for others made.*

Lalus.

Oh he is mard that is for others made.

*Which thought doth marre my piping declaration,
Thinking how it hath mard my shepherds trade.*

*Now my hoarse voice doth faile this occupation,
And others long to tell their loues condition :
Of singing take to thee the reputation.*

Dorus.

*Of singing take to thee the reputation
New friend of mine; I yeeld to thy habilitie:
My soule doth seeke another estimation.*

*But ah my Muse would thou hadst agilitie,
To worke my Goddess so by thy invention,
On me to cast those eyes, where shine nobilitie.
Seen, and vnknowne; heard, but without attention.*

THis Eclogue betwixt *Lalus* & *Dorus*, of euery one of the beholders receiued great commendations. When *Basilus* called to a yong shepherd, who nether had daunced nor song with the[m], but layne al this while vpo[n] the ground at the foot of a cypresse tree, in so deep a melancholy, as though his mind were banished from the place he loued, to be in prison in his body: & desired him he would begin some Eclogue, with some other of the shepherds, according to the accustomed guise: or els declare the discourse of his owne fortune, vnknowne to him; as being a straunger in that cou[n]try. But he praied the King to pardon him, the time being far too ioyful to suffer the rehersall of his miseries. Yet, to satisfy *Basilus* some way, he sange this songe, he had learned before he had subiected his thoughts to acknowledge no maister, but a mistresse.

AS I my little flocke on Ister banke
(A little flocke; but well my pipe they couthe)
Did piping leade, the Sunne already sanke
Beyond our worlde, and ere I got my boothe.
Each thing with mantle black the night doth scathe;
Sauing the glowe worme, which would curteous be
Of that small light oft watching shepherds see.

*The welkin had full niggardly enclosed
In cofer of dimme clowdes his silver groates,
Icleped starres ; each thing to rest disposed:
The caues were full, the mountaines void of goates :*

*The birds eyes closde closed their chirping notes.
As for the Nightingale woodmusiques King,
It August was, he daynde not then to sing.*

*Amid my sheepe, though I sawe nought to feare
Yet (for I nothing sawe) I feared sore;
Then fonde I which thing is a charge to heart
As for my sheepe I dradded mickle more
Then euer for my selfe since I was bore:
I sate me downe: for see to goe ne could,
And sange vnto my sheepe lest stray they should.*

*The songe I sange old Lanquet had me taught,
Lanquet, the shepheard best swift Ister knewe,
For clerkly reed, and hating what is naught,
For faithfull hart, cleane hands, and mouth as true:
With his sweet skill my skillesse youth he drewe,
To haue a feeling fast of him that sits
Beyond the heauen, far more beyond your witts.*

*He said, the Musique best thilke powers pleasd
Was iumpe Concorde betweene our wit and will;
Where highest notes to godlines are raisd,
And lowest sinke not downe to iote of ill:
With old true tales he woont mine eares to fill,
How shepherds did of yore, how now they thriue,
Spoiling their flock, or while twixt the[m] they striue.*

*He liked me, but pitied lustfull youth:
His good strong staffe my slippry yeares vpbore:
He still hop'd well, because he loued truth;
Till forste to parte, with harte and eyes euen sore,
To worthy Coriden he gaue me ore.
But thus in okes true shade recounted he
Which now in nights deepe shade sheep heard of me.*

*Such maner time there was (what time I n'ot)
When all this Earth, this damme or mould of ours
Was onely won'd with such as beastes begot:
Vnknowne as then were they that builded towers:
The cattell wild, or tame, in natures bowers*

*Might freely come, or rest, as seemed them:
Man was not man their dwellings in to hem.*

*The beasts had sure some beastly pollicie:
For nothing can endure where order n'is.
For once the Lion by the Lam.be did lie;
The fearefull Hinde the Leopard did kisse :
Hurtles was Tygers pawe and Serpents hisse.
This thinke I well, the beasts with courage clad
Like Senators a harmeles empire had.*

*At which whether the others did repine,
(For envie harbresth most in feeblest hartes)
Or that they all to chaunging did encline,
(As euen in beasts their dames leaue chaunging parts)
The multitude to Ioue a suite empertes,
With neighing, blaying, braying, and barking,
Raring, and howling for to haue a King.*

*A King, in language theirs they said they would:
(For then their language was a perfect speech)
The birdes likewise with chirpes, and puing could
Cackling, and chattring, that of Ioue beseech.
Onely the owle still warnde them not to seech
So hastily that which they would repent:
But sawe they would, and he to deserts went.*

*Ioue wisely said (for wisdom wisely sayes)
O beasts, take heed what you of me desire.
Rulers will thinke all things made them to please,
And soone forget the swincke due to their hire.
But since you will, part of my heau'nly fire
I will you lende; the rest your selves must giue,
That it both seene and felte may with you liue.*

*Full glad they were and tooke the naked sprite,
Which streight the Earth yclothed in his claye:
The Lion, harte; the Ounce gaue actiue might;
The Horse, good shape; the Sparrow, lust to playe;
Nightingale, voice, entising songes to saye.
Elephant gaue a perfect memorie:*

And Paroty ready tongue, that to applie.

*The Foxe gaue craft; the Dog gaue flatterie;
Asse, patience; the Mole, a working thought;
Eagle, high looke; Wolfe secrete crueltie:
Monkie, sweet breath; the Cow, her faire eyes brought;
The Ermion, whitest skinne, spotted with nought;
The sheep, mild-seeming face; climing, the Beare;
The Stagge did giue the harme eschewing feare.*

*The Hare, her sleights; the Cat, his melancholie;
Ante, Industrie; and Connie, skill to builde;
Cranes, order; Storkes, to be appearing holie;
Camasleon, ease to chaunge; Ducke, ease to yelde;
Crocodile, teares, which might be falsely spilde :
Ape great thing gaue, though he did mowing stand.
The instrument of instruments, the hand.*

*Ech other beast likewise his present brings:
And (but they drad their Prince they ought should want)
They all consented were to giue him wings:
And aye more awe towards him for to plant,
To their owne worke this priuiledge they graunt,
That from thenceforth to all eternitie,
No beast should freely speake, but onely he.*

*Thus Man was made; thus Man their Lord became:
Who at. the first, wanting, or hiding pride,
He did to beastes best vse his cunning frame;
With water drinke, herbes meate, and naked hide,
And fellow-like let his dominion slide;
Not in his sayings saying I, but we:
As if he meant his lordship common be.*

*But when his state so rooted he had found,
That they now skilld not, how from him to wend;
Then gan in guiltlesse earth full many a wound,
Iron to seeke, which gainst it selfe should bend,
To teare the bowels, that good corne should send.
But yet the common Damme none did bemone;
Because (though hurt) they neuer heard her grone.*

*Then gan the factions in the beastes to breed;
Where helping weaker sort, the nobler beastes,
(As Tygers, leopards, hearts, and Lions seed)
Disdaind with this, in deserts sought their restes;
Where famine rauine taught their hungrie chestes,
That craftily he first them to do ill,
Which being done he afterwards would kill.*

*For murthers done, which neuer erst was seene,
By those great beastes, as for the weakers good,
He chose themselves his guarders for to bene,
Gainst those of might, of whom in feare they stood,
As horse and dogge, not great, but gentle blood:
Blith were the commons cattell of the felde,
Tho when they saw their foen of greatnes kilde.*

*But they or spent, or made of slender might,
Then quickly did the meaner cattell finde,
The great beames gone, the house on shoulders light:
For by and by the horse faire bitts did binde:
The dogge was in a coller taught his kinde.
As for the gentle birds like case might reiue
When falcon they, and gossehauke saw in mewe.*

*Worst fell to smallest birds, and meanest heard,
Whom now his owne, full like his owne he vsed.
Yet first but wooll, or fethers off he teard:
And when they were well vs'de to be abused,
For hungrie teeth their flesh with teeth he brused:
At length for glutton taste he did them kill:
At last for sport their sillie liues did spill.*

*But yet o man, rage not beyond thy neede :
Deeme it no gloire to swell in tyrannie.
Thou art of blood; ioy not to see things bleede :
Thou fearest death; thinke they are loth to die.
A plaint of guiltlesse hurt doth pierce the skie.
And you poore beastes, in patience bide your hell,
Or know your strengths, and then you shall do well.*

*Thus did I sing, and pipe eight sullen houres
To sheepe, whom loue, not knowledge, made to heare,
Now fancies fits, now fortunes balefull stowers:
But then I homewards call'd my lambkins deare:
For to my dimmed eyes beganne t'appeare
 The night growne old, her blacke head waxen gray,
 Sure shepherds signe, that morne should soone fetch day.*

ACCORDING to the nature of diuerse eares, diuerse iudgements straight followed: some praising his voice, others his words fit to frame a pastorall stile, others the strangenes of the tale, and scanning what he shuld meane by it. But old *Geron* (who had borne him a grudge euer since in one of their Eclogues he had taken him vp ouer-bitterly) tooke hold of this occasion to make his reuenge, and said, He neuer saw thing worse proportioned, then to bring in a tale of he knew not what beastes at such a sport-meeting, when rather some song of loue, or matter for ioyfull melody was to be brought forth. But, said he, This is the right concept of young men, who thinke, then they speake wiseliest, when they cannot vnderstand themselves. But little did the melancholike shepherd regard either his dispraises, or the others praises, who had set the foundation of his honour there; where he was most despised. And therefore he returning againe to the traine of his desolate pensiuenesse, *Geron* invited *Histor* to answere him in Eclogue-wise; who indeed hauing bene long in loue with the faire *Kala*, and now by *Lalus* ouergone; was growne into a detestation of marriage. But thus it was.

Geron. Histor.

IN *faith, good Histor, long is your delay,
From holy marriage sweete and surest meane:
Our foolish lust in honest rules to stay.
 I pray thee doo to Lalus sample leane:
Thou seest, how friske, and iolly now he is,
That last day seem'd, he could not chew a beane.
 Beleeue me man, then is no greater blisse,
Then is the quiet ioy of louing wife;
Which who so wants, halfe of himselfe doth misse.
 Friend without change, playfellow without strife,
Foode without fulnes, counsaile without pride,
Is this sweet doubling of our single life.*

Geron.

*No doubt to whom so good chance did betide,
As for to finde a pasture strawed with guide,
He were a foole, if there he did not bide.*

*Who would not haue a Phœnix if he could?
The humming Waspe, if it had not a stinge,
Before all flies the Waspe accept I would.*

*But this bad world, few golden fieldes doth bring,
Phoenix but one, of Crowes we millions haue:
The Waspe seemes gay, but is a combrous thing.*

*If many Kalaes our Arcadia gaue,
Lalus example I would soone ensue,
And thinke, I did my selfe from sorrow saue.*

*But of such wiues we finde a slender crew;
Shrewdnes so stirres, pride so puffes vp the hart,
They seldome ponder what to them is due.*

*With meager lookes, as if they still did smart;
Puiling, and whimpring, or else scolding flat,
Make home more paine then following of the cart.*

*Ether dull silence, or eternall chat;
Still contrarie to what her husband sayes;
If he do praise the dog, she likes the cat.*

*Austere she is, when he would honest playes;
And gamesome then, when he thinkes on his sheepe;
She bids him goe, and yet from iorney stayes.*

*She warre doth euer with his kinsfolke keepe,
And makes them fremb'd, who frinds by nature are,
Enuying shallow toyes with malice deepe.*

*And if forsooth there come some new found ware,
The little coine his sweating browes haue got,
Must goe for that, if for her lowres he care:*

*Or els; Nay faith, mine is the luckiest lot,
That euer fell to honest woman yet:
No wife but I hath such a man, God wot.*

*Such is their speech, who be of sober wit;
But who doo let their tongues shew well their rage,
Lord, what bywords they speake, what spite they spit?*

*The house is made a very lothsome cage,
Wherein the birde doth neuer sing but cry ;
With such a will as nothing can asswage.*

Dearely the servants doo their wages buy,

*Reui'd for ech small fault, sometimes for none:
They better liue that in a gaile doo lie.*

*Let other fowler spots away be blowne;
For I seeke not their shame, but still me thinkes,
A better life it is to lye alone.*

Geron.

*Who for ech fickle feare from vertue shrinkes
Shall in his life embrace no worthy thing:
No mortall man the cuppe of suretie drinkes.*

*The heau'ns doo not good haps in handfuls bring,
But let vs pike our good from out much bad:
That still our little world may know his king.*

*But certainly so long we may be glad,
While that we doo what nature doth require,
And for th'euent we neuer ought be sad.*

*Man oft is plag'de with aire, is burnt with fire,
In water dround, in earth his buriall is;
And shall we not therefore their vse desire ?*

*Nature aboue, all things requireth this,
That we our kind doo labour to maintaine;
Which drawne-out line doth hold all humane blisse.*

*Thy father iustly may of thee complaine,
If thou doo not repay his deeds for thee,
In granting vnto him a grandsires gaine.*

*Thy common-wealth may rightly griued be,
Which must by this immortall be preserved
If thus thou murther thy posteritie.*

*His very being he hath not deserved,
Who for a selfe-concept will that forbear,
Whereby that being aye must be conserued.*

*And God forbid, women such cattell were,
As you paint them: but well in you I finde,
No man doth speake aright, who speakes in feare.*

*Who onely sees the ill is worse then blind.
These fiftie winters married haue I beene;
And yet finde no such faults in womankind.*

*I haue a wife worthie to be a Queene,
So well she can command, and yet obay;
In ruling of a house so well shee's seene.*

And yet in all this time, betwixt vs tway,

*We beare our double yoke with such consent,
That neuer past foule word, I dare well say.*

*But these be your loue-toyes, which still are spent
In lawlesse games, and loue not as you should,
But with much studie learne late to repent.*

*How well last day before our Prince you could
Blinde Cupids workes with wonder testifie?
Yet now the roote of him abase you would.*

*Goe to, goe to, and Cupid now applie
To that where thou thy Cupid maist auowe,
And thou shalt finde, in women vertues lie.*

*Sweete supple mindes which soone to wisdom bowe
Where they by wisdomes rule directed are,
And are not forst fonde thraldome to allow.*

*As we to get are framed, so they to spare:
We made for paine, our paines they made to cherish:
We care abroad, and they of home haue care.*

*O Histor, seeke within thy selfe to flourish:
Thy house by thee must liue, or els be gone:
And then who shall the name of Histor nourish?*

*Riches of children passe a Princes throne;
Which touch the fathers hart with secret ioy,
When without shame he saith, these be mine owne.*

*Marrie therefore; for marriage will destroy
Those passions which to youthful head doo clime
Mothers and Nurses of all vaine annoy.*

ALL the assemblie laught at the lustines of the old fellowe, and easilie perceiued in *Histor*, he liked *Lalus* fortune better, then he loued his person. But *Basilus* to entermixe with these light notes of libertie, some sadder tune, set to the key of his own passion, not seeing there *Strephon* or *Klaius*, (who called thence by *Vranias* letter, were both gone to continue their suite, like two true runners, both employing their best speed, but not one hindring the other) he called to one *Lamo*[n] of their acquaintance, and willed him to sing some one of their songs; which he redily performed in this doble Sestine.

Strephon. Klaius.

Strephon.

You Gote-heard Gods, that loue the grassie mountaines,
You Nimphes that haunt the springs in pleasant vallies,
You Satyrs ioyde with free and quiet forrests,
Vouchsafe your silent eares to playning musique,
Which to my woes giues still an early morning:
And drawes the dolor on till wery euening.

Klaius.

O Mercurie, foregoer to the euening,
O heauenlie huntresse of the sauage mountaines,
O louelie starre, entitled of the morning,
While that my voice doth fill these wofull vallies,
Vouchsafe your silent eares to plaining musique,
Which oft hath Echo tir'd in secrete forrests.

Strephon.

I that was once free-burges of the forrests,
Where shade from Sunne, and sports I sought at euening,
I that was once esteem'd for pleasant musique,
Am banisht now among the monstrous mountaines
Of huge despaire, and fault afflictions vallies,
Am growne a shrich-owle to my selfe each morning.

Klaius.

I that was once delighted euery morning,
Hunting the wilde inhabitors of forrests,
I that was once the musique of these vallies,
So darkened am, that all my day is euening,
Hart-broken so, that molehilles seeme high mountaines,
And fill the vales with cries in steed of musique.

Strephon.

Long since alas, my deadly Swannish musique
Hath made it selfe a crier of the morning,
And hath with wailing stre[n]gth clim'd highest mountaines:
Long since my thoughts more desert be then forrests:
Long since I see my ioyes come to their euening,
And state throwen downe to ouer-troden vallies.

Klaius.

Long since the happie dwellers of these vallies,

*Haue praide me leaue my strange exclaiming musique,
Which troubles their dayes worke, and ioyes of euening:
Long since I hate the night, more bate the morning:
Long since my thoughts chase me like beasts in forrests,
And make me wish my selfe layd vnder mountaines.*

Strephon.

*Me seemes I see the high and stately mountaines,
Transforme themselves to lowe deieted vallies;
Me seemes I heare in these ill-changed forrests,
The Nightingales doo learne of Owles their musique:
Me seemes I feele the comfort of the morning
Turnde to the mortall serene of an euening.*

Klaius.

*Me seemes I see a filthie clowdie euening,
As soon as Sunne begins to clime the mountaines:
Me seemes I feele a noysome sent, the morning
When I doo smell the flowers of these vallies:
Me seemes I heare, when I doo heare sweete musique,
The dreadfull cries of mured men in forrests.*

Strephon.

*I wish to fire the trees of all these forrests;
I giue the Sunne a last farewell each euening;
I curse the fiddling finders out of Musicke:
With envie I doo hate the loftie mountaines;
And with despite despise the humble vallies:
I doo detest night, euening, day, and morning.*

Klaius.

*Curse to my selfe my prayer is, the morning:
My fire is more, then can be made with forrests;
My state more base, then are the basest vallies:
I wish no euenings more to see, each euening;
Shamed I haue my selfe in sight of mountaines,
And stoppe mine eares, lest I growe mad with Musicke.*

Strephon.

*For she, whose parts maintainde a perfect musique,
Whose beautie shin'de more then the blushing morning,
Who much did passe in state the stately mountaines,*

*In straightnes past the Cedars of the forrests,
Hath cast me wretch into eternal euening,
By taking her two Sunnes from these darke vallies.*

Klaius.

*For she, to whom compar'd, the Alpes are vallies,
She, whose lest word brings from the spheares their musique,
At whose approach the Sunne rose in the euening,
Who, where she went, bare in her forehead morning,
Is gone, is gone from these our spoyled forrests,
Turning to desarts our best pastur'de mountaines.*

Strephon.
Klaius.

*These mountaines witsesse shall, so shall these vallies,
These forrests eke, made wretched by our musique,
Our morning hymne is this, and song at euening.*

Z*Elmane* seing no body offer to fill the stage, as if her long restrained conceits had new burst out of prison, she thus desiring her voice should be accorded to nothing but Philocleas eares, laying fast holde on her face with her eyes, she sange these Sapphiques, speaking as it were to her owne Hope.

I*F mine eyes can speake to doo hartly errande,
Or mine eyes language she doo hap to iudge of,
So that eyes message be of her receaued,
Hope we do liue yet.*

*But if eyes faile then, when I most doo need them,
Or if eyes language be not vnto her knowne,
So that eyes message doo returne reiected,
Hope we doo both dye.*

*Yet dying, and dead, doo we sing her honour;
So become our tombes monuments of her praise;
So becomes our losse the triumph of her gayne;
Hers be the glory.*

*If the spheares senselesse doo yet hold a musique,
If the Swannes sweet voice be not heard, but at death,
If the mute timber when it hath the life lost,
Yeldeth a lutes tune.*

*Are then humane mindes priuiledg'd so meanly,
As that hateful death can abridge them of powre,
With the vowe of truth to recorde to all worldes,
That we be her spoiles?*

*Thus not ending, endes the due praise of her praise;
Fleshly vaile consumes; but a soule hath his life,
Which is helde in loue, loue it is, that hath ioynde
Life to this our soule.*

*But if eyes can speake to doo harty errande,
Or mine eyes language she doo hap to iudge of,
So that eyes message be of her receaued,
Hope we doo liue yet.*

WHat exclaiming praises *Basilus* gaue to *Zelmanes* songe, any man may ghesse, that knowes loue is better then a paire of spectacles to make euery thing seeme greater, which is seene through it: and then is it neuer tongue-tied, where fit commendation (whereof womankind is so licorous) is offered vnto it. Yea, he fel prostrate on the ground, and thanked the Gods, they had preserved his life so long, as to heare the very musique they themselves vsed, in an earthly body. But the wasting of the torches served as a watch vnto them, to make them see the time waste; and therefore the King (though vnwilling) rose from the seate, which he thought excellently settled on the one side: and considering *Zelmanes* late hurte, perswaded her to take that farre-spent nights rest. And so of all sides they went to recommend themselves to the elder brother of death.

The end of the first Booke.

THE SECOND BOOKE

OF THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

CHAP. I.

The loue-complaintes 1 of Gynecia, 2 Zelmane, 3 and Basilius. 4 Her, 5 and his wooing of Zelmane, and her shifting of both, 6 to bemone her selfe.



*I*n these pastorall pastimes a great number of dayes were sent to follow their flying predecessours, while the cup of poison (which was deeply tasted of this noble companie) had left no sinewe of theirs without mortally searching into it; yet neuer manifesting his venomous worke, till once, that the night (parting away angerly, that she could distill no more sleepe into the eies of louers) had no sooner giuen place to the breaking out of the morning light, and the Sunne bestowed his beames vpon the tops of the mountaines, but that the wofull *Gynecia* (to whom rest was no ease) had left her loathed lodging, and gotten her selfe into the solitary places those deserts were full of, going vp and downe with such vnquiet motions, as a grieued & hopeles mind is wont to bring forth. There appeered vnto the eies of her iudgement the euils she was like to run into, with ougly infamie waiting vpon them: she felt the terrou[r]s of her owne conscience: she was guilty of a long exercised vertue, which made this vice the fuller of deformitie. The vttermost of the good she could aspire vnto, was a mortall wound to her vexed spirits: and lastly no small part of her euils was, that she was wise to see her euils. In so much, that hauing a great while throwne her cou[n]tenaunce ghastly about her (as if she had called all the powers of the worlde to witnesse of her wretched estate) at length casting vp her watrie eyes to heauen, O Sunne (said she) whose vnspotted light directs the steps of mortall mankind, art thou not ashamed to impart the clearnesse of thy presence to such a dust-creeping worme as I am? O you heauens (which continually keepe the course allotted vnto you) can none of your influences preuaile so much vpon the miserable *Gynecia*, as to make her preserue a course so lo[n]g embraced by her? O deserts, deserts, how fit a guest am I for you, since my hart can people you with wild rauenous beastes, which in you are wanting? O Vertue, where doost thou hide thy selfe? or what hideous thing is this which doth eclips thee? or is it true that thou weart neuer but a vaine name, and no essentiall thing, which hast thus left thy professed seruant, when she had most need of thy louely presence? O

imperfect proportio[n] of reason, which ca[n] too much forsee, & too little prevent. Alas, alas (said she) if there were but one hope for all my paines, or but one excuse for all my faultinesse. But wretch that I am, my torment is beyond all succour, & my euill deseruing doth exceed my euill fortune. For nothing els did my husband take this straunge resolutio[n] to liue so solitarily: for nothing els haue the winds deliuered this straunge guest to my country: for nothing els haue the destinies reserued my life to this time, but that only I (most wretched I) should become a plague to my selfe, and a shame to womankind. Yet if my desire (how vniust so euer it be) might take effect, though a thousand deaths folowed it, and euery death were followed with a thousand shames; yet should not my sepulcher receiue me without some contentment. But alas, though sure I am, that *Zelmane* is such as can answere my loue; yet as sure I am, that this disguising must needs come for some foretake[n] co[n]ceipt. And then, wretched *Gynecia*, where cast thou find any smal grou[n]d-plot for hope to dwel vpon? No, no, it is *Philoclea* his hart is set vpon: it is my daughter I haue borne to supplant me. But if it be so, the life I haue giuen thee (vngratefull *Philoclea*) I will sooner with these handes bereaue thee of, then my birth shall glory, she hath bereaued me of my desires. In shame there is no co[m]fort, but to be beyond all bounds of shame.

Hauiug spoke[n] thus, she began to make a piteous war with hir faire haire, when she might heare (not far fro[m] her) an extremely doleful voice, but so suppressed with a kind of whispering note, that she could not conceaue the wordes distinctly. But (as a lamentable tune is the sweetest musicke to a wofull mind) she drewe thether neere-away, in hope to find some co[m]panio[n] of her misery. And as she passed on, she was stopped with a nu[m]ber of trees, so thickly placed together, that she was afraid she should (with rushing thorow) stop the speach of the lamentable partie, which she was so desirous to vnderstand. And therefore setting her downe as softly as she could (for she was now in distaunce to heare) she might first perceaua a Lute excellently well played vpon, and then the same dolefull voice accompanying it with these verses.

IN vaine, mine Eyes, you labour to amende

*With flowing teares your fault of hasty sight:
Since to my hart her shape you so did sends;
That her I see, though you did lose your light.*

*In vaine, my Hart, now you with sight are burnd,
With sighes you seeke to coole your hotte desire:
Since sighes (into mine inward fornace turnd)
For bellowes serue to kindle more the fire.*

*Reason, in vaine (now you haue lost my hart)
My head you seeke, as to your strongest forte:
Since there mine eyes haue played so false a parte,
That to your strength your foes haue sure resorte.
Then since in vaine I find were all my strife,
To this strange death I vainely yeeld my life.*

The ending of the song serued but for a beginning of new plaints, as if the mind (oppressed with too heauy a burthe of cares) was faine to discharge it self of al sides, & as it were, paint out the hideousnes of the paine in al sortes of coulours. For the wofull person (as if the lute had euill ioined with the voice) threw it to the ground with such like words: Alas, poore Lute, how much art thou deceiu'd to think, that in my miseries thou couldst ease my woes, as in my careles times thou was wont to please my fancies? The time is changed, my Lute, the time is changed; and no more did my ioyfull minde then receiue euey thing to a ioyful consideration, then my carefull mind now makes ech thing tast like the bitter iuyce of care. The euill is inward, my Lute, the euill is inward; which all thou doost doth serue but to make me thinke more freely off, and the more I thinke, the more cause I finde of thinking, but lesse of hoping. And alas, what is then thy harmony, but the sweete meats of sorrow? The discord of my thoughts, my Lute, doth ill agree to the concord of thy strings; therefore be not ashamed to leaue thy master, since he is not afraide to forsake himselfe.

And thus much spoke[n] (in steed of a conclusion) was closed vp with so hartly a groning, that *Gynecia* could not refraine to shew her selfe, thinking such griefes could serue fitly for nothing, but her owne fortune. But as she came into the little Arbour of this sorrowfull musicke, her eyes met with the eyes of *Zelmane*, which was the party that thus had indited her selfe of miserie: so that either of them remained confused with a sodaine astonishment. *Zelmane* fearing, least shee had heard some part of those complaints, which shee had risen vp that morning of purpose, to breath out in secret to her selfe. But *Gynecia* a great while stode still, with a kind of dull amasement, looking stedfastly vpon her: at length returning to some vse of her selfe, shee began to aske *Zelmane*, what cause carried her so early abroad? But as if the opening of her mouth to *Zelmane*, had opened some great flood-gate of sorrow (wherof her heart could not abide the viole[n]t issue) she sanke to the ground, with her hands ouer her face, crying vehemently, *Zelmane* helpe me, O *Zelmane* haue pittie on me. *Zelmane* ranne to her, maruelling what sodaine sicknesse had thus possessed her: and beginning to aske her the cause of her paine, and offring her seruice to be employed by her: *Gynecia* opening her eyes wildly vpon her, pricked with the flames of loue, and the torments of her owne conscience: O *Zelmane*, *Zelmane*, (said she) doost thou offer me phisicke, which art my onely poyson? Or wilt thou doo me

seruice, which hast alredie brought me into eternall slauerie? *Zelmane* then knowing well at what marke she shot, yet loth to enter into it; Most excellent Ladie (said she) you were best retire your selfe into your lodging, that you the better may passe this sodaine fitte. Retire my selfe? (said *Gynecia*) If I had retyred my selfe into my selfe, when thou to me (vnfortunate guest) earnest to draw me fro[m] my selfe; blessed had I beene, and no neede had I had of this counsaile. But now alas, I am forced to flie to thee for succour, whom I accuse of all my hurt; and make thee iudge of my cause, who art the onely author of my mischiefe. *Zelmane* the more astonished, the more she vnderstood her, Madam (said she) whereof do you accuse me, that I will not cleere my selfe? Or wherein may I steed you, that you may not command me? Alas, answered *Gynecia*, what shall I say more? Take pittie of me, O *Zelmane*, but not as *Zelmane*, and disguise not with me in words, as I know thou doost in apparell.

Zelmane was much troubled with that word, finding her selfe brought to this streight. But as shee was thinking what to answer her; they might see olde *Basilus* passe harde by them, without euer seeing them: complaying likewise of loue verie freshly; and ending his complaint with this song, Loue hauing renewed both his inuention, and voyce.

3

*LEt not old age disgrace my high desire,
O heauenly soule, in humaine shape conteind:
Old wood inflam'de, doth yeeld the brauest fire,
When yonger dooth in smoke his vertue spend.*

*Ne let white haire, which on my face doo grow,
Seeme to your eyes of a disgracefull hewe:
Since whitenesse doth present the sweetest show,
Which makes all eyes doo honour vnto you.*

*Old age is wise and full of constant truth;
Old age well stayd from raunging humor liues:
Old age hath knowne what euer was in youth:
Old age orecome, the greater honour giues.
And to old age since you your selfe aspire,
Let not old age disgrace my high desire.*

Which being done, he looked verie curiously vpon himselfe, sometimes fetching a little skippe, as if he had said, his strength had not yet forsaken him. But *Zelmane* hauing in this time gotten leasure to thinke for an answer; looking vpon *Gynecia*, as if she thought she did her some wrong: Madam (said she) I am not acquainted with those words of disguising, neither is it the profession of an *Amazon*,

neither are you a partie with whom it is to be vsed. If my seruice may please you, imploy it, so long as you do me no wrong in misjudging of me.

Alas *Zelmane* (said *Gynecia*) I perceiue you know ful little, how percing the eyes are of a true louer. There is no one beame of those thoughts you haue planted in me, but is able discerne a greater cloud then you doo goe in. Seeke not to conceale your selfe further from me, nor force not the passion of loue into violent extremities. Nowe was *Zelmane* brought to an exigent, when the king, turning his eyes that way thorow the trees, perceiued his wife and mistres together: so that framing the most louely countenance he could, he came straightway towards them; and at the first word (thanking his wife for hauing entertained *Zelmane*,) desired her she would now returne into the lodge, because hee had certaine matters of estate to impart to the Ladie *Zelmane*. The Queene (being nothing troubled with ielousie in that point) obeyed the kings commaundement; full of raging agonies, and determinatly bent, that as she would seeke all louing meanes to winne *Zelmane*, so she would stirre vp terrible tragedies, rather then faile of her entent. And so went she from them to the lodge-ward, with such a battaile in her thoughts, and so deadly an ouerthrow giuen to her best resolutions, that euen her bodie (where the fielde was fought) was oppressed withall: making a languishing sicknesse waite vpon the triumph of passion; which the more it preuailed in her, the more it made her ielousie watchfull, both ouer her daughter, and *Zelmane*; hauing euer one of them entrusted to her owne eyes.

But as soone as *Basilius* was ridde of his wiues presence, falling downe on his knees, O Lady (said he) which hast onely had the power to stirre vp againe those flames which had so long layn deade in me; see in me the power of your beautie; which can make old age come to aske counsaile of youth; and a Prince vnco[n]quered, to become a slaue to a stranger. And whe[n] you see that power of yours, loue that at lest in me, since it is yours, although of me you see nothing to be loued. Worthy Prince (answered *Zelmane*, taking him vp from his kneeling) both your manner, and your speech are so straunge vnto me, as I know not how to answeere it better then with silence. If silence please you (said the king) it shal neuer displease me, since my heart is wholly pledged to obey you: otherwise if you would vouchsafe mine eares such happinesse, as to heare you, they shall conuay your words to such a mind, which is with the humblest degree of reuere[n]ce to receiue them. I disdaine not to speake to you (mightie Prince said *Zelmane*,) but I disdaine to speake to any matter which may bring my honor into question. And therewith, with a braue counterfeited scorne she departed from the king; leauing him not so sorie for his short answeere, as proud in himself that he had broken the matter. And thus did the king (feeding his minde with those thoughts) passe great time in writing verses, & making more of himselfe, then he was wont to doo: that with a little helpe, he would haue growne into a prettie kind of dotage.

But *Zelmane* being ridde of this louing, but little-loued company, Alas (said she) poore *Pyrocles*, was there euer one,

but I, that had receiued wrong, and could blame no body? that hauing more then I 6
desire, am still in want of that I would? Truly Loue, I must needes say thus much
on thy behalfe; thou hast imployed my loue there, where all loue is deserued; and for
recompence hast sent me more loue then euer I desired. But what wilt thou
doo *Pyrocles*? which way canst thou finde to ridde thee of thy intricate troubles? To
her whom I would be knowne to, I liue in darkenesse: and to her am reuealed, from
whom I would be most secret. What shift shall I finde against the diligent loue
of *Basilus*? what shield against the violent passions of *Gynecia*? And if that be done,
yet how am I the neerer to quench the fire that consumes me? Wel, well,
sweete *Philoclea*, my whole confidence must be builded in thy diuine spirit, which
cannot be ignorant of the cruell wound I haue receiued by you.

CHAP. 2.

1 *Dametas-his enstructing of Dorus.* 2 *Zelmanes discourse*
to Dorus of her difficulties; 3 *& his to her of his successe in*
loue. 4 *His loue-suits made to Mopsa, meant to Pamela:*
with their answers.



Vt as sicke folkes, when they are alone, thinke companie would relieue
them, & yet hauing company do find it noysome; changing willingly
outward obiects, when indeed the euill is inward: So poore *Zelmane* was
no more weery of *Basilus*, then she was of her selfe, when *Basilus* was
gone: and euer the more, the more she turned her eyes to become her
owne iudges. Tyred wherewith, she longed to meete her friende *Dorus*; that vpon the
shoulders of friendship she might lay the burthen of sorrow: and therefore went
toward the other lodge: where among certaine Beeches she found *Dorus*, apparelled in
flanen, with a goats skin cast vpon him, & a garland of Laurell mixt with Cypres
leaves on his head, wayting on his master *Dametas*, who at that time was teching him
how with his sheephooke to catch a wanton Lambe, & with the same to cast a litle
clod at any one that strayed out of co[m]panie. And while *Dorus* was practising, one
might see *Dametas* hold his hand vnder his girdle behind him, nodding from the wast
vpwards, & swearing he neuer knew man go more aukewardly to worke: & that they
might talke of booke-learning what they would; but for his part, he neuer saw more
vnfeatlie fellowes, then great clearks were.

But *Zelmanes* comming saued *Dorus* from further chiding. And so she beginning to
speake with him of the number of
his masters sheepe, and which Prouince of *Arcadia* bare the finest wooll, drewe 2
him on to follow her in such countrie discourses, till (being out
of *Dametas* hearing) with such vehemencie of passion, as though her harte would

clime into her mouth, to take her tongues office, she declared vnto him, vpon what briers the roses of her affections grew: how time still seemed to forget her, bestowing no one houre of comfort vpon her; she remaining stil in one plight of ill fortune, sauing so much worse, as continuance of euill dooth in it selfe increase euill. Alas my *Dorus* (said she) thou seest how long and languishingly the weekes are paste ouer vs since our laste talking. And yet am I the same, miserable I, that I was: onely stronger in longing, and weaker in hoping. Then fell she to so pitifull a declaration of the insupportablenes of her desires, that *Dorus* eares (not able to shew what woundes that discourse gaue vnto them) procured his eyes with teares to giue testimonie, how much they suffered for her suffering: till passion (a most cumbersome guest to it selfe) made *Zelmane* (the sooner to shake it of) earnestly intreate *Dorus*, that he also (with like freedome of discourse) would bestow a Mape of his little worlde, vpon her; that she might see, whether it were troubled with such vnhabitable climes of colde despaires, and hotte rages, as hers was. And so walking vnder a fewe Palme trees, (which being louing in their own nature, seemed to giue their shadow the willinglier, because they held discourse of loue) *Dorus* thus entred to the description of his fortune.

Alas (said he) deare Cosin, that it hath pleased the high powers to throwe vs to such an estate, as the onely entercourse

of our true friendshippe, must be a bartring of miseries. For my parte, I must confesse indeede, that from a huge darkenes of sorrowes, I am crept (I cannot say to a lightsomnes, but) to a certain dawning, or rather, peeping out of some possibilitie of comfort: But woe is me, so farre from the marke of my desires, that I rather thinke it such a light, as comes through a small hole to a dungeon, that the miserable caitife may the better remember the light, of which he is deprived: or like a scholler, who is onely come to that degree of knowledge, to finde him selfe vtterly ignorant.

But thus stands it with me: After that by your meanes I was exalted to serue in yonder blessed lodge, for a while I had, in the furnace of my agonies, this refreshing; that (because of the seruice I had done in killing of the Beare) it pleased the Princesse (in whom indeede statelines shines through courtesie) to let fall some gracious looke vpon me. Sometimes to see my exercises, sometimes to heare my songes. For my parte, my harte woulde not suffer me to omitte any occasion, whereby I might make the incomparable *Pamela*, see how much extraordinarie deuotion I bare to her seruice: and withall, straue to appeare more worthy in her sight; that small desert, ioyned to so great affection, might preuaile something in the wisest Ladie. But too well (alas) I founde, that a shepherds seruice was but considered of as from a shepherd, and the acceptation limited to no further proportion, then of a good seruant. And when my countenance had once giuen notice, that there lay affection vnder it, I sawe straight, Maiesty (sitting in the throne of Beautie) draw foorth such a sworde of iust disdain, that I remayned as a man thunder-stricken; not daring, no not able, to beholde that power. Now, to make my estate knowen, seemed againe impossible, by reason of the

suspiciousnes of *Dametas*, *Miso*, and my young Mistresse, *Mopsa*.

For, *Dametas* (according to the constitution of a dull head) thinkes no better way to shewe him selfe wise, then by suspecting euery thing in his way. Which suspition *Miso* (for the hoggish shrewdnesse of her braine) and *Mopsa* (for a very vnlikely enuie she hath stumbled vpon, against the Princesses vnspeakeable beautie) were very gladde to execute. So that I (finding my seruice by this meanes lightlie regarded, my affection despised, and my selfe vnknownen) remayned no fuller of desire, then voyde of comfort how to come to my desire. Which (alas) if these trees could speak, they might well witnesse. For, many times haue I stooode here, bewailing my selfe vnto them: many times haue I, leaning to yonder Palme, admired the blessednes of it, that coulde beare Loue without sence of paine. Many times, when my masters cattle came hether to chewe their cudde, in this fresh place, I might see the young Bull testifie his loue. But how? with proud lookes, and ioyfulness. O wretched mankind (said I then to my selfe) in whom witte (which should be the gouerner of his welfare) becomes the traitor to his blessednes. These beasts, like children to nature, inherite her blessings quietly; we, like bastards, are layd abroad, euen as foundlings to be trayned vp by grieffe and sorrow. Their mindes grudge not their bodies comfort, nor their senses are letted from enjoying their obiects: we haue the impediments of honor, and the torments of conscience. Truely in such cogitatio[n]s haue I somtimes so long stood, that me thought my feete began to grow into the ground, with such a darkenes and heauines of minde, that I might easilie haue bene perswaded to haue resigned ouer my very essence. But Loue, (which one time layeth burthens, another time giueth wings) when I was at the lowest of my downward thoughts, pulled vp my harte to reme[m]ber, that nothing is atchieued before it be throughlie attempted; and that lying still doth neuer goe forward: and that therefore it was time, now or neuer, to sharpen my inuention, to pearce thorow the hardnes of this enterprise; neuer ceasing to assemble al my conceites, one after the other; how to manifest both my minde and estate. Till at last, I lighted and resolued on this way, which yet perchance you will think was a way rather to hide it.

I began to counterfeite the extremest loue towards *Mopsa*, that might be: and as for the loue, so liuely it was indeed within me, (although to another subiect) that litle I needed to counterfait any notable demonstrations of it: and so making a contrariety the place of my memory, in her fowlnes I beheld *Pamelas* fayrenesse, still looking on *Mopsa*, but thinking on *Pamela*; as if I saw my Sunne shine in a puddled water: I cryed out of nothing but *Mopsa*: to *Mopsa* my attendance was directed: to *Mopsa* the best fruites I coulde gather were brought: to *Mopsa* it seemed still that mine eye conueyed my tongue. So that *Mopsa* was my saying; *Mopsa* was my singing; *Mopsa*, (that is onely suteable in laying a foule complexion vpon a filthy fauour, setting foorth both in sluttishnesse) she was the load-starre of my life, she the blessing of mine eyes, she the ouerthrowe of my desires, and yet the recompence of my ouer-throwe; she the

sweetnesse of my harte, euen sweetning the death, which her sweetnesse drew vpon me. In summe, what soeuer I thought of *Pamela*, that I saide of *Mopsa*; whereby as I gatte my maisters good-will, who before spited me, fearing lest I should winne the Princesse fauour from him, so did the same make the Princesse be better content to allow me her presence: whether indeede it were, that a certaine sparke of noble indignation did rise in her, not to suffer such a baggage to winne away any thing of hers, how meanelly soeuer she reputed of it; or rather (as I thinke) my words being so passionate; and shooting so quite contrarie from the markes of *Mopsaes* worthinesse, she perceiued well enough, whither they were directed: and therefore being so masked, she was contented, as a sporte of witte to attend them. Whereupon one day determining to find some means to tel (as of a third person) the tale of mine owne loue, and estate, finding *Mopsa* (like a Cuckoo by a Nightingale) alone with *Pamela*, I came in vnto them, and with a face (I am sure) full of cloudy fancies, tooke a harpe, and songe this songe.

*Since so mine eyes are subiect to your sight,
That in your sight they fixed haue my braine:
Since so my harte is filled with that light,
That onely light doth all my life maintaine;*

*Since in sweete you all goods so richly raigne,
That where you are no wished good can want;
Since so your liuing image liues in me,
That in my selfe your selfe true loue doth plant;
How can you him vnworthy then decree,
In whose chiefe parte your worthes implanted be?*

The song being ended, which I had often broken of in the midst with grieuous sighes, which ouertooke euery verse I sange, I let fall my harpe fro[m] me; & casting my eie sometime vpon *Mopsa*, but setting my sight principally vpon *Pamela*, And is it the onely fortune most bewtiful *Mopsa* (said I) of wretched *Dorus*, that fortune should be measure of his mind? Am I onely he that because I am in miserie, more miserie must be laid vpon me? must that which should be cause of compassion, become an argument of cruelty against me? Alas excellent *Mopsa*, consider, that a vertuous Prince requires the life of his meanest subiect, and the heauenly Sunne disdaines not to giue light to the smallest worme. O *Mopsa*, *Mopsa*, if my hart could be as manifest to you, as it is vncomfortable to me, I doubt not the height of my thoughts should well counteruaile the lownesse of my qualitie. Who hath not heard of the greatnes of your estate? who seeth not, that your estate is much excelled with that sweet vniting of al beauties, which remaineth & dwelleth with you? who knowes not, that al these are but

ornaments of that diuine sparke within you, which being descended from heauen could not els-where picke out so sweete a mansion? But if you will knowe what is the bande that ought to knit all these excellencies together, it is a kinde of mercifulnesse to such a one, as is in his soule deuoted to those perfections. *Mopsa* (who already had had a certaine smackring towards me) stood all this while with her hand sometimes before her face, but most commonly with a certaine speciall grace of her owne, wagging her lips, and grinning in steede of smiling: but all the wordes I could get of her, was, wringing her waste, and thrusting out her chinne, In faith you iest with me: you are a merry man indeede. But the euer-pleasing *Pamela* (that well found the Comedie would be marred, if she did not helpe *Mopsa* to her parte) was content to vrge a little further of me. Maister *Dorus* (said the faire *Pamela*) me thinks you blame your fortune very wrongfully, since the fault is not in Fortune, but in you that cannot frame your selfe to your fortune: and as wrongfully do require *Mopsa* to so great a disparagement as to her Fathers seruauant; since she is not worthy to be loued, that hath not some feeling of her owne worthines. I staid a good while after her words, in hope she would haue continued her speech (so great a delight I receaued in hearing her) but seeing her say no further, (with a quaking all ouer my body) I thus answered her. Ladie, most worthie of all dutie, how falles it out that you in whom all vertue shines, will take the patronage of fortune, the onely rebellious handmaide against vertue? Especially, since before your eyes, you haue a pittifull spectacle of her wickednesse, a forlorne creature, which must remaine not such as I am, but such as she makes me, since she must be the ballance of worthinesse or disparagement. Yet alas, if the condemned man (euen at his death) haue leaue to speake, let my mortall wound purchase thus much consideration; since the perfections are such in the partie I loue, as the feeling of them cannot come into any vnnoble hart; shall that harte, which doth not onely feele them, but hath all the working of his life placed in them, shall that hart I saie, lifted vp to such a height, be counted base? O let not an excellent spirit doo it selfe such wrong, as to thinke, where it is placed, imbraced, and loued; there can be any vnworthinesse, since the weakest mist is not easilier driuen away by the Sunne, then that is chased away with so high thoughts. I will not denie (answered the gracious *Pamela*) but that the loue you beare to *Mopsa*, hath brought you to the consideration of her vertues, and that consideration may haue made you the more vertuous, and so the more worthie: But euen that then (you must confesse) you haue receiued of her, and so are rather gratefully to thanke her, then to presse any further, till you bring something of your owne wherby to claime it. And truly *Dorus*, I must in *Mopsaes* behalfe say thus much to you, that if her beauties haue so ouertaken you, it becomes a true Loue to haue your harte more set vpon her good then your owne, and to beare a tenderer respect to her honour, then your satisfaction. Now by my hallidame, Madame (said *Mopsa*, throwing a great number of sheeps eyes vpon me) you haue euen touched mine owne minde to the quicke, forsooth. I (finding that the pollicie that I had vsed, had at least wise procured thus much happinesse vnto me, as

that I might euen in my Ladies presence, discover the sore which had deeply festered within me, and that she could better conceaue my reasons applied to *Mopsa*, then she would haue vouchsafed them, whilst her selfe was a partie) thought good to pursue on my good beginning, using this fit occasion of *Pameleas* wit, and *Mopsaes* ignorance. Therefore with an humble pearcing eye, looking vpon *Pamela*, as if I had rather bene co[n]demned by her mouth, then highly exalted by the other, turning my selfe to *Mopsa*, but keeping mine eye where it was, faire *Mopsa* (said I) well doo I finde by the wise knitting together of your answere, that any disputatio[n] I can vse is asmuch too weake, as I vnworthy. I find my loue shalbe proued no loue, without I leue to loue, being too vnfit a vessell in who so high thoughts should be engraued. Yet since the Loue I beare you, hath so ioyned it self to the best part of my life, as the one can[n]ot depart, but that th'other will follow, before I seeke to obey you in making my last passage, let me know which is my vnworthines, either of mind, estate, or both? *Mopsa* was about to say, in neither; for her hart I thinke tu[m]bled with ouer much kindnesse, when *Pamela* with a more fauourable countenance the[n] before (finding how apt I was to fall into dispaire) told me, I might therein haue answered my selfe; for besides that it was graunted me, that the inward feeling of *Mopsaes* perfectio[n]s had greatly beautified my minde, there was none could denie, but that my minde and bodie deserued great allowance. But *Dorus* (sayd she) you must be so farre maister of your loue, as to consider, that since the iudgement of the world stands vpon matter of fortune, and that the sexe of womankind of all other is most bound to haue regardfull eie to mens iudgements, it is not for vs to play the philosophers, in seeking out your hidden vertues: since that, which in a wise prince would be cou[n]ted wisdome, in vs wil be taken for a light-grounded affectio[n]: so is not one thing, one, done by diuers persons. There is no man in a burning feuer feeles so great contentme[n]t in cold water greedily receiued (which assoone as the drinke ceaseth, the rage reneweth) as poore I found my soule refreshed with her sweetly pronouced words; & newly, & more viole[n]tly againe enflamed, assoone as she had closed vp her delightfull speach, with no lesse wel graced silence. But reme[m]bring in my self that aswell the Souldier dieth which standeth still, as he that giues the brauest onset: & seeing that to the making vp of my fortune, there wanted nothing so much as the making knowne of mine estate, with a face wel witnessing how deeply my soule was possessed, & with the most submissiue behaiour, that a thrall'd hart could expresse, eue[n]as my words had bene too thicke for my mouth, at le[n]gth spake to this purpose. Alas, most worthy Princesse (said I) & do not then your owne sweet words sufficie[n]tly testifie, that there was neuer ma[n] could haue a iuster actio[n] against filthy fortune, the I, since all other things being granted me, her blindnesse is my onely let? O heauely God, I would either she had such eyes as were able to discerne my deserts, or I were blind not to see the daily cause of my misfortune. But yet (said I) most honoured Lady, if my miserable speeches haue not already cloied you, & that the verie presence of such a wretch become not hatefull in

your eyes; let me reply thus much further against my mortall sentence, by telling you a storie, which happened in this same country long since (for woes make the shortest time seeme long) whereby you shall see that my estate is not so contemptible, but that a Prince hath bene content to take the like vpon him, and by that onely hath aspired to enjoy a mightie Princesse. *Pamela* graciously harkened, and I told my tale in this sort.

CHAP. 3.

Dorus-his tale of his owne 1 education, 2 trauaile, 3 enamoring, 4 meta-morphosing, 5 sauing from sea, 6 and being Musidorus. 7 His octaue. 8 Pamelas and Mopsas answere to his suit. 9 His present to them; 10 and perplexitie in himselfe.



IN the countrie of *Thessalia*, (alas why name I that accursed country, which brings forth nothing, but matters for tragedies? but name it I must) in *Thessalia* (I say) there was (well may I say, there was) a Prince (no, no Prince, who bondage wholly possessed; but yet accounted a Prince, and) named *Musidorus*. O *Musidorus*, *Musidorus*; but to what serue exclamations, where there are no eares to receiue the sounde? This *Musidorus*, being yet in the tendrest age, his worthy father paied to nature (with a violent death) her last dueties, leauing his childe to the faith of his friends, and the prooffe of time: death gaue him not such pangs as the foresight-full care hee had of his silly successour. And yet if in his foresight he could haue seene so much, happie was that good Prince in his timely departure, which barred him from the knowledge of his sonnes miseries, which his knowledge could neither haue preuented, nor relieued. The young *Musidorus* (being thus, as for the first pledge of the destinies good will, deprived of his principall stay) was yet for some yeares after (as if the starres would breath themselues for a greater mischiefe) lulled vp in as much good luck, as the heedfull loue of his dolefull mother, and the flourishing estate of his country could breed vnto him.

But when the time now came, that miserie seemed to be ripe for him, because he had age to know misery, I thinke there was a conspiracy in all heauenly & earthly things, to frame fit occasion to leade him vnto it. His people (to whom all forraine matters in foretime were odious) beganne to wish in their beloued Prince, experience by trauaile: his deare mother (whose eyes were held open, onely with the ioy of looking vpon him) did now dispense with the comfort of her widowhead life, desiring the same her subiectes did, for the increase of her sonnes worthinesse. And here-to did *Musidorus* owne vertue (see how vertue can be a minister to mischiefe) sufficiently prouoke him: for indeed thus much I must say for him, although the likenesse of our mishaps makes me

presume to patterne my selfe vnto him) that well-doing was at that time his scope, from which no faint pleasure could with-hold him. But the present occasion which did knit all this together, was his vncle the king of *Macedon*; who hauing lately before gotte[n] such victories, as were beyond expectation, did at this time send both for the Prince his sonne (brought vp together, to auoid the warres, with *Musidorus*) and for *Musidorus* himselfe, that his ioy might be the more full, hauing such partakers of it. But alas, to what a sea of miseries my plaintfull toong doth lead me; and thus out of breath, rather with that I thought, then that I said, I stayed my speech, till *Pamela* shewing by countenance that such was her pleasure, I thus continued it. These two young Princes to satisfie the king, tooke their way by sea, towards *Thrace*, whether they would needs go with a Nauie to succour him: he being at that time before *Bizantium* with a mighty Army beseiging it; where at that time his court was. But when the conspired heauens had gotten this Subiect of their wrath vpon so fit a place as the sea was, they streight began to breath out in boystrous windes some part of their malice against him; so that with the losse of all his Nauie, he onely with the Prince his cosin, were cast a land, farre off from the place whether their desires would haue guided them. O cruell winds in your vnconsiderate rages, why either beganne you this furie, or why did you not end it in his end? But your cruelty was such, as you would spare his life for many deathfull torments. To tel you what pittiful mishaps fell to the young Prince of *Macedon* his cosen, I should too much fill your eares with strange horrors; neither will I stay vpon those laborsome adue[n]tures, nor loathsome misaduentures, to which, & through which his fortune and courage conducted him; My speach hastneth it selfe to come to the ful-point of *Musidorus* his infortunes. For as we finde the most pestile[n]t diseases do gather into themselues al the infirmitie, with which the body before was annoyed; so did his last misery embrace in the extremitie of it selfe all his former mischiefes.

Arcadia, *Arcadia* was the place prepared to be the stage of his endlesse ouerthrow. *Arcadia* was, (alas well might I say it is) the charmed circle, where all his spirits for euer should be enchanted. 3
For here (and no where els) did his infected eyes make his minde know, what power heauenly beauty hath to throw it downe to hellish agonies. Here, here did he see the *Arcadian* Kings eldest daughter, in whom he forthwith placed so all his hopes of ioy, and ioyfull parts of his heart, that he left in himselfe nothing, but a maze of longing, and a dungeon of sorrow. But alas what can saying make them beleue, whom seeing cannot perswade? Those paines must be felt before they ca[n] be vnderstood; no outward vtterance can command a concept. Such was as then the state of the King, as it was no time by direct meanes to seeke her. And such was the state of his captiued wil, as he could delay no time of seeking her.

In this intangled case, he clothed himselfe in a shepherds weede, that vnder the basenesse of that forme, he might at

lest haue free accesse to feed his eyes with that, which should at length eate vp
his hart. In which doing, thus much without doubt he hath manifested, that this
estate is not alwayes to be reiected, since vnder that vaile there may be hidden things
to be esteemed. And if he might with taking on a shepherds look cast vp his eyes to
the fairest Princesse Nature in that time created; the like, nay the same desire of mine
need no more to be disdained, or held for disgracefull. But now alas mine eyes waxe
dimme, my toong beginnes to falter, and my hart to want force to help, either with the
feeling remembrance I haue, in what heape of miseries the caitife Prince lay at this
time buried. Pardon therefore, most excellent Princesse, if I cut off the course of my
dolorous tale, since if I be vnderstood, I haue said enough, for the defence of my
basenesse; and for that which after might befall to that patterne of ill fortune, (the
matters are monstrous for my capacitie) his hatefull destinies must best declare their
owne workemanship.

Thus hauing deliuered my tale in this perplexed manner, to the end the Princesse
might iudge that he ment himselfe, who
spake so feelingly; her aunswere was both strange, and in some respect
comfortable. For would you thinke it? she hath heard heretofore of vs both, by
meanes of the valiant prince *Plangus*, and particularly of our casting away: which she
(following my owne stile) thus delicately brought foorth. You haue told (said
she) *Dorus*, a prettie tale; but you are much deceiued in the latter end of it. For the
prince *Musidorus* with his cosen *Pyrocles* did both perish vpon the coast of *Laconia*;
as a noble gentleman, called *Plangus* (who was well acquainted with the historic) did
assure my father. O how that speach of hers did poure ioyes in my hart? ô blessed
name (thought I) of mine, since thou hast bene in that toong, and passed through those
lips, though I can neuer hope to approch them. As for *Pyrocles* (said I) I will not denie
it, but that he is perished: (which I said, least sooner suspition might arise of your
being, then your selfe would haue it) and yet affirmed no lye vnto her, since I onely
said, I would not deny it. But for *Musidorus* (said I) I perceiue indeed you haue
neither heard or read the story of that vnhappy Prince; for this was the verie obiection,
which that peerelesse Princesse did make vnto him, whe[n] he sought to appeare such
as he was before her wisdom: and thus as I haue read it faire written in the certaintie
of my knowledge he might answere her, that indeed the ship wherein he came, by a
treason was perished, and therefore that *Plangus* might easily be deceaued: but that he
himselfe was cast vpon the coast of *Laconia*, where he was taken vp by a couple of
shepherds, who liued in those dayes famous; for that both louing one faire maide,
they yet remained constant friends; one of whose songs not long since was song
before you by the shepherd *Lamon*, and brought by them to a noble-mans house,
neere *Mantineia*, whose sonne had a little before his mariage, bene taken prisoner, and
by the helpe of this Prince, *Musidorus* (though naming himselfe by another name) was
deliuered. Now these circumlocutions I did vse, because of the one side I knewe the
Princesse would knowe well the parties I merit; and of the other, if I should haue

named *Strephon*, *Claius*, *Kalander*, and *Clitophon*, perhappes it would haue rubd some coniecture into the heauie heade of Mistresse *Mopsa*.

And therefore (said I) most diuine Lady, he iustly was to argue against such suspitions; that the Prince might easily by those parties be satisfied, that vpon that wrack such a one was taken vp: and therefore that *Plangus* might well erre, who knew not of anies taking vp againe: that he that was so preserued, brought good tokens to be one of the two, chiefe of that wracked companie: which two since *Plangus* knew to be *Musidorus* and *Pyrocles*, he must needes be one of them, although (as I said) vpon a foretaken vowe, he was otherwise at that time called. Besides, the Princesse must needes iudge, that no lesse then a Prince durst vndertake such an enterprise, which (though he might gette the fauour of the Princesse) he could neuer defend with lesse the[n] a Princes power, against the force of *Arcadia*. Lastly, (said he) for a certaine demonstration, he presumed to shew vnto the Princesse a marke he had on his face, as I might (said I) shew this of my neck to the rare *Mopsa*: and withall, shewed my necke to them both, where (as you know) there is a redde spotte, bearing figure (as they tell me) of a Lyons pawe, that she may ascertaine her selfe, that I am *Menalcas* brother. And so did he, beseeching her to send some one she might trust, into *Thessalia*, secretely to be aduertised, whether the age, the complexion, and particularly that notable signe, did not fully agree with this Prince *Musidorus*. Doo you not know further (saide she, with a setled countenance, not accusing any kind of inwarde motion) of that storie. Alas no, (said I) for euen here the Historiographer stopped, saying, The rest belonged to Astrologie. And therewith, thinking her silent imaginations began to worke vpon somewhat, to mollifie them (as the nature of Musick is to do) and withal, to shew what kind of shepheard I was, I took vp my Harpe, and sang these few verses.

M*Y sheepe are thoughts, which I both guide and serue:*

Their pasture is faire hilles of fruitlesse Loue:

On barren sweetes they feede, and feeding sterue:

I waile their lotte, but will not other proue.

My sheepehooke is wanne hope, which all vpholdes:

My weedes, Desire, cut out in endlesse foldes.

What wooll my sheepe shall beare, whiles thus they liue,

In you it is, you must the iudgement giue.

And then, partly to bring *Mopsa* againe to the matter (lest she should too much take heed to our discourses) but principally, if it were possible, to gather some comfort out of her answeares, I kneeled downe to the Princesse, and humblie besought her to moue *Mopsa* in my behalfe, that she would vnarme her hart of that steely resistace against the sweet blowes of Loue: that since all her parts were decked with some

particular orname[n]t; her face with beautie, her head with wisdom, her eyes with maiestie, her countenance with gracefulness, her lippes with louelines, her tongue with victorie; that she woulde make her hart the throne of pitie, being the most excellent rayment of the most excellent part.

Pamela, without shew either of fauour or disdain, either of heeding or
neglecling what I had said, turned her speech to *Mopsa*, and with such a voice
and acttion, as might shewe she spake of a matter which little did concerne her, Take
heede to your selfe (saide she) *Mopsa*, for your shepheard can speake well: but truely,
if he doo fully prooue himselfe such as he saith, I mean, the honest
shepheard *Menalchas* his brother, and heire, I know no reason why you shoulde
thinke scorne of him. *Mopsa* though (in my conscience) she were euen then farre
spent towards me, yet she answered her, that for all my queint speeches, she would
keepe her honestie close inough: And that as for the highe way of matrimony, she
would steppe neuer a foote further, till my maister her father had spoken the whole
word him selfe, no she would not. But euer and anon turning her muzzell toward me,
she threwe such a prospect vpon me, as might well haue giuen a surfet to any weake
louers stomacke. But Lord what a foole am I, to mingle that driuels speeches among
my noble thoughts? but because she was an Actor in this Tragedie, to geue you a full
knowledge, and to leaue nothing (that I can remember) vnrepeated.

Now the Princesse being about to withdrawe her selfe from vs, I tooke a iewell,
made in the figure of a Crab-fish, which, because it lookes one way and goes
another, I thought it did fitly patterne out my looking to *Mopsa*, but bending to
Pamela: The word about it was, *By force, not choice*; and still kneeling, besought the
Princesse that she would vouchsafe to giue it *Mopsa*, and with the blessednes of her
hande to make acceptable vnto her that toy which I had founde, followinge of late an
acquaintaunce of mine at the plowe. For (sayd I) as the earth was turned vp, the plow-
share lighted vpon a great stone: we puld that vp, & so found both that, and some
other prety thinges which we had deuided betwixt vs.

Mopsa was benumbed with ioy when the Princesse gaue it her: but in the Princesse
I could finde no apprehension of
what I either said or did, but with a calme carelesnesse letting each thing slide,
iustly as we doo by their speeches, who neither in matter nor person doo any
way belong vnto vs) which kind of colde temper, mixt with that lightning of her
naturall maiestic, is of all others most terrible vnto me: for yet if I found she
contemned me, I would desperatly labour both in fortune and vertue to ouercome it; if
she onely misdoubted me, I were in heauen; for quickly I would bring sufficient
assurance: lastly, if she hated me, yet I should know what passion to deale with; and
either with infinitenes of desert I would take away the fewell from that fire; or if
nothing would serue, then I would giue her my hart-bloud to quench it. But this cruell
quietnes, neither retiring to mislike, nor proceeding to fauour; gracious, but gracious
still after one maner; all her courtesies hauing this engrauen in them, that what is

done, is for vertues sake, not for the parties; euer keeping her course like the Sun, who neither for our prayes, nor curses, will spare or stoppe his horses. This (I say) heauenlines of hers, (for how so euer my miserie is I cannot but so entitle it) is so impossible to reach vnto, that I almost begin to submitte my selfe to the tyrannic of despaire, not knowing any way of perswasio[n], where wisdome seemes to be vnsensible. I haue appeared to her eyes, like my selfe, by a deuice I vsed with my master, perswading him, that we two might put on a certaine rich apparrel I had prouided, and so practise some thing on horsback before *Pamela*, telling him, it was apparell I had gotten for playing well the part of a King in a Tragedie at *Athens*: my horse indeed was it I had left at *Menalcas* house, and *Dametas* got one by friendship out of the Princes stable. But how soeuer I show, I am no base bodie, all I doo is but to beate a rocke and get fome.

CHAP. 4.

1 *Basilius his hauking.* 2 *Gynecias hurte by Dametas ouerturning her coche.* 3 *Her ielousie ouer Zelmane.* *Philocleas loue-passions,* 5 *vowe of chastitie,* 6 *reuocation;* 7 *lamentation.*

BVt as *Dorus* was about to tell further, *Dametas* (who came whistling, & counting vpon his fingers, how many loade of hay his seuenteen fat oxen eat vp in a yeare) ¹ desired *Zelmane* from the King that she would come into the lodge, where they stayed for her. Alas (said *Dorus*, taking his leaue) the sum is this, that you may wel find you haue beate your sorrow against such a wall, which with the force of rebound may wel make your sorrow stro[n]ger. But *Zelmane* turning her speach to *Dametas*, I shall grow (said she) skilfull in country matters, if I haue often conference with your seruaunt. In sooth (answered *Dametas* with a gracelesse skorne) the Lad may proue wel enough, if he ouersoone thinke not too well of himselfe, and will beare away that he heareth of his elders. And therewith as they walked to the other lodge, to make *Zelmane* find she might haue spe[n]t her time better with him, he began with a wilde Methode to runne ouerall the art of husbandrie: especially imploying his tongue about well dunging of a fielde: while poore *Zelmane* yeilded her eares to those tedious strokes, not warding them so much as with any one answere, till they came to *Basilius*, and *Gynecia*, who atte[n]ded for her in a coach to carrie her abroad to see some sportes prepared for her. *Basilius* and *Gynecia* sitting in the one ende, placed her at the other, with her left side to *Philoclea*. *Zelmane* was moued in her minde, to haue kissed their feete for the fauour of so blessed a seate: for the narrownesse of the coach made them ioine from

the foote to the shoulders very close together; the truer touch wherof though it were barred by their enuious apparell, yet as a perfect Magnes, though put in an iuorie boxe, will thorow the boxe send forth his imbraced vertue to a beloued needle; so this imparadised neighbourhood made *Zelmanes* soule cleaue vnto her, both thorow the iuory case of her body, and the apparell which did ouer-clowd it. All the bloud of *Zelmanes* body stirring in her, as wine will do when suger is hastely put into it, seeking to sucke the sweetnes of the beloued guest; her hart, like a lion new imprisoned, seeing him that restraines his libertie, before the grate; not panting, but striuing violently (if it had bene possible) to haue leapt into the lappe of *Philoclea*. But *Dametas*, euen then proceeding from being maister of a carte, to be doctor of a coach, not a little proud in himselfe, that his whippe at that time guided the rule of *Arcadia*, draue the coach (the couer whereof was made with such ioints, that as they might (to auoid the weather) pull it vp close when they listed, so when they would they might put each ende downe, and remaine as discovered & open sighted as on horsebacke) till vpon the side of the forrest they had both greyhounds, spaniels, and hounds: whereof the first might seeme the Lords, the second the Gentlemen, and the last the Yeomen of dogges; a cast of Merlins there was besides, which flying of a gallant height ouer certaine bushes, would beate the birdes (that rose) downe vnto the bushes, as Faulcons will doo wilde-foule ouer a riuer. But the sporte which for that daie *Basilius* would principallie shewe to *Zelmana*, was the mountie at a Hearne, which getting vp on his wagling winges with paine, till he was come to some height, (as though the aire next to the earth were not fit for his great bodie to flie thorow) was now growen to diminish the sight of himself, & to giue example to great persons, that the higher they be, the lesse they should show: whe[n] a ierfaulcon was cast of after her, who streight spying where the pray was, fixing her eie with desire, & guiding her wing by her eie, vsed no more stre[n]gth then industry. For as a good builder to a hie tower will not make his stayre vpright, but winding almost the ful co[m]passe about, that the steepnes be the more vnsensible: so she, seing the towring of her pursued chase, went circkling, & co[m]passing about, rising so with the lesse sence of rising; & yet finding that way scantly serue the greedines of her hast, as an ambitious body wil go far out of the direct way, to win to a point of height which he desires; so would she (as it were) turne taile to the Heron, & flie quite out another way, but all was to returne in a higher pitche; which once gotten, she would either beate with cruell assaults the Heron, who now was driuen to the best defence of force, since flight would not serue; or els clasping with him, come downe together, to be parted by the ouerpartiall beholders.

Diuers of which flights *Basilius* shewing to *Zelmana*, thus was the richesse of 2
the time spent, and the day deceased before it was thought of, till night like a
degenerating successour made his departure the better remembred. And therefore (so
constrained) they willed *Dametas* to driue homeward, who (halfe sleeping, halfe
musing about the mending of a vine-presse) guided the horses so ill, that the wheele

coming ouer a great stub of a tree, it ouerturned the coach. Which though it fell violently vpon the side where *Zelmane* & *Gynecia* sat, yet for *Zelmanes* part, she would haue bene glad of the fall, which made her beare the sweete burthen of *Philoclea*, but that she feared she might receaue some hurt. But indeede neither she did, nor any of the rest, by reason they kept their armes and legs within the coach, sauing *Gynecia*, who with the onely bruze of the fall had her shoulder put out of ioint; which though by one of the Faulkeners cunning, it was set well againe, yet with much paine was she brought to the lodge; and paine (fetching his ordinary companion, a feuer with him) draue her to entertaine them both in her bedde.

But neither was the feuer of such impatient heate, as the inwarde plague-sore of her affection, nor the paine halfe so noysome, as the iealousie she conceaued of her daughter *Philoclea*, lest this time of her sicknesse might giue apt occasion to *Zelmane* whom she misdoubted. Therefore she called *Philoclea* to her, and though it were late in the night, commaunded her in her eare to go to the other lodge, and send *Miso* to her, with whom she would speake, and she lie with her sister *Pamela*. The meane while *Gynecia* kepte *Zelmane* with her, because she would be sure, she should be out of the lodge, before she licenced *Zelmane*. *Philoclea* not skild in any thing better then obedience, went quietly downe; and the Moone then full (not thinking skorne to be a torche-bearer to such beautie) guided her steppes, whose motions bare a minde, which bare in it selfe farre more stirring motions. And alas (sweete *Philoclea*) how hath my penne till now forgot thy passions, since to thy memorie principally all this long matter is intended? pardon the slacknes to come to those woes, which hauing caused in others, thou didst feele in thy selfe.

The sweete minded *Philoclea* was in their degree of well doing, to whom the not knowing of euill serueth for a ground of vertue, and hold their inward powers in better forme with an vnspotted simplicitie, then many, who rather cunningly seeke to know what goodnes is, then willingly take into themselues the following of it. But as that sweet & simple breath of heauenly goodnesse, is the easier to be altered, because it hath not passed through the worldlie wickednesse, nor feelingly found the euill, that euill caries with it; so now the Ladie *Philoclea* (whose eyes and senses had receaued nothing, but according as the naturall course of each thing required; which fro[m] the tender youth had obediently liued vnder her parents behests, without framing out of her own wil the fore-chosing of any thing) whe[n] now she came to appoint, wherin her iudgeme[n]t was to be practized, in knowing faultines by his first toke[n]s, she was like a yong faune, who coming in the wind of the hunters, doth not know whether it be a thing or no to be eschewed; whereof at this time she began to get a costly experience. For after that *Zelmane* had a while liued in the lodge with her, and that her onely being a noble straunger had bred a kind of heed-full attention; her coming to that lonely place (where she had no body but her parents) a willingnes of conuersatio[n]; her wit & behaiour, a liking & silent admiration; at length the excellency of her natural gifts, ioined with the extreme shewes she made of most

deuout honouring *Philoclea*, (carying thus in one person the only two bands of good will, louelines & louingnes) brought forth in her hart a yeelding to a most frie[n]dly affectio[n]; which when it had gotten so full possession of the keies of her mind, that it would receaue no message fro[m] her senses, without that affection were the interpreter; the[n] streight grew an exceeding delight stil to be with her, with an vn-measurable liking of al that *Zelmane* did: maters being so turned in her, that where at first, liking her manners did breed good-wil, now good-wil became the chiefe cause of liking her manners: so that within a while *Zelmane* was not prized for her demeanure, but the demeanure was prized because it was *Zelmanes*. The followed that most natural effect of co[n]forming ones self to that, which she did like, and not onely wishing to be her selfe such an other in all thinges, but to ground an imitation vpon so much an esteemed authentic: so that the next degree was to marke all *Zelmanes* dooings, speeches, and fashions, and to take them into herselfe, as a patterne of worthy proceeding. Which when once it was enacted, not onely by the comminalltie of Passions, but agreed vnto by her most noble Thoughts, and that by Reason it self (not yet experienced in the issues of such matters) had granted his royall assent; then Friendship (a diligent officer) tooke care to see the statute thorowly obserued. Then grew on that not onely she did imitate the sobernes of her countenance, the gracefulnesse of her speech, but euen their particular gestures: so that as *Zelmane* did often eye her, she would often eye *Zelmane*; & as *Zelmanes* eyes would deliuer a submissiue, but vehement desire in their looke, she, though as yet she had not the desire in her, yet should her eyes answere in like pearcing kindnesse of a looke. *Zelmane* as much as *Gynecias* ieaalousie would suffer, desired to be neere *Philoclea*; *Philoclea*, as much as *Gynecias* ieaalousie would suffer, desired to be neere *Zelmane*. If *Zelmane* tooke her hand, and softly strained it, she also (thinking the knots of friendship ought to bee mutuall) would (with a sweete fastnes) shew she was loth to part from it. And if *Zelmane* sighed, she would sigh also; whe[n] *Zelmane* was sad, she deemed it wisdome, and therefore she would be sad too. *Zelmanes* la[n]guishing cou[n]tenace with crost armes, and sometimes cast-vp eyes, she thought to haue an excellent grace: and therefore she also willingly put on the same countenance: til at the last (poore soule, ere she were aware) she accepted not onely the band, but the seruice; not only the signe, but the passion signified. For whether it were, that her wit in co[n]tinuace did finde, that *Zelmanes* friendship was full of impatient desire, hauing more the[n] ordinarie limits, & therefore shee was content to second *Zelmane*, though her selfe knew not the limits; or that in truth, true-loue (well considered) haue an infectiue power. At last she fell in acquaintance with loues harbinger, wishing. First she would wish, that they two might liue all their liues together, like two of *Dianas* Nimphes. But that wish, she thought not sufficient, because she knew, there would be more Nimphes besides them, who also would haue their part in *Zelmane*. The[n] would she wish, that she were her sister, that such a natural band might make her more speciall to her. But against that, she considered,

that though being her sister, if she happened to be married, she should be robbed of her. Then growne bolder, she would wish either her selfe, or *Zelmane* a man, that there might succeed a blessed marriage betwixt them. But when that wish had once displaid his ensigne in her minde, then followed whole squadrons of longings, that so it might be, with a maine battaile of mislikings, and repynings against their creation, that so it was not. Then dreames by night beganne to bring more vnto her, then she durst wish by day, whereout making did make her know her selfe the better by the image of those fancies. But as some diseases when they are easie to be cured, they are hard to be knowne, but when they grow easie to be knowne, they are almost impossible to be cured: so the sweete *Philoclea*, while she might preuent it, she did not feele it, now she felt it, when it was past preuenting; like a riuer, no rampiers being built against it, till alreadie it haue ouerflowed. For now indeed, Loue puld of his maske, and shewed his face vnto her, and told her plainly, that shee was his prisoner. Then needed she no more paint her face with passions; for passions shone thorow her face; Then her rosie coulour was often encreased with extraordinarie blushing: and so another time, perfect whitenesse ascended to a degree of palenesse; now hot, then cold, desiring she knew not what, nor how, if she knew what. Then her minde (though too late) by the smart was brought to thinke of the disease, and her owne prooffe taught her to know her mothers minde; which (as no error giues so strong assault, as that which comes armed in the authoritie of a parent, so) greatly fortified her desires, to see, that her mother had the like desires. And the more ielous her mother was, the more she thought the iewell precious, which was with so many lookes garded. But that preuailing so far, as to keepe the two louers from priuate conference, then began she to feele the sweetnesste of a louers solitarinesse, when freely with words and gestures, as if *Zelmane* were present, shee might giue passage to her thoughts, and so as it were utter out some smoke of those flames, wherewith else she was not only burned, but smothered. As this night, that going from the one lodge to the other by her mothers commandement, with dolefull gestures and vncertaine paces, shee did willingly accept the times offer, to be a while alone: so that going a little aside into the wood ; where manie times before she had delighted to walke, her eyes were saluted with a tuft of trees, so close set together, as with the shade the moone gaue thorow it, it might breede a fearefull kinde of deuotion to looke vpon it. But true thoughts of loue banish all vaine fancie of superstition. Full well she did both remember and like the place; for there had she often with their shade beguiled *Phæbus* of looking vpon her: There had she enjoyed her selfe often, while she was mistresse of her selfe, and had no other thoughts, but such as might arise out of quiet senses.

But the principall cause that inuited her remembrance, was a goodly white marble stone, that should seeme had bene dedicated in ancient time to the *Silvan* gods: which she finding there a fewe dayes before *Zelmanes* comming, had written these words vpon it, as a testimonie of her mind, against the suspition her

captiuitie made her thinke she liued in. The writing was this.

Y*ou liuing powres enclosed in stately shrine
Of growing trees; you rurall Gods that wield
Your scepters here, if to your eares diuine
A voice may come, which troubled soule doth yeld:
This vowe receaue, this vowe ô Gods maintaine;
My virgin life no spotted thought shall staine.*

*Thou purest stone, whose purenesse doth present
My purest minde; whose temper hard doth showe
My tempred hart; by thee my promise sent
Vnto my selfe let after-liuers know.
No fancy mine, nor others wronge suspect
Make me, ô vertuous Shame, thy lawes neglect.*

*O Chastitie, the chiefe of heauenly lightes,
Which makst vs most immortall shape to weare,
Holde thou my hart, establish thou my sprights:
To onely thee my constant course I beare.
Till spotlesse soule vnto thy bosome flye,
Such life to leade, such death I vow to dye.*

But now that her memorie serued as an accuser of her change, and that her own hand-writing was there, to beare testimony against her fall; she went in among those few trees, so closed in the toppes together, as they might seeme a little chappell: and there might she by the help of the moone-light perceiue the goodly stone, which serued as an altar in that wooddie deuotion. But neither the light was enough to reade the words, and the inke was alreadie foreworne, and in many places blotted: which as she perceaued, Alas (said she) faire Marble, which neuer receiuedst spot but by my writing, well do these blots become a blotted writer. But pardon her which did not dissemble then, although she haue chaunged since. Enioy, enioy the glorie of thy nature, which can so constantly beare the markes of my inconstancie. And herewith hiding her eyes with her soft hand, there came into her head certaine verses, which if she had had present commoditie, she would haue adioyned as a retractation to the other. They were to this effect.

M*Y words, in hope to blaze my stedfast minde,
This marble chase, as of like temper knowne:*

*But loe, my words defaste, my fancies blinde,
Blots to the stone, shame to my selfe I finde:
And witnesse am, how ill agree in one,
A womans hand with constant marble stone.*

*My words full weake, the marble full of might;
My words in store, the marble all alone;
My words blacke inke, the marble kindly white
My words vnseene, the marble still in sight,
May witnesse beare, how ill agree in one,
A womans hand, with constant marble stone.*

But seeing she could not see meanes to ioyne as the this recantation to the former vow, (laying all her faire length vnder one of the trees) for a while she did nothing but turne vp and downe, as if she had hoped to turne away the fancie that mastred her, and hid her face, as if she could haue hidden her selfe from her owne fancies. At length with a whispering note to her selfe; O me vnfortunate wretch (said she) what poysonous heates be these, which thus torment me? How hath the sight of this strange guest inuaded my soule? Alas, what entrance found this desire, or what strength had it thus to conquer me? Then, a cloud passing betweene her sight and the moone, O *Diana* (said she) I would either the cloud that now hides the light of my vertue would as easily passe away, as you will quickly ouercome this let; or els that you were for euer thus darkned, to serue for an excuse of my outragious folly. Then looking to the starres, which had perfittly as then beautified the cleere skie: My pare[n]ts (said she) haue told me, that in these faire heauenly bodies, there are great hidde[n] deities, which haue their working in the ebbing & flowing of our estates. If it be so, then (O you Stars) iudge rightly of me, & if I haue with wicked inte[n]t made my selfe a pray to fancie, or if by any idle lustes I framed my harte fit for such an impression, then let this plague dayly encrease in me, till my name bee made odious to womankind. But if extreame and vnresistable violence haue oppressed me, who will euer do any of you sacrifice (ô you Starres) if you do not succour me. No, no, you will not help me. No, no, you cannot helpe me: Sinne must be the mother, and shame the daughter of my affection. And yet are these but childish obiections (simple *Philoclea*) it is the impossibilitie that dooth torment me: for, vnlawfull desires are punished after the effect of enioying; but vnpossible desires are punished in the desire it selfe. O then, ô tenne times vnhappy that I am, since where in all other hope kindleth loue; in me despaire should be the bellows of my affection: and of all despaires the most miserable, which is drawn from impossibilitie. The most couetous man longs not to get riches out of a grou[n]d which neuer can beare any thing; Why? because it is impossible. The most ambitious wight vexeth not his wittes to clime into heauen; Why? because it is impossible. Alas

then, Loue, why doost thou in thy beautifull sampler sette such a worke for my Desire to take out, which is as much impossible? And yet alas, why doo I thus condemne my Fortune, before I heare what she can say for her selfe? What doo I, sillie wench, knowe what Loue hath prepared for me ? Doo I not see my mother, as well, at least as furiouslie as my selfe, loue *Zelmane*? And should I be wiser then my mother? Either she sees a possibilitie in that which I think impossible, or els impossible loues neede not misbecome me. And doo I not see *Zelmane* (who doth not thinke a thought which is not first wayed by wisdom and vertue) doth not she vouchsafe to loue me with like ardour? I see it, her eyes depose it to be true; what then? and if she can loue poore me, shall I thinke scorne to loue such a woman as *Zelmane*? Away then all vaine examinations of why and how. Thou louest me, excellent *Zelmane*, and I loue thee: and with that, embrasing the very grounde whereon she lay, she said to her selfe (for euen to her selfe she was ashamed to speake it out in words) O my *Zelmane*, gouerne and direct me; for I am wholly giuen ouer vnto thee.

CHAP. 5.

1 *The bedfellow communication of Philoclea and Pamela.* 2 *Pamelas narration of her shepherdes making loue,* 3 *of Dorus and Dametas horsemanshippe,* 4 *of his hote pursuite, and her colde acceptance.* 5 *His letter.* 6 *Her relenting,* 7 *and Philocleas sole complaint.*



IN this depth of muzes, and diuers sorts of discourses, would she haue rauingly remained, but that *Dametas* and *Miso* (who were rounde about to seeke her, vnderstanding she was to come to their lodge that night) came hard by her; *Dametas* saying, That he would not deale in other bodies matters; but for his parte, he did not like that maides should once stirre out of their fathers houses, but if it were to milke a cow, or saue a chicken from a kites foote, or some such other matter of importance. And *Miso* swearing that if it were her daughter *Mopsa*, she woulde giue her a lesson for walking so late, that should make her keepe within dores for one fortnight. But their iangling made *Philoclea* rise, and pretending as though she had done it but to sport with them, went with them (after she had willed *Miso* to waite vpon her mother) to the lodge; where (being now accustomed by her parents discipline, as well as her sister, to serue her selfe) she went alone vp to *Pamelas* chamber: where meaning to delight her eies, and ioy her thoughts with the sweet conuersation of her beloued sister, she found her (though it were in the time that the wings of night doth blow sleep most willingly into mortall creatures) sitting in a chaire, lying backward, with her head almost ouer the back of it, & looking

vpon a wax-ca[n]dle which burnt before her; in one hand holding a letter, in the other her hand-kerchiefe, which had lately dronk vp the teares of her eyes, leauing in steed of them, crimson circles, like redde flakes in the element, when the weather is hottest. Which *Philoclea* finding (for her eyes had learned to know the badges of sorowes) she earnestlie intreated to knowe the cause thereof, that either she might comforte, or accompanie her dolefull humor. But *Pamela*, rather seeming sorie that she had perceiued so much, then willing to open any further, O my *Pamela* (said *Philoclea*) who are to me a sister in nature, a mother in counsell, a Princesse by the law of our cou[n]trei, and which name (me thinke) of all other is the dearest, a friend by my choice and your fauour, what meanes this banishing me from your counsels? Do you loue your sorrowe so well, as to grudge me part of it? Or doo you thinke I shall not loue a sadde *Pamela*, so well as a ioyfull? Or be my eares vnwoorthie, or my tongue suspected? What is it (my sister) that you should conceale from your sister, yea and seruant *Philoclea*? These wordes wanne no further of *Pamela*, but that telling her they might talke better as they lay together, they impouerished their cloathes to inriche their bed, which for that night might well scorne the shrine of *Venus*: and there cherishing one another with deare, though chaste embracements; with sweet, though cold kisses; it might seeme that Loue was come to play him there without darte; or that weerie of his owne fires, he was there to refreshe himselfe betweene their sweete-breathing lippes. But *Philoclea* earnestly againe intreated *Pamela* to open her grieffe; who (drawing the curtain, that the candle might not complaine of her blushing) was ready to speake: but the breath almost formed into words, was againe stopt by her, and turned into sighes. But at last, I pray you (said she) sweete *Philoclea*, let vs talke of some other thing: & tell me whether you did euer see any thing so ameded as our Pastoral sports be, since that *Dorus* came hether? O Loue, how farre thou seest with blind eyes? *Philoclea* had straight found her, and therefore to draw out more, In deed (said she) I haue often wondred to my selfe how such excelle[n]cies could be in so meane a person; but belike Fortune was afraide to lay her treasures, where they should be staind with so many perfections: onely I marvaile how he can frame himselfe to hide so rare giftes vnder such a block as *Dametas*. Ah (said *Pamela*) if you knew the cause: but no more doo I neither; and to say the trueth: but Lord, how are we falne to talke of this fellow? and yet indeed if you were sometimes with me to marke him, while *Dametas* reades his rusticke lecture vnto him (how to feede his beastes before noone, where to shade them in the extreame heate, how to make the manger handsome for his oxen, when to vse the goade, & when the voice: giuing him rules of a heardma[n], though he prete[n]ded to make him a shepheard) to see all the while with what a grace (which seemes to set a crowne vpon his base estate) he can descend to those poore matters, certainly you would: but to what serues this? no doubt we were better sleepe then talke of these idle matters. Ah my *Pamela* (said *Philoclea*) I haue caught you, the constantnes of your wit was not wont to bring forth such disiointed speeches: you loue, dissemble no further. It is true (said *Pamela*) now you haue it; and

with lesse adoo should, if my hart could haue thoght those words suteable for my mouth. But indeed (my *Philoclea*) take heed: for I thinke vertue itself is no armour of prooffe against affection. Therefore learne by my example. Alas thought *Philoclea* to her selfe, your sheeres come to late to clip the birds wings that already is flowne away.

But then *Pamela* being once set in the streame of her Loue, went away a maine withall, telling her how his noble qualities had drawne her liking towards him; but yet euer waying his meanenes, & so held continually in due limits; till seeking many meanes to speake with her, & euer kept from it (as wel because she shund it, seing and disdainning his mind, as because of her ieaalous iaylours) he had at length vsed the finest pollicie that might be in counterfaiting loue to *Mopsa*, & saying to *Mopsa* what soeuer he would haue her know: and in how passionate manner he had told his owne tale in a third person, making poore *Mopsa* beleue, that it was a matter fallen out many ages before. And in the end, because you shal know my teares come not, neither of repe[n]tance nor misery, who thinke you, is my *Dorus* fallen out to be? euen the Prince *Musidorus*, famous ouer all *Asia*, for his heroical enterprises, of whom you remember how much good the straunger *Plangus* told my father; he not being drowned (as *Plangus* thought) though his cousin *Pyrocles* indeed perished. Ah my sister, if you had heard his words, or seene his gestures, when he made me know what, and to whom his loue was, you would haue matched in your selfe (those two rarely matched together) pittie and delight. Tell me deare sister (for the gods are my witnesses I desire to doo vertuously) can I without the detestable staine of vngratefulness abstaine from louing him, who (far exceeding the beautifulesse of his shape with the beautifulesse of his minde, and the greatnesse of his estate with the greatnesse of his actes) is content so to abase him selfe, as to become *Dametas* seruaunt for my sake? you will say, but how know I him to be *Musidorus*, since the handmaid of wisdome is slow belief? That co[n]sideratio[n] did not want in me, for the nature of desire it selfe is no easier to receiue beliefe, then it is hard to ground belief. For as desire is glad to embrace the first shew of comfort, so is desire desirous of perfect assuraunce: and that haue I had of him, not onely by necessary arguments to any of comon sense, but by sufficient demonstrations. Lastly he would haue me send to *Thessalia*: but truly I am not as now in mind to do my honorable Loue so much wrong, as so far to suspect him: yet poor soule knowes he no other, but that I doo both suspect, neglect, yea & detest him. For euery day he finds one way or other to set forth him selfe vnto me, but all are rewarded with like coldnesse of acceptation.

A few daies since, he & *Dametas* had furnished theselues very richly to run at the ring before me. O how mad a sight it was to see *Dametas*, like rich Tissew furd with lambe skins? But ô how well it did with *Dorus*, to see with what a grace he presented him selfe before me on horseback, making maiestic wait vpon humblenes? how at the first, standing stil with

his eies bent vpon me, as though his motio[n]s were chained to my looke, he so staide till I caused *Mopsa* bid him doo something vpon his horse: which no sooner said, but (with a kinde rather of quick gesture, then shew of viole[n]ce) you might see him come towards me, beating the grou[n]d in so due time, as no daunce can obserue better measure. If you remember the ship we saw once, whe[n] the Sea went hie vpon the coast of *Argos*; so went the beast: But he (as if Ce[n]taurlike he had bene one peece with the horse) was no more moued, then one is with the going of his owne legges: and in effect so did he command him, as his owne limmes, for though he had both spurres and wandes, they seemed rather markes of soueraintie, then instruments of punishment; his hand and legge (with most pleasing grace) comma[n]ding without threatning, & rather reme[m]bring then chastising, at lest if sometimes he did, it was so stolen, as neyther our eyes could discerne it, nor the horse with any chaunce did co[m]plaine of it, he euer going so iust with the horse, either foorth right, or turning, that it seemed as he borrowed the horses body, so he lent the horse his minde: in the turning one might perceiue the bridle-hand somthing gently stir, but indeed so gently, as it did rather distill vertue, then vse violence. Him self (which me thinkes is straunge) shewing at one instant both steadines & nimblenes; somtimes making him turne close to the grou[n]d, like a cat, when scratchingly she wheeles about after a mouse: sometimes with a little more rising before, now like a Rauen leaping from ridge to ridge, then like one of *Dametas* kiddes bound ouer the hillocks: and all so done, as neither the lustie kinde shewed any roughnesse, nor the easier any idlenesse: but still like a well obeyed maister, whose becke is enough for a discipline, euer concluding ech thing he did with his face to me-wards, as if thence came not onely the beginning, but ending of his motions. The sporte was to see *Dametas*, how he was tost from the saddle to the mane of the horse, and thence to the ground, giuing his gay apparell almost as foule an outside, as it had an inside. But as before he had euer said, he wanted but horse & apparell to be as braue a courtier as the best, so now brused with prooffe, he proclaimed it a folly for a man of wisdom, to put himselfe vnder the tuition of a beast; so as *Dorus* was fayne alone to take the Ringe. Wherein truely at lest my womanish eyes could not discerne, but that taking his staffe from his thigh, the[n]descending it a little downe, the getting of it vp into the rest, the letting of the point fall, and taking the ring was but all one motion, at lest (if they were diuers motions) they did so stealingly slippe one into another, as the latter parte was euer in hande, before the eye could discerne the former was ended. Indeed *Dametas* found fault that he shewed no more strength in shaking of his staffe: but to my conceite the fine cleernes of bearing it was exceeding delightfull.

But how delightfull soeuer it was, my delight might well be in my soule, but it neuer went to looke out of the window to doo him any comfort. But how much more I found reason to like him, the more I set all the strength of mind to suppress it, or at lest to conceale it. Indeed I must confesse, as some Physitions haue tolde me, that when one is cold outwardly, he is not

inwardly; so truly the colde ashes layed vpon my fire, did not take the nature of fire from it. Full often hath my brest swollen with keeping my sighes imprisoned; full often haue the teares, I draue backe from mine eyes, turned backe to drowne my harte. But alas what did that helpe poore *Dorus*? whose eyes (being his diligent intelligencers) coulde carrie vnto him no other newes, but discomfortable. I thinke no day past, but by some one inuention he would appeare vnto me to testifie his loue. One time he daunced the Matachine daunce in armour (O with what a gracefull dexteritie?) I thinke to make me see, that he had bene brought vp in such exercises: an other time he perswaded his maister (to make my time seeme shorter) in manner of a Dialogue, to play *Priamus* while he plaide *Paris*. Thinke (sweet *Philoclea*) what a *Priamus* we had: but truely, my *Paris* was a *Paris*, and more then a *Paris*: who while in a sauage apparell, with naked necke, armes, and legges, he made loue to *Oenone*, you might wel see by his chaunged countenance, and true teares, that he felte the parte he playde. Tell me (sweet *Philoclea*) did you euer see such a shepheard? tell me, did you euer heare of such a Prince? And then tell me, if a small or vnworthy assaulte haue conquered me. Truely I would hate my life, if I thought vanitie led me. But since my parents deale so cruelly with me, it is time for me to trust something to my owne iudgement. Yet hetherto haue my lookes bene as I told you, which continuing after many of these his fruitles trials, haue wrought such change in him, as I tell you true (with that worde she laid her hand vpon her quaking side) I doo not a little feare him. See what a letter this is (then drewe she the curtaine and tooke the letter from vnder the pillowe) which to daie (with an afflicted humblenesse) he deliuered me, pretending before *Mopsa*, that I should read it vnto her, to mollifie (forsooth) her iron stomacke; with that she read the letter containing thus much.

MOst blessed paper, which shalt kisse that had, where to al blessednes is in nature a serua[n]t, do not yet disdain to cary
with thee the woful words of a miser now despairing: neither be afraid to appeare 5
before her, bearing the base title of the sender. For no sooner shal that diuine
hande touch thee, but that thy basenesse shall be turned to most hie preferment.
Therefore mourne boldly my Inke; for while she lookes vpo[n] you, your blacknes wil
shine: crie out boldly my Lametatio[n]; for while she reads you, your cries wil be
musicke. Say then (O happy messenger of a most vnhappy message) that the too
soone borne, too late dying creature, which dares not speake, no not looke, no not
scarcely thinke (as from his miserable selfe, vnto her heauenly highnesse) onely
presumes to desire thee (in the time that her eyes and voice doo exalt thee) to say, and
in this manner to say, not from him, O no, that were not fit, but of him. Thus much
vnto her sacred iudgement: O you, the onely, the onely honour to women, to men the
onely admiration, you that being armed by Loue, defie him that armed you, in this
high estate wherein you haue placed me, yet let me remember him to whom I am

bound for bringing me to your presence; and let me remember him, who (since he is yours, how meane so euer it be) it is reaso[n] you haue an account of him. The wretch (yet your wretch) though with languishing steppes runnes fast to his graue, and will you suffer a temple (how poorely-built soeuer, but yet a temple of your deitie) to be rased ? But he dyeth: it is most true, he dyeth; and he in whom you liue, to obey you, dieth. Whereof though he plaine, he doth not complaine: for it is a harme, but no wrong, which he hath receiued. He dyes, because in wofull language all his senses tell him, that such is your pleasure: for since you will not that he liue, alas, alas, what followeth, what followeth of the most ruined *Dorus*, but his ende? Ende then, euill destinyed *Dorus*, ende; and ende thou wofull letter, end; for it suffiseth her wisdom to know, that her heauenly will shalbe accomplished.

O my *Philoclea*, is hee a person to write these words? and are these words lightly to be regarded? But if you had seene, when with trembling hand he had deliuered it, how hee went away, as if he had beene but the coffin that carried himselfe to his sepulcher. Two times I must confesse I was about to take curtesie into mine eyes; but both times the former resolution stopt the entrie of it: so that he departed without obtaining any further kindnesse. But he was no sooner out of the doore, but that I looked to the doore kindly; and truely the feare of him euer since hath put me into such perplexitie, as now you found me. Ah my *Pamela* (said *Philoclea*) leaue sorrow. The riuer of your teares will soone loose his fountaine; it is in your hand as well to stitch vp his life againe, as it was before to rent it. And so (though with self-griued mind) she comforted her sister, till sleepe came to bath himselfe in *Pamelaes* faire weeping eyes.

Which when *Philoclea* found, wringing her hands, O me (said she) indeed the onely subiect of the destinies displeasure, whose greatest fortunatenes is more vnfortunate, then my sisters greatest vnfortunatenesse. Alas shee weepes because she would be no sooner happy; I weepe because I can neuer be happie; her teares flow from pittie, mine from being too farre lower then the reach of pittie. Yet doo I not enuie thee, deare *Pamela*, I do not enuy thee: onely I could wish that being thy sister in nature, I were not so farre off a kin in fortune.

CHAP. 6.

1 *The Ladies vprising, 2 and interrogatories to Dorus concerning Pyrocles and Euarchus. 3 His historiologie of Euarchus kingly excellencies, 4 his entry on a most corrupt estate, 5 and reformation thereof by royall arts and actions. 6 His, and Dorilaus crosse-mariage to ech others sister, ha-*

uing by ech a sonne; their mutuall defence, with Dorilaus death.



Vt the darkenesse of sorrow ouershadowing her mind, as the night did her eyes, they were both content to hide themselues vnder the wings of sleepe, till the next morning had almost lost his name, before the two sweet sleeping sisters awaked fro[m] dreames, which flattered them with more comfort, then their waking could, or would consent vnto. For then they were called vp by *Miso*; who hauing bene with *Gynecia*, had receiued commaundement to be continually with her daughters, and particularly not to let *Zelmane* and *Philoclea* haue any priuate co[n]ferece, but that she should be present to heare what passed. But *Miso* hauing now her authentic encreased, came with skowling eyes to deliuer a slauering good morrow to the two Ladies, telling them, it was a shame for them to marre their complexions, yea and conditions to, with long lying a bedde: & that, when she was of their age, she trowed, she would haue made a handkerchiefe by that time of the day. The two sweete Princes with a smiling silence answered her entertainment, and obeying her direction, couered their daintie beauties with the glad clothes. But as soone as *Pamela* was readie (& sooner she was then her sister) the agony of *Dorus* giuing a fit to her selfe, which the words of his letter (liuely imprinted in her minde) still remembred her of, she called to *Mopsa*, and willed her to fetch *Dorus* to speake with her: because (she said) she would take further iudgement of him, before she would moue *Dametas* to graunt her in mariage vnto him. *Mopsa* (as glad as of sweete-meate to goe of such an arrant) quickly returned with *Dorus* to *Pamela*, who entended both by speaking with him to giue some comfort to his passionate harte, and withall to heare some part of his life past; which although fame had already deliuered vnto her, yet she desired in more particular certainties to haue it from so beloued an historian. Yet the sweetnesse of vertues disposition ielous, euen ouer it selfe, suffred her not to enter abruptlie into questions of *Musidorus* (whom she was halfe ashamed she did loue so well, and more then halfe sorie she could loue no better) but thought best first to make her talke arise of *Pyrocles*, and his vertuous father: which thus she did.

Dorus (said she) you told me the last day, that *Plangus* was deceaued in that he affirmed the Prince *Musidorus* was drowned: but withall, you confessed his cosen *Pyrocles* perished; of whom certainly in that age there was a great losse, since (as I haue heard) he was a young Prince, of who[m] al me expected as much, as mans power could bring forth, & yet vertue promised for him, their expectation should not be deceaued. Most excellent Ladie (said *Dorus*) no expectatio[n] in others, nor hope in himself could aspire to a higher mark, the[n] to be thought worthy to be praised by your iudgement, & made worthy to be praised by your mouth. But most sure it is, that as his fame could by no meanes get so sweete & noble an aire to flie in, as in your breath, so could not you

(leaving your selfe aside) finde in the world a fitter subiect of commendation; as noble, as a long succession of royall ancestors, famous, and famous of victories could make him: of shape most louely, and yet of mind more louely; valiant, curteous, wise, what should I say more? sweete *Pyrocles*, excellent *Pyrocles*, what can my words but wrong thy perfections, which I would to God in some small measure thou hadst bequeathed to him that euer must haue thy vertues in admiration; that masked at least in them, I might haue found some more gracious acceptance? with that he imprisoned his looke for a while vpon *Mopsa*, who thereupon fell into a verie wide smiling. Truly (said *Pamela*) *Dorus* I like well your minde, that can raise it selfe out of so base a fortune, as yours is, to thinke of the imitating so excellent a Prince, as *Pyrocles* was. Who shootes at the mid-day Sunne, though he be sure he shall neuer hit the marke; yet as sure he is, he shall shoote higher, then who aymes but at a bush. But I pray you *Dorus* (said she) tell me (since I perceauie you are well acquainted with that storie) what Prince was that *Euarchus* father to *Pyrocles*, of whom so much fame goes, for his rightly royall vertues, or by what wayes he got that opinion. And then so descend to the causes of his sending first away from him, and then to him for that excellent sonne of his, with the discourse of his life and losse: and therein you may (if you list) say something of that same *Musidorus* his cosen, because, they going together, the story of *Pyrocles* (which I onely desire) may be the better vnderstood.

Incomparable Lady (said he) your commandement doth not onely giue me the wil, but the power to obey you, such influence hath your excellencie. And first, for that famous King *Euarchus*, he was ³ (at this time you speake off) King of *Macedon*, a kingdome, which in elder time had such a soueraintie ouer all the prouinces of Greece, that eue[n]the particular kings therein did acknowledge (with more or lesse degrees of homage) some kind of fealty thereunto: as among the rest, euen this now most noble (and by you ennobled) kingdome of *Arcadia*. But he, whe[n] he came to his crowne, finding by his later ancestors either negligeece, or misfortune, that in some ages many of those duties had bin intermitted, would neuer stirre vp old titles (how apparant soeuer) whereby the publike peace (with the losse of manie not guiltie soules) should be broken; but contenting himselfe to guide that shippe, wherein the heauens had placed him, shewed no lesse magnanimitie in daungerlesse despising, then others in daungerous affecting the multiplying of kingdomes: for the earth hath since borne enow bleeding witnesses, that it was no want of true courage. Who[m] as he was most wise to see what was best, and most iust in the performing what he saw, & temperate in abstaining from any thing any way contrary: so thinke I, no thought can imagine a greater harte to see and contemne daunger, where daunger would offer to make any wrongfull threatning vpon him. A Prince, that indeed especially measured his greatnesse by his goodnesse: and if for any thing he loued greatnesse, it was, because therein he might exercise his goodnes. A Prince of a goodly aspect, and the more goodly by a graue maiestie, wherewith his mind did decke his outward graces; strong of body, and so much the

stronger, as he by a well disciplined exercise taught it both to do, and suffer. Of age, so as he was about fiftie yeares when his Nephew *Musidorus* tooke on such shepherdish apparell for the loue of the worlds paragon, as I now weare.

This King left Orphan both of father and mother, (whose father & grandfather likewise had dyed yong) he found his estate, when he came to age (which allowed his authentic) so disioynted euen in the noblest & strongest lims of gouernmet, that the name of a King was growne eue[n]odious to the people, his authority hauing bin abused by those great Lords, & litle kings: who[m] in those betweene-times of rainging (by vniust faououring those that were partially theirs, & oppressing them that would defende their libertie against them had brought in (by a more felt then seene maner of proceeding) the worst kind of Oligarchic; that is, whe[n] men are gouerned in deede by a fewe, and yet are not taught to know what those fewe be, to whom they should obey. For they hauing the power of kinges, but not the nature of kings, vsed the authority as men do their farms, of which they see within a yeere they shal goe out: making the Kinges sworde strike whom they hated, the Kings purse reward whom they loued: and (which is worst of all) making the Royall countenance serue to vndermine the Royall soueraintie. For the Subiectes could taste no sweeter fruites of hauing a King, then grieuous taxations to serue vaine purposes; Lawes made rather to finde faults, then to preuent faultes: the Court of a Prince rather deemed as a priuiledged place of vnbrideled licentiousnes, then as a bidding of him, who as a father, should giue a fatherly example vnto his people. Hence grew a very dissolution of all estates, while the great men (by the nature of ambition neuer satisfied) grew factious among themselues: and the vnderlings, glad indeede to be vnderlings to them they hated lest, to preserue them from such they hated most. Men of vertue suppressed, lest their shining should discouer the others filthines; and at length vertue it selfe almost forgotten, when it had no hopefull end whereunto to be directed; olde men long nusled in corruption, scorning them that would seeke reformation; yong men very fault-finding, but very faultie: and so to new-fanglenes both of manners, apparrell, and each thing els, by the custome of selfe-guiltie euill, glad to change though oft for a worse; marchandise abused, and so townes decayed for want of iust and naturall libertie; offices, euen of iudging soules, solde; publique defences neglected; and in summe, (lest too long I trouble you) all awrie, and (which wried it to the most wrie course of all) witte abused, rather to faine reason why it should be amisse, then how it should be amended.

In this, and a much worse plight then it is fitte to trouble your excellent eares withal, did the King *Euarchus* finde his estate, when he tooke vpon him the regiment: which by reason of the long streame of abuse, he was forced to establish by some euen extreme seueritie, not so much for the very faultes themselues, (which he rather sought to preuent then to punish) as for the faultie ones; who strong, euen in their faultes, scorned his youth,

and could not learne to disgest, that the man which they so long had vsed to maske their owne appetites, should now be the reducer of them into order. But so soone as some fewe (but in deede notable) examples, had thundred a duetie into the subiects hartes, he soone shewed, no basenes of suspition, nor the basest basenes of enuie, could any whit rule such a Ruler. But then shined foorth indeede all loue among them, when an awfull feare, ingendred by iustice, did make that loue most louely; his first & principall care being to appeare vnto hi people, such as he would haue them be, & to be such as he appeared; making his life the example of his lawes, as it were, his actions arising out of his deedes. So that within small time, he wanne a singular loue in his people, and engraffed singular confidence. For how could they chuse but loue him, whom they found so truely to loue the[m]? He euen in reason disdayning, that they that haue charge of beastes, should loue their charge, and care for them; and that he that was to gouerne the most excellent creature, should not loue so noble a charge. And therefore, where most Princes (seduced by flatterie to builde vpon false grounds of gouernment) make themselues (as it were) another thing from the people; and so count it gaine what they can get from them: and (as if it were two counter-ballances, that their estate goes hiest when the people goes lowest) by a fallacie of argument thinking themselues most Kinges, when the subiect is most basely subiected: he contrariwise, vertuouslie and wisely acknowledging, that he with his people made all but one politike bodie, whereof him-selfe was the head; euen so cared for them, as he would for his owne limmes: neuer restrayning their liberty, without it stretched to licenciousnes, nor pulling from them their goods, which they found were not employed to the purchase of a greater good: but in all his actions shewing a delight to their welfare, broght that to passe, that while by force he tooke nothing, by their loue he had all. In summe (peerelesse Princesse) I might as easily sette downe the whole Arte of gouernement, as to lay before your eyes the picture of his proceedings. But in such sorte he flourished in the sweete comforte of dooing much good, when by an action of leauing his Countrie, he was forced to bring foorth his vertue of magnanimitie, as before he had done of iustice.

He had onely one sister, a Ladie (lest I should too easilie fall to partiall prayses of her) of whom it may be iustly said, that she was no vnfit bra[n]ch to the noble stock wherof she came. Her he had giuen in manage to *Dorilaus*, Prince of *Thessalia*, not so much to make a fre[n]dship, as to co[n]firm the fre[n]dship betwixt their posteritie, which betwene them, by the likenes of vertue, had been long before made: for certainly, *Dorilaus* could neede no amplifiers mouth for the highest point of praise. Who hath not heard (said *Pamela*) of the valia[n]t, wise, and iust *Dorilaus*, whose vnripe death doth yet (so many yeares since) draw teares fro[m] vertuous eyes? And indeede, my father is wont to speak of nothing with greater admiration, then of the notable friendshippe (a rare thing in Princes, more rare betwene Princes) that so holily was obserued to the last, of those two excellent men. But (said she) goe on I pray

you. *Dorilaus* (said he) hauing married his sister, had his manage in short time blest (for so are folke woont to say, how vnhappy soeuer the children after grow) with a sonne, whom they named *Musidorus*: of whom I must needs first speake before I come to *Pyrocles*; because as he was borne first, so vpon his occasion grew (as I may say accidentally) the others birth. For scarcely was *Musidorus* made partaker of this oft-blinding light, when there were found numbers of Southsayers, who affirmed strange & incredible things should be performed by that childe; whether the heauens at that time listed to play with ignorant mankind, or that flatterie be so presumptuous, as euen at times to borrow the face of Diuinitie. But certainly, so did the boldnes of their affirmation accompanie the greatnes of what they did affirme (euen descending to particularities, what kingdomes he should ouercome) that the King of *Phrygia* (who ouer-superstitiously thought him selfe touched in the matter) sought by force to destroy the infant, to preuent his after-expectations: because a skilful man (hauing compared his natiuity with the child) so told him. Foolish ma[n], either vainly fearing what was not to be feared, or not considering, that if it were a worke of the superiour powers, the heauens at length are neuer children. But so he did, & by the aid of the Kings of *Lydia* and *Crete* (ioining together their armies) inuaded *Thessalia*, & brought *Dorilaus* to some behind-hand of fortune, when his faithfull friend & brother *Euarchus* came so mightily to his succour, that with some enterchanging changes of fortune, they begat of a iust war, the best child, peace. In which time *Euarchus* made a crosse mariage also with *Dorilaus* his sister, & shortly left her with child of the famous *Pyrocles*, driuen to returne to the defence of his owne countrie, which in his absence (helped with some of the ill contented nobilitie) the mighty King of *Thrace*, & his brother, King of *Pannonia*, had inuaded. The successe of those warres was too notable to be vnknowne to your eares, to which it seemes all worthy fame hath glory to come vnto. But there was *Dorilaus* (valiantly requiting his frie[n]ds helpe) in a great battaile depriued of his life, his obsequies being no more sole[m]nised by the teares of his partakers, the[n] the bloud of his enimies; with so pearcing a sorrow to the constant hart of *Euarchus*, that the newes of his sons birth could lighten his countenance with no shew of comfort, although al the comfort that might be in a child, truth it selfe in him forthwith deliuered. For what fortune onely southsayers foretold of *Musidorus*, that all men might see prognosticated in *Pyrocles*; both Heauens & Earth giuing toke[n]s of the comming forth of an Heroicall vertue. The senate house of the planets was at no time to set, for the decreeing of perfectio[n] in a man, as at that time all folkes skilful therin did acknowledge: onely loue was threatned, and promised to him, and so to his cousin, as both the tempest and hauen of their best yeares. But as death may haue preuented *Pyrocles*, so vnworthinesse must be the death to *Musidorus*.

CHAP. 7.

1 *The education of Pyrocles & Musidorus.* 2 *Their friendship,* 3 *navigation,* 4 *and first shipwracke.* 5 *The straunge gratitude of two brothers to them, vpon their liberallitie to those two brothers.*



Vt the mother of *Pyrocles* (shortly after her childe-birth) dying, was cause that *Euarchus* recommended the care of his only son to his sister; doing it the rather because the warre continued in cruell heat, betwixt him & those euil neighbours of his. In which meane time those young Princes (the only comforters of that vertuous widow) grewe on so, that *Pyrocles* taught admiration to the hardest conceats: *Musidorus* (per-chaunce because among his subiectes) exceedingly beloued: and by the good order of *Euarchus* (well perfourmed by his sister) they were so brought vp, that all the sparkes of vertue, which nature had kindled in the[m], were so blowne to giue forth their vttermost heate that iustly it may be affirmed, they enflamed the affections of all that knew the[m]. For almost before they could perfectly speake, they began to receaue co[n]ceits not vnworthy of the best speakers: excellent deuises being vsed, to make euen their sports profitable; images of battailes, & fortificatio[n]s being then deliuered to their memory, which after, their stronger iudgeme[n]ts might dispens, the delight of tales being co[n]uerted to the knowledge of al the stories of worthy Princes, both to moue them to do nobly, & teach them how to do nobly; the beautie of vertue still being set before their eyes, & that taught them with far more diligent care, then Gramatical rules, their bodies exercised in all abilities, both of doing and suffring, & their mindes acquainted by degrees with daungers; & in sum, all bent to the making vp of princely mindes: no seruile feare vsed towards them, nor any other violent restraint, but stil as to Princes: so that a habite of commaunding was naturalized in them, and therefore the farther from Tyrannic: Nature hauing done so much for them in nothing, as that it made them Lords of truth, whereon all the other goods were builded.

Among which I nothing so much delight to recount, as the memorable friendship that grewe betwixt the two Princes, such as made them more like then the likenesse of all other vertues, and made them more neer one to the other, then the neerenes of their bloud could aspire vnto; which I think grew the faster, and the faster was tied betweene them, by reason that *Musidorus* being elder by three or foure yeares, it was neither so great a difference in age as did take away the delight in societie, and yet by the difference there was taken away the occasion of childish contentions; till they had both past ouer the humour of such contentions. For *Pyrocles* bare reuere[n]ce ful of loue to *Musidorus*, & *Musidorus* had a delight full of loue in *Pyrocles*. *Musidorus*, what he had learned either for body or minde, would teach it to *Pyrocles*; and *Pyrocles* was so

glad to learne of none, as of *Musidorus*: till *Pyrocles*, being come to sixtene yeares of age, he seemed so to ouerrun his age in growth, strength, and al things following it, that not *Musidorus*, no nor any man liuing (I thinke) could performe any action, either on horse, or foote, more strongly, or deliuer that strength more nimbly, or become the deliuey more gracefully, or employ al more vertuously. Which may well seeme wonderfull, but wonders are no wonders in a wonderfull subiect.

At which time vnderstanding that the King *Euarchus*, after so many yeares warre, and the conquest of all *Pannonia*, and almost *Thrace*, had now brought the co[n]clusion of al to the siege of *Bizantium* (to the raising of which siege great forces were made) they would needs fall to the practise of those vertues, which they before learned. And therefore the mother of *Musidorus* nobly yeelding ouer her owne affects to her childrens good (for a mother she was in effect to the[m] both) the rather that they might helpe her beloued brother, they brake of all delayes; which *Musidorus* for his parte thought already had deuoured too much of his good time, but that he had once graunted a boone (before he knew what it was) to his deere friend *Pyrocles*; that he would neuer seeke the aduentures of armes, vntil he might go with him: which hauing fast bou[n]d his hart (a true slaue to faith) he had bid a tedious delay of following his owne humour for his friends sake, till now finding him able euery way to go thorow with that kinde of life, he was as desirous for his sake, as for his owne, to enter into it. So therefore preparing a nauie, that they might go like themselues, and not onely bring the comfort of their presence, but of their power to their deere parent *Euarchus*, they recommended themselues to the Sea, leauing the shore of *Thessalia* full of teares and vows: and were receiued thereon with so smooth and smiling a face, as if *Neptune* had as then learned falsely to fawne on Princes. The winde was like a seruaunt, wayting behind them so iust, that they might fill the sailes as they listed; and the best saylers shewing themselues lesse couetous of his liberalitie, so tempered it, that they all kept together like a beautifull flocke, which so well could obey their maisters pipe: without sometimes, to delight the Princes eies, some two or three of them would striue, who could (either by the cunning of well spending the windes breath, or by the aduantageous building of their moouing houses) leaue their fellowes behind them in the honour of speed: while the two Princes had leasure to see the practise of that, which before they had learned by bookes: to consider the arte of catching the winde prisoner, to no other ende, but to runne away with it; to see how beautie, and vse can so well agree together, that of all the trinckets, where with they are attired, there is not one but serues to some necessary purpose. And (ô Lord) to see the admirable power & noble effects of Loue, whereby the seeming insensible Loadstone, with a secret beauty (holding the spirit of iron in it) can draw that hard-harted thing vnto it, and (like a vertuous mistresse) not onely make it bow it selfe, but with it make it aspire to so high a Loue, as of the heauenly Poles; and thereby to bring forth the noblest deeds, that the children of the Earth can boast of. And so the Princes

delighting their co[n]ceats with co[n]firming their knowledge, seing wherein the Sea-discipline differed from Land-seruice, they had for a day & almost a whole night, as pleasing entertainment, as the falsest hart could giue to him he meanes worst to.

But by that the next morning began a little to make a guilden shewe of a good meaning, there arose euen with the Sun, a vaile of darke cloudes before his face, which shortly (like inck powred into water) 4 had blacked ouer all the face of heauen; preparing (as it were) a mournfull stage for a Tragedie to be plaid on. For forthwith the windes began to speake lowder, and as in a tumultuous kingdome, to thinke themselves fittest instruments of commaundement; and blowing whole stormes of hayle and raine vpon them, they were sooner in daunger, then they coulde almost bethinke themselves of change. For then the traiterous Sea began to swell in pride against the afflicted Nauie, vnder which (while the heauen fauoured them) it had layne so calmely, making mountaines of it selfe, ouer which the tossed and tottring ship shoulde clime, to be streight carried downe againe to a pit of hellish darkenesse; with such cruell blowes against the sides of the shippe (that which way soeuer it went, was still in his malice) that there was left neither power to stay, nor way to escape. And shortly had it so disseuered the louing companie, which the daie before had tarried together, that most of them neuer met againe, but were swallowed vp in his neuer-satisfied mouth. Some indeed (as since was knowne) after long wandring returned into *Thessalia*; other recouered *Bizantium*, and serued *Euarchus* in his warre. But in the ship wherein the Princes were (now left as much alone as proud Lords be when fortune fails them) though they employed all industrie to saue themselues, yet what they did was rather for dutie to nature, then hope to escape. So ougly a darkenesse, as if it would preuent the nights comming, vsurped the dayes right: which (accompanied sometimes with thunders, alwayes with horrible noyses of the chafing winds) made the masters and pilots so astonished, that they knew not how to direct, and if they knew they could scarcely (when they directed) heare their owne whistle. For the sea straued with the winds which should be lowder, & the shrouds of the ship with a ghastrful noise to them that were in it, witnessed, that their ruine was the wager of the others contention, and the heauen roaring out thunders the more amazed them, as hauing those powers for enimies. Certainly there is no daunger carries with it more horror, then that which growes in those flowing kingdomes. For that dwelling place is vnnaturall to mankind, and then the terriblesse of the continuall motion, the dissolutio[n] of the fare being from comfort, the eye and the eare hauing ougly images euer before it, doth still vex the minde, euen when it is best armed against it. But thus the day past (if that might be called a day) while the cunningest mariners were so conquered by the storme, as they thought it best with striking sailes to yeelde to be gouerned by it: the valiantest feeling inward dismayednesse, and yet the fearefullest ashamed fully to shew it, seeing that the Princes (who were to parte from the greatest fortunes) did in their countenances accuse no point of feare, but encouraging them to doo what might be done (putting

their handes to euerie most painefull office) taught them at one instant to promise themselues the best, and yet not to despise the worst. But so were they carryed by the tyrannic of the winde, and the treason of the sea, all that night, which the elder it was, the more wayward it shewed it selfe towards them: till the next morning (knowne to be a morning better by the houre-glasse, then by the day cleerenesse) hauing runne fortune as blindly, as it selfe euer was painted, lest the conclusion should not aunswere to the rest of the play, they were driuen vpon a rocke: which hidden with those outragious waues, did, as it were, closely dissemble his cruel mind, till with an vnbeleued violence (but to them that haue tried it) the shippe ranne vpon it; and seeming willinger to perish then to haue her course stayed, redoubled her blowes, till she had broken her selfe in peeces; and as it were tearing out her owne bowels to feede the seas greedinesse, left nothing within it but despaire of safetie, and expectation of a loathsome end. There was to be seene the diuerse manner of minds in distresse: some sate vpon the toppe of the poupe weeping and wailing, till the sea swallowed them; some one more able to abide death, then feare of death, cut his owne throate to preuent drowning; some prayed, and there wanted not of them which cursed, as if the heauens could not be more angrie then they were. But a monstrous crie begotten of manie roaring vowes, was able to infect with feare a minde that had not preuented it with the power of reason.

But the Princes vsing the passions of fearing euill, and desiring to escape, onely to serue the rule of vertue, not to abandon ones selfe, lept to a ribbe of the shippe, which broken from his fellowes, 5 rioted with more likelyhood to doo seruice, then any other limme of that ruinous bodie; vpon which there had gotten alreadie two brethren, well knowne seruants of theirs; and streight they foure were carryed out of sight, in that huge rising of the sea, from the rest of the shippe. But the peece they were on sinking by little and little vnder them, not able to support the weight of so manie, the brethren (the elder whereof was *Leucippus*, the younger *Nelsus*) shewed themselues right faithfull and gratefull seruants vnto them; gratefull (I say) for this cause: Those two gentlemen had bene taken prisoners in the great warre the king of *Phrygia* made vpon *Thessalia*, in the time of *Musidorus* his infancie; and hauing bene solde into another countrie (though peace fell after betweene these Realmes) could not be deliuered, because of their valor knowne, but for a farre greater summe, then either all their friends were able, or the Dowager willing to make, in respect of the great expences her selfe and people had bene put to in those warres; and so had they remained in prison about thirteene yeares, when the two young Princes (hearing speaches of their good deserts) found meanes both by selling all the iewels they had of great price, and by giuing vnder their hands great estates when they should come to be Kings (which promises their vertue promised for them should be kept) to get so much treasure as redeemed them from captiuitie. This remembred, and kindly remembred by these two brothers, perchance helped by a naturall duetie to their Princes blood, they willingly left holde

of the boord, committing themselues to the seas rage, & euen when they went to dye, themselues praying for the Princes liues. It is true, that neither the paine nor daunger, so moued the Princes hartes as the tendernesse of that louing part, farre from glorie, hauing so few lookers on; farre from hope of reward, since themselues were sure to perish.

CHAP. 8.

1 *Pyrocles cast on the shore of Phrygia led prisoner to the King.* 3 *That suspicious tyrant naturalized. His intent to kill Pyrocles.* 5 *Musidorus--his escape from sea, and offer to dye for his friend.* 6 *Their contention for death.* 7 *Preparation for Musidorus execution.* 8 *His straunge deliuerie by Pyrocles,* 9 *and a sodaine mutinie.* 10 *Their killing the bad King,* 11 *and creating a better.*



BVt now of all the royal Nauie they had left but one peece of one ship, whereon they kept themselues in all trueth, hauing enterchaunged their cares, while either cared for other, ech comforting and councelling how to labour for the better, and to abide the worse. But so fell it out, that as they were carried by the tide (which there seconded by the storme ran exceedingly swiftly) *Musidorus* seeing (as he thought) *Pyrocles* not well vpon the boord, as he would with his right hand haue helped him on better, he had no sooner vnfastned his hold, but that a waue forcibly spoiled his weaker hand of hold; and so for a time parted those friends, each crying to the other, but the noise of the sea drowned their farewell. But *Pyrocles* (then carelesse of death, if it had come by any meanes, but his owne) was shortly brought out of the seas furie to the lands comfort; when (in my conscience I know) that comfort was but bitter vnto him. And bitter indeed it fell out euen in it selfe to be vnto him.

For being cast on land much brused & beaten both with the seas hard farewell, and the shores rude welcome; and euen almost deadly tired with the length of his vncomfortable labour, as he was walking vp to discouer some bodie, to whom he might goe for reliefe, there came straight running vnto him certaine, who (as it was after knowne) by appointment watched (with manie others) in diuerse places along the coast: who laide handes of him, and without either questioning with him, or shewing will to heare him, (like men fearefull to appeare curious) or which was worse hauing no regard to the hard plight he was in (being so wette and weake) they carried him some miles thence, to a house of a principall officer of that countrie. Who with no more ciuilitie (though with much

more busines then those vnder-fellowes had shewed) beganne in captious manner to put interrogatories vnto him. To which he (vnused to such entertainment) did shortlie and plainely aunswere, what he was, and how he came thither.

But that no sooner knowne, with numbers of armed men to garde him (for mischiefe, not from mischiefe) he was sent to the Kings court, which as then was not aboue a dayes iourney off, with letters from that officer, containing his owne seruiceable diligence in discovering so great a personage; adding with all more then was true of his coniectures, because he would endeare his owne seruice.

This country whereon he fell was *Phrygia*, and it was to the King thereof to whom he was sent, a Prince of a melancholy constitution both of bodie and mind; wickedly sad, euer musing of horrible matters; suspecting, or rather condemning all men of euill, because his minde had no eye to espie goodnesse: and therefore accusing Sycophantes, of all men did best sort to his nature; but therefore not seeming Sycophantes, because of no euill they said, they could bring any new or doubtfull thing vnto him, but such as alreadie he had bene apt to determine; so as they came but as proofes of his wisdom: fearefull and neuer secure; while the feare he had figured in his minde had any possibilitie of euent. A tode-like retyrednesse, and closenesse of minde; nature teaching the odiousnesse of poyson, and the daunger of odiousnesse. Yet while youth lasted in him, the exercises of that age, and his humour (not yet fullie discovered) made him something the more frequentable, and lesse daungerous. But after that yeares beganne to come on with some, though more seldome shewes of a bloudie nature, and that the prophecie of *Musidorus* destinie came to his eares (deliuered vnto him, and receiued of him with the hardest interpretation, as though his subiectes did delight in the hearing thereof.) Then gaue he himselfe indeede to the full currant of his disposition, espetially after the warre of *Thessalia*, wherein (though in trueth wrongly) he deemed, his vnsuccessings proceeded of their vnwillingnes to haue him prosper: and then thinking him selfe contemned, (knowing no countermine against contempt, but terror) began to let nothing passe which might beare the colour of a fault, without sharpe punishment: & when he wanted faults, excellencie grew a fault; and it was sufficient to make one guiltie, that he had power to be guiltie. And as there is no honor, to which impudent pouertie cannot make it selfe seruiceable, so were there enow of those desperate ambitious, who would builde their houses vpon others ruines, which after shoulde fall by like practises. So as seritude came mainly vpon that poore people, whose deedes were not onely punished, but words corrected, and euen thoughts by some meane or other puld out of the[m]: while suspitio[n] bred the mind of crueltie, and the effectes of crueltie stirred a new cause of suspition. And in this plight (ful of watch-full fearefulnes) did the storme deliuer sweete *Pyrocles* to the stormie minde of that Tyrant, all men that did such wrong to so rare a stranger (whose countenance deserued both pitie and admiration) condemning theselues as much in their hearts, as they did brag in their forces.

But when this bloody King knew what he was, and in what order he and his
cosin *Musidorus* (so much of him feared)
were come out of *Thessalia*, assuredly thinking (because euer thinking the worst) 4
that those forces were prouided against him; glad of the perishing (as he thought)
of *Musidorus*, determined in publique sort to put *Pyrocles* to death. For hauing quite
loste the way of noblenes, he straue to clime to the height of terriblenes; and thinking
to make all men adread, to make such one an enemie, who would not spare, nor feare
to kill so great a Prince; and lastly, hauing nothing in him why to make him his friend,
thought, he woulde make him away, for being his enemie. The day was appointed, and
all things appointed for that cruell blow, in so solemne an order, as if they would set
foorth tyranny in most gorgeous decking. The Princely youth of inuincible valour, yet
so vniustly subiected to such outragious wrong, carrying himselfe in all his demeanure
so consta[n]tly, abiding extremitie, that one might see it was the cutting away of the
greatest hope of the world, and destroying vertue in his sweetest growth.

But so it fell out that his death was preuented by a rare example of friendship
in *Musidorus*: who being almost
drowned, had bene taken vp by a Fisherman belonging to the kingdome 5
of *Pontus*; and being there, and vnderstanding the full discourse (as Fame was
very prodigall of so notable an accident) in what case *Pyrocles* was; learning withall,
that his hate was farre more to him then to *Pyrocles*, he founde meanes to acquaint
him selfe with a nobl-man of that Countrie, to whom largely discouering what he was,
he found him a most fitte instrument to effectuate his desire. For this noble-man had
bene one, who in many warres had serued *Euarchus*, and had bene so mind-stricken by
the beautie of vertue in that noble King, that (though not borne his Subiect) he euen
profeste himselfe his seruaunt. His desire therefore to him was, to keepe *Musidorus* in
a strong Castle of his, and then to make the King of *Phrygia* vnderstande, that if he
would deliuer *Pyrocles*, *Musidorus* woulde willingly put him selfe into his handes:
knowing well, that how thirstie so euer he was of *Pyrocles* blood, he woulde rather
drinke that of *Musidorus*. The Nobleman was loath to preserue one by the losse of
another, but time vrging resolution: the importunitie of *Musidorus* (who shewed a
minde not to ouer-liue *Pyrocles*) with the affection he bare to *Euarchus*, so preuayled,
that he carried this strange offer of *Musidorus*, which by that Tyrant was greedelie
accepted.

And so vpon securitie of both sides, they were enterchaged. Where I may not
omitte that worke of friendship in
Pyrocles, who both in speache and cou[n]tenance to *Musidorus*, well shewed, that 6
he thought himselfe iniured, and not releued by him: asking him, what he had
euer seene in him, why he could not beare the extremities of mortall accidentes as
well as any man? and why he shoulde enuie him the glorie of suffering death for his
friendes cause, and (as it were) robbe him of his owne possession? But in this notable
contention, (where the conquest must be the conquerers destruction, and safetie the

punishment of the conquered) *Musidorus* preuayled: because he was a more welcome prize to the vniuste King, that wisht none well, to them worse then others, and to him worste of all: and as chearefully going towards, as *Pyrocles* went frowardly from-uarde his death, he was deliuered to the King, who could not be inough sure of him, without he fed his owne eies vpon one, whom he had begon to feare, as soone as the other began to be.

Yet because he would in one acte, both make ostentation of his owne felicitie (into whose hands his most fearedemie was fallen) and withal cut of such hopes from his suspected subiects (when they should knowe certainly he was dead) with much more skilful cruelty, and horrible solemnitie he caused each thing to be prepared for his triumph of tyrannic. And so the day being come, he was led foorth by many armed men (who often had beene the fortifiers of wickednes) to the place of execution: where comming with a mind comforted in that he had done such seruice to *Pyrocles*, this strange encounter he had.

The excelleng *Pyrocles* was no sooner deliuered by the kings seruants to a place of liberty, then he bent his witte and courage, (and what would not they bring to passe?) how ether to deliuer *Musidorus*, or to perish with him. And (finding he could get in that countrie no forces sufficient by force to rescue him) to bring himselfe to die with him, (little hoping of better euent) he put himselfe in poore rayment, and by the helpe of some few crownes he tooke of that noble-man, (who full of sorrow, though not knowing the secrete of his intent, suffered him to goe in such order from him) he (euen he, born to the greatest expectation, and of the greatest blood that any Prince might be) submitted himselfe to be seruant to the executioner that should put to death *Musidorus*: a farre notabler prooffe of his friendship, considering the height of his minde, then any death could be. That bad officer not suspecting him, being araid fit for such an estate, & hauing his beautie hidden by many foule spots he artificially put vpon his face, gaue him leaue not onely to weare a sworde himselfe, but to beare his sworde prepared for the iustified murther. And so *Pyrocles* taking his time, when *Musidorus* was vpon the scaffold (separated somewhat from the rest, as allowed to say something) he stept vnto him, & putting the sworde into his hande not bound (a point of ciuility the officers vsed towards him, because they doubted no such enterprise) *Musidorus* (said he) die nobly. In truth, neuer ma[n] betweene ioy before knowledge what to be glad of, and feare after co[n]sidering his case, had such a confusion of thoughts, as I had, when I saw *Pyrocles*, so neare me. But with that *Dorus* blushed, and *Pamela* smiled: and *Dorus* the more blushed at her smiling, and she the more smiled at his blushing; because he had (with the remembraunce of that plight he was in) forgotten in speaking of him selfe to vse the third person. But *Musidorus* turned againe her thoughts from his cheekes to his tongue in this sorte: But (said he) when they were with swordes in handes, not turning backs one to the other (for there they knew was no place of defence) but making that a preseruacion in

not hoping to be preserved, and now acknowledging themselves subject to death, meaning onely to do honour to their princely birth, they flew amongst the all (for all were enimies) & had quickly either with flight or death, left none vpon the scaffold to annoy them. Wherein *Pyrocles* (the excellent *Pyrocles*) did such wonders beyond beliefe, as was hable to leade *Musidorus* to courage, though he had bene borne a coward. But indeed, iust rage & desperate vertue did such effects, that the popular sorte of the beholders began to be almost superstitiously amazed, as at effectes beyond mortall power. But the King with angry threatnings from-out a window (where he was not ashamed, the worlde should behold him a beholder) co[m]maunded his garde, and the rest of his souldiers to hasten their death. But many of them lost their bodies to loose their soules, when the Princes grew almost so weary, as they were ready to be conquered with conquering.

But as they were stil fighting with weake armes, and strong harts, it happened, that one of the souldiers (co[m]maunded to go vp after his fellowes against the Princes) hauing receiued a light hurt, more woud[n]ed in his hart, went backe with as much diligence, as he came vp with modestie: which another of his fellowes seeing, to pike a thanke of the King, strake him vpon the face, reuiling him, that so accompanied, he would runne away from so fewe. But he (as many times it falls out) onely valiant, when he was angrie, in reuenge thrust him through: which with his death was streight reuenged by a brother of his: and that againe requited by a fellow of the others. There began to be a great tumult amongst the souldiers; which seene, and not vnderstood by the people (vsed to feares but not vsed to be bolde in them) some began to crie treason; and that voice streight multiplying it selfe, the King (O the cowardise of a guiltie conscience) before any man set vpon him, fled away. Where-with a bruit (either by arte of some well meaning men, or by such chaunce as such things often fall out by) ran from one to the other, that the King was slaine; wherwith certaine yong men of the brauest minds, cried with lowde voice, Libertie ; and encouraging the other Citizens to follow them, set vpon the garde, and souldiers as chiefe instruments of Tyrannie: and quickly, aided by the Princes, they had left none of them aliue, nor any other in the cittie, who they thought had in any sorte set his hand to the worke of their seruitude, and (God knowes) by the blindnesse of rage, killing many guiltles persons, either for affinity to the Tyrant, or enmitie to the tyrant-killers. But some of the wisest (seeing that a popular licence is indeede the many-headed tyranny) preuailed with the rest to make *Musidorus* their chiefe: choosing one of them (because Princes) to defende them, and him because elder and most hated of the Tyrant, and by him to be ruled: whom foorthwith they lifted vp, Fortune (I thinke) smiling at her worke therein, that a scaffold of execution should grow a scaffold of coronation.

But by and by there came newes of more certaine truth, that the King was not dead, but fled to a strong castle of his,

neere had, where he was gathering forces in all speed possible to suppress this 10
mutinie. But now they had run themselues too farre out of breath, to go backe
againe the same career; and too well they knew the sharpnesse of his memorie to
forget such an iniury; therefore learning vertue of necessitie, they continued resolute
to obey *Musidorus*. Who seing what forces were in the citie, with them issued against
the Tyrant, while they were in this heat; before practises might be vsed to disseuer
them: & with them met the King, who likewise hoping little to preuaile by time,
(knowing and finding his peoples hate) met him with little delay in the field: where
him selfe was slaine by *Musidorus*, after he had seene his onely sonne (a Prince of
great courage & beautie, but fostred in bloud by his naughty Father) slaine by the
hand of *Pyrocles*. This victory obtained, with great, and truly not vnderdesued honour
to the two Princes, the whole estates of the country with one consent, gaue the crowne
and all other markes of soueraigntie to *Musidorus*; desiring nothing more, then to liue
vnder such a gouernment, as they promised theselues of him.

But he thinking it a greater greatnes to giue a kingdome, then get a kingdome;
vnderstanding that there was left of the
bloud Roiall, & next to the successio[n], an aged Gentleman of approued 11
goodnes (who had gotten nothing by his cousins power, but danger fro[m] him,
and odiousnes for him) hauing past his time in modest secrecy, & asmuch from
entermedling in matters of gouernment, as the greatnesse of his bloud would suffer
him, did (after hauing receiued the full power to his owne hands) resigne all to the
noble-ma[n]: but with such conditions, & cautions of the conditions, as might assure
the people (with asmuch assurace as worldly matters beare) that not onely that
gouernour, of whom indeed they looked for al good, but the nature of the gouernment,
should be no way apt to decline to Tyrany.

CHAP. 9.

1 *The two brothers escape to the shore of Pontus.* 2 *Inconstancy,*
3 *and enuie purtraied in the King & his Counsellor.* 4 *The*
5 *aduancement & ouerthrow by them of those two brothers.*
6 *The cruelties of*
7 *two reuengefull Gyants, and their death by the Princes,*
8 *Their honours, and their honourable mindes.*



His dooing set foorth no lesse his magnifice[n]ce, then the other act did
his magnanimitie: so that greatly
praysed of al, and iustly beloued of the newe King, who in all both 1
wordes and behaiour protested him selfe their Tenaunt, or
Liegeman, they were drawne thence to reuenge those two serua[n]ts of

theirs, of whose memorable faith, I told you (most excelle[n]t Princesse) in willingly giuing themselues to be drowned for their sakes: but drowned indeed they were not, but gat with painefull swimming vpon a rocke: fro[m] whence (after being come as neere famishing, as before drowning) the weather breaking vp, they were brought to the maine lande of *Pontus*; the same cou[n]try vpon which Musidorus also was fallen, but not in so luckie a place.

For they were brought to the King of that country, a Tyrant also, not thorow suspition, greedines, or vnreue[n]gefulness, as he of *Phrygia*, but (as I may terme it) of a wanton crueltie: inconstant of his choise of friends, or rather neuer hauing a frie[n]d, but a playfellow; of whom when he was wearie, he could not otherwise rid himself, the[n] by killing the[m]: giuing somtimes prodigally, not because he loued them to whom he gaue, but because he lusted to giue: punishing, not so much for hate or anger, as because he felt not the smart of punishment: delighted to be flattered, at first for those vertues which were not in him, at length making his vices vertues worthy the flattering: with like iudgement glorying, when he had happened to do a thing well, as when he had performed some notable mischiefe.

He chau[n]ced at that time (for indeed long time none lasted with him) to haue next in vse about him, a ma[n] of the most enuious dispositio[n], that (I think) euer infected the aire with his breath: whose eies could not looke right vpon any happie ma[n], nor eares beare the burthen of any bodies praise: co[n]trary to the natures of al other plagues, plagued with others well being; making happines the ground of his vnhappinesse, & good newes the argume[n]t of his sorrow: in sum, a man whose fauour no man could winne, but by being miserable.

And so, because these two faithfull seruants of theirs came in miserable sorte to that Courte, he was apte inough at first to fauour them; and the King vnderstanding of their aduenture, (wherein they had shewed so constant a faith vnto their Lordes) suddainly falles to take a pride in making much of them, extolling them with infinite prayses, and praying him selfe in his harte, in that he prayed them. And by and by were they made great courtiers, and in the way of minions, when aduancement (the most mortall offence to enuy) stirred vp their former friend, to ouerthrow his owne worke in them; taking occasion vpon the knowledge (newly come to the court) of the late King of *Phrygia* destroyed by their two Lordes, who hauing bene a neere kinsman to this Prince of *Pontus*, by this enuious Coucellour, partly with suspition of practise, partly with glory of in-part reue[n]ging his cousins death, the King was suddainly turned, (and euery turne with him was a downe-fall) to locke them vp in prison, as seruaunts to his enimies, whom before he had neuer knowne, nor (til that time one of his own subiects had entertained and dealt for them) did euer take heed of. But now earnest in euery present humour, and making himselfe braue in his liking, he was content to giue them iust cause of offence, when they had power to make iust reuenge. Yet did the Princes send vnto him before they entred into war, desiring their seruants

liberty. But he swelling in thier hu[m]blenes, (like a bubble swollen vp with a small breath, broken with a great) forgetting, or neuer knowing humanitie, caused their heads to be striken off, by the aduice of his enuious Councillor (who now hated them so much the more, as he foresaw the happines in hauing such, and so fortunate masters) and sent them with vnroyall reproches to *Musidorus* and *Pyrocles*, as if they had done traiterously, and not heroically in killing his tyrannicall Cosen.

But that iniurie went beyond al degree of reconcilement; so that they making forces in *Phrygia* (a kingdome wholly at their commandement, by the loue of the people, and gratefulnesse of the King) 5 they entred his country; and wholly conquering it (with such deeds as at least Fame said were excellent) tooke the King; and by *Musidorus* commaundement (*Pyrocles* hart more enclined to pitie) he was slaine vpon the tombe of their two true Seruants; which they caused to be made for them with royall expences, and notable workmanship to preserue their deade liues. For his wicked Seruant he should haue felt the like, or worse, but that his harte brake euen to death with the beholding the honour done to the deade carcasses? There might *Pyrocles* quietly haue enjoyed that crowne, by all the desire of that people, most of whom had reuolted vnto him: but he, finding a sister of the late Kings (a faire and well esteemed Ladie) looking for nothing more, then to be oppressed with her brothers ruines, gaue her in marriage to the noble man his fathers old friend, and endowed them with the crowne of that kingdome. And not content with those publike actions, of princely, and (as it were) gouerning vertue, they did (in that kingdome and some other neere about) diuers afts of particular trials, more famous, because more perilous. For in that time those regions were full both of cruell monsters, & monstrous men: all which in short time by priuate combats they deliuered the countries of.

Among the rest, two brothers of huge both greatnesse & force, therefore commonly called giants, who kept the[m]selues in a castle seated vpon the top of a rocke, impregnable, because 6 there was no comming vnto it, but by one narrow path, where one mans force was able to keepe downe an armie. These brothers had a while serued the King of *Pontus*, and in all his affaires (especially of war, wherunto they were onely apt) they had shewed, as vnco[n]quered courage, so a rude faithfulness: being men indeed by nature apter to the faults of rage, then of deceit; not greatly ambitious, more then to be well and vprihtly dealt with; rather impatient of iniury, then delighted with more then ordinary curtesies; and in iniuries more sensible of smart or losse, then of reproch or disgrace. These men being of this nature (and certainly iewels to a wise man, considering what indeed wonders they were able to performe) yet were discarded by that vnworthy Prince, after many notable deserts, as not worthy the holding. Which was the more eident to them; because it sodainly fell from an excesse of fauor, which (many examples hauing taught them) neuer stopt his race till it came to an headlong ouerthrow: they full of rage, retyred themselues vnto this castle. Where thinking

nothing iuster the[n] reuenge, nor more noble then the effects of anger, that (according to the nature) ful of inward brauery and fiercenes, scarcely in the glasse of Reason, thinking it self faire, but when it is terrible, they immediately gaue themselues to make all the countrie about them (subiect to that King) to smart for their Lords folly: not caring how innocent they were, but rather thinking the more innocent they were, the more it testified their spite, which they desired to manifest. And with vse of euill, growing more and more euill, they tooke delight in slaughter, and pleasing themselues in making others wracke the effect of their power: so that where in the time that they obeyed a master, their anger was a seruiceable power of the minde to doo publike good; so now vnbridled, and blinde iudge of it selfe, it made wickednesse violent, and praised it selfe in excellencie of mischiefe; almost to the ruine of the countrie, not greatly regarded by their carelesse and louelesse king. Till now these Princes finding them so fleshed in crueltie, as not to be reclaimed, secretly vndertooke the matter alone: for accompanied they would not haue suffered them to haue mounted; and so those great fellowes scornefully receiuing them, as foolish birds falne into their net, it pleased the eternall iustice to make the suffer death by their hands: So as they were manifoldly acknowledged the sauers of that countrie.

It were the part of a verie idle Orator to set forth the numbers of wel-deuised honors done vnto them: But as high honor is not onely gotten and borne by paine, and daunger, but must be nurst by the like, 7 or els vanisheth as soone as it appears to the world; so the naturall hunger thereof (which was in *Pyrocles*) suffered him not to account a resting seate of that, which euer either riseth, or falleth, but still to make one action beget another; whereby his doings might send his praise to others mouthes to rebound againe true contentment to his spirite. And therefore hauing well established those kingdomes, vnder good gouernours, and rid them by their valure of such giants and monsters, as before time armies were not able to subdue, they determined in vnknowne order to see more of the world, & to imploy those gifts esteemed rare in them, to the good of mankinde; and therefore would themselues (vnderstanding that the King *Euarchus* was passed all the cumber of his warres) goe priuately to seeke exercises of their vertue; thinking it not so worthy, to be brought to heroycall effects by fortune, or necessitie (like *Ulysses* and *Aeneas*) as by ones owne choice, and working. And so went they away from verie vnwilling people to leaue them, making time haste it selfe to be a circumstance of their honour, and one place witnesse to another of the truth of their doings. For scarcely were they out of the co[n]fines of *Pontus*, but that as they ridde alone armed, (for alone they went, one seruing the other) they mette an aduventure; which though not so notable for any great effect they perfourmed, yet worthy to be remembered for the vnused examples therein, as well of true natural goodnes, as of wretched vngratefulnesse.

CHAP. 10.

1 *The pitifull state, and storie of the Paph[la]gonian vnkinde King, and his kind sonne, 2 first related by the son, 3 then by the blind father. 4 The three Princes assaulted by Plexirtus and his traine: 5 assisted by their King of Pontus and his troupes. 6 Plexirtus succoured and sauued by two brothers, that vertuously loued a most vicious man. 7 Beseeged by the new King, 8 he submitteth, & is pardoned. 9 The two Princes depart to aide the Queene of Lycia.*



T was in the kingdome of *Galacia*, the season being (as in the depth of winter) very cold, and as then sodainely growne to so extreame and foule a storme, that neuer any winter (I thinke) brought foorth a fowler child: so that the Princes were euen compelled by the haile, that the pride of the winde blew into their faces, to seeke some shrowding place within a certaine hollow rocke offering it vnto them, they made it their shield against the tempests furie. And so staying there, till the violence thereof was passed, they heard the speach of a couple, who not perceiuing them (being hidde within that rude canapy) helde a straunge and pitifull disputation which made them steppe out; yet in such sort, as they might see vnseene. There they perceaued an aged man, and a young, scarcely come to the age of a man, both poorely arayed, extremely weather-beaten; the olde man blinde, the young man leading him: and yet through all those miseries, in both these seemed to appeare a kind of noblenesse, not sutable to that affliction. But the first words they heard, were these of the old man. Well *Leonatus* (said he) since I cannot perswade thee to lead me to that which should end my grieffe, & thy trouble, let me now entreat thee to leaue me: feare not, my miserie cannot be greater then it is, & nothing doth become me but miserie; feare not the danger of my blind steps, I cannot fall worse then I am. And doo not I pray thee, doo not obstinately continue to infect thee with my wretchednes. But flie, flie from this region, onely worthy of me. Deare father (answered he) doo not take away from me the onely remnant of my happinesse: while I haue power to doo you seruice, I am not wholly miserable. Ah my sonne (said he, and with that he groned, as if sorrow straue to breake his harte,) how euill fits it me to haue such a sonne, and how much doth thy kindnesse vpbraide my wickednesse? These dolefull speeches, and some others to like purpose (well shewing they had not bene borne to the fortune they were in,) moued the Princes to goe out vnto them, and aske the younger what they were? Sirs (answered he, with a good grace, and made the more agreable by a certaine noble kinde of pitiousnes) I see well you are straungers, that know not our miserie so well here knowne, that no man dare know, but that we must

be miserable. In deede our state is such, as though nothing is so needfull vnto vs as pittie, yet nothing is more daungerous vnto vs, then to make our selues so knowne as may stirre pittie. But your presence promiseth, that cruelty shall not ouer-runne hate. And if it did, in truth our state is soncke below the degree of feare.

This old man (whom I leade) was lately rightfull Prince of this countrie of *Paphlagonia*, by the hard-harted vngratefulness of a sonne of his, depriued, not onely of his kingdome (whereof no forraigne forces were euer able to spoyle him) but of his sight, the riches which Nature graunt[s] to the poorest creatures. Whereby, & by other his vnnatural dealings, he hath bin driuen to such griefe, as euen now he would haue had me to haue led him to the toppe of this rocke, thence to cast himselfe headlong to death: and so would haue made me (who receiued my life of him) to be the worker of his destruction. But noble Gentlemen (said he) if either of you haue a father, and feele what duetifull affection is engraffed in a sonnes hart, let me intreate you to conuey this afflicted Prince to some place of rest & securitie. Amongst your worthie actes it shall be none of the least, that a King, of such might and fame, and so vniustly oppressed, is in any sort by you relieued.

But before they could make him answer, his father began to speake, Ah my sonne (said he) how euill an Historian are you, that leaue out the chiefe knotte of all the discourse? my wickednes, my wickednes. And if thou doest it to spare my eares, (the onely sense nowe left me proper for knowledge) assure thy selfe thou dost mistake me. And I take witness of that Sunne which you see (with that he cast vp his blinde eyes, as if he would hunt for light,) and wish my selfe in worse case then I do wish my selfe, which is as euill as may be, if I speake vntruely; that nothing is so welcome to my thoughts, as the publishing of my shame. Therefore know you Gentlemen (to whom from my harte I wish that it may not proue ominous foretoke[n] of misfortune to haue mette with such a miser as I am) that whatsoever my sonne (ô God, that trueth binds me to reproch him with the name of my sonne) hath said, is true. But besides those truthes, this also is true, that hauing had in lawful manage, of a mother fitte to beare royall children, this sonne (such one as partly you see, and better shall knowe by my shorte declaration) and so enjoyed the expectations in the world of him, till he was growe[n] to iustifie their expectations (so as I needed enuie no father for the chiefe comfort of mortalitie, to leaue an other ones-selfe after me) I was caried by a bastarde sonne of mine (if at least I be bounde to beleue the words of that base woman my concubine, his mother) first to mislike, then to hate, lastly to destroy, to doo my best to destroy, this sonne (I thinke you thinke) vnderdeseruing destruction. What waies he vsed to bring me to it, if I should tell you, I should tediously trouble you with as much poysonous hypocrisie, desperate fraude, smoothe malice, hidden ambition, & smiling enuie, as in any liuing person could be harbored. But I list it not, no remembrance, (no, of naughtines) delights me, but mine own; & me thinks, the accusing his traines

might in some manner excuse my fault, which certainly I loth to doo. But the conclusion is, that I gaue order to some seruants of mine, whom I thought as apte for such charities as my selfe, to leade him out into a forrest, & there to kill him.

But those theeues (better natured to my sonne then my selfe) spared his life, letting him goe, to learne to liue poorely: which he did, giuing himselfe to be a priuate souldier, in a countrie here by. But as he was redy to be greatly aduanced for some noble peeces of seruice which he did, he hearde newes of me: who (dronke in my affection to that vnlawfull and vnnaturall sonne of mine) suffered my self so to be gouerned by him, that all fauors and punishments passed by him, all offices, and places of importance, distributed to his fauourites; so that ere I was aware, I had left my self nothing but the name of a King: which he shortly wearie of too, with many indignities (if any thing may be called an indignity, which was laid vpon me) threw me out of my seat, and put out my eies; and then (proud in his tyrannie) let me goe, nether imprisoning, nor killing me: but rather delighting to make me feele my miserie; miserie indeed, if euer there were any; full of wretchednes, fuller of disgrace, and fullest of guiltines. And as he came to the crowne by so vniust meanes, as vniustlie he kept it, by force of stranger souldiers in *Cittadels*, the nestes of tyranny, & murderers of libertie; disarming all his own countrimen, that no man durst shew himself a well-willer of mine: to say the trueth (I think) few of the being so (considering my cruell follie to my good sonne, and foolish kindnes to my vnkinde bastard:) but if there were any who fell to pitie of so great a fall, and had yet any sparkes of vnstained duety lefte in them towards me, yet durst they not shewe it, scarcely with giuing me almes at their doores; which yet was the onelie sustenance of my distressed life, no bodie daring to shewe so much charitie, as to lende me a hande to guide my darke steppes: Till this sonne of mine (God knowes, woorthie of a more vertuous, and more fortunate father) forgetting my abhominable wrongs, not recking danger, & neglecting the present good way he was in doing himselfe good, came hether to doo this kind office you see him performe towards me, to my vnspeakable grieve; not onely because his kindnes is a glasse eue[n]to my blind eyes, of my naughtines, but that about all griefes, it greeues me he should desperatly aduenture the losse of his soul-deseruing life for mine, that yet owe more to fortune for my deserts, as if he would cary mudde in a chest of christall. For well I know, he that now raigneth, how much soeuer (and with good reason) he despiseth me, of all men despised; yet he will not let slippe any aduantage to make away him, whose iust title (ennobled by courage and goodnes) may one day shake the seate of a neuer secure tyrannie. And for this cause I craued of him to leade me to the toppe of this rocke, indeede I must confesse, with meaning to free him from so Serpentine a companion as I am. But he finding what I purposed, onely therein since he was borne, shewed himselfe disobedient vnto me. And now Gentlemen, you haue the true storie, which I pray you publish to the world, that my mischieuous proceedinges may be the glorie of his filiall pietie, the onely reward now left for so great a merite. And if it may be, let me obtaine that of you, which my sonne

denies me: for neuer was there more pity in sauving any, then in ending me; both because therein my agonies shall ende, and so shall you preserue this excellent young man, who els wilfully folowes his owne ruine.

The matter in it self lamentable, lamentably expressed by the old Prince (which needed not take to himselfe the gestures of pitie, since his face could not put of the markes thereof) greatly moued the two Princes to compassion, which could not stay in such harts as theirs without seeking remedie. But by and by the occasion was presented: for *Plexirtus* (so was the bastard called) came thether with fortie horse, onely of purpose to murder this brother; of whose comming he had soone aduertisement, and thought no eyes of sufiicient credite in such a matter, but his owne; and therefore came him selfe to be actor, and spectator. And as soone as he came, not regarding the weake (as he thought) garde of but two men, commaunded some of his followers to set their handes to his, in the killing of *Leonatus*. But the young Prince (though not otherwise armed but with a sworde) how falsely soeuer he was dealt with by others, would not betray him selfe: but brauely drawing it out, made the death of the first that assaulted him, warne his fellowes to come more warily after him. But then *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus* were quickly become parties (so iust a defence deseruing as much as old friendship) and so did behaue them among that co[m]panie (more iniurious, then valiant) that many of them lost their liues for their wicked maister.

Yet perhaps had the number of them at last preuailed, if the King of *Pontus* (lately by them made so) had not come vnlooked for to their succour. Who (hauing had a dreame which had fixt his imagination vehemently vpon some great daunger, presently to follow those two Princes whom he most deerely loued) was come in all hast, following as well as he could their tracke with a hundreth horses in that countrie, which he thought (considering who then raigned) a fit place inough to make the stage of any Tragedie.

But then the match had ben so ill made for *Plexirtus*, that his ill-led life, & worse gotten honour should haue tumbled together to destructio[n]; had there not come in *Tydeus* & *Telenor*, with fortie or fiftie in their suit, to the defence of *Plexirtus*. These two were brothers, of the noblest house of that country, brought vp fro[m] their infancie with *Plexirtus*: men of such prowesse, as not to know feare in themselues, and yet to teach it others that should deale with them: for they had often made their liues triumph ouer most terrible daungers; neuer dismayed, and euer fortunate; and truely no more settled in their valure, then disposed to goodnesse and iustice, if either they had lighted on a better friend, or could haue learned to make friendship a child, and not the father of vertue. But bringing vp (rather then choise) hauing first knit their minds vnto him, (indeed craftie inough, eyther to hide his faultes, or neuer to shew them, but when they might pay home) they willingly held out the course, rather to

satisfie him, then al the world; and rather to be good friendes, then good men: so as though they did not like the euill he did, yet they liked him that did the euill; and though not councillors of the offence, yet protectors of the offender. Now they hauing heard of this sodaine going out, with so small a company, in a country full of euil-wishing minds toward him (though they knew not the cause) followed him; till they found him in such case as they were to venture their liues, or else he to loose his: which they did with such force of minde and bodie, that truly I may iustly say, *Pyrocles & Musidorus* had neuer till then found any, that could make them so well repeate their hardest lesson in the feates of armes. And briefly so they did, that if they ouercame not; yet were they not ouercome, but caried away that vngratefull maister of theirs to a place of securitie; howsoeuer the Princes laboured to the co[n]trary. But this matter being thus far begun, it became not the consta[n]cie of the Princes so to leaue it; but in all hast making forces both in *Pontus* and *Phrygia*, they had in fewe dayes, lefte him but only that one strong place where he was. For feare hauing bene the onely knot that had fastned his people vnto him, that once vntied by a greater force, they all scattered from him; like so many birdes, whose cage had bene broken.

In which season the blind King (hauing in the chief cittie of his Realme, set the crowne vpo[n] his sonne *Leonatus* head) with many teares (both of ioy and sorrow) setting forth to the whole people, his owne fault & his sonnes vertue, after he had kist him, and forst his sonne to accept honour of him (as of his newe-become subiect) eue[n] in a moment died, as it should seeme: his hart broken with vnkindnes & affliction, stretched so farre beyond his limits with this excesse of co[m]fort, as it was able no longer to keep safe his roial spirits. But the new King (hauing no lesse louingly performed all duties to him dead, then aliue) pursued on the siege of his vnnatural brother, asmuch for the reuenge of his father, as for the establishing of his owne quiet. In which siege truly I cannot but acknowledge the prowesse of those two brothers, then whom the Princes neuer found in all their trauell two men of greater habilitie to performe, nor of habler skill for conduct.

But *Plexirtus* finding, that if nothing els, famin would at last bring him to destructio[n], thought better by hu[m]blenes to creepe, where by pride he could not march. For certainly so had nature formed him, & the exercise of craft conformed him to all turnings of sleights, that though no ma[n] had lesse goodnes in his soule then he, no man could better find the places whence argume[n]ts might grow of goodnesse to another: though no man felt lesse pitie, no man could tel better how to stir pitie: no ma[n] more impude[n]t to deny, where proofes were not manifest; no man more ready to confesse with a repenting maner of aggrauating his owne euil, where denial would but make the fault fowler. Now he tooke this way, that hauing gotten a passport for one (that pretended he would put *Plexirtus* aliue into his hads) to speak with the King his brother, he him selfe

(though much against the minds of the valiant brothers, who rather wished to die in braue defence) with a rope about his necke, barefooted, came to offer himselfe to the discretion of *Leonatus*. Where what submission he vsed, how cunningly in making greater the faulte he made the faultines the lesse, how artificially he could set out the torments of his owne co[n]science, with the burdensome comber he had found of his ambitious desires, how finely seeming to desire nothing but death, as ashamed to liue, he begd life, in the refusing it, I am not cunning inough to be able to expresse: but so fell out of it, that though at first sight *Leonatus* saw him with no other eie, then as the murderer of his father; & anger already began to paint reuenge in many colours, ere long he had not only gotten pitie, but pardon, and if not an excuse of the fault past, yet an opinion of a future amedment: while the poore villaines (chiefe ministers of his wickednes, now betrayed by the author therof,) were deliuered to many cruell sorts of death; he so handling it, that it rather seemed, he had rather come into the defence of an vnremediabie mischiefe already co[m]mitted, then that they had done it at first by his consent.

In such sort the Princes left these reco[n]ciled brothers (*Plexirtus* in all his behaiour carying him in far lower degree of seruice, then the euer-noble nature of *Leonatus* would suffer him) & taking likewise their leaues of their good friend the King of *Pontus* (who returned to enioy their benefite, both of his wife and kingdome) they priuately went thence, hauing onely with them the two valiant brothers, who would needs accompanie them, through diuers places; they foure dooing actes more daungerous, though lesse famous, because they were but priuat chiuallries: till hearing of the faire and vertuous Queene *Erona* of *Lycia*, besieged by the puissant King of *Armenia*, they bent themselues to her succour, both because the weaker (& weaker as being a Ladie,) & partly because they heard the King of *Armenia* had in his company three of the most famous men liuing, for matters of armes, that were knowne to be in the worlde. Whereof one was the Prince *Plangus*, (whose name was sweetened by your breath, peerlesse Ladie, when the last daie it pleased you to mention him vnto me) the other two were two great Princes (though holding of him) *Barzanes* and *Euardes*, men of Giant-like both hugenes and force: in which two especially, the trust the King had of victorie, was reposed. And of them, those two brothers *Tydeus* and *Telenor* (sufficient iudges in warlike matters) spake so high commendations, that the two yong Princes had euen a youthfull longing to haue some triall of their vertue. And therefore as soone as they were entred into *Lycia* they ioyned the[m]selues with them that faithfully serued the poore Queene, at that time besieged: and ere long animated in such sort their almost ouerthrowne harts, that they went by force to relieue the towne, though they were deprived of a great part of their strength by the parting of the two brothers, who were sent for in all hast to returne to their old friend and maister, *Plexirtus*: who (willingly hoodwinking themselues from seeing his faultes, and binding themselues to beleue what he said) often abused the vertue of courage to defend his fowle vice of iniustice. But now they were sent for to

aduance a conquest he was about; while *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus* pursued the deliuerie of the Queene *Erona*.

CHAP. 11.

- 1 *Dorus his suite to Pamela interrupted by Mopsas waking.*
2 *The sisters going with Zelmane to wash themselues.*
3 *The pleasantnes of the riuer.* 4 *The pleasure Zelmane had in seeing them, vttered* 5 *in speach,* 6 *and song.* 7 *She led by a spaniel, to know, and hurte her noble riuall.* 8 *The parting of that fraye.*



Haue heard (said *Pamela*) that parte of the story of *Plangus* whe[n] he passed through this country: therefore you may (if you list) passe ouer that warre of *Eronaes* quarrell, lest if you speake too much of warre matters, you should wake *Mopsa*, which might happily breed a great broile. He looked, and saw that *Mopsa* indeed sat swallowing of sleepe with ope mouth, making such a noise withal, as no bodie could lay the stealing of a nappe to her charge. Whereupon, willing to vse that occasion, he kneeled downe, and with humblehartednesse, & harty earnestnes printed in his graces, Alas (said he) diuine Lady, who haue wrought such miracles in me, as to make a Prince (none of the basest) to thinke all principalities base, in respect of the sheephooke, which may hold him vp in your sight; vouchsafe now at last to heare in direct words my humble sute, while this drago[n] sleepes, that keeps the golden fruite. If in my desire I wish, or in my hopes aspire, or in my imagination faine to my selfe any thing which may be the lest spot to that heauenly vertue, which shines in all your doings; I pray the eternal powers, that the words I speak may be deadly poysons, while they are in my mouth, and that all my hopes, all my desires, all my imaginations, may onely worke their owne confusion. But if loue, loue of you, loue of your vertues, seeke onely that fauour of you, which becommeth that gratefulnes, which can[n]ot misbecome your excellencie, O doo not: He would haue said further, but *Pamela* calling aloud *Mopsa*, she sodainly start vp, staggering, and rubbing her eies, ran first out of the doore, and then backe to them, before she knew how she went out, or why she came in againe: till at length, being fully come to her little selfe, she asked *Pamela*, why she had called her. For nothing (said *Pamela*) but that you might heare some tales of your seruants telling: and therefore now (said she) *Dorus* go on.

But as he (who found no so good sacrifice, as obedience) was returning to the story of himselfe, *Philoclea* came in, &

by and by after her, *Miso*; so as for that time they were faine to let *Dorus* depart. 2
But *Pamela* (delighted eue[n] to preserue in her memory, the words of so wel a
beloued speaker) repeated the whole substance to her sister, till their sober dinner
being come and gone, to recreate themselues something, (euen tyred with the
noysomnes of *Misos* conuersation) they deternyed to goe (while the heate of the day
lasted) to bath themselues (such being the maner of the *Arcadian* nymphes often to
doo) in the riuer of *Ladon*, and take with them a Lute, meaning to delight them vnder
some shadow. But they could not stir, but that *Miso* with her daughter *Mopsa* was
after them: and as it lay in their way to passe by the other lodge, *Zelmane* out of her
window espied them, and so stale downe after them: which she might the better doo
because that *Gynecia* was sicke, and *Basilius* (that day being his birth-day) according
to his maner, was busie about his deuotions; and therefore she went after, hoping to
finde some time to speake with *Philoclea*: but not a word could she beginne, but
that *Miso* would be one of the audience; so that she was driuen to recommend
thinking, speaking, and all, to her eyes, who diligently perfourmed her trust, till they
came to the riuers side; which of all the riuers of *Greece* had the
price for excellent purenesse and sweetenesse, in so much as the verie bathing in 3
it, was accou[n]ted exceeding healthfull. It ranne vpon so fine and delicate a
ground, as one could not easely iudge, whether the Riuer did more wash the grauell,
or the grauell did purifie the Riuer; the Riuer not running forth right, but almost
continually winding, as if the lower streames would returne to their spring, or that the
Riuer had a delight to play with it selfe. The banckes of either side seeming armes of
the louing earth, that faine would embrace it; and the Riuer a wanton nymph which
still would stirre from it: either side of the bancke being fringed with most beautifull
trees, which resisted the sunnes dartes from ouermuch pearcing the naturall coldnes of
the Riuer. There was the
But
among the rest a goodly Cypres, who bowing her faire head ouer the water, it seemed
she looked into it, and dressed her greene lockes, by that running Riuer. There the
Princesses determining to bath themselues, though it was so priuiledged a place, vpon
paine of death, as no bodie durst presume to come thither, yet for the more surety,
they looked round about, and could see nothing but a water spaniell, who came downe
the riuer, shewing that he hunted for a duck, & with a snuffling grace, disdainning that
his smelling force coulde not as well preuaile thorow the water, as thorow the aire; &
therefore wayting with his eye, to see whether he could espie the duckes getting vp
againe: but then a little below them failing of his purpose, he got out of the riuer, &
shaking off the water (as great men do their friends, now he had no further cause to
vse it) in-weeded himselfe so, as the Ladies lost the further marking his sportfulnesse:
and inuiting *Zelmane* also to wash her selfe with them, and she excusing her selfe with
hauing taken a late cold, they began by peece-meale to take away the eclipsing of their
apparell.

Zelmane would haue put to her helping hand, but she was taken with such a

quiuering, that she thought it more wisdom to leane her selfe to a tree and looke on, while Miso and Mopsa (like a couple of foreswat melters) were getting the pure siluer of their bodies out of the vre of their garments. But as the rayments went of to receaue kisses of the ground, *Zelmane* enuied the happinesse of all, but of the smocke was euen iealous, and when that was taken away too, and that *Philoclea* remained (for her *Zelmane* onely marked) like a *Dyamond* taken from out the rocke, or rather like the Sun getting from vnder a cloud, and shewing his naked beames to the full vew, then was the beautie too much for a patient sight, the delight too strong for a stayed conceipt: so that *Zelmane* could not choose but runne, to touch, embrace, and kisse her; But conscience made her come to her selfe, & leaue *Philoclea*, who blushing, and withall smiling, making shamefastnesse pleasant, and pleasure shamefast, tenderly moued her feete, vnwonted to feele the naked ground, till the touch of the cold water made a prettie kinde of shrugging come ouer her bodie, like the twinckling of the fairest among the fixed stars. But the Riuer it selfe gaue way vnto her, so that she was streight brest high; which was the deepest that there-about she could be: and when cold *Ladon* had once fully imbraced them, himselfe was no more so cold to those Ladies, but as if his cold complexion had bene heated with loue, so seemed he to play about euery part he could touch.

Ah sweete, now sweetest *Ladon* (said *Zelmane*) why dost thou not stay thy course to haue more full tast of thy happines? But the reason is manifest, the vpper streames make such haste to haue 5 their part of embracing, that the nether (though lothly) must needs giue place vnto them. O happie *Ladon*, within whom she is, vpon whom her beautie fals, thorow whom her eye perceth. O happie *Ladon*, which art now an vnperfect mirror of al perfection, canst thou euer forget the blessednes of this impression? if thou do, then let thy bed be turned from fine grauel, to weeds & mudde; if thou doo, let some vniust niggards make weres to spoile thy beauty; if thou do, let some greater riuer fal into thee, to take away the name of *Ladon*. Oh *Ladon*, happie *Ladon*, rather slide then run by her, lest thou shouldest make her legs slippe from her; and then, O happy *Ladon*, who would then cal thee, but the most cursed *Ladon*? But as the Ladies plaid them in the water, somtimes striking it with their hands, the water (making lines in his face) seemed to smile at such beating, and with twentie bubbles, not to be content to haue the picture of their face in large vpon him, but he would in ech of those bubbles set forth the miniature of them.

But *Zelmane*, whose sight was gaine-said by nothing but the transparent vaile of *Ladon*, (like a chamber where a great fire is kept, though the fire be at one stay, yet with the continuance 6 continually hath his heate encreased) had the coales of her affection so kindled with wonder, and blowne with delight, that nowe all her parts grudged, that her eyes should doo more homage, then they, to the Princesse of them. In somuch that taking vp the Lute, her wit began to be with a diuine furie inspired; her voice would in so

beloued an occasion second her wit; her hands accorded the Lutes musicke to the voice; her panting hart daunced to the musicke; while I thinke her feete did beate the time; while her bodie was the roome where it should be celebrated ; her soule the Queene which shoulde be delighted. And so together went the vtterance and the inuention, that one might iudge, it was *Philocleas* beautie which did speedily write it in her eyes; or the sense thereof, which did word by word endite it in her minde, whereto she (but as an organ) did onely lend vtterance. The song was to this purpose.

*What toong can her perfections tell
In whose each part all pens may dwell?
Her haire fine threeds of finest gould
In curled knots mans thought to hold:
But that her fore-head sayes in me
A whiter beautie you may see.
Whiter indeed ; more white then snow,
Which on cold winters face doth grow.
That doth present those euen browes,
Whose equall line their angles bowes,
Like to the Moone when after chaunge
Her horned head abroad doth raunge:
And arches be to heauenly lids,
Whose winke ech bold attempt forbids.
For the blacke starres those Spheares containe,
The matchlesse paire, euen praise doth staine.
No lampe, whose light by Art is got,
No Sunne, which shines, and seeth not,
Can liken them without all peere,
Saue one as much as other cleere:
Which onely thus vnhappie be,
Because themselues they cannot see.
Her cheekes with kindly claret spred.
Aurora like new out of bed,
Or like the fresh Queene-apples side,
Blushing at sight of Phœbus pride.
Her nose, her chinne pure iuorie weares:
No purer then the pretie eares.
So that therein appeares some blood,
Like wine and milke that mingled stood
In whose Incirclets if ye gaze,
Your eyes may tread a Louers maze.*

*But with such turnes the voice to stray,
No talke vntaught can finde the way.
The tippe no iewell needes to weare:
The tippe is iewell of the eare.*

*But who those ruddie lippes can misse?
Which blessed still themselues doo kisse.
Rubies, Cherries, and Roses new,
In worth, in taste, in perfitte hewe:
Which neuer part but that they showe
Of pretious pearle the double rowe,
The second sweetly-fenced warde,
Pier heau'nly-dewed tongue to garde.
Whence neuer word in vaine did flowe.*

*Faire vnder these doth stately growe,
The handle of this pretious worke,
The neck, in which strange graces lurke.
Such be I thinke the sumptuous towers
Which skill dooth make in Princes bowers.
So good a say inuites the eye,
A little downward to espie,
The liuelie clusters of her brests,
Of Venus babe the wanton nests: Like
pomels round of Marble cleere:
Where azurde veines well mixt appeere.
With dearest tops of porphyrie.*

*Betwixt these two a way doth lie,
A way more worthie beauties fame,
Then that which beares the Milkie name.
This leades into the ioyous field,
Which onely still doth Lillies yeeld:
But Lillies such whose natiue smell
The Indian odours doth excell.
Waste it is calde, for it doth waste
Mens liues, vntill it be imbraste.*

*There may one see, and yet not see
Her ribbes in white all armed be.
More white then Neptunes fomie face,
When strugling rocks he would imbrace.*

*In those delights the wandring thought
Might of each side astray be brought,
But that her nauel doth vnite,*

*In curious circle, busie sight:
A daintie scale of virgin-waxe,
Where nothing but impression lackes.
Her bellie then gladde sight doth fill,
Iustly entitled Cupids hill.
A hill most fitte for such a master,
A spotlesse mine of Alablaster.
Like Alablaster faire and sleeke,
But soft and supple satten like.
In that sweete seate the Boy doth sport:
Loath, I must leaue his chiefe resort.
For such a vse the world hath gotten,
The best things still must be forgotten.*

*Yet neuer shall my song omitte
Thighes, for Ouids song more fitte;
Which flanked with two sugred flankes.
Lift vp their stately swelling bankes;
That Albion diues in whitenes passe:
With hanches smooth as looking glasse.*

*But bow all knees, now of her knees
My tongue doth tell what fancie sees.
The knottes of ioy, the gemmes of loue.
Whose motion makes all graces moue.
Whose bought incau'd doth yeeld such sight,
Like cunning Painter shadowing white.
The gartring place with child-like signe,
Shewes easie print in mettall fine.
But then againe the flesh doth rise
In her braue calues, like christall skies.
Whose Atlas is a smallest small,
More white then whitest bone of all.*

*Thereout steales out that round cleane foott
This noble Cedars pretious roote:
In shewe and sent pale violets,
Whose steppe on earth all beautie sets.
But back vnto her back, my Muse,
Where Ledas swanne his feathers mewes,
Along whose ridge such bones are met,
Like comfits round in marchpane set.*

*Her shoulders be like two white Doues,
Pearching within square royall rooues,*

“
”

*Which leaded are with siluer skinne,
 Passing the hate-sport Ermelin.
 And thence those armes deriued are;
 The Phœnix wings are not so rare
 For faultlesse length, and stainelesse hewe,
 Ah woe is me, my woes renewe;
 Now course doth leade me to her hand,
 Of my first loue the fatall band.
 Where whitenes dooth for euer sitte:
 Nature her selfe enameld it.
 For there with strange compact dooth lie
 Warme snow, moyst pearle, softe iuorie.
 There fall those Saphir-coloured brookes,
 Which conduit-like with curious crookes,
 Sweete Hands make in that sweete land.
 As for the fingers of the hand.
 The bludy shaftes of Cupids warre,
 With amatists they headed are.
 Thus hath each part his beauties part.
 But how the Graces duo impart
 To all her limmes a spetiall grace,
 Becomming euery time and place.
 Which doth euen beautie beautifie,
 And most bewitch the wretched eye.
 How all this is but a faire Inne
 Of fairer gwestes, which dwell within.
 Of whose high praise, and praisefull blisse,
 Goodnes the penne, heauen paper is.
 The inke immortall fame dooth lends:
 As I began, so must I ende.
 No tongue can her perfections tell,
 In whose each part all tongues may dwell.*

But as *Zelmane* was com[m]ing to the latter end of her song, she might see the same water-spaniell which before had hu[n]ted, come and fetch away one of *Philocleas* gloues ; whose fine proportion, shewed well what a daintie guest was wont there to be lodged. It was a delight to *Zelmane*, to see that the dogge was therewith delighted, and so let him goe a little way withall, who quickly caried it out of sight among certaine trees and bushes, which were very close together. But by & by he came againe, & amongst the raiments (*Miso* and *Mopsa* being preparing sheets against their comming out) the dog lighted vpon a little booke of foure or fiue leaues

of paper, & was bearing that away to. But then *Zelmane* (not knowing what importance it might be of) ran after the dog, who going straight to those bushes, she might see the dog deliver it to a Gentleman who secretly lay there. But she hastily coming in, the Gentleman rose up, & with a courteous (though sad) countenance presented himself unto her. *Zelmanes* eyes straight willed her mind to mark him: for she thought, in her life she had neuer seene a man of a more goodly presence, in whom strong making tooke not away delicacie, nor beautie fiercenesse: being indeed such a right manlike man, as Nature often erring, yet shewes she would faine make. But when she had a while (not without admiration) viewed him, she desired him to deliver backe the gloue & paper, because they were the Ladies *Philocleas*; telling him withall, that she would not willingly let the[m] know of his close lying in that prohibited place, while they were bathing the[m]selues; because she knew they would be mortally offended withall. Faire Ladie (answered he) the worst of the complaint is already passed, since I feele of my fault in my self the punishme[n]t. But for these things I assure you, it was my dogs wanton boldnesse, not my presumption. With that he gaue her backe the paper: But for the gloue (said he) since it is my Ladies *Philocleas*, giue me leaue to keepe it, since my hart can[n]ot persuade it selfe to part from it. And I pray you tell the Lady (Lady indeed of all my desires) that owes it, that I will direct: my life to honour this gloue with seruing her. O villain (cried out *Zelmane*, madded with finding an vnlooked-for Riuall, and that he would make her a messenger) dispatch (said she) and deliver it, or by the life of her that owes it, I wil make thy soul (though too base a price) pay for it. And with that drewe out her sworde, which (*Amazon*-like) she euer ware about her. The Gentleman retired himself into an open place fro[m] among the bushes; & the drawing out his too, he offered to deliver it vnto her, saying withall, God forbid I should vse my sworde against you, since (if I be not deceiued) you are the same famous *Amazon*, that both defended my Ladies iust title of beautie against the valiant *Phalantus*, & saued her life in killing the Lion: therefore I am rather to kisse your hands, with acknowledging my selfe bound to obey you. But this courtesie was worse then a bastonado to *Zelmane*: so that againe with ragefull eyes she bad him defend himselfe, for no lesse then his life should answer it. A hard case (said he) to teach my sworde that lesson, which hath euer vsed to turne it selfe to a shield in a Ladies presence. But *Zelmane* harkening to no more wordes, began with such wittie furie to pursue him with blowes & thrusts, that Nature & vertue commanded the Gentleman to looke to his safetie. Yet stil courtesie, that seemed incorporate in his hart, would not be perswaded by daunger to offer any offence, but only to stand vpon the best defensiuie gard he could; sometimes going backe, being content in that respect to take on the figure of cowardise; sometime with strong and well-met wards; sometime cunning auoidings of his body; and sometimes faining some blowes, which himselfe puld backe before they needed to be withstood. And so with play did he a good while fight against the fight of *Zelmane*, who (more spited with that curtesie, that one that did nothing should be able to resist her) burned away with choller any

motions, which might grow out of her owne sweet dispositio[n], determining to kill him if he fought no better; & so redoubling her blowes, draue the stranger to no other shift, then to warde, and go backe; at that time seeming the image of innocencie against violence. But at length he found, that both in publike and priuate respectes, who standes onely vpon defence, stands vpon no defence: For *Zelmane* seeming to strike at his head, and he going to warde it, withall stept backe as he was accustomed, she stopt her blow in the aire, and suddenly turning the point, ranne full at his breast; so as he was driuen with the pommell of his sworde (hauing no other weapon of defence) to beate it downe: but the thrust was so strong, that he could not so wholly beate it awaie, but that it met with his thigh, thorow which it ranne.

But *Zelmane* retiring her sworde, and seeing his bloud, victorious anger was conquered by the before-conquered pittie; and hartily sorie, and euen ashamed with her selfe she was, considering how little he had done, who well she found could haue done more. In so much that she said, truly I am sorie for your hurt, but your selfe gaue the cause, both in refusing to deliuer the gloue, and yet not fighting as I knowe you could haue done. But (saide shee) because I perceauie you disdayne to fight with a woman, it may be before a yeare come about, you shall meete with a neere kinsman of mine, *Pyrocles* Prince of *Macedon*, and I giue you my worde, he for me shall maintaine this quarell against you. I would (answered *Amphialus*) I had many more such hurtes to meete and know that worthy Prince, whose vertue I loue & admire, though my good destiny hath not bene to see his person.

But as they were so speaking, the yong Ladies came, to who[m] Mopsa (curious in any thing, but her own good behauiour) hauing followed & seene *Zelmane* fighting, had cried, what she had seene, while they were drying themselues, & the water (with some drops) seemed to weepe, that it should parte from such bodies. But they carefull of *Zelmane* (assuring themselues that any *Arcadian* would beare reuerence to them) *Pamela* with a noble mind, and *Philoclea* with a louing (hastily hiding the beauties, whereof Nature was prowde, and they ashamed) they made quicke worke to come to saue *Zelmane*. But already they found them in talke, & *Zelmane* careful of his wound. But whe[n] they saw him they knew it was their cousin germain, the famous *Amphialus*; whom yet with a sweete-graced bitternes they blamed for breaking their fathers commaundement, especially while themselues were in such sort retired. But he craued pardon, protesting vnto them that he had onely bene to seeke solitary places, by an extreme melancholy that had a good while possest him, and guided to that place by his spaniell, where while the dog hunted in the riuier, he had withdrawne himselfe to pacifie with sleepe his ouer-watched eyes: till a dreame waked him, and made him see that whereof he had dreamed, & withall not obscurely signified that he felt the smart of his owne doings. But *Philoclea* (that was euen iealous of her self for *Zelmane*) would needs haue her gloue, and not without so mighty a loure as that face could yeeld. As for *Zelmane* when she knew, it was *Amphialus*, Lord *Amphialus* (said she) I haue lo[n]g desired to know you,

heretofore I must confesse with more good will, but still with honoring your vertue, though I loue not your person: & at this time I pray you let vs take care of your wound, vpon co[n]dition you shal hereafter promise, that a more knightly combat shalbe performed betweene vs. *Amphialus* answered in honorable sort, but with such excusing himselfe, that more and more accused his loue to *Philoclea*, & prouoked more hate in *Zelmane*. But *Mopsa* had already called certaine shepheards not far of (who knew & wel obserued their limits) to come and helpe to carrie away *Amphialus*, whose wound suffered him not without daunger to straine it: and so he leauing himselfe with them, departed from them, faster bleeding in his hart, then at his wound: which bound vp by the sheetes, wherwith *Philoclea* had bene wrapped, made him thanke the wound, and blesse the sword for that fauour.

CHAP. 12.

How Basilius found Plangus: 2 His lamentation. 3 Philoclea entreated by Zelmane to relate the storie of Erona.



HE being gone, the Ladies (with mery anger talking, in what naked simplicitie their cousin had seene the[m]) returned to the lodge-ward: yet thinking it too early (as long as they had any day) to breake of so pleasing a company, with going to performe a cu[m]bersome obedience, *Zelmane* inuited them to the little 1
 arbour, only reserued for her, which they willingly did: and there sitting, *Pamela* hauing a while made the lute in his la[n]guage, shew how glad it was to be touched by her fingers, *Zelmane* deliuered vp the paper, which *Amphialus* had at first yeilded vnto her: and seeing written vpon the backside of it, the complaint of *Plangus*, remembring what *Dorus* had told her, and desiring to know how much *Philoclea* knew of her estate, she tooke occasion in the presenting of it, to aske whether it were any secret, or no. No truely (answered *Philoclea*) it is but euen an exercise of my fathers writing, vpon this occasion: He was one day (somwhile before your comming hether) walking abroad, hauing vs two with him, almost a mile hence; and crossing a hie way, which comes from the cittie of *Megalopolis*, he saw this Gentleman, whose name is there written, one of the proprest and best-graced men that euer I sawe, being of middle age, and of a meane stature. He lay as then vnder a tree, while his seruaunts were getting fresh post-horses for him. It might seeme he was tired with the extreme trauaile he had taken, and yet not so tyred, that he forced to take any rest; so hasty he was vpon his iourney: and withall so sorrowfull, that the very face thereof was painted in his face; which with pitifull motions, euen groanes, teares, and passionate talking to him selfe, moued my Father to fall in talke with him: who at first not knowing him, answered him in such a desperate phrase of grieffe, that

my Father afterward tooke a delight to set it downe in such forme as you see: which if you read, what you doubt of, my sister and I are hable to declare vnto you. *Zelmane* willingly opened the leaues, and read it, being written Dialogue-wise in this manner.

Plangus. Basilius.

Alas how long this pilgrimage doth last ?

Plang

*What greater illls haue now the heauens in store,
To couple comming harmes with sorrowes past?
Long since my voice is hoarce, and throte is sore,
With cries to skies, and curses to the ground,
But more I plaine, I feele my woes the more.
Ah where was first that cruell cunning found,
To frame of Earth a vessell of the minde,
Where it should be to selfe-destruction bound?
What needed so high sprites such mansions blind?
Or wrapt in flesh what do they here obtaine,
But glorious name of wretched humaine-kind?
Balles to the starres, and thralles to Fortunes raigne;
Turnd from themselues, infecfed with their cage,
Where death is feard, and life is held with paine.
Like players pla'st to fill a filthy stage,
Where chaunge of thoughts one foole to other shewes.
And all but iests, saue onely sorrowes rage.
The child feesles that; the man that feeling knowes,
With cries first borne, the presage of his life,
Where wit but serues, to haue true tast of woes.
A Shop of shame, a Booke where blots be rife
This bodie is: this bodie so composed,
As in it selfe to nourish mortall strife.
So diuers be the Elements disposed
In this weake worke, that it can neuer be
Made vniforme to any state reposed.
Griefe onely makes his wretched state to see
(Euen like a toppe which nought but whipping moues)
This man, this talking beast, this walking tree.
Griefe is the stone which finest iudgement proues:
For who grieues not hath but a blockish braine,
Since cause of griefe no cause from life remoues.*

Basilus

*How long wilt thou with monefull musicke staine
The cheerefull notes these pleasant places yeeld,
Where all good haps a perfect state maintaine?*

Plangus

*Curst be good haps, and curst be they that build
Their hopes on haps, and do not make despaire
For all these certaine blowes the surest shield.
Shall I that saw Eronaes shining haire
Torne with her hands, and those same hands of snow
With losse of purest blood themselues to teare?
Shall I that saw those brests, where beauties flow,
Swelling with sighes, made pale with mindes disease,
And saw those eyes (those Sonnes) such shoures to shew,
Shall I, whose eares her mournfull words did seaze,
Her words in syrup laid of sweetest breath,
Relent those thoughts, which then did so displease?
No, no: Despaire my dayly lesson saith,
And saith, although I seeke my life to flie,
Plangus must liue to see Eronaes death.
Plangus must liue some helpe for her to trie
Though in despaire, so Loue enforceth me;
Plangus doth liue, and must Erona dye? Erona dye?
O heauen (if heauen there be)
Hath all thy whirling course so small effect?
Serue all thy starrie eyes this shame to see?
Let doltes in haste some altars faire erect
To those high powers, which idly sit aboue,
And vertue do in greatest need neglect.*

Basilus

*O man, take heed, how thou the Gods do moue
To irefull wrath, which thou canst not resist.
Blasphemous words the speaker vaine do proue.
Alas while we are wrapt in foggie mist
Of our selfe-loue (so passions do deceaue)
We thinke they hurt, when most they do assist.
To harme vs wormes should that high iustice leaue
His nature? nay, himselfe? for so it is.
What glorie from our losse can he receaue?
But still our dazeled eyes their way do misse,*

*While that we do at his sweete scourge repine,
The kindly way to beate vs to our blisse.
If she must dye, then hath she past the line
Of lothsome dayes, whose losse how canst thou mone,
That doost so well their miseries define?
But such we are with inward tempest blowne
Of mindes quite contrarie in waues of will:
We mone that lost, which had we did bemone.*

Plan

*And shall shee dye? shall cruell fier spill
Those beames that set so many harts on fire?
Hath she not force euen death with loue to kill?
Nay euen cold Death enflamde with hot desire
Her to enioy, where ioy it selfe is thrall.
Will spoils the earth of his most rich attire.
Thus Death becomes a riuall to vs all,
And hopes with foule embracements her to get,
In whose decay vertues faire shrine must fall.
O Virtue weake, shall death his triumph set
Vpon thy spoiles, which neuer should lye waste?
Let Death first dye; be thou his worthy let.
By what eclipse shall that Sonne be defaste?
What myne hath erst throwne downe so faire a tower?
What sacriledge hath such a saint disgra'st?
The world the garden is, she is the flower
That sweetens all the place; she is the guest
Of rarest price, both heau'n and earth her bower.
And shall (ô me) all this in ashes rest ?
Alas, if you a Phœnix new will haue
Burnt by the Sunne, she first must build her nest.
But well you know, the gentle Sunne would saue
Such beames so like his owne, which might haue might
In him, the thoughts of Phëtons damme to graue.
Therefore, alas, you vse vile Vulcans spight,
Which nothing spares, to melt that Virgin-waxe
Which while it is, it is all Asias light.
O Mars, for what doth serue thy armed axe?
To let that wit-old beast consume in flame
Thy Venus child, whose beautie Venus lackes?
O Venus (if her praise no enuy frames,*

*In thy high rinde) get her thy husbands grace.
Sweete speaking oft a currish hart reclaimes.
O eyes of mine, where once she saw her face,
Her face which was more liuely in my hart;
O braine, where thought of her hath onely place ;
O hand, which toucht her hand when she did part;
O lippes, that kist her hand with my teares sprent;
O toonge, then dumbe, not daring tell my smart;
O soule, whose loue in her is onely spent,
What ere you see, thinke, touch, kisse, speake, or loue,
Let all for her, and vnto her be bent.*

Basilus.

*Thy wailing words do much my spirits moue,
They vtred are in such a feeling fashion,
That sorrowes worke against my will I proue.
Me-thinkes I am partaker of thy passion,
And in thy case do glasse mine owne debilitie:
Selfe-guiltie folke most prone to feele compassion.
Yet Reason saith, Reason should haue abilitie,
To hold these worldly things in such proportion,
As let them come or go with euen facilitie.
But our Desires tyrannicall extortion
Doth force vs there to set our chiefe delightfulness,
Where but a baiting place is all our portion.
But still, although we faile of perfect rightfulness,
Seeke we to tame the childish superfluities:
Let vs not winke though void of purest sightfulness.
For what can breed more peeuish incongruities,
Then man to yeeld to female lamentations?
Let vs some grammar learne of more congruities.*

Plangus

*If through mine eares pearce any consolation
By wise discourse, sweete tunes, or Poets fiction;
If ought I cease these hideous exclamations,
While that my soule, she, she liues in affliction;
Then let my life long time on earth maintained be,
To wretched me, the last worst malediction.
Can I, that know her sacred parts restrained be,*

*For any ioy, know fortunes vile displacing her,
In morall rules let raging woes contained be?
Can I forget, when they in prison placing her,
With swelling hart in spite and due disdainfulnes
She lay for dead, till I helpt with vnlasing her ?
Can I forget, from how much mourning plainfulnes
With Diamond in window-glasse she graued,
Erona dye, and end thy ougly painefulnes?
Can I forget in how straunge phrase she craued
That quickly they would her burne, drowne, or smother.
As if by death she onely might be saued?
Then let me eke forget one hand from other:
Let me forget that Plangus I am called:
Let me forget I am sonne to my mother,
But if my memory must thus be thralld
To that strange stroke which conquer'd all my senses,
Can thoughts still thinking so rest vnappalled?*

Basilus.

*Who still doth seeks against himselfe offences,
What pardon can auaille? or who employes him
To hurt himselfe, what shields can be defenses?
Woe to poore man: ech outward thing annoyes him
In diuers kinds; yet as he were not filled,
He heapes in inward grieffe, which most destroyes him.
Thus is our thought with paine for thistles tilled:
Thus be our noblest parts dryed vp with sorrow:
Thus is our mind with too much minding spilled.
One day layes vp stufte of grieffe for the morrow:
And whose good haps do leaue him vnprouided,
Condoling cause of friendship he will borrow.
Betwixt the good and shade of good diuided,
We pittie deeme that which but weakenes is:
So are we from our high creation slided.
But Plangus lest I may your sicknesse misse
Or rubbing hurt the sore, I here doo end.
The asse did hurt when he did thinke to kisse.*

When *Zelmane* had read it ouer, marueyling verie much of the speche of *Eronas* death, and therefore desirous to

know further of it, but more desirous to hear *Philoclea* speake, Most excellent Ladie (said she) one may be little the wiser for reading the Dialogue, since it nether sets forth what this *Plangus* is, nor what *Erona* is, nor what the cause should be which threatens her with death, and him with sorow: therefore I woulde humbly craue to vnderstand the particular discourse thereof: because (I must confesse) some thing in my trauaile I haue heard of this strange matter, which I would be glad to find by so sweet an authoritie confirmed. The trueth is (answered *Philoclea*) that after he knew my father to be Prince of this countrie, while he hoped to preuaile something with him in a great request he made vnto him, he was content to open fully vnto him the estate both of himselfe, and of that Ladie; which with my sisters help (said she) who remembers it better then I, I will declare vnto you: and first of *Erona*, (being the chiefe Subiect of this discourse) this storie (with more teares and exclamations then I liste to spende about it) he recounted.

CHAP. 13.

Erona 1 irreligious gainst Loue, 2 must loue the base Antiphilus, 3 is loued, pursued, and beleaguered by the great Tiridates. 4 The two Greeke Princes ayde her. 5 They combatte with two Kings; Antiphilus with Plangus; they conquerors, he prisoner. 6 Eronas hard-choice to redeeme him. 7 Tiridates slaine, Antiphilus deliuered, Artaxia chased by the two Princes, 8 and her hate to them.



OF late there raigned a King in *Lycia*, who had for the blessing of his manage, this onely daughter of his, *Erona*, a Princesse worthie for her beautie, as much praise, as beautie may be praise-worthy. This Princesse *Erona*, being 19 yeres of age, seeing the countrie of *Lycia* so much deuoted to *Cupid*, as that in euery place his naked pictures & images were superstitiously adored (ether moued theruto, by the esteeming that could be no Godhead, which could breed wickednes, or the shamefast consideration of such nakednes) procured so much of her father, as vtterly to pull downe, and deface all those statues and pictures. Which how terriblie he punished (for to that the *Lycians* impute it) quickly after appeared.

For she had not liued a yeare longer, when she was stricken with most obstinate Loue, to a yong man but of mean parentage, in her fathers court, named *Antiphilus*: so meane, as that he was but the sonne of her Nurse, & by that meanes (without other desert) became knowen of her. Now so euill could she conceale her fire, and so wilfully perseuered she in it, that her father offering her the manage of the great *Tiridates*, king of *Armenia* (who

desired her more then the ioyes of heauen) she for *Antiphilus* sake refused it. Many wayes her father sought to withdrawe her from it; sometimes perswasions, sometimes threatnings; once hiding *Antiphilus*, & giuing her to vnderstand that he was fled the countrie: Lastly, making a solemne execution to be done of another, vnder the name of *Antiphilus*, whom he kept in prison. But nether she liked perswasions, nor feared threatenings, nor changed for absence: and when she thought him dead, she sought all meanes (as well by poyson as by knife) to send her soule, at least, to be maried in the eternall church with him. This so brake the tender fathers hart, that (leauing things as he found them) he shortly after died. Then foorthwith *Erona* (being seized of the crowne, and arming her will with authentic) sought to aduance her affection to the holy title of matrimonie.

But before she could accom[plish] all the sole[mn]ities, she was ouertake[n] with a war the King *Tiridates* made vpon her, only for her person; towards whom (for her ruine) Loue had kindled his cruel hart; indeed cruell & tyrannous: for (being far too stro[n]g in the field) he spared not man, woman, and child, but (as though there could be found no foile to set forth the extremitie of his loue, but extremity of hatred) wrote (as it were) the sonets of his Loue, in the bloud, & tuned the[m] in the cries of her subiects; although his fair sister *Artaxia* (who would accom[pany] him in the army) sought all meanes to appease his fury: till lastly, he besieged *Erona* in her best citie, vowing to winne her, or lose his life. And now had he brought her to the point ether of a wofull consent, or a ruinous deniall; whe[n] there came thether (following the course which vertue & Fortune led the[m]) two excellent you[n]g Princes, *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*, the one Prince of *Macedo[n]*, the other of *Thessalia*: two princes, as *Plangus* said, (and he witnessed his saying with sighes & teares) the most accomplished both in body & mind, that the Sun euer lookt vpon. While *Philoclea* spake those words, O sweete wordes (thought *Zelma* to her self) which are not onely a praise to me, but a praise to praise it selfe, which out of that mouth issueth.

[]These 2. princes (said *Philoclea*) aswel to help the weaker (especially being a Ladie) as to saue a *Greeke* people from being ruined by such, whom we call and count Barbarous, gathering together such of the honestest *Lycians*, as woulde venture their liues to succour their Princesse: giuing order by a secreat message they sent into the Citie, that they should issue with all force at an appointed time; they set vpon *Tiridates* campe, with so well-guided a fiercenes, that being of both sides assaulted, he was like to be ouerthrowen: but that this *Plangus* (being Generall of *Tiridates* hors-men) especially ayded by the two mightie men, *Euardes* and *Barzanes*, rescued the foot-men, euen almost defeated: but yet could not barre the Princes (with their succoures both of men and victuall) to enter the Citie.

Which when *Tiridates* found would make the war long, (which length seemed to him worse then a languishing consumption) he made a challenge of three Princes in

his retinue, against those two Princes and *Antiphilus*: and that thereupon the quarrell should be decided; with compact, that neither side should helpe his fellow: but of whose side the more ouercame, with him the victorie should remaine. *Antiphilus* (though *Erona* chose rather to bide the brunt of warre, then venture him, yet) could not for shame refuse the offer, especially since the two strangers that had no interest in it, did willingly accept it: besides that, he sawe it like enough, that the people (werie of the miseries of war) would rather giue him vp, if they saw him shrinke, then for his sake venture their ruine: considering that the challengers were farre of greater worthinesse then him selfe. So it was agreed vpon; and against *Pyrocles* was *Euardes*, King of *Bithinia*; *Barzanes* of *Hircania*, against *Musidorus*, two men, that thought the world scarce able to resist them: & against *Antiphilus* he placed this same *Plangus*, being his own cousin germain, & sonne to the King of *Iberia*. Now so it fell out that *Musidorus* slewe *Barzanes*, & *Pyrocles Euardes*; which victory those Princes esteemed aboue all that euer they had: but of the other side *Pla[n]gus* tooke *Antiphilus* prisoner: vnder which colour (as if the matter had bene equal, though indeed it was not, the greater part being ouercome of his side) *Tiridates* continued his war: & to bring *Erona* to a co[m]pelled yeelding, sent her word, that he would the third morrow after, before the walles of the towne strike of *Antiphilus* head; without his suite in that space were graunted: adding withall (because he had heard of her desperate affectio[n]) that if in the meane time she did her selfe any hurt, what tortures could be deuised should be layed vpon *Antiphilus*.

Then lo if *Cupid* be a God, or that the tyranny of our own thoughts seeme as a God vnto vs. But whatsoever it was, then it did set fourth the miserableness of his effectes: she being drawne to two contraries by one cause. For the loue of him comaunded her to yeeld to no other: the loue of him comaunded him to preserue his life: which knot might well be cut, but vntied it could not be. So that Loue in her passions (like a right makebate) whispered to both sides arguments of quarrell. What (said he of the one side) doost thou loue *Antiphilus*, ô *Erona*, and shal *Tiridates* enioy thy bodie? with what eyes wilt thou looke vpon *Antiphilus*, when he shall know that another possesseth thee? But if thou wilt do it, canst thou do it? canst thou force thy hart? Thinke with thy selfe, if this man haue thee, thou shalt neuer haue more part of *Antiphilus* the[n] if he were dead. But thus much more, that the affectio[n] shalbe gnawing, & the remorse still present. Death perhaps will coole the rage of thy affection: where thus, thou shalt euer loue, and euer lacke. Thinke this beside, if thou marrie *Tiridates*, *Antiphilus* is so excellent a man, that long he cannot be from being in some high place married: canst thou suffer that too? If an other kill him, he doth him the wrong: if thou abuse thy body, thou doost him the wrong. His death is a worke of nature, and either now, or at another time he shall die. But it shalbe thy worke, thy shamefull worke, which is in thy power to shun, to make him liue to see thy faith falsified, and his bed defiled. But when Loue

had well kindled that parte of her thoughts, then went he to the other side. What (said he) O *Erona*, and is thy Loue of *Antiphilus* come to that point, as thou doost now make it a question, whether he shall die, or no ? O excellent affection, which for too much loue, will see his head of. Marke well the reasons of the other side, and thou shalt see, it is but loue of thy selfe which so disputeth. Thou canst not abide *Tiridates*: this is but loue of thy selfe: thou shalt be ashamed to looke vpo[n] him afterward; this is but feare of shame, & loue of thy selfe: thou shalt want him as much then; this is but loue of thy selfe: he shalbe married ; if he be well, why should that grieue thee, but for loue of thy selfe? No, no, pronounce these wordes if thou canst, let *Antiphilus* die. Then the images of each side stood before her vnderstanding; one time she thought she saw *Antiphilus* dying: an other time she thought *Antiphilus* saw her by *Tiridates* enioyed: twenty times calling for a seruaunt to carry message of yeelding, but before he came the minde was altered. She blusht when she considered the effect of granting, she was pale, whe[n] she reme[m]bred the fruits of denial. As for weeping, sighing, wringing her ha[n]ds, & tearing her haire, were indiffere[n]t of both sides. Easily she wold haue agreed to haue broken al disputatio[n]s with her owne death, but that the feare of *Antiphilus* funder torments staid her. At levgth, eue[n] the eueing before the day apointed of his death, the determinatio[n] of yeelding preuailed, especially, growing vpo[n] a message of *Antiphilus*; who with all the coniuring termes he could devise, besought her to saue his life, vpon any co[n]dition. But she had no sooner sent her messenger to *Tiridates*, but her mind changed, and she went to the two yong Princes, *Pyrocles & Musidorus*, & falling downe at their feet, desired the[m] to trie some way for her deliuerance; shewing her selfe resolued, not to ouer-liue *Antiphilus*, nor yet to yeeld to *Tiridates*.

They that knew not what she had done in priuate, prepared that night accordingly: & as sometimes it fals out, that what is inco[n]stancy, seemes cu[n]ning; so did this cha[n]ge indeed stand in as good 7
steed as a witty dissimulatio[n]. For it made the King as reckles, as them dilige[n]t: so that in the dead time of the night, the Princes issued out of the towne, with who[m] she would needs go, either to die her self, or reskew *Antiphilus*, hauing no armour, nor weapon, but affection. And I cannot tell you how, by what devise (though *Plangus* at large described it) the conclusion 8
was, the wonderfull valour of the two Princes so preuailed, that *Antiphilus* was succoured, and the King slaine. *Plangus* was then the chiefe man left in the campe; and therefore seeing no other remedie, co[n]ueied in safety into her country *Artaxia*, now Queene of *Armenia*; who with true lame[n]tations, made known to the world, that her new greatnes did no way co[m]fort her in respect of her brothers losse, who she studied all meanes possible to reuenge vpon euery one of the occasioners, hauing (as she thought) ouerthrowne her brother by a most abominable treason. In somuch, that being at home, she proclaimed great rewards to any priuate man, and her selfe in mariage to any Prince, that would

destroy *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*. But thus was *Antiphilus* redeemed, and (though against the consent of all her nobility) married to *Erona*; in which case the two Greeke Princes (being called away by an other aduenture) left them.

CHAP. 14.

1 *Philocleas narration broken of by Miso.* 2 *Her old-wiues tale,* 3 *and ballad against Cupid.* 4 *Their drawing cuts for tales.* 5 *Mopsas tale of the old cut:* 6 *cut of by the Ladies to returne to their stories.*



Vt now me thinkes as I haue read some *Poets*, who when I they inte[n]d to tell some horrible matter, they bid men shun the hearing of it: so if I do not desire you to stop your eares fro[m] me, yet may I well desire a breathing time, before I am to tell the execrable treason of *Antiphilus*, that brought her to this misery; and withall wish you al, that fro[m] al mankind indeed you stop your eares. O most happy were we, if we did set our loues one vpon another. (And as she spake that worde, her cheekes in red letters writ more, then her tongue did speake.) And therefore since I haue named *Plangus*, I pray you sister (said she) helpe me with the rest, for I haue helde the stage long inough; and if it please you to make his fortune knowne, as I haue done *Eronas*, I will after take hart againe to go on with his falshood; & so betweene vs both, my Ladie *Zelmane* shall vnderstand both the cause and parties of this Lamentation. Nay I beshrow me then (said *Miso*) I wil none of that, I promise you, as lo[n]g as I haue the gouernme[n]t, I will first haue my tale, & the[n] my Lady Pamela, my Lady *Zelmane*, & my daughter *Mopsa* (for *Mopsa* was then returned fro[m] *Amphialus*) may draw cuts, & the shortest cut speake first. For I tell you, and this may be suffred, when you are married you wil haue first, and last word of your husbands. The Ladies laughed to see with what an eger earnestnesse she looked, hauing threatning not onely in her Ferret eies, but while she spake, her nose seeming to threaten her chin, & her shaking lims one to threaten another. But there was no remedy, they must obey: & *Miso* (sitting on the grou[n]d with her knees vp, & her hands vpon her knees) tuning her voice with many a quauering cough, thus discoursed vnto the[m]. I tel you true (said she) whatsoever you thinke of me, you will one day be as I am; & I, simple though I sit here, thought once my pennie as good siluer, as some of you do: and if my father had not plaid the hasty foole (it is no lie I tell you) I might haue had an other-gaines husba[n]d, the[n] *Dametas*. But let that passe, God amend him: and yet I speake it not without good cause. You are ful of your tittle tattling of *Cupid*: here is *Cupid*, & there is *Cupid*. I will tell you now, what a good old woma[n] told me,

what an old wise ma[n] told her, what a great learned clerke told him, and gaue it him in writing; and here I haue it in my praier booke. I pray you (said *Philoclea*) let vs see it, & read it. No hast but good (said *Miso*) you shal first know how I came by it. I was a young girle of a seuen and twenty yeare old, & I could not go thorow the streete of our village, but I might heare the young me[n] talke; O the pretie little eies of *Miso*; O the fine thin lips of *Miso*; O the goodly fat hands of *Miso*: besides, how well a certaine wrying I had of my necke, became me. Then the one would wincke with one eye, & the other cast daises at me: I must co[n]fesse, seing so many amorous, it made me set vp my peacocks tayle with the hiest. Which when this good old woma[n] perceiued (O the good wold woman, well may the bones rest of the good wold woma[n]) she cald me to her into her house. I remember full well it stood in the lane as you go to the Barbers shop, all the towne knew her, there was a great losse of her: she called me to her, and taking first a soppe of wine to comfort her hart (it was of the same wine that comes out of *Candia*, which we pay so deere for now a daies, and in that good worlde was very good cheape) she cald me to her; Minion said she, (indeed I was a pretie one in those daies though I say it) I see a nu[m]ber of lads that loue you; Wel (said she) I say no more: doo you know what Loue is? With that she broght me into a corner, where ther was painted a foule fie[n]d I trow: for he had a paire of hornes like a Bull, his feete clouen, as many eyes vpon his bodie, as my gray-mare hath dappels, & for all the world so placed. This mo[n]ster sat like a ha[n]gman vpo[n] a paire of gallows, in his right hand he was painted holding a crowne of Laurell, in his left hand a purse of mony, & out of his mouth honge a lace of two faire pictures, of a ma[n] & a woma[n], & such a cou[n]tenance he shewed, as if he would perswade folks by those alureme[n]ts to come thither & be hanged. I, like a te[n]der harted wench, skrieked out for feare of the diuell. Well (sayd she) this same is euen Loue: therefore do what thou list with all those fellowes, one after another; & it reckes not much what they do to thee, so it be in secreat; but vpon my charge, neuer loue none of them. Why mother (said I) could such a thing come fro[m] the belly of the faire *Fenus*? for a few dayes before, our (priest betweene him & me) had tolde me the whole storie of *Venus*. Tush (said she) they are all deceaued: and therewith gaue me this Booke, which she said a great maker of ballets had giuen to an old painter, who for a litle pleasure, had bestowed both booke and picture of her. Reade there (said she) & thou shalt see that his mother was a cowe, and the false *Argus* his father. And so she gaue me this Booke, & there now you may reade it. With that the remembrance of the good old woman, made her make such a face to weepe, as if it were not sorrow, it was the carkasse of sorrow that appeared there. But while her teares came out, like raine falling vpon durtie furrowes, the latter end of her praier booke was read among these Ladies, which contained this.

Poore Painters oft with silly Poets ioyne,

*To fill the world with strange but vaine conceits:
One brings the stuiFFE, the other stamps the coine,
Which breeds nought else but gloses of deceits.*

Thus Painters Cupid paint, thus Poets do

A naked god, young blind, with arrowes two.

Is he a God, that euer flies the light?

Or naked he, disguis'd in all vntruth?

If he be blind, how hitteth he so right?

How is he young, that tamde old Phœbus youth?

But arrowes two, and tipt with gold or leade:

Some hurt accuse a third with horny head.

No, nothing so; an old false knaue he is

By Argus got on Io, then a cow:

What time for her Iuno her Ioue did misse,

And charge of her to Argus did allow.

Mercury kill'd his false sire for this act,

His damme a beast was pardon'd beastly fact.

With fathers death, and mothers guiltie shame,

With Ioues disdaine at such a riuals seed,

The wretch compelled a runnagate became,

And learn'd what ill a miser state doth breed,

To lye, faine, gloze, to steale, pry, and accuse,

Naught in himselfe ech other to abuse.

Yet beares he still his parents stately gifts,

A horned head, clouen foote, and thousand eyes,

Some gazing still, some winking wilye shiftes,

With long large eares where neuer rumour dyes.

His horned head doth seeme the heauen to spight:

His clouen foote doth neuer treade aright.

Thus halfe a man, with man he dayly haunts,

Cloth'd in the shape which soonest may deceaue:

Thus halfe a beast, ech beastly vice he plants,

In those weake harts that his aduice receaue.

He proules ech place stil in new colours deckt,

Sucking ones ill, another to infect.

To narrow brests he comes all wrapt in gaine:

To swelling harts he shines in honours fire:

To open eyes all beauties he doth raine;

Creeping to ech with flattering of desire.

But for that Loues desire most rules the eyes,

Therein his name, there his chiefe triumph lyes.

*Millions of yeares this old driuell Cupid liues;
While still more wretch, more wicked he doth proue:
Till now at length that Ioue him office giues,
(At Iunos suite who much did Argus loue)
In this our world a hang-man for to be,
Of all those fooles that will haue all they see.*

These Ladies made sport at the description and storie of *Cupid*. But *Zelmane* could scarce suffer those blasphemies (as she tooke them) to be read, but humbly besought *Pamela* she would perfourme her sisters request of the other part of the storie. Noble Lady (answered she, beautifying her face with a sweete smiling, and the sweetnes of her smiling with the beautie of her face) since I am borne a Princes daughter, let me not giue example of disobedience. My gouernesse will haue vs draw cuts, and therefore I pray you let vs do so: and so perhaps it will light vpon you to entertaine this company with some storie of your owne; and it is reason our eares should be willinger to heare, as your tongue is abler to deliuer. I will thinke (answered *Zelmane*) excellent Princesse my tongue of some value, if it can procure your tongue thus much to fauour me. But *Pamela* pleasantly persisting to haue fortune their iudge, they set hands, and *Mopsa* (though at the first for squeamishnes going vp & downe, with her head like a boate in a storme) put to her golden gols among them, and blind Fortune (that saw not the coulour of them) gaue her the preheminance: and so being her time to speake (wiping her mouth, as there was good cause) she thus tumbled into her matter. In time past (sayd she) there was a King, the mightiest man in all his country, that had by his wife, the fairest daughter that euer did eate pappe. Now this King did keepe a great house, that euery body might come and take their meat freely. So one day, as his daughter was sitting in her window, playing vpon a harpe, as sweete as any Rose; and combing her head with a combe all of precious stones, there came in a Knight into the court, vpo[n] a goodly horse, one haire of gold, & the other of siluer; and so the Knight casting vp his eyes to the window, did fall into such loue with her, that he grew not worth the bread he eate; till many a sorry day going ouer his head, with Dayly Diligence and Grisly Grones, he wan her affection, so that they agreed to run away together. And so in May, when all true hartes reioyce, they stale out of the Castel, without staying so much as for their breakfast. Now forsooth, as they went together, often all to kissing one another, the Knight told her, he was brought vp among the water Nymphes, who had so bewitched him, that if he were euer askt his name, he must presently vanish away: and therefore charged her vpon his blessing, that she neuer aske him what he was, nor whether he would. And so a great while she kept his commandement; til once, passing through a cruell wildernes, as darke as pitch; her mouth so watred, that she could not choose but aske him the question. And then, he

making the greuousest co[m]plaints that would haue melted a tree to haue heard them, vanisht quite away: & she lay down, casting forth as pitifull cries as any shrich-owle. But hauing laien so, (wet by the raine, and burnt by the Sun) fiue dayes, & fiue nights, she gat vp and went ouer many a high hil, & many a deepe riuer; till she came to an Aunts house of hers; and came, & cried to her for helpe: and she for pittie gaue her a Nut, and bad her neuer open her Nut, til she was come to the extremest misery that euer tongue could speake of. And so she went, & she went, & neuer rested the euening, wher she we[n]t in the morning; til she came to a second Aunt; and she gaue her another Nut.

Now good *Mopsa* (said the sweete *Philoclea*) I pray thee at my request keepe this tale, till my marriage day, & I promise thee that the best gowne I weare that day shalbe thine. *Mopsa* was very 6 glad of the bargaine, especially that it shuld grow a festiual Tale: so that *Zelmane*, who desired to finde the vttermost what these Ladies vnderstood touching her selfe, and hauing vnderstood the danger of *Erona* (of which before she had neuer heard) purposing with her selfe (as soone as this pursuit she now was in, was brought to any effect) to succour her, entreated againe, that she might know as well the story of *Plangus*, as of *Erona*. *Philoclea* referred it to her sisters perfecter reme[m]bra[n]ce, who with so sweet a voice, and so winning a grace, as in themselues were of most forcible eloquence to procure attention, in this maner to their earnest request soone condescended.

CHAP. 15.

1 *Plangus-his parentage.* 2 *His trick of youth,* 3 *espied,* 4 *& turned ouer by, and to his old father.* 5 *An inueagling-womans arts.* 6 *A guilty stepmothers diuellish practises against Plangus.* 7 *Her ministers false informations.* 8 *Plangus perplexities.* 9 *His fathers ielousies.* *The Queenes complots* 10 *to feede the ones suspicion,* 11 *& work the others ouerthrow.* 12 *Plangus taken;* 13 *deliuered flieth:* 14 *is pursued with old hate, & new treason.* 15 *Yet must he serue abroad, while a new heire is made at home.* 16 *This story broken off by Basilius.*



He father of this Prince *Plangus* as yet liues, and is King of *Iberia*: a man (if the iudgement of *Plangus* may be accepted) of no wicked nature, nor willingly doing euill, without himselfe mistake the euill, seeing it disguised vnder some forme of goodnesse. This Prince, being married at the first to a Princesse (who both from her auncesters, and in her selfe was worthy of him) by her had this son, *Plangus*. Not long after whose birth,

the Queene (as though she had performed the message for which she was sent into the world) returned again vnto her maker. The King (sealing vp al thoughts of loue vnder the image of her memorie) remained a widdower many yeares after recompensing the grieffe of that disioyning from her, in conioyning in himselfe both a fatherly and a motherly care toward her onely child, *Plangus*. Who being growne to mans age, as our owne eies may iudge, could not but fertilly requite his fathers fatherly education.

This Prince (while yet the errors in his nature were excused: by the greenenes of his youth, which tooke all the fault vpon it selfe) loued a priuate mans wife of the principal Citie of that Kingdome, if that may be called loue, which he rather did take into himselfe willingly, then by which he was take[n] forcibly. It sufficeth, that the yong man perswaded himself he loued her: she being a woman beautiful enough, if it be possible, that the outside onely can iustly entitle a beauty. But finding such a chase as onely fledde to be caught, the young Prince broght his affectio[n] with her to that point, which ought to engraue remorse in her harte, & to paint shame vpon her face. And so possesst he his desire without any interruption; he constantly fauouring her, and she thinking, that the enameling of a Princes name, might hide the spots of a broken wedlock. But as I haue seene one that was sick of a sleeping disease, could not be made wake, but with pinching of him: so out of his sinfull sleepe his minde (vnworthie so to be loste) was not to be cald to it selfe, but by a sharpe accident.

It fell out, that his many-times leauing of the court (in vndue times) began to be noted; and (as Princes eares be manifolde) from one to another came vnto the King; who (carefull of his onely sonne) sought, and found by his spies (the necessarie euill seruauntes to a King) what it was, whereby he was from his better delights so diuerted.

Whereupon, the King (to giue his fault the greater blow), vsed such meanes, by disguising himselfe, that he found them (her husband being absent) in her house together: which he did, to make him the more feelingly ashamed of it. And that way he tooke, laying threatnings vpon her, and vpon him reproaches. But the poore young Prince (deceiued with that young opinion, that if it be euer lawfull to lie, it is for ones Louer,) employed all his witte to bring his father to a better opinion. And because he might bende him from that (as he counted it) crooked conceit of her, he wrested him, as much as he coulde possiblie, to the other side: not sticking with prodigall protestations to set foorth her chastitie; not denying his own attempts, but thereby the more extolling her vertue. His Sophistrie preuayled, his father beleeued; and so beleued, that ere long (though he were alreedy stept into the winter of his age) he founde himselfe warme in those desires, which were in his sonne farre more excusable. To be short, he gaue himselfe ouer vnto it; and (because he would auoide the odious comparison of a yong riuall) sent away his sonne with an armie, to the subduing of a Prouince lately rebelled against him, which he knewe could not be a lesse worke, the of three or foure yeares. Wherein he behaued him so worthilie, as

euen to this country the fame therof came, long before his own coming: while yet his father had a speedier succes, but in a far vnnobler conquest. For while *Plangus* was away, the old man (growing onely in age & affectio[n]) folowed his suite with all meanes of vn honest seruants, large promises, and each thing els that might help to counteruaile his owne vnlouelines.

And she (whose husband about that time died) forgetting the absent *Plangus*, or at lest not hoping of him to obtaine so aspiring a purpose, lefte no arte vnused, which might keepe the line from breaking, wherat the fishe was alre dy taken; not drawing him violently, but letting him play himself vpon the hooke, which he had greedely swallowed. For, accompanying her mourning with a dolefull countenance, yet neither forgetting hansomnes in her mourning garments, nor sweetenes in her dolefull countenance; her wordes were euer seasoned with sighes; and any fauour she shewed, bathed in teares, that affection might see cause of pity; and pity might perswade cause of affection. And being growen skilfull in his humors, she was no lesse skilfull in applying his humors: neuer suffering his feare to fall to a despaire, nor his hope to hasten to an assurance: she was content he should thinke that she loued him; and a certaine stolne looke should sometimes (as though it were against her will) bewray it: But if thereupon he grewe bolde, he straight was encountred with a maske of vertue. And that which seemeth most impossible vnto me, (for as neere as I can I repeate it as *Plangus* tolde it) she could not onely sigh when she would, as all can doo; & weep when she would, as (they say) some can doo; but (being most impudent in her hart) she could, when she would, teach her chekes blushing, and make shamefastnes the cloake of shamelesnes. In summe, to leaue out many particularities which he recited, she did not onely vse so the spurre, that his Desire ran on, but so the bit, that it ran on, eue[n] in such a careere as she would haue it; that within a while, the king, seeing with no other eyes but such as she gaue him, & thinking no other thoughts but such as she taught him; hauing at the first liberall measure of fauours then shortned of the[m], when most his Desire was inflamed; he saw no other way but mariage to satisfie his longing, and her mind (as he thought) louing, but chastly louing. So that by the time *Plangus* returned from being notably victorious of the Rebels, he fou[n]d his father, not only married, but alre dy a father of a sonne & a daughter by this woma[n]. Which though *Pla[n]gus* (as he had euery way iust cause) was grieved at; yet did his grief neuer bring forth ether co[n]temning of her, or repining at his father. But she (who besides she was growen a mother, and a stepmother, did read in his eies her owne fault, and made his conscience her guiltines) thought still that his presence caried her condemnation: so much the more, as that she (vnchastly attempting his wo[n]ted fa[n]cies) fou[n]d (for the reuere[n]ce of his fathers bed) a bitter refusall: which breeding rather spite then shame in her, or if it were a shame, a shame not of the fault, but of the repulse, she did not onely (as hating him) thirst for a reuenge, but (as fearing harm from him) endeuoured

5

6

to doo harme vnto him. Therefore did she trie the vttermost of her wicked wit, how to ouerthrow him in the foundation of his strength, which was, in the fauour of his father: which because she saw strong both in nature and desert, it required the more cu[n]ning [h]ow to vndermine it. And therefore (shunning the ordinary trade of hireling sycophants) she made her praises of him, to be accusations; and her aduancing him, to be his ruine. For first with words (neerer admiration then liking) she would extoll his excelle[n]cies, the goodlines of his shape, the power of his witte, the valiantnes of his courage, the fortunatenes of his successes: so as the father might finde in her a singular loue towards him: nay, she shunned not to kindle some fewe sparkes of ielousie in him. Thus hauing gotten an opinion in his father, that she was farre from meaning mischiefe to the sonne, then fell she to praise him with no lesse vehemencie of affection, but with much more cunning of malice. For then she sets foorth the liberty of his mind, the high flying of his thoughts, the fitnessse in him to beare rule, the singular loue the Subiects bare him; that it was doubtfull, whether his wit were greater in winning their fauours, or his courage in employing their fauours: that he was not borne to liue a subiect-life, each action of his bearing in it Maiestie, such a Kingly entertainment, such a Kingly magnificence, such a Kingly harte for enterprises: especially re-membring those vertues, which in a successor are no more honoured by the subiects, then suspected of the Princes. Then would she by putting-of obiection[s], bring in obiection[s] to her husbands head, already infected with suspition[n]. Nay (would she say) I dare take it vpon my death, that he is no such sonne, as many of like might haue bene, who loued greatnes so well, as to build their greatnes vpon their fathers ruine. Indeed Ambition, like Loue, can abide no lingring, & euer urgeth on his own successes; hating nothing, but what may stop the[m]. But the Gods forbid, we should euer once dreame of any such thing in him, who perhaps might be content, that you & the world should know, what he can do: but the more power he hath to hurte, the more admirable is his praise, that he wil not hurt. Then euer remembring to strengthen the suspition of his estate with priuate ielousie of her loue, doing him excessiue honour when he was in presence, and repeating his pretie speaches and graces in his absence; besides, causing him to be employed in all such dangerous matters, as ether he should perish in them, or if he preuailed, they should increase his glory: which she made a weapon to wou[n]d him, vntill she found that suspition began already to speake for it selfe, and that her husbands eares were growne hungry of rumours, and his eies prying into euery accident.

Then tooke she help to her of a seruant neere about her husband, whom she knew to be of a hasty ambitio[n], and such a one, who wanting true sufficiencie to raise him, would make a ladder of any mischiefe. Him she vseth to deale more plainely in alleaging causes of ielousie, making him know the fittest times when her husband already was stirred that way. And so they two, with diuers wayes, nourished one humour, like Musicians, that singing diuers parts, make one musicke. He sometime with fearefull

countenance would desire the King to looke to himselfe; for that all the court and Cittie were full of whisperings, and expectation of some suddaine change, vpon what ground himselfe knew not. Another time he would counsell the King to make much of his sonne, and holde his fauour, for that it was too late now to keepe him vnder. Now seeming to feare himselfe, because (he said) *Plangus* loued none of them that were great about his father. Lastly, breaking with him directly (making a sorrowful countenance, & an humble gesture beare false witnessse for his true meaning) that he fou[n]d, not only souldiery, but people weary of his gouernment, & al their affections bent vpon *Plangus*. Both he and the Queene concurring in strange dreames, & each thing else, that in a mind (already perplexed) might breed astonishment: so that within a while, all *Plangus* actions began to be translated into the language of suspition.

Which though *Plangus* fou[n]d, yet could he not auoid, euen co[n]traries being driuen to draw one yoke of argume[n]t:

if he were magnificat, he spent much with an aspiring intent: if he spared, he heaped much with an aspiring intent: if he spake curteously, he angled the peoples harts: if he were silent, he mused vpon some daungerous plot. In summe, if he could haue turned himself to as many formes as *Proteus*, euery forme should haue bene made tedious. 8 9

But so it fell out, that a meere trifle gaue the occasion of further proceeding. The King one morning, going to a vineyard that lay a long the hill where his castle stood, he saw a vine-labourer, that finding a bowe broken, tooke a branch of the same bowe for want of another thing, and tied it about the place broken. The King asking the fellow what he did, Marry (said he) I make the sonne binde the father. This word (finding the King alredy superstitious through suspitio[n]) amazed him streight, as a presage of his owne fortune: so that, returning, and breaking with his wife how much he misdoubted his estate, she made such gaine-saying answeres, as while they straue, straue to be ouercome. But euen while the doubttes most boiled, she thus nourished them.

She vnder-hand dealt with the principall me[n] of that cou[n]try, that at the great Parliame[n]t (which was then to be held) they should in the name of all the estates perswade the King (being now stept deeply into old age) to make *Plangus*, his associate in gouernme[n]t with him: assuring the[m], that not only she would ioine with them, but that the father himself would take it kindly; chargeing the[m] not to acquaint *Plangus* withal; for that perhaps it might be harmeful vnto him, if the King should find, that he wer a party. They (who thought they might do it, not only willingly, because they loued him, & truly, because such indeed was the minde of the people, but safely, because she who ruled the King was agreed therto) accomplished her cou[n]sell: she indeed keeping promise of vehement perswading the same: which the more she & they did, the more she knew her husba[n]d would fear, & hate the cause of his feare. *Plangus* fou[n]d this, & hu[m]bly protested against such desire, or wil to accept. But the more he protested, the more his father thought he disse[m]bled, 10

accenting his integritie to be but a cu[n]ning face of falshood: and therefore delaying the desire of his subiects, attended some fit occasion to lay hands vpon his sonne: which his wife thus brought to passe.

She caused that same minister of hers to go vnto *Plangus*, & (enabling his words with great shew of faith, & endearing them with desire of secresie) to tell him, that he found his ruine 11
conspired by his stepmother, with certain of the noble men of that cou[n]try, the King himselfe giuing his consent, and that few daies should passe, before the putting it in practize: with all discouering the very truth indeed, with what cunning his stepmother had proceeded. This agreing with *Plangus* his owne opinio[n], made him giue him the better credit: yet not so far, as to flie out of his country (according to the naughty fellowes persuasion) but to attend, and to see further. Wherupon the fellow (by the direction of his mistresse) told him one day, that the same night, about one of the clocke, the King had appointed to haue his wife, & those noble me[n] together, to deliberate of their manner of proceeding against *Plangus*: & therefore offered him, that if himselfe would agree, he would bring him into a place where he should heare all that passed; & so haue the more reason both to himselfe, and to the world, to seeke his safetie. The poore *Plangus* (being subiect to that only disadvantage of honest harts, credulitie) was perswaded by him: & arming himself (because of his late going) was closely conueied into the place appointed. In the meane time his stepmother making all her gestures cunningly counterfait a miserable afflictio[n], she lay almost groueling on the flower of her cha[m]ber, not suffering any body to comfort her; vntill they calling for her husband, and he held of with long enquiry, at length, she told him (euen almost crying out euery word) that she was wery of her life, since she was brought to that plunge, either to conceale her husba[n]ds murther, or accuse her sonne, who had euer bene more deare, then a sonne vnto her. Then with many interruptions and exclamations she told him, that her sonne *Plangus* (solliciting her in the old affection betweene them) had besought her to put her helping hand to the death of the King; assuring her, that though all the lawes in the world were against it, he would marrie her when he were King.

She had not fully said thus much, with many pitifull digressios, whe[n] in comes the same fellow, that brought *Plangus*:

& run[n]ing himself out of breath, fell at the Kings feet, beseeching him to saue 12
himself, for that there was a man with sword drawn in the next roome. The King affrighted, we[n]t out, & called his gard, who entring the place, fou[n]d indeed *Plangus* with his sword in his hand, but not naked, but sta[n]ding suspiciously inough, to one already suspicious. The King (thinking he had put vp his sworde because of the noise) neuer tooke leasure to heare his answer, but made him prisoner, meaning the next morning to put him to death in the market place.

But the day had no sooner opened the eies & eares of his: friends & followers, but that there was a little army of them,

who came, and by force deliuered him; although nu[m]bers on the other side 13
(abused with the fine framing of their report) tooke armes for the King.

But *Plangus*, though he might haue vsed the force of his friends to reuenge his wrong, and get the crowne; yet the naturall loue of his father, and hate to make their suspition seeme iust, caused him rather to choose a volu[n]tarie exile, the[n] to make his fathers death the purchase of his life: & therefore went he to *Tiridates*, whose mother was his fathers sister, liuing in his Court eleuen or twelue yeares, euer hoping by his intercession, and his owne desert, to recouer his fathers grace. At the end of which time, the warre of *Erona* happened, which my sister with the cause thereof discoursed vnto you.

But his father had so deeply engraued the suspicion in his hart, that he thought his flight rather to proceed of a fearefull
guiltines, then of an humble faithfulness; & therefore continued his hate, with such 14
vehemencie, that he did euer hate his Nephew *Tiridates*, and afterwards his
niece *Artaxia*, because in their Court he receiued countenance, leauing no meanes
vnatt[em]pted of destroying his son; among other, employing that wicked seruant of
his, who vndertooke to empoyson him. But his cu[n]ning disguised him not so well,
but that the watchful serua[n]ts of *Pla[n]gus* did discouer him. Wherupo[n] the wretch
was taken, & (before his wel-deserued execution) by torture forced to confesse the
particularities of this, which in generall I haue told you.

Which co[n]fession autenticallly set downe (though *Tiridates* with solemne
Embassage sent it to the King) wrought no
effect. For the King hauing put the reines of the gouernment into his wiues 15
hande, neuer did so much as reade it; but sent it streight by her to be considered.
So as they rather heaped more hatred vpon *Plangus*, for the death of their seruaunt.
And now finding, that his absence, and their reportes had much diminished the
wauering peoples affection towards *Plangus*, with aduauncing fit persons for faction,
and graunting great immunities to the commons, they preuailed so farre, as to cause
the sonne of the second wife, called *Palladius*, to be proclaymed successour,
and *Plangus* quite excluded: so that *Plangus* was driuen to continue his
seruing *Tiridates*, as he did in the warre against *Erona*, and brought home *Artaxia*, as
my sister tolde you; when *Erona* by the treason of *Antiphilus*, But at that word she
stopped. For *Basilus* (not able longer to abide their absence) came sodainly among
them, and with smiling countenance (telling *Zelmane* he was affraid she had stollen
away his daughters) inuited them to follow the Sunnes counsel in going then to their
lodging; for indeed the Sun was readie to set. They yeelded, *Zelmane* meaning some
other time to vnderstand the storie of *Antiphilus* treason, and *Eronas* daunger, whose
case she greatly tendred. But *Miso* had no sooner espied *Basilus*, but that as
spitefully, as her rotten voice could vtter it, she set forth the sawcinesse of *Amphialus*.
But *Basilus* onely attended what *Zelmanes* opinion was, who though she
hated *Amphialus*, yet the nobilitie of her courage preuailed ouer it, and she desired he

might be pardoned that youthfull error; considering the reputation he had, to be one of the best knights in the world; so as hereafter he gouerned himselfe, as one remembring his fault. *Basilius* giuing the infinite tearmes of praises to *Zelmanes* both valour in conquering, and pittifulnesse in pardoning, commanded no more words to be made of it, since such he thought was her pleasure.

CHAP. 16.

1 *The cumber of Zelmanes loue and louers.* 2 *Gynecias loue-lamentations.* 3 *Zelmanes passions* 4 & *sonet.* 5 *Basilius-his wooing, and Zelmanes answers.* 6 *Philoclea feed atturney to plead her fathers cause.*



SO brought he them vp to visite his wife, where betweene her, & him, the poore *Zelmana* receaued a tedious entertainemet; oppressed with being loued, almost as much, as with louing. *Basilius* not so wise in couering his passion, could make his toong go almost no other pace, but to runne into those immoderate praises, which the foolish Louer thinkes short of his Mistres, though they reach farre beyond the heauens. But *Gynecia* (whome womanly modestie did more outwardly bridle) yet did oftentimes vse the aduantage of her sexe in kissing *Zelmana*, as she sate vpon her bedde-side by her; which was but still more and more sweete incense, to cast vpon the fire wherein her harte was sacrificed: Once *Zelmana* could not stirre, but that, (as if they had bene poppets, whose motion stooode onely vpon her pleasure) *Basilius* with seruiceable steppes, *Gynecia* with greedie eyes would follow her. *Basilius* mind *Gynecia* well knew, and could haue found in her hart to laugh at, if mirth could haue borne any proportion with her fortune. But all *Gynecias* actions were interpreted by *Basilius*, as proceeding from ieaousie of his amorousnesse. *Zelmana* betwixt both (like the poore childe, whose father while he beates him, will make him beleue it is for loue; or like the sicke man, to whom the Phisition swears, the ill-tasting wallowish medicine he profers, is of a good taste) their loue was hatefull, their courtesie troublesome, their presence cause of her absence thence, where not onely her light, but her life consisted. Alas (thought she to her selfe) deare *Dorus*, what ods is there betweene thy destiny & mine? For thou hast to doo in thy pursuite but with shepherdish folkes, who trouble thee with a little enuious care, and affected diligence. But I (besides that I haue now *Miso*, the worst of thy diuels, let loose vpon me) am waited on by Princes, and watched by the two wakefull eyes of Loue and ieaousie. Alas, incomparable *Philoclea*, thou euer seest me, but dost neuer see me as I am: thou hearest willingly all that I dare say, and I dare not say that which were most fit for thee to heare. Alas who euer but I was imprisoned

in libertie, and banished being still present? To whom but me haue louers bene iailours, and honour a captiuitie?

But the night comming on with her silent steps vpon the[m], they parted ech from other (if at lest they could be parted, of whom euerie one did liue in another) and went about to flatter sleepe with their beds, that disdained to bestow it selfe liberally vpon such eies which by their will would euer be looking: and in lest measure vpon *Gynecia*, who (when *Basilius* after long tossing was gotten a sleepe, and the cheereful comfort of the lights remoued from her) kneeling vp in her bed, began with a soft voice, and swolne hart, to renew the curses of her birth; & the[n] in a maner embracing her bed; Ah chastest bed of mine (said she) which neuer heretofore couldst accuse me of one defiled thought, how canst thou now receaue this desastred changeling? Happie, happie be they onely which be not: and thy blessednes onely in this respect thou maist feele, that thou hast no feeling. With that she furiously tare off great part of her faire haire: Take here ô forgotten vertue (said she) this miserable sacrifice; while my soule was clothed with modestie, that was a comely ornament: now why should nature crowne that head, which is so wicked, as her onely despaire is, she cannot be enough wicked? More she would haue said, but that *Basilius* (awaked with the noise) tooke her in his armes, & bega[n] to co[m]fort her; the good-man thinking, it was all for a iealous loue of him: which humor if she would a litle haue maintained, perchance it might haue weakned his new conceaued fancies. But he finding her answeres wandring fro[m] the purpose, left her to her selfe (glad the next morning to take the adua[n]tage of a sleepe, which a little before day, ouerwatched with sorow, her teares had as it were sealed vp in her eyes) to haue the more conference with *Zelmane*, who baited on this fashion by these two louers, & euer kept from any meane to declare herselfe, found in her selfe a dayly encrease of her violent desires; like a riuier the more swelling, the more his current is stopped.

The chiefe recreation she could find in her anguish, was sometime to visite that place, where first she was so happy as to see the cause of her vn hap. There would she kisse the ground, and thanke the trees, blisse the aier, & do dutifull reuerence to euerie thing that she thought did accompany her at their first meeting: then returne again to her inward thoughts; sometimes despaire darkning all her imaginations, sometimes the actiue passion of Loue cheering and cleering her inuention, how to vnbar that combersome hinderance of her two ill-matched louers. But this morning *Basilius* himself gaue her good occasion to go beyond them. For hauing combd and trickt himself more curiously, then any time fortie winters before, comming where *Zelmane* was, he found her giuen ouer to her musicall muses, to the great pleasure of the good old *Basilius*, who retired himself behinde a tree, while she with a most sweete voice did vtter these passionate verses.

*L*Oued I am, and yet complaine of Loue:
 As louing not, accused, in Loue I die.
 When pittie most I craue, I cruell proue:
 Still seeking Loue, loue found as much I flie.
 Burnt in my selfe, I muse at others fire:
 What I call wrong, I doo the same, and more:
 Bard of my will, I haue beyond desire:
 I waile for want, and yet am chokte with store.
 This is thy worke, thou God for euer blinde:
 Though thousands old, a Boy entitled still.
 Thus children doo the silly birds they finde,
 With stroking hurt, and too much cramming kill.
 Yet thus much Loue, O Loue, I craue of thee:
 Let me be lou'd, or els not loued be.

Basilius made no great haste from behind the tree, till he perceaued she had fully ended her musick. But then loth to loose the pretious fruite of time, he presented himselfe vnto her, falling downe vpon both his knees, and holding vp his hands, as the old goueniesse of *Danae* is painted, when she sodainly saw the golde[n] shoure, O heauely woma[n], or earthly Goddess (said he) let not my presence be odious vnto you, nor my humble suit seeme of small weight in your eares. Vouchsafe your eies to descend vpon this miserable old-ma[n], whose life hath hitherto bene maintained but to serue as an encrease of your beautiful triumphs. You only haue ouer throwne me, & in my bondage co[n]sists my glory. Suffer not your owne worke to be despised of you: but looke vpon him with pittie, whose life serues for your praise. *Zelmane* (keeping a cou[n]tena[n]ce ascanses she vnderstood him not) told him, It became her euil to suffer such excessiue reuerence of him, but that it worse became her to correct him, to whom she owed duetie: that the opinion she had of his wisdom was such, as made her esteeme greatly of his words; but that the words themselues sounded so, as she could not imagine what they might intend. Intend? (said *Basilius*, proud that that was brought in question) what may they intend, but a refreshing of my soule, and a swaging of my heat, and enjoying those your excellencies, wherein my life is vpheld, and my death threatned? *Zelmane* lifting vp her face as if she had receaued a mortall iniurie of him, And is this the deuotion your ceremonies haue bene bent vnto? said she: Is it the disdain of my estate, or the opinion of my lightnesse, that haue emboldned such base fancies towards me? enjoying quoth you? now little ioy come to them that yeeld to such enjoying. Poore *Basilius* was so appalled, that his legges bowed vnder him; his eyes lookt as though he would gladly hide himself; and his old blood going to his hart,

a generall shaking all ouer his bodie possessed him. At length with a wanne mouth; he was about to giue a stammering answeere, when it came into *Zelmanes* head by this deuise to make her profile of his folly; and therefore with a relented countenance, thus said vnto him. Your words (mightie Prince) were vnfit either for me to heare, or you to speake: but yet the large testimonie I see of your affection makes me willing to suppress a great number of errors. Onely thus much I thinke good to say, that the same words in my Ladie *Philocleas* mouth, as from one woman to another (so as there were no other bodie by) might haue had a better grace; and perchance haue found a gentler receipt.

Basilus (whose senses by Desire were held open, and conceipt was by Loue quickned) heard scarcely halfe her answeere out, but that (as if speedie flight might saue his life) he turned away, and ran with all the speede his bodie would suffer him, towards his daughter *Philoclea*: whom he found at that time duetifully watching by her mother, and *Miso* curioslie watching her; hauing left *Mopsa* to doo the like seruice to *Pamela*. *Basilus* foorthwith calling *Philoclea* aside, (with all the coniuring words which Desire could endite, and authoritie vtter) besought her she would preserue his life, in who[m] her life was begonne; she would saue his graye haire from rebuke, and his aged mind from despaire; that if she were not cloyed with his companie, and that she thought not the earth ouer-burdened with him, she would coole his fierie grieffe, which was to be done but by her breath. That in fine, whatsoeuer he was, he was nothing but what it pleased *Zelmane*; all the powers of his spirite depending of her: that if she continued cruell, he could no more sustaine his life, then the earth remaine fruitfull in the Sunnes continuall absence. He concluded, she should in one payment requite all his deserts: and that she needed not disdain any seruice (though neuer so meane) which was warranted by the sacred name of a father. *Philoclea* more glad then euer she had knowen her selfe, that she might by this occasion, enioy the priuate conference of *Zelmane*, yet had so sweete a feeling of vertue in her minde, that she would not suffer a vile colour to be cast ouer her faire thoughts; but with humble grace answered her father: That there needed nether promise nor perswasion to her, to make her doo her vttermost for her fathers seruice. That for *Zelmanes* fauour, she would in all vertuous sort seeke it towards him: and that as she would not pearce further into his meaning, then himselfe should declare, so would she interpret all his doinges to be accomplished in goodnes: and therefore desired, (if otherwise it were) that he would not imparte it to her, who then should be forced to beginne (by true obedience) a shew of disobedience: rather perfourming his generall commandement, which had euer beene, to embrace vertue, then any new particular, sprong out of passion, and contrarie to the former. *Basilus* content to take that, since he could haue no more (thinking it a great point, if by her meanes, he could get but a more free accesse vnto *Zelmane*) allowed her reasons, & took her proffer tha[n]kfully, desiring onely a speedy returne of comfort. *Philoclea* was parting, and *Miso* streight behind

her, like *Alecto* following *Proserpina*. But *Basilus* forced her to stay, though with much a doo, she being sharp-set vpon the fulfilling of a shrewde office, in ouer-looking *Philoclea*: and so said to *Basilus*, that she did as she was com[m]anded, and could not answeere it to *Gynecia*, if she were any whitte from *Philoclea*: telling him true, that he did euill to take her charge from her. But *Basilus*, (swearing he would put out her eyes, if she stird a foote to trouble his daughter) gaue her a stoppe for that while.

CHAP. 17.

1 *Zelmanes teares, 2 and tearefull dittie. 3 Philoclea enters conference with her. 4 She shues, and shewes her selfe Prince Pyrocles. 5 Philoclea feares much, but loues more. 6 Their conclusion, 7 with reentrie to their intermitted historie.*



SO away departed *Philoclea*, with a new field of fancies for her trauayling mind. For well she sawe, her father was growen her aduerse partie, and yet her fortune such, as she must fauour her Riual; and the fortune of that fortune such, as neither that did hurt her, nor any contrarie meane helpe her.

But she walkt but a little on, before she saw *Zelmane* lying vpon a banke, with her face so bent ouer *Ladon*, that (her teares falling into the water) one might haue thought, that she began meltingly to be metamorphosed to the vnder-running riuer. But by and by, with speech she made knowen, as well that she liued, as that she sorrowed. Faire streames (said she) that do vouchsafe in your cleerenes to represent vnto me my blubbered face, let the tribute-offer of my teares vnto you, procure your stay a while with me, that I may beginne yet at last, to finde some thing that pities me: and that all thinges of comfort and pleasure doo not flie away from me. But if the violence of your spring commaund you to haste away, to pay your duties to your great prince, the Sea, yet carrie with you these fewe wordes, and let the vttermost ends of the world know them. A Loue more clear then your selues, dedicated to a Loue (I feare) more cold then your selues, with the cleerenes layes a night of sorow vpon me; and with the coldenes en-flames a worlde of fire within me. With that she tooke a willowe stick, and wrote in a sandie banke these fewe verses.

Over these brookes trusting to ease mine eyes,

*(Mine eyes euen great in labour with their teares)
I layde my face; my face wherein there lyes
Clusters of clowdes, which no Sunne euer cleares.
In watry glasse my watrie eyes I see:
Sorrowes ill easde, where sorrowes painted be.*

2

*My thoughts imprisonde in my secreat woes,
With flamie breathes doo issue oft in sound:
The sound to this strange aier no sooner goes,
But that it dooth with Echoes force rebound.
And make me heare the plaints I would refraine:
Thus outward helps my inward griefes maintaine.*

*Now in this sande I would discharge my minde,
And cast from me part of my burdnous cares:
But in the sand my tales foretolde I finde,
And see therein how well the writer fares.
Since streame, aier, sand, mine eyes and eares conspire:
What hope to quench, where each thing blowes the fire?*

And assoon as she had written them (a new swarme of thoughts stinging her mind) she was ready with her foot to giue the new-borne letters both death and buriall. But *Philoclea* (to whom delight of hearing and seeing was before a stay from interrupting her) gaue her self to be seen vnto her, with such a lightning of Beauty vpo[n] *Zelmane*, that nether she could looke on, nor would looke of. At last *Philoclea* (hauing a little mused how to cut the threede euen, betweene her owne hopelesse affection, and her fathers vnbridled hope) with eyes, cheekes, and lippes, (whereof each sange their pane, to make vp the harmonic of bashulnesse) began to say, My Father to whom I owe my self, & therefore, When *Zelmane* (making a womanish habite to be the Armour of her boldnesse, giuing vp her life to the lippes of *Philoclea*, and taking it againe by the sweetenesse of those kisses) humbly besought her to keepe her speach for a while within the Paradise of her minde. For well she knew her fathers erra[n]d, who should soon receiue a sufficient answere. But now she demaunded leaue not to loose this long sought-for commoditie of time, to ease her harte thus farre, that if in her agonies her destinie was to be condemned by *Philocleas* mouth, at lest *Philoclea* might know, whom she had condemned. *Philoclea* easily yeelded to graunt her owne desire: and so making the greene banke the situation, and the riuer the prospect of the most beautiful buildings of Nature, *Zelmane* doubting how to beginne, though her thoughts already had runne to the ende, with a minde fearing the vnworthinesse of euery worde that should be presented to her eares, at length brought it forth in this manner.

3

Most beloued Ladie, the incomparable excellencies of your selfe, (waited-on by the greatnesse of your estate) and the importaunce of the thing (whereon my life consisteth) doth require both many ceremonies before the beginning, and many circumstaunces in the vttering my speech, both bolde, and fearefull. But the small opportunitie of enuious occasion (by the malicious eie hateful Loue doth cast vpon me) and the extreme bent of my affection (which will eyther breake out in wordes, or breake my harte) compell me, not onely to embrace the smallest time, but to passe by respects due vnto you, in respect of your poore caitifes life, who is now, or neuer to be preserued. I doo therefore vowe vnto you, hereafter neuer more to omit all dutifull forme: doo you onely now vouchsafe to heare the matter of a minde most perplexed. If euer the sound of Loue haue come to your eares, or if euer you haue vnderstood, what force it hath had to conquere the strongest hartes, and change the most settled estates: receiue here an example of those straunge Tragedies; one, that in him selfe conteineth the particularities of all those misfortunes: and from hencefoorth beleeeue that such a thing may be, since you shall see it is. You shall see (I say) a liuing image, and a present storie of what Loue can doo, when he is bent to ruine. But alas, whether goest thou my tongue? or how doth my harte consent to aduenture the reuealing his nearest touching secrete? But peace Feare, thou comest too late, when already the harme is taken. Therefore I say againe, O onely Princesse, attend here a miserable miracle of affection. Behold here before your eyes *Pyrocles*, Prince of *Macedon*, whome you onely haue brought to this game of Fortune, and vnused *Metamorphosis*: whome you onely haue made neglect his countrie, forget his Father, and lastly, forsake to be *Pyrocles*: the same *Pyrocles*, who (you heard) was betrayed by being put in a ship, which being burned, *Pyrocles* was drowned. O most true presage: for these traytors, my eyes, putting me in a shippe of Desire, which dayly burneth, those eyes (I say) which betraied me, will neuer leaue till they haue drowned me. But be not, be not, (most excellent Lady) you that Nature hath made to be the Load-starre of comfort, be not the Rocke of shipwracke: you whome vertue hath made the Princesse of felicitie, be not the minister of ruine: you, whom my choyse hath made the Goddess of my safetie, O let not, let not, from you be powred vpon me destruction. Your faire face hath manie tokens in it of amazement at my wordes: thinke then what his amazement is, from whence they come: since no wordes can carry with them the life of the inward feeling. I desire, that my desire may be waied in the ballances of Honour, and let vertue hold them. For if the highest Loue in no base person may aspire to grace, then may I hope your beautie will not be without pittie. If otherwise you be (alas but let it neuer be so) resolved, yet shall not my death be comfortles, receiuing it by your sentence.

The ioy which wrought into *Pygmalions* mind, while he found his beloued image was softer, & warmer in his folded

armes, till at length it accom[pl]ished his gladnes with a perfect womans shape 5
(still beautified with the former perfections) was euen such, as by each degree
of *Zeltnanes* wordes creepingly entred into *Philoclea*: till her pleasure was fully made
vp with the manifesting of his being; which was such as in hope did ouer-come Hope.
Yet Doubt would faine haue playd his parte in her minde, and cald in question, how
she should be assured that *Zelmane* was *Pyrocles*. But Loue streight stood vp &
deposed, that a lie could not come from the mouth of *Zelmane*. Besides, a certain
sparke of honour, which rose in her well-disposed minde, made her feare to be alone
with him, with whom alone she desired to be (with all the other co[n]tradictions
growing in those minds, which nether absolutly clime the rocke of vertue, nor freely
sinke into the sea of Vanitie) but that sparke soone gaue place, or at least gaue no more
light in her mind, then a ca[n]dle doth in the Sunnes presence. But euen sicke with a
surfet of ioy, and fearefull of she knewe not what (as he that newly findes huge
treasures, doubttes whether he sleepe or no; or like a fearfull Deere, which then looks
most about, when he comes to the best feede) with a shrugging kinde of tremor
through all her principall partes, she gaue these affectionate wordes for answeere. Alas,
how painefull a thing it is to a deuided minde to make a wel-ioyned answeere? how
harde it is to bring inwarde shame to outward confession? and what handsomnes trow
you can be obserued in that speeche, which is made one knowes not to whom? Shall I
say ô *Zelmane*? Alas your wordes be against it. Shall I say Prince *Pyrocles*? wretch
that I am, your shew is manifest against it. But this, this I may well say; If I had
continued as I ought, *Philoclea*, you had either neuer bene, or euer bene *Zelmane*: you
had either neuer attempted this change, set on with hope, or neuer discouered it, stopt
with despaire. But I feare me, my behaiour ill gouerned, gaue you the first comfort: I
feare me, my affection ill hid, hath giue you this last assurance: I feare indeed, the
weakenesse of my gouernment before, made you thinke such a maske would be
gratefull vnto me: & my weaker gouernment since, makes you to pull of the visar.
What shall I doo then? shal I seeke far-fetched inuentions? shall I labour to lay marble
coulours ouer my ruinous thoughts? or rather, though the purenes of my virgin-minde
be stained, let me keepe the true simplicitie of my word. True it is, alas, too true it is,
ô *Zelmane* (for so I loue to call thee, since in that name my loue first began, and in the
shade of that name my loue shall best lie hidden,) that euen while so thou wert, (what
eye bewitched me I know not) my passions were fitter to desire, then to be desired.
Shall I say then, I am sorry, or that my loue must be turned to hate, since thou art
turned to *Pyrocles*? how may that wel be, since when thou wert *Zelmane*, the despaire
thou mightest not be thus, did most torment me. Thou hast then the victorie: vse it
with vertue. Thy vertue wan me; with vertue preserue me. Doost thou loue me?
keepe me then still worthy to be beloued.

Then held she her tongue, and cast downe a self-accusing looke, finding, that in her
selfe she had (as it were) shot out of

the bow of her affectio[n], a more quick opening of her minde, then she minded 6
to haue done. But *Pyrocles* so caried vp with ioy, that he did not enuy the Gods
felicitie, presented her with some iewels of right princely value, as some litle tokens
of his loue, & qualitie: and withall shewed her letters from his father King *Euarchus*,
vnto him, which euen in the Sea had amongst his iewels bene preserued. But little
needed those proofes to one, who would haue fallen out with her selfe, rather then
make any contrarie coniectures to *Zelmanes* speeches; so that with such
imbracements, as it seemed their soules desired to meete, and their harts to kisse, as
their mouthes did: which faine *Pyrocles* would haue sealed with the chiefe armes of
his desire, but *Philoclea* commaunded the contrary; and yet they passed the promise
of mariage.

And then at *Philocleas* entreaty, who was willing to purloine all occasions of 7
remaying with *Zelmae*, she tolde her the storie of her life, from the time of their
departing from *Erona*, for the rest she had already vnderstood of her sister. For (saide
she) I haue vnderstood, how you first in the companie of your Noble
cousin *Musidorus* parted from *Thessalia*, and of diuers aduentures, which with no
more daunger then glory you passed through, till your comming to the succour of the
Queene *Erona*; and the ende of that warre (you might perceiue by my selfe) I had
vnderstood of the Prince *Plangus*. But what since was the course of your doings, vntil
you came, after so many victories, to make a conquest of poore me, that I know not,
the fame thereof hauing rather shewed it by pieces; then deliuered any full forme of it.
Therefore, deere *Pyrocles* (for what can mine eares be so sweetly fed with as to heare
you of you) be liberall vnto me of those things which haue made you indeede pretious
to the worlde, and now doubt not to tell of your perils; for since I haue you here out of
them, euen the remembraunce of them is pleasaunt. *Pyrocles* easily perceiued she was
content with kindnesse, to put of occasion of further kindnesse; wherein Loue shewed
himselpe a cowardly boy, that durst not attempt for feare of offending. But rather Loue
proued him selfe valiant, that durst with the sworde of reuerent dutie gaine-stand the
force of so many enraged desires. But so it was, that though he knewe this discourse
was to entertaine him from a more streight parley, yet he durst not but kisse his rod,
and gladly make much of the entertainment which she allotted vnto him: and
therefore with a desirous sigh chastning his brest for too much desiring, Sweete
Princesse of my life (said he) what Trophees, what Triumph, what Monuments, what
Histories may euer make my fame yeeld so sweete a Musicke to my eares, as that it
pleaseth you to lend your minde to the knowledge of any thing touching *Pyrocles*,
onely therefore of value, because he is your *Pyrocles*? And therefore grow I now so
proud, as to thinke it worth the hearing, since you vouchsafe to giue it hearing.
Therefore (onely height of my hope) vouchsafe to know, that after the death
of *Tiridates*, and selling *Erona* in her gouernement; for settled we left her, howsoeuer
since (as I perceiued by your speech the last day) the vngrateful treason of her ill-

chosen husband ouerthrew her (a thing in trueth neuer till this time by me either heard, or suspected) for who could thinke without hauing such a minde as *Antiphilus*, that so great a beautie as *Eronas* (indeed excellent) could not haue held his affection? so great goodnes could not haue bound gratefulnesse? and so high aduancement could not haue satisfied his ambition? But therefore true it is, that wickednesse may well be compared to a bottomlesse pit, into which it is farre easier to keepe ones selfe from falling, then being fallen, to giue ones selfe any stay from falling infinitely. But for my Cosen, and me, vpon this cause we parted from *Erona*.

CHAP. 18.

1 *Anaxius surcuidrie*; 2 *and challenge to Pyrocles, accepted*. 3 *The execution of Ladies done on a Light-of-loue*. 4 *Pyrocles-his intercession in the cause*. 5 *The lewd parts of that light lecher*. 6 *His scoffing excuses*. 7 *Didos reuenge on him stopped*, 8 *and his reuenge on her stayed by Pyrocles*.



E*Vardes* (the braue & mighty Prince, whom it was my fortune to kill in the co[m]bat for *Erona*) had three Nephewes, sonnes to a sister of his; all three set among the foremost racks of Fame for great minds to atte[m]pt, and great force to perfourme what they did attempt; especially the eldest, by name *Anaxius*; to whom al men would willingly haue yeilded the height of praise, but that his nature was such, as to bestow it vpon himselfe, before any could giue it. For of so vnsupportable a pride he was, that where his deede might well stirre enuie, his demeanor did rather breed disdain. And if it be true that the Gyants euer made war against heauen, he had bene a fit ensigne-bearer for that company. For nothing seemed hard to him, though impossible; and nothing vniust, while his liking was his iustice. Now he in these wars had flatly refused his aid; because he could not brooke, that the worthy Prince *Plangus* was by his cosen *Tiridates* preferred before him. For allowing no other weights, but the sword & speare in iudging of desert, how-much he esteemed himselfe before *Plangus* in that, so much would he haue had his allowance in his seruice.

But now that he vnderstood that his vncler was slaine by me, I thinke rather scorne that any should kil his vncler, then any kindnesse (an vnused guest to an arrogant soule) made him seeke his reuenge; I must confesse in manner gallant enough. For he sent a challenge to me to meete him at a place appointed, in the confines of the kingdome of *Lycia*; where he would proue vpon me, that I had by some trecherie ouercome his vncler, whom els

many hundreds such as I, could not haue withstood. Youth & successe made me willing enough to accept any such bargaine; especially, because I had heard that your cosen *Amphialus* (who for some yeares hath vniuersally borne the name of the best Knight in the world) had diuers times fought with him, & neuer bene able to master him; but so had left him, that euery man thought *Anaxius* in that one vertue of curtesie far short of him, in al other his match; *Anaxius* stil deeming himselfe for his superiour. Therefore to him I would goe, and I would needs goe alone, because so I vnderstood for certaine, he was; and (I must confesse) desirous to do something without the company of the incomparable Prince *Musidorus*, because in my hart I acknowledge that I owed more to his presence, then to any thing in my self, whatsoever before I had done. For of him indeed (as of any worldly cause) I must grant, as receiued, what euer there is, or may be good in me. He taught me by word, and best by example, giuing me in him so liuely an Image of vertue, as ignorance could not cast such mist ouer mine eyes, as not to see, and to loue it, and all with such deare friendship and care, as (ô heauens) how ca[n]my life euer requite vnto him? which made me indeed find in my selfe such a kind of depending vpon him, as without him I found a weakenesse, and a mis-trustfulnes of my selfe, as one strayed from his best strength, when at any time I mist him. Which humour perceiuing to ouer-rule me, I straued against it; not that I was vnwilling to depend vpon him in iudgeme[n]t, but by weakenesse I would not; which though it held me to him, made me vnworthy of him. Therefore I desired his leaue, and obtained it: such confidence he had in me, preferring my reputation before his owne tendernes; and so priuately went from him, he determining (as after I knew) in secreat maner, not to be far from the place, where we appointed to meete, to preuent any foule play that might be offered vnto me. Full loth was *Erona* to let vs depart from her, (as it were) forefeeling the harmes which after fell to her. But I, (ridde fully from those combers of kindnesse, and halfe a dayes iourney in my way toward *Anaxius*) met an aduenture, (though in it selfe of small importance) I will tell you at large, because by the occasion thereof I was brought to as great comber and danger, as lightly any might escape.

As I past through a Laund (ech side whereof was so bordred both with high
tymber trees, and copes of farre more humble growth, that it might easily bring a
solitarie minde to looke for no other companions then the wild burgesses of the
forrest) I heard certaine cries, which comming by pawses to mine eares from within
the wood of the right hand, made me well assured by the greatnesse of the crie, it was
the voice of a man, though it were a verie vnmanlike voice, so to crie. But making
mine eare my guide, I left not many trees behind me, before I saw at the bottome of
one of them a gentleman bound (with many garters) hand & foot, so as well he might
tomble and tosse, but neither runne nor resist he could. Vpo[n] him (like so many
Eagles vpon an Oxe) were nine Gentle-women; truely such, as one might well enough
say, they were hansome. Each of them helde bodkins in their handes, wherewith they

continually pricked him, hauing bene before-hand vnarmed of any defence from the wast vpward, but onely of his shirte: so as the poore man wept and bled, cryed and prayed, while they sported themselues in his paine, and delighted in his prayers, as the arguments of their victorie.

I was moued to compassion, and so much the more that he straight cald to me for succour, desiring me at lest to kill him, to deliuer him from those tormenters. But before my-self could resolue, much lesse any other tell what I would resolue, there came in cholericke hast towards me about seue[n]or eight knights; the foremost of which willed me to get me away, and not to trouble the Ladies, while they were taking their due reuenge, but with so ouer-mastring a maner of pride, as truly my hart could not brooke it: & therefore (answering them, that how I would haue defended him from the Ladies I knew not, but from them I would) I began a combate first with him particularly, and after his death with the others (that had lesse good maners) ioyntly. But such was the end of it, that I kept the field with the death of some, and flight of others. In so much as the women (afraid, what angrie victorie would bring forth) ranne away; sauing onely one; who was so flesht in malice, that neither during, nor after the fight, she gaue any truce to her crueltie, but still vsed the little instrument of her great spight, to the well-witnest paine of the impatient patient: and was now about to put out his eies, which all this while were spared, because they should do him the discomfort of seeing who preuailed ouer him. When I came in, and after much ado, brought her to some conference, (for some time it was before she would harken, more before she would speake; & most, before she would in her speech leaue off" that remembrance of her bodkin) but at length whe[n] I puld off my head-peece, and humbly entreated her pardon, or knowledge why she was cruell; out of breath more with choller (which increased in his owne exercise) the[n] with the paine she tooke, much to this purpose she gaue her grieffe vnto my knowledge. Gentleman (said she) much it is against my will to forbear any time the executing of my iust reuege vpon this naughtie creature, a man in nothing, but in deceauing women; But because I see you are young, and like enough to haue the power (if you would haue the mind) to do much more mischief, then he, I am content vpon this bad subiect to reade a lecture to your vertue.

This man called *Pamphilus*, in birth I must confesse is noble (but what is that to him, if it shalbe a staine to his deade auncestors to haue left such an off[s]pring?) in shape as you see not vncomely (indeed the fit maske of his disguised falshood) in conuersation wittily pleasant, and pleasantly gamesome; his eyes full of merie simplicitie, his words of hartie companableness; and such a one, whose head one would not think so stayed, as to thinke mischieuously: delighted in al such things, which by imparting their delight to others, makes the vser therof welcome; as, Musicke, Daunsing, Hunting, Feasting, Riding, & such like. And to conclude, such a one, as who can keepe him at armes ende, neede neuer wish a better co[m]panio[n]. But vnder these qualities lies such a

poysonous addar as I will tell you. For by those gifts of Nature and Fortune (being in all places acceptable) he creepes, nay (to say truly) he flies so into the fauour of poore sillie women, that I would be too much ashamed to confesse, if I had not reuenge in my hande, as well as shame in my cheekes. For his hart being wholly delighted in deceiuing vs, we could neuer be warned, but rather, one bird caught, serued for a stale to bring in more. For the more he gat, the more still he shewed, that he (as it were) gaue away to his new mistresse, whe[n] he betrayed his promises to the former. The cunning of his flatterie, the readines of his teares, the infinitenes of his vowes, were but among the weakest threedes of his nette. But the stirring our owne passions, and by the entrance of them, to make himselfe Lord of our forces; there lay his Masters part of cunning, making vs now ieaalous, now enuious, now proud of what we had, desirous of more; now giuing one the triumph, to see him that was Prince of many, Subiect to her; now with an estranged looke, making her feare the losse of that minde, which indeede could neuer be had: neuer ceasing humblenes and diligence, till he had imbarcked vs in some such disaduantage, as we could not return dry-shod; and then suddenly a tyrant, but a craftie tyrant. For so would he vse his imperiousnes, that we had a delightfull feare, and an awe which made vs loath to lose our hope. And, which is strangest (when sometimes with late repentance I thinke of it) I must confesse, euen in the greatest tempest of my iudgeme[n]t was I neuer driuen to think him excellent, and yet so could set my minde, both to gette and keepe him, as though therein had laien my felicitie: like them I haue seene play at the ball, growe extremely earnest, who shoulde haue the ball, and yet euery one knew it was but a ball. But in the end, the bitter sauce of the sport was, that we had ether our hartes broken with sorrow, or our estates spoyled with being at his direction, or our honours for euer lost, partly by our owne faults, but principally by his faultie vsing of our faults. For neuer was there man that could with more scornfull eyes beholde her, at whose feete he had lately laine, nor with a more vnmanlike brauerie vse his tongue to her disgrace, which lately had song Sonets of her praises: being so naturally inconstant, as I maruell his soule findes not some way to kill his bodie, whereto it had beene so long vnited. For so hath he dealt with vs (vnhappy fooles,) as we could neuer tell, whether he made greater haste after he once liked, to enioy, or after he once enjoyed, to forsake. But making a glorie of his own shame, it delighted him to be challenged of vnkindnesse: it was a triumph vnto him to haue his mercie called for: and he thought the fresh colours of his beautie were painted in nothing so well, as in the ruines of his Louers: yet so farre had we engaged our selues, (vnfortunate soules) that we listed not complaine, since our complaintes could not but carrie the greatest accusation to our selues. But euerie of vs (each for her selfe,) laboured all meanes how to recouer him, while he rather daily sent vs companions of our deceit, then euer returned in any sound and faithfull manner. Till at length he concluded all his wronges with betrothing himselfe to one (I must confesse) worthie to be liked, if any worthinesse might excuse so vnworthie a changeablenesse; leauing vs nothing but remorse for what was past, and

despaire of what might followe. Then indeede, the common iniurie made vs all ioyne in friendshippe, who till that time, had employed our endeouours one against the other. For, we thought nothing was a more condemning of vs, then the iustifying of his loue to her by manage: then Despaire made Feare valiant, and Reuenge gaue Shame countenance: whereupon, we (that you saw here) deuised how to get him among vs alone: which he (suspecting no such matter of them, whom he had by often abuses he thought made tame to be still abused) easilie gaue us opportunitie to doo.

And a man may see, euen in this, how soone Rulers growe proude, and in their pride foolish: he came with such an
authoritie among us, as if the Planets had done inough for us, that by us once he
had beene delighted. And when we began in courteous manner, one after the
other, to lay his unkindnesse unto him, he seeing himselfe confronted by so many
(like a resolute Orator,) went not to deniall, but to iustifie his cruell falshoode, and all
with such iestes, and disdainfull passages, that if the iniurie could not be made greater,
yet were our conceiptes made the apter to apprehende it. 6

Among other of his answeres (forsooth) I shall neuer forgette, how he woulde prooue it was no inconstancie to chaunge from one Loue to an other, but a great constancie; and contrarie, that which we call constancie, to be most changeable. For (said he) I euer loued my Delight, & delighted alwayes in what was Lovely: and where-soeuer I founde occasion to obtaine that, I constantly folowed it. But these constant fooles you speak of, though their Mistres grow by sicknes foule, or by fortune miserable, yet stil will loue her, and so committe the absurdest inconstancie that may be, in changing their loue from fairenes to foulennesse, and from louelines to his contrarie; like one not content to leaue a friend, but will streight giue ouer himself to his mortall enemie: where I (whom you call inconstant) am euer constant; to Beautie, in others; and Delight in my self. And so in this iollie scoffing brauerie he went over us all, saying, He left one, because she was over-waiwarde; another, because she was too soone woon; a third, because she was not merie inough; a fourth, because she was ouer-gamesome; the fifth, because she was growen with grieffe subiect to sicknesse; the sixt, because she was so foolish, as to be ielous of him; the seuenth, because she had refused to carie a letter for him, to another that he loued; the eight, because she was not secreete; the ninth, because she was not liberall: but to me, who am named *Dido*, (and indeede have mette with a false *Aeneas*) to me, I say, (ô the ungratefull villaine) he could finde no other fault to obiect, but that (perdie) he met with many fayrer.

But when he had thus plaide the carelesse Prince, we hauing those seruants of ours in readines, whom you lately so
manfully ouercame) laide holde of him; beginning at first but that trifling
reuenge, in which you found vs busie; but meaning afterwardes to haue mangled
him so, as should haue lost his credit for euer abusing more. But as you haue made my
fellowes flie away, so for my part the greatnesse of his wrong ouershadowes in my 7

iudgement the greatnesse of any daunger. For was it not inough for him, to haue deceiued me, & through the deceit abused me, & after the abuse forsaken me, but that he must now, of al the company, & before all the company lay want of beautie to my charge? Many fairer? I trow eue[n]in your iudgeme[n]t, Sir, (if your eies do not beguile me) not many fairer; & I know (whosoeuer saies the co[n]trary) there are not many fairer. And of whom should I receiue this reproch, but of him, who hath best cause to know there are not many fairer? And therefore how soeuer my fellowes pardon his iniuries, for my parte I will euer remember, & remember to reuenge this scorne of al scornes. With that she to him afresh; & surely would haue put out his eies (who lay muet for shame, if he did not sometimes crie for feare) if I had not lept from my horse, & mingling force with intreaty, staid her furie.

But, while I was perswading her to meekenes, comes a number of his friends, to whom he forthwith cried, that they should kill that woma[n], that had thus betraied and disgraced him. But then I was 8 faine to forsake the ensigne; vnder which I had before serued, and to spend my uttermost force in the protecting of the Ladie; which so well preuailed for her, that in the ende there was a faithfull peace promised of all sides. And so I leauing her in a place of securitie (as she thought) went on my iourney towards *Anaxius*, for whom I was faine to stay two daies in the apointed place, he disdaining to waite for me, till he was sure I were there.

CHAP. 19.

1 The monomachie betweene Anaxius and Pyrocles; 2 ad-iourned by Pyrocles to resuccour Dido. 3 The course of Didos daunger. 4 The miserableness of her father. 5 His carlish entertainement to Pyrocles; 6 and his treason against him. 7 Pyrocles hard bestead. 8 succoured by Musidorus: 9 both saued by the King of Iberia. 10 The execution of the traitors, and death of Dido.

Did patientlie abide his angrie pleasure, till about that space of time he came (indeede, according to promise) alone: and (that I may not say too little, because he is wont 1 to say too much) like a man, whose courage was apt to clime ouer any daunger. soone as euer he came neere me, in fit distaunce for his purpose, he with much fury, (but with fury skilfully guided) ran vpon me; which I (in the best sort I could) resisted, hauing kept my selfe ready for him, because I had vnderstood, that he obserued but few complements in matters of armes, but such as a proud anger did indite vnto him. And so putting our horses into a full careere, we hit

ech other vpon the head with our Launces: I think he felte my blowe; for my parte (I must confesse) I neuer receiued the like: but I thinke though my senses were astonished, my minde forced them to quicken themselues, because I had learned of him, how little fauour he is woont to show in any matter of aduantage. And indeede he was turned, and comming vpon me with his sworde drawne, both our stauces hauing bene broken at that encounter. But I was so ready to answeere him, that truely I know not who gaue the first blowe. But whosoeuer gaue the first, it was quickly seconded by the second. And indeed (excellentest Ladie) I must say truely, for a time it was well fought betweene vs; he vndoubtedly being of singular valour, (I would to God, it were not abased by his too much loftinesse) but as by the occasion of the combate, winning and loosing ground, we chaunged places, his horse happened to come vpon the point of the broken speare, which fallen to the ground chaunced to stand vward; so as it lighting vpon his hart, the horse died. He driuen to dismount, threatned, if I did not the like, to doo as much for my horse, as Fortune had done for his. But whether for that, or because I would not be beholding to Fortune for any part of the victorie, I descended.

So began our foote-fight in such sort, that we were well entred to bloud of both sides, when there comes by, that vnconstant *Pamphilus*, whom I had deliuered (easie to be knowne, for he was bare faced) with a dozen armed men after him; but before him he had *Dido* (that Ladie, who had most sharpely punished him) riding vpon a palfrey, he following her with most vnmanlike crueltie; beating her with wandes he had in his hande, she crying for sense of payne, or hope of succour: which was so pittifull a sight vnto me, that it mooued me to require *Anaxius* to deferre our combate, till an other day, and now to perourme the duties of Knighthood in helping this distressed Ladie. But he that disdaines to obey any thing but his passion (which he cals his mind) bad me leaue of that thought; but when he had killed me, he would then (perhaps) go to her succour. But I well finding the fight would be long betweene vs (longing in my hart to deliuer the poore *Dido*) giuing him so great a blowe, as somewhat staid him, (to terme it a right) I flatly ran away from him toward my horse, who trotting after the co[m]panie, in mine armour I was put to some paine, but that vse made me nimble vnto it. But as I followed my horse, *Anaxius* followed me: but his prowde harte did so disdain that exercise, that I had quickly ouer-run him, & ouertaken my horse; being (I must co[n]fesse) ashamed to see a number of country folks, who happened to passe thereby, who hallowed & howted after me as at the arrantest coward, that euer shewed his shoulders to his enemy. But when I had leapt on my horse (with such speedy agility, that they all cried, (see how feare giues him wings) I turned to *Anaxius*, & aloud promised him to returne thether again, as soone as I had relieued the iniuried Ladie. But he railing at me, with all the base wordes angry contempt could endite; I said no more, but, *Anaxius*, assure thy self, I nether feare thy force, nor thy opinion. And so vsing no weapon of a Knight as at that time, but my spurres, I ranne in my knowledge

after *Pamphilus*, but in al their conceipts from *Anaxius*, which as far as I could heare, I might well heare testified with such laughters and games, that I was some few times moued to turne backe againe.

But the Ladies misery ouer-balanced my reputation so that after her I went, & with six houres hard riding (through so wild places, as it was rather the cunning of my horse sometimes, then of my selfe, 3 so rightly to hit the way) I ouergat the[m] a little before night, neere to an old il-fauoured castle, the place where I perceiued they meant to perfourme their vnknightly errand. For there they began to strip her of her clothes, when I came in among them, & running through the first with a lau[n]ce, the iustnesse of the cause so enabled me against the rest (falsharted in their owne wrong doing) that I had, in as short time almost as I had bene fighting with only *Anaxius*, deliuered her from those iniurious wretches: most of whom carried newes to the other world, that amongst men secret wronges are not alwaies left vnpunished. As for *Pamphilus*, he hauing once seene, & (as it should seeme) remembred me, euen from the beginning began to be in the rereward, and before they had left fighting, he was too far of to giue them thanks for their paines. But when I had deliuered to the Ladie a ful libertie, both in effect, & in opinion, (for some time it was before she could assure her selfe she was out of their handes, who had layd so vehement apprehension of death vpon her) she then tolde me, how as she was returning toward her fathers, weakely accompanied (as too soone trusting to the falshood of reconcilement) *Pamphilus* had set vpon her, and killing those that were with her, carried her selfe by such force, and with such maner as I had seene, to this place, where he meant in cruell and shamefull manner to kill her, in the sight of her owne Father; to whom he had already sent worde of it, that out of his castle windowe (for this castle, she said, was his) he might haue the prospect of his onely childes destruction, if my comming, whom (she said) he feared (as soone as he knew me by the armour) had not warraunted her from that neere approaching crueltie. I was glad I had done so good a deede for a Gentlewoman not vnhandsome, whome before I had in like sorte helped. But the night beginning to perswade some retiring place, the Gentlewoman, euen out of countenance before she began her speach, much after this manner inuited me to lodge that night with her father.

Sir (said she) how much I owe you, can be but abased by wordes, since the life I haue, I holde it now the second time of you: and therefore neede not offer seruice vnto you, but onely to remember 4 you, that I am your seruaunt: and I would, my being so, might any way yeeld any small contentment vnto you. Now onely I can but desire you to harbour your selfe this night in this castle; because the time requires it; and in truth this countrie is very daungerous for murthering theeues, to trust a sleeping life among them. And yet I must confesse, that as the loue I beare you makes me thus inuite you, so the same loue makes me ashamed to bring you to a place, where you shalbe so (not spoke by ceremonie but by truth) miserably entertained. With that she tolde me, that though she

spake of her father (whom she named *Chremes*) she would hide no truth from me, which was in summe, that as he was of all that region the man of greatest possessions, and riches, so was he either by nature, or an euill receiued opinion, giuen to sparing, in so vnmeasurable a sorte, that he did not onely barre him selfe from the delightfull, but almost from the necessarie vse thereof; scarsely allowing him selfe fitte sustenance of life, rather then he would spende of those goods, for whose sake onely he seemed to ioye in life. Which extreame dealing (descending from himselfe vpon her) had driuen her to put her selfe with a great Lady of that countrie, by which occasion she had stumbled vpon such mischance, as were little for the honour either of her, or her familie. But so wise had he shewed himselfe therein, as while he found his daughter maintained without his cost, he was content to be deafe to any noise of infamie: which though it had wronged her much more then she deserued, yet she could not denie, but she was driuen thereby to receaue more then decent fauours. She concluded, that there at lest I should be free from iniuries, & should be assured to herwards to abound as much in the true causes of welcomes, as I should want of the effects thereof.

I, who had acquainted my selfe to measure the delicacie of foode and rest, by hunger and wearinesse, at that time well stored of both, did not abide long entreatie; but went with her to the Castle: which I found of good strength, hauing a great mote rounde about it; the worke of a noble Gentleman, of whose vnthrifitie sonne he had bought it. The bridge drawne vp, where we were faine to crie a good while before we coulde haue answeare, and to dispute a good while before answeare would bee brought to acceptance. At length a willingnesse, rather then a ioy to receaue his daughter, whome hee had lately seene so neere death, and an opinion rather brought into his heade by course, because he heard himselfe called a father; rather then any kindnesse that hee found in his owne harte, made him take vs in; for my part by that time growne so wearie of such entertainment, that no regard of my selfe, but onely the importunitie of his daughter made me enter. Where I was met with this *Chremes*, a driueling old fellow, leane, shaking both of head and hands, alredie halfe earth, and yet then most greedie of Earth: who scarsely would giue me thanks for that I had done, for feare I suppose, that thankfulness might haue an introduction of reward. But with a hollow voice, giuing me a false welcome, I might perceauie in his eye to his daughter, that it was hard to say, whether the displeasure of her company did not ouer-way the pleasure of her owne comming. But on he brought me, into so bare a house, that it was the picture of miserable happinesse, and rich beggerie (serued onely by a company of rusticall villaines, full of sweate and dust, not one of them other, then a labourer) in summe (as he counted it) profitable drudgerie: and all preparations both for foode and lodging such, as would make one detest nigardnesse, it is so sluttish a vice. His talke nothing but of his pouertie, for feare belike lest I should haue proued a young borrower. In summe, such a man, as any enemy could not wish him worse, then to be himselfe. But

there that night bidde I the burthen of being a tedious guest to a loathsome host; ouer-hearing him sometimes bitterly warne his daughter of bringing such costly mates vnder his roofe: which she grieuing at, desired much to know my name, I thinke partly of kindnesse to remember who had done some-thing for her, and partly because she assured her selfe I was such a one as would make euen his miser-minde contented, with what he had done. And accordingly she demaunded my name, and estate, with such earnestnesse, that I whom Loue had not as then so robbed me of my selfe, as to be another then I am, told her directly my name and condition: whereof she was no more gladde then her father, as I might well perceauē by some ill-fauoured cheerefulnesse, which then first began to wrinckle it selfe in his face.

But the causes of their ioyes were farre different; for as the shepheard and the butcher both may looke vpon one sheepe with pleasing conceipts, but the shepheard with minde to profile himselfe by preseruing, the butcher with killing him: So she reioyced to finde that mine owne benefits had tyed me to be her friend, who was a Prince of such greatnesse, and louingly reioyced: but his ioy grew, (as I to my danger after perceiued) by the occasion of the Queene *Artaxias* setting my head to sale, for hauing slaine her brother *Tiridates*; which being the summe of an hundreth thousand crownes (to whosoeuer brought me aliue into her hands) that old wretch, (who had ouer-liued all good nature) though he had lying idly by him much more then that, yet aboue all things louing money, for monies owne sake determind to betray me, so well deseruing of him, for to haue that which he was determind neuer to vse. And so knowing that the next morning I was resoluēd to go to the place where I had left *Anaxius*, he sett in all speed to a Captaine of a Garrison hard by; which though it belonged to the King of *Iberia*, (yet knowing the Captaines humor to delight so in riotous spending; as he cared not how he came by the meanes to maintaine it) doubted not, that to be halfe with him in the gaine, he would play his quarters part in the treason. And therefore that night agreeing of the fittest places where they might surprise me in the morning, the old caitiffe was growne so ceremonious, as he would needs accompanie me some myles in my way; a sufficient token to me, if Nature had made me apte to suspect; since a churles curtesie rathely comes but either for gaine, or falshood. But I suffered him to stumble into that point of good manner: to which purpose he came out with all his clownes, horst vpon such cart-iades, and so furnished, as in good faith I thought with my selfe, if that were thrift, I wisht none of my friends or subiectes euer to thriue. As for his daughter (the gentle *Dido*) she would also (but in my conscience with a farre better minde) prolong the time of farewell, as long as he.

So we went on together: he so old in wickednes, that he could looke me in the face, and freely talke with me, whose life he had already contracted for: till comming into the falling of a way which ledde vs into a place, of each-side whereof men might easily keepe themselues

vndiscovered, I was encompassed sodainly by a great troupe of enimies, both of horse and foote, who willed me to yeelde my selfe to the Queene *Artaxia*. But they coulde not haue vsed worse eloquence to haue perswaded my yeelding, then that; I knowing the little good will *Artaxia* bare me. And therefore making necessitie and iustice my best sword and shield, I vsed the other weapons I had as well as I could; I am sure to the little ease of a good number, who trusting to their number more then to their valure, and valewing money higher then equitie, felt, that guiltlesnesse is not alwayes with ease oppressed. As for *Chremes*, he withdrew himselfe, yet so guilding his wicked conceits with his hope of gaine, that he was content to be a beholder, how I should be taken to make his pray.

But I was growne so wearie, that I supported my selfe more with anger then strength, when the most excellent

Musidorus came to my succour; who hauing followed my trace as well as he could, after he had found I had left the fight with *Anaxius*, came to the niggards Castell, where he found all burnd and spoiled by the countrie people, who bare mortall hatred to that couetous man, and now tooke the time, when the castell was left almost without garde, to come in, and leaue monuments of their malice therein: which *Musidorus* not staying either to further, or impeach, came vpon the spurre after me (because with one voice many told him, that if I were in his company, it was for no good meant vnto me) and in this extremitie found me. But when I saw that Cosen of mine, me thought my life was doubled, and where before I thought of a noble death, I now thought of a noble victorie. For who can feare that hath *Musidorus* by him? who, what he did there for me, how many he killed, not straunger for the number, then for the straunge blowes wherwith he sent them to a wel-deserued death, might well delight me to speake off, but I should so holde you too long in euery particular. But in trueth, there if euer, and euer, if euer any man, did *Musidorus* shew himselfe second to none in able valour.

Yet what the vnmeasurable excesse of their number woulde haue done in the ende I knowe not, but the triall thereof

was cutte off by the chaunceable comming thither of the King of *Iberia*, that same father of that worthy *Plangus*, whom it hath pleased you somtimes to mention: who, (not yeelding ouer to old age his country delights, especially of hauking) was at that time (following a *Merline*) brought to see this iniurie offred vnto vs: and hauing great numbers of Courtiers waiting vpon him, was straight known by the souldiers that assaulted vs, to be their King, and so most of them with-drew themselues.

He by his authoritie knowing of the Captaines owne constrained confession, what was the motiue of this mischieuous practise; misliking much such viole[n]ce should be offred in his countrie to men of our ranke; but chiefly disdaining it should be done in respect of his Niece, whom (I must confesse wrongfully) he hated, because he interpreted that her brother and she had maintained his sonne *Plangus* against him, caused the Captaines head

presently to be striken off, and the old bad *Chremes* to be hanged: though truely for my part, I earnestly laboured for his life, because I had eaten of his bread. But one thing was notable for a conclusion of his miserable life, that neither the death of his daughter, who (alas the poore Gentlewoman) was by chaunce slaine among his clownes, while she ouer-boldly for her weake sex sought to hold the[m] from me, nor yet his owne shamefull ende was so much in his mouth as he was ledde to execution, as the losse of his goods, and burning of his house: which often, with more laughter then teares of the hearers, he made pittifull exclamations vpon.

CHAP. 20.

1 *The two Princes passage to the Iberian Court.* 2 *Andromanas omniregencie.* 3 *Her parti-loue to them both.* 4 *Her faire and foule meanes to inueigle them.* 5 *Palladius loue to Zelmane.* 6 *Zelmaues loue to Pyrocles, and practise with her Louer to release her beloued.*



His iustice thus done, and we deliuered, the King indeede in royall sorte inuited vs to his Court, not farre thence: in all points entertaining vs so, as truely I must euer acknowledge a beholdingnesse vnto him: although the streame of it fell out not to be so sweet as the spring. For after some dayes being there (curing our selues of such wounds as we had receiued, while I, causing diligent search to be made of *Anaxius*, could learne nothing, but that he was gone out of the countrie, boasting in euerie place, how he had made me run away) we were brought to receiue the fauour of acquainta[n]ce with this Queene *Andromana*, whom the Princesse *Pamela* did in so liuely colours describe the last day, as still me thinkes the figure therof possesseth mine eyes, confirmed by the knowledge my selfe had.

And therefore I shall neede the lesse to make you know what kinde of woman she was; but this onely, that first with the rarenes of affection, and after with the very vse of directing, she had made her selfe so absolute a maister of her husbands minde, that a-while he would not, and after, he could not tell how to gouern, without being gouerned by her: but finding an ease in not vnderstanding, let loose his thoughtes wholly to pleasure, entrusting to her the entire conduct of all his royall affaires. A thing that may luckely fall out to him that hath the blessing, to match with some Heroicall minded Ladie. But in him it was nether guided by wisdome, nor followed by Fortune, but thereby was slipte insensiblie into such an estate, that he liued at her vndiscreete discretion: all his subiectes hauing by some yeares learned, so to hope for good, and feare of harm, onely fro[m] her, that it should haue needed a stronger vertue the[n] his, to haue vnwound so deeply an entred

vice. So that either not striuing (because he was contented) or contented (because he would not striue) he scarcely knewe what was done in his owne chamber, but as it pleased her Instrumentes to frame the relation.

Now we being brought knowen vnto her (the time that we spent in curing some 3
very dangerous wounds) after once we were acquainted, (and acquainted we were
sooner then our selues expected) she continuallie almost haunted vs, till (and it "
was not long a doing) we discouered a most violent bent of affection: and that so "
strangely, that we might well see, an euill minde in authoritie, dooth not onely
folow the sway of the desires already within it, but frames to it selfe new desires, not
before thought of. For, with equall ardour she affected vs both: and so did her greatnes
disdaine shamefastnes, that she was content to acknowledge it to both. For, (hauing
many times torne the vaile of modestie) it seemed, for a laste delight, that she
delighted in infamy: which often she had vsed to her husbands shame, filling all mens
eares (but his) with reproch; while he (hoodwinkt with kindnes) lest of al me[n] knew
who strake him. But her first degree was, by setting foorth her beauties, (truely in
nature not to be misliked, but as much adua[n]ced to the eye, as abased to the
iudgeme[n]t by arte) thereby to bring vs (as willingly-caught fishes) to bite at her
baite. And thereto had she that scutchion of her desires supported by certain badly-
dilige[n]t ministers, who ofte[n] cloyed our eares with her praises, & would needs
teach vs a way of felicitie by seeking her fauor. But when she found, that we were as
deaf to the[m], as dumb to her; then she listed no lo[n]ger stay in the suburbs of her
foolish desires, but directly entred vpo[n] the[m]; making her selfe an impudent suter,
authorizing her selfe very much with making vs see that all fauor & power in that
realm, so depe[n]ded vpon her, that now (being in her hands) we were ether to keep,
or lose our liberty, at her discretio[n]; which yet she so te[m]pred, as that we might
rather suspect, the[n] she threate[n]. But whe[n] our wou[n]ds grew so, as that they
gaue us leaue to trauell, & that she found we were purposed to vse all meanes we
could to depart thence, she (with more & more importunatnes) craued that, which in
all good maners was ether of vs to be desired, or not granted. Truely (most faire &
euery way excelle[n]t Lady) you would haue wondred to haue seene, how before vs
she would confes the contentio[n] in her own mind, between that louely (indeed most
louely) brounes of *Musidorus* his face, & this colour of mine, which
she (in the deceiuable stile of affection) would intitule beautifull: how her eyes
wandered (like a glutton at a feast) from the one to the other; and how her wordes
would beginne halfe of the sentence to *Musidorus*, & end the other half to *Pyrocles*:
not ashamed (seeing the friend-shippe betweene vs) to desire either of vs to be a
mediator to the other; as if we should haue played a request at Tennis betweene vs:
and often wishing, that she might be the angle, where the lines of our friendshippe
might meet; and be the knotte which might tie our hartes together. Which proceeding
of hers I doo the more largely set before you (most deare Lady) that by the foyle
therof, you may see the noblenes of my desire to you, & the warrantablenes of your

fauour to me.

At that *Philoclea* smiled, with a little nod. But (saide *Pyrocles*) when she perceiued no hope by suite to preuaile, then (perswaded by the rage of affection, and encouraged by daring to doo any thing) 4 she founde meanes to haue vs accused to the King, as though we went about some practise to ouerthrowe him in his owne estate. Which, because of the straunge successes we had in the kingdomes of *Phrigia*, *Pontus* & *Galatia*) seemed not vnlikely to him, who (but skimming any thing that came before him) was disciplined to leaue the through-handling of all, to his gentle wife: who foorthwith caused vs to be put in prison, hauing (while we slept) depriued vs of our armour: a prison, indeede iniurious, because a prison, but els well testifying affection, because in all respectes as commodious, as a prison might be: and indeede so placed, as she might at all houres, (not seene by many, though she cared not much how many had seene her) come vnto vs. Then fell she to sause her desires with threatnings, so that we were in a great perplexitie, restrained to so vnworthie a bondage, and yet restrained by Loue, which (I cannot tell how) in noble mindes, by a certain duety, claimes an answering. And how much that loue might moue vs, so much, and more that faultines of her mind remoued vs; her beautie being balanced by her shamelesnes. But that which did (as it were) tie vs in captiuitie, was, that to graunt, had ben wickedly iniurious to him, that saued our liues: and to accuse a Ladie that loued vs, of her loue vnto vs, we esteemed almost as dishonorable: & but by one of those waies we sawe no likelihood of going out of that place, where the words would be iniurious to your eares, which should expresse the manner of her suite: while yet many times earnestnes died her cheekes with the colour of shamefastnes; and wanton languishing borrowed of her eies the downe-cast looke of modestie. But we in the meane time far from louing her, and often assuring her, that we would not so recompence her husbandes sauing of our liues; to such a ridiculous degree of trusting her, she had brought him, that she caused him sende vs worde, that vpon our liues, we should doo whatsoever she commaunded vs: good man, not knowing any other, but that all her pleasures bent to the preseruacion of his estate. But when that made vs rather pittie, then obey his folly, then fel she to seruile entreating vs, as though force could haue bene the schoole of Loue, or that an honest courage would not rather striue against, then yeelde to iniurie. All which yet could not make vs accuse her, though it made vs almost pine awaie for spight, to loose any of our time in so troublesome an idlenesse.

But while we were thus full of wearinesse of what was past, and doubt of what was to follow, Loue (that I thinke in the course of my life hath a sporte sometimes to poison me with roses, sometimes to 5 heale me with wormewood) brought forth a remedy vnto vs: which though it helped me out of that distres, alas the co[n]clusion was such, as I must euer while I liue, think it worse then a wracke, so to haue bene preserued. This King by this Queene had a sonne of tender age, but of great expectation, brought vp in the hope of

themselves, & already acceptation of the inconstant people, as successour of his fathers crowne: whereof he was as worthy, considering his partes, as vnworthie, in respect of the wrong was thereby done against the most worthy *Plangus*: whose great desertes now either forgotten, or vngratefully remembred, all men set their sayles with the fauourable winde, which blewe on the fortune of this young Prince, perchance not in their harts, but surely not in their mouths, now giuing *Plangus* (who some yeares before was their only cha[m]pion) the poore co[m]fort of calamitie, pittie. This youth therefore accounted Prince of that regiov, by name *Palladius*, did with vehement affection loue a young Ladie, brought vp in his fathers court, called *Zelmane*, daughter to that mischieuously vnhappie Prince *Plexirtus* (of whom already I haue, and sometimes must make, but neuer honorable mention) left there by her father, because of the intricate changeablenes of his estate; he by the motherside being halfe brother to this Queene *Andromana*, and therefore the willinger committing her to her care. But as Loue (alas) doth not alwaies reflect it selfe, so fel it out that this *Zelmane*, (though truely reason there was inough to loue *Palladius*) yet could not euer perswade her harte to yeelde thereunto: with that paine to *Palladius*, as they feele, that feele an vnloued loue. Yet louing indeede, and therefore constant, he vsed still the intercession of diligece and faith, euer hoping, because he would not put him selfe into that hell, to be hopelesse: vntill the time of our being come, and captiued there, brought foorth this ende, whiche truely deserues of me a further degree of sorrow then teares.

Such was therein my ill destinie, that this young Ladie *Zelmane* (like some vnwisely liberall, that more delight to giue presentes, then pay debtes) she chose (alas for the pittie) rather to bestowe her loue (so much vnderued, as not desired) vpon me, then to reco[m]pence him, whose loue (besides many other things) might seeme (euen in the court of Honour) iustly to claime it of her. But so it was (alas that so it was) whereby it came to passe, that (as nothing doth more naturally follow his cause, then care to preserue, and benefite doth follow vnfained affection) she felt with me, what I felte of my captiuitie, and streight laboured to redresse my paine, which was her paine: which she could do by no better meanes, then by using the helpe therein of *Palladius*: who (true Louer) considering what, and not why, in all her commaundements; and indeed she concealing from him her affection (which she intituled compassion,) immediatly obeyed to imploy his vttermost credite to relieue vs: which though as great, as a beloued son with a mother, faulty otherwise, but not hard-harted toward him, yet it could not preuaile to procure vs libertie. Wherefore he sought to haue that by practise, which he could not by praier. And so being allowed often to visit vs (for indeed our restraints were more, or lesse, according as the ague of her passion was either in the fit, or intermission) he vsed the opportunitie of a fit time thus to deliuer vs.

CHAP. 21.

1 *The cause of the Iberian yearely iustes.* 2 *Queene Helens prayses.* 3 *The prize borne by her Knights, which Palladius and the Princes set them to reuerse.* 4 *The inuentions and actions of seuen tilters.* 5 *Palladius and the Princes entry into the field, honour in it, and flight from it.* 6 *Andromanas pursuite of them* 7 *to the death of her sonne* 8 *and her selfe.*



He time of the marynge that Queene was euery year, by the extreame loue of her husband, & the seruiceable loue of the Courtiers, made notable by some publike honours, which indeede (as it were) proclaymed to the worlde, how deare she was to the people. Among other, none was either more gratefull to the beholders, or more noble in it selfe, then iusts, both with sword and lance, mainteined for a seuen-night together: wherein that Nation dooth so excell, bothe for comelines and hablenes, that from neighbour-countries they ordinarily come, some to striue, some to learne, and some to behold.

This day it happened that diuers famous Knights came thither fro[m] the court of *Helen*, Queene of *Corinth*; a Ladie, whom Fame at that time was so desirous to honor, that she borrowed all mens mouthes to ioyn with the sounde of her Trumpet. For as her beautie hath wonne the prize from all women, that stande in degree of comparison (for as for the two sisters of *Arcadia*, they are farre beyond all conceipt of comparison) so hath her gouernment bene such, as hath bene no lesse beautifull to mens iudgements, then her beautie to the eiesight. For being brought by right of birth, a woman, a yong woman, a faire woman, to gouerne a people, in nature mutinously prowde, and alwaies before so vsed to hard gouernours, as they knew not how to obey without the sworde were drawne. Yet could she for some yeares, so carry her selfe among them, that they found cause in the delicacie of her sex, of admiration, not of co[n]tempt: & which was notable, euen in the time that many countries were full of wars (which for old grudges to *Corinth* were thought still would conclude there) yet so ha[n]dled she the matter, that the threatens euer smarted in the threatners; she vsing so stra[n]ge, and yet so well-succeeding a temper, that she made her people by peace, warlike; her courtiers by sports, learned; her Ladies by Loue, chast. For by continuall martiall exercises without bloud, she made them perfect in that bloody art. Her sportes were such as caried riches of Knowledge vpo[n] the streame of Delight: & such the behaiour both of her selfe, and her Ladies, as builded their chastitie, not vpon waywardnes, but by choice of worthines: So as it seemed, that court to haue bene the manage place of

Loue and vertue, & that her selfe was a *Diana* apparelled in the garments of *Venus*. And this which Fame onely deliuered vnto me, (for yet I haue neuer seene her) I am the willinger to speake of to you, who (I knowe) knowe her better, being your neere neighbour, because you may see by her example (in her selfe wise, and of others beloued) that neither follie is the cause of vehement Loue, nor reproch the effect. For neuer (I thinke) was there any woman, that with more vnremoueable determinatio[n] gaue her selfe to the cou[n]cell of Loue, after she had once set before her mind the worthines of your cousin *Amphialus*; & yet is nether her wisdome doubted of, nor honour blemished. For (O God) what doth better become wisdome, then to discerne, what is worthy the louing? what more agreeable to goodnes, then to loue it so discerned? and what to greatnesse of hart, then to be constant in it once loued? But at that time, that Loue of hers was not so publikely knowne, as the death of *Philoxenus*, and her search of *Amphialus* hath made it: but then seemed to haue such leasure to sende thither diuerse choise Knights of her court, because they might bring her, at lest the knowledge, perchance the honour, of that Triumph.

Wherein so they behaued themselues as for three daies they caried the prize; which being come from so farre a place to disgrace her seruaunts, *Palladius* (who himselfe had neuer vsed armes) persuaded 3 the Queene *Andromana* to be content (for the honour sake of her court) to suffer vs two to haue our horse and armour, that he with vs might vndertake the recouerie of their lost honour: which she graunted; taking our oth to go no further then her sonne, and neuer to abandon him. Which she did not more for sauing him, then keeping vs: and yet not satisfied with our oth, appointed a band of horsemen to haue eye, that we should not go beyond appointed limits. We were willing to gratifie the young Prince, who (we saw) loued vs. And so the fourth day of that exercise, we came into the fielde: where (I remember) the manner was, that the forenoone they should run at tilt, one after the other: the afternoone in a broad field, in manner of a battell, till either the strangers, or that countrie Knights wan the field.

The first that ran was a braue Knight, whose deuise was to come in, all chayned with a Nymph leading him: his

Impresa was Against 4
him came forth an *Iberian* whose manner of entring was, with bagpipes in steed of trumpets; a shepherds boy before him for a Page, and by him a dosen apparelled like shepherds for the fashion, though rich in stuffe, who caried his launces, which though strong to giue a launcely blow indeed, yet so were they couloured with hooks neere the mourn, that they pretily represe[n]ted shephooks. His own furniture was drest ouer with wooll, so enriched with iewels artificially placed, that one would haue thought it a manage betweene the lowest and the highest. His *Impresa* was a sheepe marked with pitch, with this word *Spotted to be knowne*. And because I may tell you out his conceipt (though that were not done, till the running for that time was ended) before the Ladies departed from the windowes, among them there was one (they say)

that was the *Star*, wherby his course was only directed. The shepherds attending vpo[n] *PHILISIDES* went amo[n]g the, & sa[n]g an eclogue; one of the[m] answering another, while the other shepherds pulling out recorders (which possest the place of pipes) accorded their musick to the others voice. The Eclogue had great praise: I onely remember sixe verses, while hauing questioned one with the other, of their fellow-shepherds sodaine growing a man of armes, and the cause of his so doing, they thus said.

ME thought some staues he mist: if so, not much amisse:
For where he most would hit, he euer yet did misse.
One said he brake acrossse; full well it so might be:
For neuer was there man more crossely crost then he.
But most cryed, O well broke: O foole full gaily blest;
Where failing is a shame, and breaking is his best.

Thus I haue digrest, because his maner liked me wel: But when he began to run against *Lelius*, it had neere growne (though great loue had euer bene betwixt them) to a quarrell. For *Philisides* breaking his staues with great commendation, *Lelius* (who was knowne to be second to none in the perfection of that Art) ranne euer ouer his head, but so finely to the skilfull eyes, that one might well see, he shewed more knowledge in missing, then others did in hitting. For with so gallant a grace his staffe came swimming close ouer the crest of the Helmet, as if he would represent the kisse, and not the stroke of *Mars*. But *Philisides* was much moued with it, while he thought *Lelius* would shew a contempt of his youth: till *Lelius* (who therefore would satisfie him, because he was his friend) made him know, that to such bondage he was for so many courses tyed by her, whose disgraces to him were graced by her excellency, and whose iniuries he could neuer otherwise returne, then honours.

But so by *Lelius* willing-missing was the odds of the *Iberian* side, and continued so in the next by the excellent run[n]ing of a Knight, though fostred so by the Muses, as many times the verie rustick people left both their delights and profites to harken to his songs; yet could he so well perfourme all armed sports, as if he had neuer had any other pen, then a Launce in his hand. He came in like a wild man; but such a wildnes, as shewed his eye-sight had tamed him, full of withered leaues, which though they fell not, still threatned falling. His *Impresa* was, a mill-horse still bound to goe in one circle; with this word, *Data fata sequutus*. But after him the *Corinthian* Knights absolutely preuailed, especially a great noble man of *Corinth*; whose deuse was to come without any deuse, all in white like a new knight, as indeed he was; but so new, as his newnes shamed most of the others long exercise. Then another from whose tent I remember a birde was made flie, with such art to carry a written embassage among the Ladies, that one might say, If a liue bird, how so taught? if a dead bird, how so

made? Then he, who hidden, man and horse in a great figure liuely representing the *Phœnix*: the fire tooke so artificially, as it consumed the birde, and left him to rise as it were, out of the ashes thereof. Against whom was the fine frosen Knight, frosen in despaire ; but his armor so naturally representing Ice, and all his furniture so liuely answering therto, as yet did I neuer see any thing that pleased me better.

But the delight of those pleasing sights haue carried me too farre in an vnecessary discourse. Let it then suffice (most excellent Ladie) that you know the *Corinthians* that morning in the exercise (as they had done the dayes before) had the better; *Palladius* neither suffering vs, nor himselfe to take in hand that partie till the afternoone; when we were to fight in troopes, not differing otherwise from earnest, but that the sharpenesse of the weapons was taken away. But in the triall *Palladius* (especially led by *Musidorus*, and somewhat aided by me) himselfe truely behauing himselfe nothing like a beginner, brought the honor to rest it selfe that night of the *Iberian* side: And the next day, both morning, and after-noone being kept by our party, He (that saw the time fitte for that deliuerie he intended) called vnto vs to follow him; which we both bound by oth, and willing by good-wil, obeyed: and so the gard not daring to interrupt vs (he commanding passage) we went after him vpon the spur to a little house in a forrest neere by: which he thought would be the fittest resting place, till we might go further from his mothers fury, whereat he was no lesse angry, & ashamed, then desirous to obay *Zelmane*.

But his mother (as I learned since) vnderstanding by the gard her sonnes conuaying vs away (forgetting her greatnes, & resining modesty to more quiet thoughts) flew out from her place, and cried to be accompanied, for she her-selfe would follow vs. But what she did (being rather with vehemency of passion, then conduct of reason) made her stumble while she ran, & by her owne confusion hinder her owne desires. For so impatiently she commanded, as a good while no body knew what she com[m]anded; so as we had gotten so far the start, as to be alreedy past the confines of her kingdome before she ouer-tooke vs: and ouertake vs she did in the kingdome of *Bythinia*, not regarding shame, or daunger of hauing entred into anothers dominions: but (hauing with her about a three score hors-men) streight commaunded to take vs aliue, and not to regard her sonnes threatening therein: which they attempted to do, first by speach, & then by force. But neither liking their eloquence, nor fearing their might, we esteemed few swordes in a iust defence, able to resist any vniust assaulters. And so *Musidorus* incredible valour (beating downe all lets) made both me, and *Palladius*, so good way, that we had little to doo to ouercome weake wrong.

And now had the victorie in effect without bloud, when *Palladium* (heated with the fight, and angrie with his mothers fault) so pursued our assaylers, that one of them (who as I heard since had before our comming bene a speciall minion of *Andromanas*, and hated vs for hauing

dispossest him of her hart) taking him to be one of vs, with a traiterous blow slew his you[n]g Prince: who falling downe before our eyes, whom he specially had deliuered, iudge (sweetest Lady) whether anger might not be called iustice in such a case: once, so it wroght in us, that many of his subiects bodies we left there dead, to wait on him more faithfully to the other world.

All this while disdain, strengthened by the furie of a furious loue, made *Andromana* stay to the last of the combat: & whe[n] she saw vs light down, to see what help we might do to the helpelesse *Palladius*, she came run[n]ing madly vnto vs, then no lesse threatning, when she had no more power to hurt. But when she perceiued it was her onely sonne that lay hurt, and that his hurt was so deadly, as that alredy his life had loste the vse of the reasonable, and almost sensible part; then onely did misfortune lay his owne ouglinesse vpon his faulte, and make her see what she had done, and to what she was come: especiallie, finding in vs rather detestation then pittie (considering the losse of that young Prince) and resolution presently to depart, which stil she laboured to stay. But deprived of all comfort, with eyes full of death, she ranne to her sonnes dagger, and before we were aware of it (who else could haue stayed it) strake her selfe a mortall wound. But then her loue, though not her person, awaked pittie in vs, and I went to her, while *Musidorus* labored about *Palladius*. But the wound was past the cure of a better surgeon then my selfe, so as I could but receaue some few of her dying words; which were cursings of her ill set affection, and wishing vnto me many crosses & mischances in my loue, whe[n]soeuer I should loue, wherin I feare, and only feare that her prayer is from aboue granted. But the noise of this fight, & issue thereof being blazed by the country people to some noble-me[n] there-about, they came thither, and finding the wrong offered vs, let us go on our iourney, we hauing recommended those royal bodies vnto the[m] to be conueyed to the King of *Iberia*. With that *Philoclea*, seeing the teares stand in his eyes with remembrance of *Palladius*, but much more of that which therupon grew, she would needs drinke a kisse from those eyes, and he sucke another from her lippes; whereat she blushed, & yet kissed him againe to hide her blushing. Which had almost brought *Pyrocles* into another discourse, but that she with so sweete a rigor forbad him, that he durst not rebell, though he found it a great war to keepe that peace, but was faine to go on his storie: for so she absolutely badde him, and he durst not know how to disobey.

CHAP. 22.

1 *A new complaint of Pamphilus new change, 2 to a gracelesse curtisan. 3 Zelmane loues, and as a Page serues Pyrocles. 4 The two Princes policie to reconcile two warring brothers. 5 The vnbrotherly braue combat of Tydeus and*

Telenor. 6 Plexirtus *his viperine vnkindnes to the kindest Leonatus.* 7 *His conquest by the two brothers,* 8 *and his dogtrick to destroy them by themselues.* 9 *The regreete of the dying brothers.*



O (said he) parting from that place before the Sunne had much abased himselfe of his greatest height, we sawe sitting vpon the drie sandes (which yeelded at that time a verie hotte reflection) a faire Gentlewoman, whose gesture accused her of much sorow, & euery way shewed she cared not what paine she put her body to, since the better parte (her minde) was laide vnder so much agonie: and so was she dulled withall, that we could come so neare, as to heare her speeches, and yet she not perceiue the hearers of her lamentation. But wel we might vnderstand her at times, say, Thou doost kill me with thy vnkind falshood: and, It greeues me not to die, but it greeues me that thou art the murtherer: neither doth mine owne paine so much vexe me, as thy error. For God knowes, it would not trouble me to be slaine for thee, but much it torme[n]ts me to be slain by thee. Thou art vntrue *Pamphilus*, thou art vntrue, and woe is me therefore. How oft didst thou swear vnto me, that the Sun should loose his light, and the rocks runne vp and down like little kiddes, before thou wouldst falsifie thy faith to me? Sunne therefore put out thy shining, & rockes runne mad for sorrow, for *Pamphilus* is false. But alas, the Sun keepes his light, though thy faith be darkned; the rockes stand still, though thou change like the wethercocke. O foole that I am, that thought I coulde graspe water, and binde the winde. I might well haue knowe[n] thee by others, but I would not; & rather wished to learne poison by drinking it my selfe, while my loue helped thy wordes to deceiue me. Well, yet I would thou hadst made a better choise, when thou didst forsake thy vnfortunate *Leucippe*. But it is no matter, *Baccha* (thy new mistres) will reuenge my wrongs. But do not *Baccha*, let *Pamphilus* liue happie, though I die.

And much more to such like phrase she spake, but that I (who had occasion to know some-thing of that *Pamphilus*) slept to comfort her: & though I could not doo that, yet I gotte thus much knowledge of her, that this being the same *Leucippe*, to whom the vnconstante *Pa[m]philus* had betrothed himselfe, which had moued the other Ladies to such indignation as I tolde you: nether her woorthinesse (which in truthe was great) nor his owne suffering for her (which is woont to endeare affection) could fetter his ficklenes, but that before his mariage-day appointed, he had taken to wife that *Baccha*, of whom she complayned; one, that in diuers places I had heard before blazed, as the most impudentlie vnchaste woman of all *Asia*; and withall, of such an imperiousnes therein, that she would not stick to employ them (whom she made unhappie with her fauour) to draw more companions of their follie: in the multitude of whom she did no lesse glorie, then a Captaine would doo, of being followed by braue souldiers:

waiwardly proud; and therefore bold, because extreemely faultie: and yet hauing no good thing to redeeme both these, and other vnlovely parts, but a little beautie, disgraced with wandring eyes, and vnwaied speeches; yet had *Pamphilus* (for her) left *Leucippe*, and withall, left his faith: *Leucippe*, of whom one looke (in a cleere iudgement) would haue bene more acceptable, then all her kindenesses so prodigallie bestowed. For myselfe, the remembrance of his crueltie to *Dido*, ioyned to this, stirred me to seeke some reuenge vpon him, but that I thought, it shoulde be a gayne to him to lose his life, being so matched: and therefore (leauing him to be punished by his owne election) we conueyed *Leucippe* to a house thereby, dedicated to vestall Nunnes, where she resolved to spende all her yeares (which her youth promised shoulde be many) in bewayling the wrong, and yet praying for the wrong-dooer.

But the next morning, we (hauing striuen with the Sunnes earlines) were scarcely beyond the prospect of the high turrets of that building, when there ouertoke vs a young Gentleman, for so he seemed to vs, but indeede (sweete Ladie) it was the faire *Zelmae*, *Plexirtus* daughter; whom vnconsulting affection (vnfortunately borne to me-wards) had made borrowe so much of her naturall modestie, as to leaue her more-decent rayments, and taking occasion of *Andromanas* tumultuous pursuing vs, had apparrelled her selfe like a Page, with a pittifull crueltie cutting of her golden haire, leauing nothing, but the short curles, to couer that noble head, but that she ware vpon it a faire head-peece, a shielde at her back, and a lance in her hand, els disarmed. Her apparrell of white, wrought vpon with broken knots, her horse, faire & lustie, which she rid so, as might shew a fearefull boldnes, daring to doo that, which she knew that she knew not how to doo: and the sweetnes of her countenance did giue such a grace to what she did, that it did make hansom the vnhansomnes, and make the eye force the minde to beleue, that there was a praise in that vnskilfulnesse. But she straight approached me, and with fewe words (which borrowed the help of her countenance to make themselues vnderstood) she desired me to accept her in my seruice; telling me, she was a noble-mans sonne of *Iberia*, her name *Daiphantus*, who hauing seene what I had done in that court, had stolne from her father, to follow me. I enquired the particularities of the maner of *Andromanas* following me, which by her I vnderstood, she hiding nothing (but her sexe) from me. And still me thought I had seen that face, but the great alteration of her fortune, made her far distant from my memorie: but liking very well the yong Gentleman, (such I tooke her to be) admitted this *Daiphantus* about me: who well shewed, there is no seruice like his, that serues because he loues. For, though borne of Princes bloud, brought vp with tenderest education, vnapt to seruice (because a woman) & full of thoughts (because in a strange estate;) yet Loue enioyned such diligence, that no apprentise, no, no bondslaue could euer be by feare more readie at all commaundementes, then that yong Princesse was. How often (alas) did her eyes say vnto me, that they loued? and yet, I (not looking for such a matter) had not my conceipt open, to vnderstand them. How ofte would she come creeping to me,

betweene gladnes to be neere me, & feare to offend me? Truly I remember, that then I marvailing, to see her receiue my comandements with sighes, and yet do them with cheere-fulnes: sometimes answering me in such riddles, as I then thought childish in experie[n]ce: but since returning to my reme[m]brance, they haue come more neere vnto my knowledge: & pardon me (onely deare Lady) that I vse many words: for her affection to me deserues of me an affectionate speach.

In such sort did she serue me in that kingdom of *Bythinia*, for two moneths space. In which time we brought to good end, a cruell warre long maintained betweene the King of *Bythinia* and his brother. For my excellent cousin, and I (diuiding our selues to either side) found meanes (after some triall we had made of our selues) to get such credite with them, as we brought them to as great peace betweene the[m]selues, as loue towards vs, for hauing made the peace. Which done, we intended to returne through the Kingdome of *Galatia*, towarde *Thrace*, to ease the care of our father and mother, who (we were sure) first with the shipwracke; and then with the other daungers we dayly past, should haue litle rest in their thoughts, till they saw vs.

But we were not entred into that Kingdome, whe[n] by the noise of a great fight, we were guided to a pleasaunt valey, which like one of those Circusses, which in great cities somewhere doth giue a pleasant spectacle of run[n]ing horses; so of either side stretching it selfe in a narrow length was it hemd in by wooddy hilles; as if indeed Nature had meant therein to make a place for beholders. And there we behelde one of the cruellest fights betweene two Knights, that euer hath adorned the martial storie. So as I must co[n]fesse, a while we stood wondring, another while delighted with the rare brauery therof; till seing such streames of bloud, as threatned a drowning of life, we galloped towarde them to part them. But we were preuented by a dosen armed Knights, or rather villains, who using this time of their extreame feeblenesse, all together set vpon them. But common daunger brake of particular discorde, so that (though with a dying weakenes) with a liuely courage they resisted, and by our help draue away, or slue those murdering attempters: among whom we hapt to take aliuie the principall. But going to disarme those two excellent Knights, we found with no lesse wonder to vs, then astonishment to themselues, that they were the two valiaunt, and indeede famous Brothers, *Tydeus* and *Telenor*; whose aduenture (as afterwarde we made that vngratious wretch confesse) had thus fallen out.

After the noble Prince *Leonatus* had by his fathers death succeeded in the kingdome of *Galatia*, he (forgetting all former iniuries) had receiued that naughtie *Plexirtus* into a streight degree of fauour, his goodnesse being as apt to be deceiued, as the others crafte was to deceiue. Till by plaine prooffe finding, that the vngratefull man went about to poyson him, yet would not suffer his kindnesse to be ouercome, not by iustice it selfe: but calling him to him, vsed wordes to this purpose. *Plexirtus* (said he) this wickednesse

is founde by thee. No good deedes of mine haue bene able to keepe it downe in thee. All men counsell me to take away thy life, likely to bring foorth nothing, but as daungerous, as wicked effects. But I cannot finde it in my harte, remembering what fathers sonne thou arte. But since it is the violence of ambition, which perchance puls thee from thine owne iudgement, I will see, whether the satisfying that, may quiet the ill working of thy spirites. Not farre hence is the great cittie of *Trebisonde*; which, with the territorie about it, aunciently pertained vnto this crowne, now vniustly possessed, and as vniustly abused by those, who haue neither title to holde it, nor vertue to vse it. To the conquest of that for thy selfe I will lende thee force, and giue thee my right. Go therfore, and with lesse vnnaturalnesse glut thy ambition there; and that done, if it be possible, learne vertue.

Plexirtus, mingling forsworne excuses with false-meant promises, gladly 7 embraced the offer: and hastilie sending backe for those two Brothers (who at that time were with vs succouring the gracious Queen *Erona*) by their vertue chiefly (if not onely) obteyned the conquest of that goodly dominion. Which indeede done by them, gaue them such an authentic, that though he raigned, they in effect ruled, most men honouring them, because they onely deserued honour; and many, thinking therein to please *Plexirtus*, considering how much he was bound vnto them: while they likewise (with a certaine sincere boldenesse of selfe-warranting friendship) accepted all openly and plainely, thinking nothing should euer by *Plexirtus* be thought too much in them, since all they were, was his.

But he (who by the rules of his own mind, could co[n]strue no other end of me[n]s doings, but self seking) sode[n]ly feared what they could doo; and as sodainely suspected, what they would doo, 8 and as sodainely hated them, as hauing both might, and minde to doo. But dreading their power, standing so strongly in their owne valour, & others affection, he durst not take open way against them; and as harde it was to take a secrete, they being so continually followed by the best, & euery way hablest of that region: and therefore vsed this diuelish sleight (which I wil tel you) not doubting (most wicked man) to turne their owne friedship toward him to their owne destruction. He, (knowing that they wel knew, there was no friendship betweene him and the new King of *Pontus*, neuer since he succoured *Leonatus* and vs, to his ouerthrow) gaue them to vnderstand that of late there had passed secrete defiance betweene them, to meete priuately at a place apointed. Which though not so fit a thing for men of their greatnes, yet was his honour so engaged, as he could not go backe. Yet faining to find himself weake by some counterfait infirmitie, the day drawing neere, he requested each of them to go in his stead; making either of the sweare, to keep the matter secret, euer ech fro[m] other, deliuering the selfe same particularities to both, but that he told *Tydeus*, the King would meet him in a blew armour; & *Telenor*, that it was a black armour: & with wicked subiltie (as if it had bene so apointed) caused *Tydeus* to take a black armour, & *Telenor* a blew; appointing them waies how to go, so as he knew they should not

meet, til they came to the place appointed, where each had promised to keep silence, lest the King should discover it was not *Plexirtus*: and there in await had he laied these murtherers, that who ouerliued the other, should by them be dispatched: he not daring trust more then those, with that enterprise, and yet thinking them too few, till themselues by themselues were weakened.

This we learned chiefly, by the chiefe of those way-beaters, after the death of those worthie brothers, whose loue was no lesse, then their valour: but well we might finde much thereof by their pitifull 9 lamentation, when they knew their mismeting, and saw each other (in despite of the Surgerie we could doo vnto them) striuing who should runne fastest to the goale of death: each bewailing the other, and more dying in the other, then in himselfe: cursing their owne hands for doing, and their breastes for not sooner suffering: detesting their vnfortunately-spent time in hauing serued so vngrateful a Tyraunt: and accusing their folly in hauing beleued, he could faithfully loue, who did not loue faithfulnes: wishing vs to take heed, how we placed our good wil vpon any other ground, then prooue of vertue: since length of acquaintance, mutuall secrecies, nor height of benefits could binde a sauage harte ; no man being good to other, that is not good in himself. Then (while any hope was) beseeching vs to leaue the cure of him that besought, and onely looke to the other. But when they found by themselues, and vs, no possibilitie, they desired to be ioined; and so embracing and crauing that pardon each of other, which they denied to themselues, they gaue vs a most sorrowfull spectacle of their death; leauing fewe in the world behind them, their matches in any thing, if they had soone inough knowne the ground and limits of friendship. But with wofull hartes, we caused those bodies to be conueyed to the nexte towne of *Bythinia*, where we learning thus much (as I haue tolde you) caused the wicked Historian to co[n]clude his history, with his owne well-deserued death.

CHAP. 23.

1 *Zelmanes griefe for Plexirtus fault.* 2 *Otaues, and his Gyants warre on Pontus.* 3 *Plexirtus endaungered, needes helpe of the dead brothers.* 4 *Zelmane thought-sicke, vnmaskes her selfe.* 5 *Her dying teares* 6 *and last requestes.* 7 *Musidorus to Pontus, Pyrocles hardly partes to saue Plexirtus.* 8 *The sourse and course of his deaths-doom,* 9 *stayed by Pyrocles.* 10 *The combat of Pontus well ended.* 11 *The Asian Princes meeting, to honour the two Greekes.*



Vt then (I must tell you) I found such wofull countenances;
in *Daiphantus*, that I could not but much
marvaile (finding them continew beyond the first assault of pittie) 1
how the cause of strangers (for further I did not conceiue) could so
deepely pearce. But the truth indeed is, that partly with the shame &
sorrow she tooke of her fathers faultinesse, partly with the feare, that the hate I
co[n]ceiued against him, would vtterly disgrace her in my opinion, whensoever I
should know her, so vehemently perplexed her, that her fayre colour decayed; and
dayly, and hastily grew into the very extreme working of sorowfulnessse: which oft I
sought to learne, & helpe. But she, as fearefull as louing, still concealed it; and so
decaying still more and more, in the excellencie of her fairenesse, but that whatsoever
weakenesse took away, pitie seemed to adde: yet still she forced her selfe to waite on
me, with such care and diligence, as might well shew had bene taught in no other
schoole, but Loue.

While we returning againe to embarke our selues for *Greece*, vnderstood that the
mighty *Otaues* (brother to *Barzanes*
slaine by *Musidorus*, in the battaile of the six Princes) had entred vpo[n] the 2
kingdome of Pontus, partly vpon the pretences he had to the crowne, but
principally, because he would reuenge vpon him (whom he knew we loued) the losse
of his brother: thincking (as indeede he had cause) that wheresoever we were, hearing
of his extremitie, we would come to relieue him; in spite whereof he doubted not to
preuaile, not onely vpon the confidence of his owne vertue and power, but especially
because he had in his co[m]pany two mighty Giants, sonnes to a couple whom we slue
in the same realme: they hauing bene absent at their fathers death, and now returned,
willingly entered into his seruice, hating (more then he) both vs, and that King
of *Pontus*. We therefore withall speede went thetherwarde, but by the way this fell
out, which whensoever I remember without sorrow, I must forget withall, all
humanitie.

Poore *Daiphantus* fell extreme sick, yet would needs conquere the delicacie of her
constitution, and force her selfe to
waite on me: till one day going towarde *Pontus*, we met one, who in great hast 3
went seeking for *Tydeus* & *Telenor*, whose death as yet was not knowne vnto the
messenger; who (being their seruaunt and knowing how deerely they loued *Plexirtus*)
brought them word, how since their departing, *Plexirtus* was in pre[se]nt daunger of a
cruel death, if by the valiantnesse of one of the best Knightes of the world, he were
not reskewed: we enquired no further of the matter (being glad he should now to his
losse finde what an vnprofitable treason it had bene vnto him, to dismember himselfe
of two such friendes) and so let the messenger part, not sticking to make him know his
masters destruction, by the falshood of *Plexirtus*.

But the grieffe of that (finding a bodie already brought to the last degree of
weakenesse) so ouerwhelmed the little

remnant of the spirits left in *Daiphantus*, that she fell sodainely into deadly soundings; neuer comming to her selfe, but that withall she returned to make most pittifull lamentations; most straunge vnto vs, because we were farre from gheasing the ground thereof. But finding her sicknesse such, as beganne to print death in her eyes, we made al hast possible to conuey her to the next towne: but before we could lay her on a bed, both we, & she might find in herselfe, that the harbinger of ouer-hastie death, had prepared his lodging in that daintie body, which she vndoubtedly feeling, with a weake chearefulness, shewed co[m]fort therin; and then desiring vs both to come neere her, & that no bodie els might be present; with pale, and yet (euen in palenes) louely lippes, Now or neuer, and neuer indeed, but now it is time for me (said she) to speake: and I thanke death which gaue me leaue to discouer that, the suppressing whereof perchance hath bene the sharpest spur, that hath hasted my race to this end. Know then my Lords, and especially you my Lord and master, *Pyrocles* that your page *Daiphantus* is the vnfortunat *Zelmane*, who for your sake caused my (as vnfortunate) loue, and cosen, *Palladius*, to leaue his fathers court, and co[n]sequently, both him & my Aunt his mother, to loose their liues. For your sake my selfe haue become, of a Princesse a Page: and for your sake haue put off the apparell of a woman, & (if you iudge not more mercifully) modestie. We were amazed at her speach, and the[n] had (as it were) new eyes giue vs to perceue that which before had bene a present stra[n]ger to our minds. For indeed, we forthwith knew it to be the face of *Zelmane*, who before we had knowen in the court of *Iberia*. And sorrow and pittie laying her paine vpon me, I comforted her the best I could by the tendernes of good-will, pretending indeed better hope then I had of her recouery.

But she that had inward ambassadors from the tyra[n]t that should shortly oppresse her. No, my deere master (said she) I neither hope nor desire to liue. I know you would neuer haue loued me (& with that she wept) nor, alas, had it bene reason you should, considering manie wayes my vnworthines. It sufficeth me that the strange course I haue take[n], shall to your remembrance, witnesse my loue: and yet this breaking of my harte, before I would discouer my paine, will make you (I hope) think I was not altogether vnmodest. Thinke of me so, deare Master, and that thought shal be my life: and with that, languishingly looking vpon me; And I pray you (said she) euen by these dying eies of mine (which are onely sorrie to dye, because they shall lose your sight) and by these pouled lockes of mine (which while they were long, were the ornament of my sex, now in their short curles, the testimonie of my seruitude) and by the seruice I haue done you (which God knowes hath beene full of loue) thinke of me after my death with kindnes, though ye cannot with loue. And whensoever ye shall make any other Ladie happie with your placed affectio[n], if you tell her my folly, I pray you speake of it, not with scorne, but with pitie. I assure you (deare Princesse of my life, for how could it be otherwise?) her words and her manners, with the liuely consideration of her loue, so pearced me, that I, though I had diuerse griefes before, yet me thought I

neuer felt till then, how much sorow enfeebleth all resolution. For I coulde not chuse, but yeeld to the weakenes of abundant weeping; in trueth with such grieffe, that I could willingly at that time haue chaunged liues with her.

But when she saw my teares, O God (said she) howe largely am I recompenced for my losses? why then (said shee) I may take boldnesse to make some requests vnto you. I besought her to doo, 6
vowing the performance, though my life were the price therof. She shewed great ioy: The first (said she) is this, that you will pardon my father the displeasure you haue iustly conceiued against him, and for this once succour, him out of the daunger wherin he is: I hope he will amende: and I pray you, whensoever you remember him to be the faultie *Plexirtus*, remember withall that he is *Zelmanes* father. The second is, that when you come into *Greece*, you will take vnto your selfe this name (though vn lucky) of *Daiphantus*, and vouchsafe to be called by it: for so shal I be sure, you shall haue cause to remember me: and let it please your noble cousin to be called *Palladius*, that I doo that right to that poore Prince, that his name may yet liue vpon the earth in so excellent a person: and so betwene you, I trust sometimes your vn luckie page shall be (perhaps with a sigh) mencioned. Lstly, let me be buried here obscurely, not suffering my friends to knowe my fortune, till (when you are safely returned to your own countrie) you cause my bones to be conueied thither, and laid (I beseech you) in some place, where your selfe vouchsafe sometimes to resort. Alas, small petitions for such a suter; which yet she so earnestly craued, that I was faine to sweare the accomplishment. And then kissing me, & often desiring me not to condemne her of lightnesse, in mine armes she deliuered her pure soule to the purest place: leauing me as full of agonie, as kindnes, pitie, and sorow could make an honest harte. For I must confesse for true, that if my starres had not wholly reserued me for you, there els perhaps I might haue loued, & (which had bene most strange) begun my loue after death: whereof let it be the lesse marvaile, because somewhat shee did resemble you: though as farre short of your perfectio[n], as her selfe dying, was of her flourishing: yet somthing there was, which (when I saw a picture of yours) brought againe her figure into my reme[m]brance, and made my harte as apte to receiue the wounde, as the power of your beauty with vnresistable force to pearce.

But we in wofull (& yet priuat) manner burying her, performed her commandement: & then enquiring of her fathers estate, certainly learned that he was presentlie to be succoured, or by death to 7
passe the neede of succour. Therefore we determined to diuide our selues; I, according to my vowe, to helpe him, and *Musidorus* toward the King of *Pontus*, who stood in no lesse need then immediate succour, and euen readie to depart one from the other, there came a messenger from him, who after some enquirie found vs, giuing vs to vnderstand, that he trusting vpon vs two, had apointed the combat betweene him & vs, against *Otaues*, and the two Gyants. Now the day was so accorded, as it was impossible for me both to succour *Plexirtus*, & be there, where my honour was not

onely gaged so far, but (by the straunge working of vniust fortune) I was to leaue the[m] standing by *Musidorus*, whom better then my selfe I loued, to go saue him whom for iust causes I hated. But my promise giuen, & giuen to *Zelmane*, & to *Zelmane* dying, preuailed more with me, then my friendship to *Musidorus*: though certainly I may affirme, nothing had so great rule in my thoughts as that. But my promise caried me the easier, because *Musidorus* himselfe would not suffer me to breake it. And so with heauy mindes (more careful each of others successe, the[n] of our owne) we parted; I towarde the place, where I vnderstood *Plexirtus* was prisoner to an auncient Knight, absolutely gouerning a goodly Castle, with a large territory about it, whereof he acknowledged no other soueraigne, but himselfe: whose hate to *Plexirtus*, grew for a kinsman of his, who he malitiously had murdered, because in the time that he raigned in *Galatia*, he fou[n]d him apt to practise for the restoring of his vertuous brother *Leonatus*. This old Knight, still thirsting for reuenge, vsed (as the way to it) a pollicie, which this occasion I will tell you, prepared for him. *Plexirtus* in his youth had married *Zelmanes* mother, who dying of that only child-birth, he a widdower, and not yet a King, haunted the Court of *Armenia*; where (as he was coming to winne fauour) he obtained great good liking of *Artaxia*, which he pursued, till (being called home by his father) he falsly got his fathers king-dome; and then neglected his former loue: till throwen out of that (by our meanes) before he was deeply rooted in it, and by and by again placed in *Trebisonde*, vnderstanding that *Artaxia* by her brothers death was become Queen of *Armenia*, he was hotter then euer, in that pursuit, which being vnderstood by this olde Knight, he forged such a letter, as might be written from *Artaxia*, entreating his present (but very priuie) repaire thether, giuing him faithfull promise of presente mariage: a thing farre from her thought, hauing faithfully, and publiquely protested, that she would neuer marrie any, but some such Prince who woulde giue sure prooffe, that by his meanes we were destroyed. But he (no more wittie to frame, then blinde to iudge hopes) bitte hastily at the baite, and in priuate maner poasted toward her, but by the way he was met by this Knight, far better accompanied, who quickly laid holde of him, & condemned him to death, cruell enough, if any thing may be both cruell and iust. For he caused him to be kept in a miserable prison, till a day appointed, at which time he would deliuer him to be deuoured by a monstrous beast, of most vgly shape, armed like a Rhinoceros, as strong as an Elephant, as fierce as a Lion, as nimble as a Leopard, and as cruell as a Tigre; whom he hauing kept in a strong place, from the first youth of it, now thought no fitter match, then such a beastly monster with a monstrous Tyrant: proclaiming yet withall, that if any so well loued him, as to venture their liues against this beast, for him, if they ouercame, he should be saued: not caring how many they were (such confidence he had in the monsters strength) but especially hoping to entrappe therby the great courages of *Tydeus* and *Telenor*, whom he no lesse hated, because they had bene principall instruments of the others power.

I dare say, if *Zelmane* had knowen what daunger I should haue passed, she would rather haue let her father perishe, then me to haue bidden that aduenture. But my word was past, and truely, the hardnes of the enterprise, was not so much a bitte, as a spurre vnto me; knowing well, that the iorney of high honor lies not in plaine wayes. Therefore, going thether, and taking sufficient securitie, that *Plexirtus* should be deliuered if I were victorious, I vndertooke the combatte: and (to make shorte, excellent Ladie, and not trouble your eares with recounting a terrible matter) so was my weakenes blessed from aboue, that without dangerous wounds I slewe that monster, which hundreds durste not attempt: to so great admiration of many (who from a safe place might looke on) that there was order giuen, to haue the fight, both by sculpture and picture, celebrated in most parts of *Asia*. And the olde nobleman so well liked me, that he loued me; onely bewayling, my vertue had beene imployed to saue a worse monster then I killed: whom yet (according to faith giuen) he deliuered, and accompanied me to the kingdome of *Pontus*, whether I would needes in all speede go, to see whether it were possible for me (if perchance the day had bene delaied) to come to the combat. But that (before I came) had bene thus finished.

The vertuous *Leonatus* vnderstanding two so good friends of his were to be in that danger, would perforce be one him selfe: where he did valiantly, and so did the King of *Pontus*. But the truth is, that both they being sore hurt, the incomparable *Musldorus* finished the combat by the death of both the Giants, and the taking of *Otaues* prisoner. To whom as he gaue his life, so he gotte a noble friend: for so he gaue his worde to be, and he is well knowen to thinke him selfe greater in being subiect to that, then in the greatnes of his principallitie.

But thither (vnderstanding of our being there) flocked great multitudes of many great persons, and euen of Princes; especially those, whom we had made beholding vnto vs: as, the Kings of *Phrygia*, *Bythinia*, with those two hurte, of *Pontus* and *Galatia*, and *Otaues* the prisoner, by *Musidorus* set free; and thither came *Plexirtus* of *Trebisonde*, and *Antiphilus*, then King of *Lycia*; with as many mo great Princes, drawen ether by our reputation, or by willingnes to acknowledge them selues obliged vnto vs, for what we had done for the others. So as in those partes of the world, I thinke, in many hundreds of yeares, there was not seene so royall an assemblie: where nothing was let passe to doo vs the highest honors, which such persons (who might commaund both purses and inuentions) could perfourme. All from all sides bringing vnto vs right royall presents (which we to auoide both vnkindnes, and im-portunitie, liberally receiued,) & not content therewith, would needes accept, as from vs, their crownes, and acknowledge to hold them of vs: with many other excessiue honors, which would not suffer the measure of this short leisure to describe vnto you.

CHAP. 24.

- 1 *The causes and prouisions of the Princes embarking for Arcadia,*
- 2 *Plexirtus his treason against them disclosed by one,*
- 3 *attempted by another of his ministers.*
- 4 *Sedition and slaughter in the shippe about it.*
- 5 *Their shipwrack by fire.*
- 6 *Pyrocles fight with the Captaine, and escape from sea.*
- 7 *The amarous concluding the olde, and beginning a newe storie, both broken of by Miso.*



Vt wee quickly aweary thereof, hasted to *Greece*-ward, led thither partly with the desire of our parents, but hastened principally, because I vnderstoode that *Anaxius* with open mouth of defamation had gone thither to seeke mee, and was nowe come to *Peloponnesus* where from Court to Court he made enquiry of me, doing yet himselfe so noble deedes, as might hap to authorize an ill opinion of me. We therefore suffred but short delayes, desiring to take this cuntry in our way, so renowned ouer the worlde, that no Prince coulde pretend height, nor begger lownesse, to barre him from the sound thereof: renowned indeede, not so much for the ancient prayses attributed thereunto, as for the hauing in it *Argalus* and *Amphialus* (two knights of such rare prowes, as we desired especially to know) and yet by farre, not so much for that, as without suffering of comparison for the beautie of you and your sister, which makes all indifferent iudges, that speake thereof, account this cuntrye as a temple of deities. But these causes indeed mouing vs to come by this land, we embarked our selues in the next porte, whether all those Princes (sauing *Antiphilus*) who returned, as he pretended, not able to tarry long from *Erona*) conueied vs. And there found we a ship most royally furnished by *Plexirtus*, who made all thinges so proper (as well for our defence, as ease) that all the other Princes greatly commended him for it: who (seeming a quite altered man) had nothing but repe[n]tance in his eies, friendship in his gesture, & vertue in his mouth: so that we who had promised the sweete *Zelmane* to pardon him, now not onely forgaue, but began to fauour; perswading our selues with a youthfull credulitie, that perchance thinges were not so euil as we tooke them, & as it were desiring our owne memorie, that it might be so. But so were we licensed from those Princes, truly not without teares, especially of the vertuous *Leonatus*, who with the king of *Po[n]tus*, would haue come with vs, but that we (in respect of the ones young wife, & both their new settled kingdomes) would not suffer it. Then would they haue sent whole fleets to guard vs: but we, that desired to passe secretely into *Greece*, made them leaue that motion, when they found that more ships, then one, would be displeasing vnto us. But so co[m]mitting our selues to the vncertaine discretio[n] of

the wind, we (then determining as soone as we came to *Greece*, to take the names of *Daiphantus* and *Palladius*, as well for our owne promise to *Zelmane*, as because we desired to come vnknowne into *Greece*) left the *Asian* shore full of Princely persons, who euen vpon their knees, recommended our safeties to the deuotion of their chiefe desires: among whom none had bene so officious (though I dare affirme, all quite contrarie to his vnfaithfulncs) as *Plexirtus*.

So hauing sailed almost two daies, looking for nothing but when we might looke vpon the land, a graue man (whom we had seene of great trust with *Plexirtus*, and was sent as our principall guide) came vnto us, and with a certaine kinde manner, mixt with shame, and repentaunce, began to tell vs, that he had taken such a loue vnto vs (considering our youth and fame) that though he were a seruaunt, and a seruaunt of such trust about *Plexirtus*, as that he had committed vnto him euen those secretes of his hart, which abhorde all other knowledge; yet he rather chose to reueale at this time a most pernicious counsell, then by concealing it bring to ruin those, whom he could not choose but honour. So went he on, and tolde vs, that *Plexirtus* (in hope thereby to haue *Artaxia*, endowed with the great Kingdome of *Armenia*, to his wife) had giuen him order, when we were neere *Greece*, to frnde some opportunitie to murder vs, bidding him to take vs a sleepe, because he had seene what we could do waking. Now sirs (said he) I would rather a thousand times loose my life, then haue my remembrance (while I liued) poysoned with such a mischief: and therefore if it were onely I, that knewe herein the Kings order, then should my disobedience be a warrant of your safetie. But to one more (said he) namely the Captaine of the shippe, *Plexirtus* hath opened so much touching the effect of murdering you, though I think, laying the cause rather vpon old grudge, then his hope of *Artaxia*. And my selfe, (before the consideration of your excellencies had drawne loue and pittie into minde) imparted it to such, as I thought fittest for such a mischief. Therefore, I wishe you to stand vpon your garde, assuring you, that what I can doo for your safetie, you shall see (if it come to the pushe) by me performed. We thanked him, as the matter indeed deserued, and from that time would no more disarme our selues, nor the one sleepe without his friendes eyes waked for him: so that it delaid the going forward of their bad enterprize, while they thought it rather chaunce, then prouidence, which made vs so behaue our selues.

But when we came within halfe a daies sayling of the shore, soone they saw it was speedily, or not at all to be done.

Then (and I remember it was about the first watch in the night) came the Captaine and whispered the Councillour in the eare: But he (as it should seem) disswading him from it, the Captaine (who had bene a pyrate from his youth, and often blouded in it) with a lowde voice sware, that if *Plexirtus* bad him, he would not sticke to kill God him selfe. And therewith cald his mates, and in the Kings name willed them to take vs, alieue or dead; encouraging the with the spoile of vs, which he said, (& indeed was true) would yeeld many exceeding rich iewels. But the Councillour (according to his

promise) commanded them they should not com[m]it such a villany, protesting that he would sta[n]d betweene them and the Kings anger therein. Wherewith the Captaine enraged: Nay (said he) the we must begin with this traitor him selfe: and therewith gaue him a sore blow vpon the head, who honestly did the best he could to reuenge himselfe.

But then we knew it time rather to encounter, then waite for mischiefe. And so against the Captaine we went, who straight was enuironned with most parte of the Souldiers and Mariners. And yet the truth is, there were some, whom either the authoritie of the councellour, doubt of the Kings minde, or liking of vs, made draw their swords of our side: so that quickly it grew a most confused fight. For the narrownesse of the place, the darkenesse of the time, and the vncertainty in such a tumult how to know frie[n]ds from foes, made the rage of swordes rather guide, then be guided by their maisters. For my cousin and me, truly I thinke we neuer perfourmed lesse in any place, doing no other hurte, then the defence of our selues, and succouring them who came for it, draue vs to: for not discerning perfectlie, who were for, or against vs, we thought it lesse euill to spare a foe, then spoyle a friend. But from the hiest to the lowest parte of the shippe there was no place lefte, without cries of murdring, and murdered persons. The Captaine I hapt a while to fight withall, but was driuen to parte with him, by hearing the crie of the Councellour, who receiued a mortall wounde, mistaken of one of his owne side. Some of the wiser would call to parley, & wish peace, but while the wordes of peace were in their mouthes, some of their auditours gaue them death for their hire. So that no man almost could conceiue hope of liuing, but being lefte aliue: and therefore euery one was willing to make him selfe roome, by dispatching almost any other: so that the great number in the ship was reduced to exceeding few, when of those few the most part weary of those troubles leapt into the boate, which was fast to the ship: but while they that were first, were cutting of the rope that tied it, others came leaping in, so disorderly, that they drowned both the boate, and themselues.

But while euen in that little remnant (like the children of *Cadmus*) we continued still to slay one an other, a fire, which (whether by the desperate malice of some, or intention to separate, or accidentally while all things were cast vp and downe) it should seeme had taken a good while before, but neuer heeded of us, (who onely thought to preserue, or reuenge) now violently burst out in many places, and began to maister the principall partes of the ship. Then necessitie made vs see, that, a common enemy sets at one a ciuill warre: for that little all we were (as if we had bene waged by one man to quench a fire) streight went to resist that furious enimie by all art and labour: but it was too late, for already it did embrace and deuoure from the sterne, to the wast of the ship: so as labouring in vaine, we were driuen to get vp to the prow of the ship, by the worke of nature seeking to preserue life, as long as we could: while truely it was a straunge and ougly sight, to see so huge a fire, as it quickly grew to be, in the Sea, and in the

night, as if it had come to light vs to death. And by and by it had burned off the maste, which all this while had proudly borne the sayle (the winde, as might seeme, delighted to carrie fire and bloud in his mouth) but now it fell ouer boord, and the fire growing neerer vs, it was not onely terrible in respect of what we were to attend, but insupportable through the heat of it.

So that we were constrained to bide it no longer, but disarming and stripping our selues, and laying our selues vpon such things, as we thought might help our swimming to the lande (too far for our owne strength to beare vs) my cousin and I threw our selues into the Sea. But I had swomme a very little way, when I felt (by reason of a wound I had) that I should not be able to bide the trauaile, and therefore seeing the maste (whose tackling had bene burnt of) flote cleare from the ship, I swamme vnto it, and getting on it, I found mine owne sworde, which by chaunce, when I threw it away (caught by a peece of canuas) had honged to the maste. I was glad, because I loued it well; but gladder, when I saw at the other end, the Captaine of the ship, and of all this mischief; who hauing a long pike, belike had borne him selfe vp with that, till he had set him selfe upon the mast. But when I perceiued him, Villaine (said I) doost thou thinke to ouerliue so many honest men, whom thy falsehood hath brought to destruction? with that bestriding the mast, I gat by little and little towards him, after such a manner as boies are wont (if euer you saw that sport) when they ride the wild mare. And he perceiuing my intention, like a fellow that had much more courage then honestie, set him selfe to resist. But I had in short space gotten within him, and (giuing him a sound blowe) sent him to feede fishes. But there my selfe remainde, vntill by pyrates I was taken vp, and among them againe taken prisoner, and brought into *Laconia*.

But what (said *Philoclea*) became of your cousin *Musidorus*? Lost said *Pyrocles*. Ah my *Pyrocles*, said *Philoclea*, I am glad I haue take[n] you. I perceiue you louers do not alwaies say truely: as though I know not your cousin *Dorus*, the sheepeheard? Life of my desires (saide *Pyrocles*) what is mine, euen to my soule is yours: but the secret of my friend is not mine. But if you know so much, then I may truely say, he is lost, since he is no more his owne. But I perceiue, your noble sister & you are great friends, and well doth it become you so to be. But go forward deare *Pyrocles*, I lo[n]g to heare out till your meeting me: for there to me-ward is the best part of your storie. Ah sweet *Philoclea* (said *Pyrocles*) do you thinke I can thinke so precious leysure as this well spent in talking. Are your eyes a fit booke (thinke you) to reade a tale vpon? Is my loue quiet inough to be an historian? Deare Princesse, be gracious vnto me. And then he faine would haue remembred to haue forgot himselfe. But she, with a sweetly disobeying grace, desired that her desire (once for euer) might serue, that no spotte might disgrace that loue which shortly she hoped shold be to the world warrantable. Faine he would not haue heard, til she threatned anger. And then the poore louer durst not, because he durst not. Nay I pray thee, deare *Pyrocles* (said she) let me haue my

story. Sweet Princesse (said he) giue my thoughts a litle respite: and if it please you, since this time must so be spoiled, yet it shall suffer the lesse harme, if you vouchsafe to bestow your voice, and let me know, how the good Queene *Erona* was betraied into such da[n]ger, and why *Plangus* sought me. For in deede, I should pitie greatly any mischance fallen to that Princesse. I will, said *Philoclea* smiling, so you giue me your worde, your handes shall be quiet auditours. They shal, said he, because subiect. Then began she to speake, but with so prettie and delightfull a maiestic, when she set her countenance to tell the matter, that *Pyrocles* could not chuse but rebell so far, as to kisse her. She would haue puld her head away, and speake, but while she spake he kist, and it seemed he fedde vpon her wordes: but shee gate away. Howe will you haue your discourse (said she) without you let my lips alone? He yeelded and tooke her hand. On this (said he) will I reuenge my wrong: and so began to make much of that hand, when her tale, & his delight were interrupted by *Miso*: who taking her time, while *Basilius* backe was turned, came vnto them: and told *Philoclea*, she deserued she knewe what, for leauing her mother, being euill at ease, to keepe companie with straungers. But *Philoclea* telling her, that she was there by her fathers commandemet, she went away muttering, that though her back, and her shoulders, and her necke were broken, yet as long as her tongue would wagge, it should do her errand to her mother.

CHAP. 25.

1 *Gynecias diuining dreame.* 2 *Her passionate ielousie in actions,* 3 *speech,* and 4 *song described.* 5 *Her troubling Philoclea and Zelmane,* 6 *The rebels troubling her.* 7 *Rebels resisted by Zelmane.* 8 *Zelmane assisted by Dorus.* 9 *Dorus and Zelmanes fiue memorable strokes.*

SO went vp *Miso* to *Gynecia*, who was at that time miserably vexed with this manner of dreame. It seemed vnto her to be in a place full of thornes, which so molested her, as she could neither abide standing still, nor treade safely going forward. In this case she thought *Zelmane*, being vpon a faire hill, delightfull to the eye, and easie in apparance, called her thither: whither with much anguish being come, *Zelmane* was vanished, and she found nothing but a dead bodie like vnto her husband, which seeming at the first with a strange smell to infect her, as she was redie likewise within a while to die, the dead bodie, she thought, tooke her in his armes, and said, *Gynecia*, leaue all; for here is thy onely rest.

With that she awaked, crying very loud, *Zelmane, Zelmane*. But remembering her selfe, and seeing *Basilius* by, (her

guiltie conscience more suspecting, then being suspected) she turned her call, and 2
called for *Philoclea*. *Miso* forthwith like a valiant shrew, (looking at *Basilus*, as
though she would speake though she died for it) tolde *Gynecia*, that her daughter had
bene a whole houre together in secrete talke with *Zelmane*: And (sayes she) for my
part I coulde not be heard (your daughters are brought vp in such awe) though I tolde
her of your pleasure sufficiently. *Gynecia*, as if she had heard her last doome
pronounced agaynst her, with a side-looke and chaunged countenance, O my Lorde
(said she) what meane you to suffer these yong folkes together? *Basilius* (that ayemed
nothing at the marke of her suspicion) smilingly tooke her in his armes, sweete wife
(said he) I thanke you for your care of your childe: but they must be youthes of other
mettall, then *Zelmane*, that can endaunger her. O but; cryed *Gynecia*, and therewith
she stayed: for then indeede she did suffer a right conflict, betwixt the force of loue,
and rage of ieaalousie. Manie times was she about to satisfie the spite of her minde, and
tell *Basilus*, how she knewe *Zelmane* to be farre otherwise then the outwarde
appearance. But those many times were all put backe, by the manifolde obiections of
her vehement loue. Faine she would haue barde her daughters happe, but loth she was
to cut off her owne hope. But now, as if her life had bene set vppon a wager of quicke
rysing, as weake as she was, she gat vp; though *Basilus*, (with a kindnesse flowing
onely from the fountaine of vnkindnesse, being in deede desirous to winne his
daughter as much time as might be) was loth to suffer it, swearing he sawe sickenesse
in her face, and therefore was loath she should aduenture the ayre.

But the great and wretched Ladie *Gynecia*, possessed with; those deuils of Loue
and ieaalousie, did rid herselfe from
her tedious husbände: and taking no body with her, going toward the[m]; O 3
ieaalousie (said she) the phrensie of wise folkes, the well-wishing spite, and
vnkinde carefulnesse, the selfe-punishment for others faults, and selfe-miserie in
others happinesse, the cousin of enuie, daughter of loue, & mother of hate, how
coudest thou so quietly get thee a seate in the vnquiet hart of *Gynecia*, *Gynecia* (said
she sighing) thought wise, and once vertuous? Alas it is thy breeders power which
plantes thee there: it is the flaming agonie of affection, that works the chilling accesse
of thy feuer, in such sort, that nature giues place; the growing of my daughter seemes
the decay of my selfe; the blessings of a mother turne to the curses of a co[m]petitor;
and the faire face of *Philoclea*, appears more horrible in my sight, then the image of
death. Then remembred she this song, which she thought tooke a right measure of her
present mind.

*With two strange fires of equall heate possest,
The one of Loue, the other ieaalousie,
Both still do worke, in neither finds I rest:
For both, alas, their strengthes together tie:*

*The one aloft doth holde, the other hie.
Loue wakes the iealous eye least thence it moues:
The iealous eye, the more it lookes, it loues.*

*These fires increase: in these I dayly burne:
They feede on me, and with my wings do flie:
My louely ioyes to dolefull ashes turne:
Their flames mount vp, my powers prostrate lie:
They liue in force, I quite consumed die.
One wonder yet farre passeth my conceate:
The fuell small: how be the fires so great?*

4

But her vnleasured thoughtes ran not ouer the ten first wordes; but going with a pace, not so much too fast for her bodie, as slowe for her minde, she found them together, who after *Misos* departure, had left their tale, and determined what to say to *Basilus*. But full abashed was poore *Philoclea*, (whose conscience nowe began to knowe cause of blushing) for first salutation, receyuing an eye from her mother, full of the same disdainfull scorne, which *Pallas* shewed to poore *Arachne*, that durst contende with her for the prize of well weauing: yet did the force of loue so much rule her, that though for *Zelmanes* sake she did detest her, yet for *Zelmanes* sake she vsed no harder words to her, then to bid her go home, and accompany her solitarie father.

5

Then began she to display to *Zelma* the storehouse of her deadly desires, when sodainly the confused rumor of a mutinous multitude gaue iust occasion to *Zelma* to breake of any such conference, (for well she found, they were not friendly voices they heard) and to retire with as much diligence as conueniently they could, towards the lodge. Yet before they could winne the lodge by twentie paces, they were ouertaken by an vnruely sort of clownes, and other rebels, which like a violent floud, were caried, they themselues knewe not whether. But assoone as they came within perfect discerning these Ladies, like enraged beastes, without respect of their estates, or pitie of their sexe, they began to runne against them, as right villaines, thinking abilitie to doo hurt, to be a great aduancement: yet so many as they were, so many almost were their mindes, all knitte together onely in madnes. Some cried, Take; some, Kill; some, Saue: but euen they that cried saue, ran for companie with them that meant to kill. Euerie one commaunded, none obeyed, he only seemed chief Captain, that was most ragefull.

6

Zelma (whose vertuous courage was euer awake) drew out her sword, which vpon those il-armed churls giuing as

many wounds as blowes, & as many deathes almost as wounds (lightning
courage, and thundering smart vpon them) kept them at a bay, while the two
Ladies got theselues into the lodge: out of the which, *Basilius* (hauing put on an
armour long vntried) came to proue his authoritie among his subiects, or at lest, to
aduenture his life with his deare mistresse, to who[m] he brought a shield, while the
Ladies tremblingly attended the issue of this dangerous aduenture. But *Zelmane* made
them perceiue the ods betweene an Eagle and a Kight, with such a nimble stayednes,
and such an assured nimblenes, that while one was running backe for feare, his fellow
had her sword in his guts. 7

And by and by was both her harte and helpe well encreased by the comming
of *Dorus*, who hauing been making of
hurdles for his masters sheepe, hearde the horrible cries of this madde multitude; 8
and hauing streight represented before the eies of his carefull loue, the perill
wherein the soule of his soule might be, he went to *Pamelas* lodge, but found her in a
caue hard by, with *Mopsa* and *Dametas*, who at that time would not haue opened the
entrie to his father. And therefore leauing them there (as in a place safe, both for being
strong, and vnknownen) he ranne as the noise guded him. But when he saw his friend
in such danger among them, anger and contempt (asking no counsell but of courage)
made him roome among them, with no other weapon but his sheephooke, and with
that ouerthrowing one of the villaines, took away a two-hand sword from him, and
withall, helpt him from euer being ashamed of losing it. Then lifting vp his braue
head, and flashing terror into their faces, he made armes & legs goe complaine to the
earth, how euill their masters had kept them. Yet the multitude still growing, and the
verie killing wearying them (fearing, lest in long fight they should be conquered with
coquering) they drew back toward the lodge; but drew back in such sort, that still their
terror went forwarder like a valiant mastiffe, whom when his master pulles backe by
the taile from the beare (with whom he hath alreadie interchanged a hatefull
imbracement) though his pace be backward, his gesture is foreward, his teeth and
eyes threatening more in the retiring, then they did in the aduancing: so guided they
themselues homeward, neuer stepping steppe backward, but that they proued
themselues masters of the ground where they stept.

Yet among the rebels there was a dapper fellowe, a tayler by occupation, who
fetching his courage onelie from their
going back, began to bow his knees, & very fencer-like to draw neere to *Zelmane*. 9
But as he came within her distace, turning his swerd very nicely about his
crown, *Basilius*, with a side blow, strake of his nose. He (being a suiter to a seimsters
daughter, and therefore not a little grieved for such a disgrace) stouped downe, because
he had hard, that if it were fresh put to, it would cleaue on againe. But as his hand was
on the grounde to bring his nose to his head, *Zelmane* with a blow, sent his head to his
nose. That saw a butcher, a butcherlie chuffe indeed (who that day was sworn brother
to him in a cup of wine) & lifted vp a great leauer, calling *Zelmane* all the vile names

of a butcherly eloquence. But she (letting slippe the blowe of the leauer) hitte him so surely on the side of his face, that she lefte nothing but the nether iawe, where the tongue still wagged, as willing to say more, if his masters reme[m]brance had serued. O (said a miller that was halfe dronke) see the lucke of a good fellow, and with that word, ran with a pitch-forke at *Dorus*: but the nimblenes of the wine caried his head so fast, that it made it ouer-runne his feet, so that he fell withall, iust betwene the legs of *Dorus*: who setting his foote on his neck (though he offered two milche kine, and foure fatte hogs for his life) thrust his sword quite through, from one eare to the other which toke it very vnkindlie, to feele such newes before they heard of them, in stead of hearing, to be put to such feeling. But *Dorus* (leauing the miller to vomit his soul out in wine and bloud) with his two-hand sword strake of another quite by the waste, who the night before had dreamed he was growen a couple, and (interpreting it he should be maried) had bragd of his dreame that morning among his neighbors. But that blow astonished quite a poore painter, who stood by with a pike in his handes. This painter was to counterfette the skirmishing betwene the *Centaures* and *Lapithes*, and had bene very desirous to see some notable wounds, to be able the more liuely to expresse them; and this morning (being caried by the streame of this companie) the foolish fellow was euen delighted to see the effect of blowes. But this last, (hapning neere him) so amazed him, that he stood still, while *Dorus* (with a turne of his sword) strake of both his hands. And so the painter returned, well skilled in wounds, but with neuer a hand to performe his skill.

CHAP. 26.

1 *Zelmanes confident attempt to appease the mutinie.* 2 *A bone of diuision cast by her,* 3 *and caught by them.* 4 *Her pacificatorie oration.* 5 *The acceptation and issue of it.*



IN this manner they recouered the lodge, and gaue the rebels a face of wood of the out-side. But they then (though no more furious, yet more couragious when they saw no resister) went about with pickaxe to the wall, and fire to the gate, to gette themselues entrance. Then did the two Ladies mixe feare with loue, especially *Philoclea*, who euer caught hold of *Zelmane*, so (by the follie of loue) hindering the help which she desired. But *Zelmane* seeing no way of defence, nor time to deliberate (the number of those villaines still encreasing, and their madnesse still encreasing with their number) thought it onely the meanes to goe beyond their expectation with an vnused boldnesse, and with danger to auoide danger: and therefore opened againe the gate, and (*Dorus* and *Basilius* standing redie for her defence) she issued againe among them. The blowes she had dealt before (though all

in generall were hastie) made each of them in particular take breath, before they brought them sodainly ouer-neere her, so that she had time to gette vp to the iudgement-seate of the Prince, which (according to the guise of that countrie) was before the gate. There she paused a while, making signe with her hand vnto them, & withall, speaking aloud, that she had something to say vnto them, that would please them. But she was answered a while with nothing but shouts and cries; and some beginning to throw stones at her, not daring to approach her. But at length, a young farmer (who might do most among the countrie sort, and was caught in a little affeclton towards *Zelmane*) hoping by this kindnesse to haue some good of her, desired them, if they were honest men, to heare the woman speake. Fie fellowes, fie, (said he) what will all the maides in our towne say, if so many tall men shall be afraide to heare a faire wench? I sweare vnto you by no little ones, I had rather giue my teeme of oxen, then we should shewe our selues so vnciuill wights. Besides, I tell you true, I haue heard it of old men counted wisdome, to heare much, & say little. His sententious speech so preuailed, that the most parte began to listen. Then she, with such efficacie of gracefulness, & such a quiet magnanimitie represented in her face in this vttermost perill, as the more the barbarous people looked, the more it fixed their looks vpon her, in this sorte began vnto them.

It is no small comfort vnto me (said she) hauing to speake something vnto you for your owne behoofs, to find that I haue to deale with such a people, who shew indeed in theselues the right nature of valure, which as it leaues no violence vnattempted, while the choller is nourished with resistance; so when the subiect of their wrath, doth of it self vnloked-for offer it self into their hands, it makes the at lest take a pause before they determine cruelty. Now then first (before I come to the principall matter) haue I to say vnto you; that your Prince *Basilus* himselfe in person is within this Lodge, & was one of the three, who a few of you went about to fight withall: (& this she said, not doubting but they knew it well inough; but because she would haue them imagine, that the Prince might think that they did not know it) by him am I sent vnto you, as fro[m] a Prince to his well approued subiects, nay as from a father to beloued children, to know what it is that hath bred iust quarrell among you, or who they be that haue any way wro[n]ged you? what it is with which you are displeased, or of which you are desirous? This he requires: and indeed (for he knowes your faithfulness) he commaunds you presently to set downe, & to choose among your selues some one, who may relate your griefes or demaundes vnto him.

This (being more then they hoped for from their Prince) asswaged well their furie, & many of them consented (especially the young farmer helping on, who meant to make one of the demau[n]ds that he might haue *Zelmane* for his wife) but when they began to talke of their grieues, neuer Bees made such a co[n]fused Miming: the towne dwellers demanding putting downe of imposts: the country felowes laying out of co[n]mons:

some would haue the Prince keepe his Court in one place, some in another. Al cried out to haue new coucellors: but when they should think of any new, they liked the[m] as well as any other, that they could reme[m]ber, especially they would haue the treasure so looked vnto, as that he should neuer neede to take any more subsidies. At length they fel to direct contrarities. For the Artisans, they would haue corne & wine set at a lower price, and bound to be kept so stil: the plowmen, vine-laborers, & farmers would none of that. The cou[n]trimen demaunded that euery man might be free in the chief townes: that could not the Burgesses like of. The peasa[n]ts would haue the Gentleme[n] destroyed, the Citizens (especially such as Cookes, Barbers, & those other that liued most on Gentlemen) would but haue them reformed. And of ech side were like diuisions, one neighbourhood beginning to find fault with another. But no confusion was greater then of particular mens likings and dislikings: one dispraising such a one, who another praised, & demanding such a one to be punished, whom the other would haue exalted. No lesse ado was there about choosing him, who should be their spokes-man. The finer sort of Burgesses, as Marchants Prentises, & Clothworkers, because of their riches, disdainning the baser occupations, & they because of their number as much disdainning them: all they scorning the countrimens ignoraunce, & the countrymen suspecting as much their cu[n]ning: So that *Zelmane* (finding that their vnited rage was now growne, not only to a diuiding, but to a crossing one of another, & that the mislike growne among theselues did wel allay the heat against her) made toke[n]s againe vnto the[m] (as though she tooke great care of their wel doing, and were afraid of their falling out) that she would speake vnto the[m]. They now growne iealous one of another (the stay hauing inge[n]dred diuisio[n], & diuisio[n] hauing manifested their weaknes) were willing inough to heare, the most part striuing to show themselues willinger then their fellowes: which *Zelmane* (by the acquaintaunce she had had with such kinde of humors) soone perceiuing, with an angerles brauery, & an vnabashed mildnes, in this manner spake vnto them.

An vnused thing it is, & I think not heretofore seene, ô *Arcadians*, that a woma[n] should giue publike cou[n]sel to men, a stra[n]ger to the cou[n]try people, & that lastly in such a presence by a priuate person, the regall throne should be possessed. But the straungenes of your action makes that vsed for vertue, which your violent necessitie imposeth. For certainly, a woman may well speake to such men, who haue forgotte al manlike gouernment: a straunger may with reason instruct such subiects, that neglect due points of subiection: and is it marvaile this place is entred into by another, since your owne Prince (after thirtie yeares gouernment) dare not shew his face vnto his faithfull people? Heare therefore ô *Arcadians*, & be ashamed: against who hath this rage bene stirred? whether haue bene bent these ma[n]full weapons of yours? In this quiet harmles lodge are harbourd no *Argians* your ancient enimies, nor *Laconians* your now feared neighbours. Here be nether hard landlords, nor biting vsurers. Here lodge none,

but such as either you haue great cause to loue, or no cause to hate: here being none, besides your Prince, Princesse, and their children, but my self. Is it I then, ô Arcadians, against whom your anger is armed? Am I the marke of your veheme[n]t quarrell ? if it be so, that innocencie shall not be a stop for furie; if it be so, that the law of hospitalitie (so long & holily obserued among you) may not defend a straunger fled to your armes for succour: if in fine it be so, that so many valiaunt mens courages can be enflamed to the mischiefe of one silly woman; I refuse not to make my life a sacrifice to your wrath. Exercise in me your indignatio[n], so it go no further, I am content to pay the great fauours I haue receiued amog you, with my life, not ill deseruing I present it here vnto you, ô *Arcadians*, if that may satisfie you; rather the[n] you (called ouer the world the wise and quiet *Arcadians*) should be so vaine, as to attempt that alone, which all the rest of your countrie wil abhor; the[n] you should shew your selues so vngratefull, as to forget the fruite of so many yeares peaceable gouernment; or so vnnaturall, as not to haue with the holy name of your naturall Prince, any furie ouer-maistred. For such a hellish madnes (I know) did neuer enter into your harts, as to atempt any thing against his person; which no successor, though neuer so hatefull, wil euer leaue (for his owne sake) vnreuenged. Neither can your wonted valour be turned to such a basenes, as in stead of a Prince, deliuered vnto you by so many roiall ancestors, to take the tyrannous yoke of your fellow subiect, in whom the innate meanes will bring forth rauenous couetousnes, and the newnes of his estate, suspectfull cruelty. Imagine, what could your enimies more wish vnto you, then to see your owne estate with your owne handes vndermined? O what would your fore-fathers say, if they liued at this time, & saw their ofspring defacing such an excellent principalitie, which they with so much labour & bloud so wisely haue establisht? Do you thinke them fooles, that saw you should not enioy your vines, your cattell, no not your wiues & children, without gouernment; and that there could be no gouernment without a Magistrate, and no Magistrate without obedience, and no obediece where euery one vpon his owne priuate passion, may interprete the doings of the rulers? Let your wits make your present exa[m]ple to you. What sweetnes (in good faith) find you in your present condition? what choise of choise finde you, if you had lost *Basilus*! vnder whose ensigne would you go, if your enimies should inuade you? If you cannot agree vpon one to speake for you, how wil you agree vpo[n] one to fight for you? But with this feare of I cannot tel what, one is troubled, and with that passed wrong another is grieued. And I pray you did the Sunne euer bring you a fruitfull haruest, but that it was more hote then pleasant? Haue any of you childre[n], that be not sometimes cumbersome? Haue any of you fathers, that be not sometime weerish? What, shall we curse the Sonne, hate our children, or disobey our fathers? But what need I vse these wordes, since I see in your countenances (now vertuously settled) nothing els but loue and dutie to him, by whom for your only sakes the gouernme[n]t is embraced. For al what is done, he doth not only pardon you, but thanke you; iudging the action by the minds, & not the minds by the action. Your grieues, and

desires, whatsoever, & whensoever you list, he will consider of, and to his consideration it is reason you should refer them. So then, to conclude; the uncertainty of his estate made you take armes; now you see him well, with the same love lay them downe. If now you end (as I know you will) he will make no other account of this matter, but as of a vehement, I must confesse ouer-vehement affection: the only continuance might proue a wickednes. But it is not so, I see very well, you began with zeale, & will end with reuerence.

The action *Zelma* used, being beautified by nature and apparelled with skill, her gestures being such, that as her wordes did paint out her minde, so they serued as a shadow, to make the picture more liuely and sensible, with the sweete cleernesse of her voice, rising & falling kindly as the nature of the worde, and efficacie of the matter required, altogether in such admirable person, whose incomparable valour they had well felt, whose beautie did pearce through the thicke dulnes of their senses, gaue such a way vnto her speach through the rugged wilderness of their imaginations, who (besides they were stricken in admiration of her, as of more then a humane creature) were coold with taking breath, and had learned doubts out of leasure, that in steed of roaring cries, there was now heard nothing, but a confused muttering, whether her saying were to be followed, betwixt feare to pursue, & lothnesse to leaue: most of them could haue bene content, it had neuer bene begun, but how to end it (each afraid of his companion,) they knew not, finding it far easier to tie then to loose knots. But *Zelma* thinking it no euil way in such mutinies, to giue the mutinous some occasio[n] of such seruice, as they might thinke (in their own iudgement) would counteruaile their trespass, withal, to take the more assured possession of their mindes, which she feared might begin to wauer, *Loiall Arcadians* (said she) now do I offer vnto you the manifesting of your duties: all those that haue taken armes for the Princes safetie, let them turne their backs to the gate, with their weapons bent against such as would hurt his sacred person. O weak trust of the many-headed multitude, whom inconstancie onely doth guide to well doing: who can set confidence there, where company takes away shame, and each may lay the fault of his fellow? So said a craftie fellow among them, named *Clinias*, to himselfe, when he saw the worde no sooner out of *Zelma*'s mouth, but that there were some shouts of ioy, with, God saue *Basilus*, and diuers of them with much iollity growne to be his guard, that but litle before met to be his murderers.

CHAP. 27.

1 *A verball craftie coward purtrayed in Clinias.* 2 *His first raising, and with the first, relenting in this mutinie,* 3 *punished by the farmer.* 4 *The vpror reenforced, & weakened by themselues.* 5 *Clinias-his Sinon-like narration*

of this dru[n]ken rebellions original. 6 The kings order in it.



His *Clinias* in his youth had bene a scholler so farre, as to learne rather wordes then maners, and of words rather plentie then order; and oft had vsed to be an actor in Tragedies, where he had learned, besides a slidingnesse of language, acquaintance with many passions, and to frame his face to beare the figure of them: long vsed to the eyes and eares of men, and to reckon no fault, but shamefastnesse; in nature, a most notable Coward, and yet more strangely then rarely venturous in priuie practises.

This fellowe was become of neere trust to *Cecropia*, *Amphialus*-his mother, so that he was priuy to al the mischieuous deuises, wherewith she went about to ruine *Basilus*, and his children, for the aduancing of her sonne: and though his education had made him full of tongue, yet his loue to be doing, taught him in any euill to be secret; and had by his mistresse bene vsed (euer since the strange retiring of *Basilus*) to whisper rumors into the peoples eares: and this time (finding great aptnes in the multitude) was one of the chiefe that set them in the uprore (though quite without the co[n]sent of *Amphialus*, who would not for all the Kingdoms of the world so haue adue[n]tured the life of *Philoclea*.) But now perceiuing the flood of their furie began to ebbe, he thought it policie to take the first of the tide, so that no ma[n] cried lowder then he, vpon *Basilus*. And som of the lustiest rebels not yet agreeing to the rest, he caused two or three of his mates that were at his comandement to lift him vp, & then as if he had had a prologue to vtter, he began with a nice grauitie to demand audience. But few attending what he said, with vehement gesture, as if he would teare the stars from the skies, he fell to crying out so lowde, that not onely *Zelmane*, but *Basilus* might heare him. O vnhappy men, more madde then the Giants that would haue plucked *Iupiter* out of heauen, how long shal this rage continue? why do you not all throw downe your weapons, and submit your selues to our good Prince, our good *Basilus*, the *Pelops* of wisdom, & *Minos* of all good gouernme[n]t? when will you begin to beleue me, and other honest and faithfull subiects, that haue done all we could to stop your furie?

The farmer that loued *Zelmane* could abide him no longer. For as at the first he was willing to speake of co[n]ditions, hoping to haue gotten great souerainties, & among the rest *Zelmane*: so now perceiuing, that the people, once any thing downe the hill from their furie, would neuer stop till they came to the bottom of absolute yeelding, and so that he should be nearer feares of punishment, then hopes of such aduancement, he was one of them that stood most against the agreement: and to begin withall, disdainig this fellow should play the preacher, who had bin one of the chiefest make-bates, strake him a great wound vpon the face with his sword. The cowardly wretch fell down, crying for succour, & (scrambling through the legs of them that were about him) gat to the

throne, where *Zelmane* tooke him, and comforted him, bleeding for that was past, and quaking for feare of more.

But as soone as that blow was giuen (as if *Æolus* had broke open the doore to let all his winds out) no hand was idle, ech one killing him that was next, for feare he should do as much to him. For being diuided in minds & not diuided in co[m]panies, they that would yeeld to *Basilius* were intermingled with the[m] that would not yeeld. These men thinking their ruine stood vpo[n] it; those men to get fauor of their Prince, conuerted their vngracious motion into their owne bowels, & by a true iudgement grew their owne punishers. None was sooner killed the[n] those that had bene leaders in the disobedience: who by being so, had taught them, that they did leade disobediece to the same leaders. And many times it fel out that they killed them that were of their owne faction, anger whetting, and doubt hastening their fingers. But then came downe *Zelmane*; and *Basilius* with *Dorus* issued, and somtimes seeking to draw together those of their party, somtimes laying indifferently among them, made such hauocke (amo[n]g the rest *Zelmane* striking the farmer to the hart with her sworde, as before she had done with her eyes) that in a while all they of the contrary side were put to flight, and fled to certaine woods vpon the frontiers; where feeding coldly, and drinking onely water, they were disciplined for their dronken riots; many of them being slaine in that chase, about a score onely escaping. But when these late rebels, nowe souldiers, were returned from the chase, *Basilius* calling them together, partly for policy sake, but principally because *Zelmane* before had spoken it (which was to him more the a diuine ordinance) he pronounced their generall pardon, willing them to returne to their houses, and therafter be more circuspect in their proceedings: which they did most of them with share-marks of their folly. But imagining *Clinias* to be one of the chiefe that had bred this good alteration, he gaue him particular thanks, and withall willed him to make him know, how this frenzie had entred into the people.

Clinias purposing indeede to tell him the trueth of al, sauing what did touch himself, or *Cecropia*, first, dipping his hand in the blood of his wou[n]d, Now by this blood (said he) which is more deare to me, then al the rest that is in my body, since it is spent for your safety: this to[n]gue (perchance vnfortunate, but neuer false) shall not now begin to lie vnto my Prince, of me most beloued. Then stretching out his hand, and making vehement countenaces the vshers to his speches, in such maner of tearms recounted this accident. Yesterday (said he) being your birth-day, in the goodly greene two mile hence before the city of *Enispus*, to do honour to the day, were a four or fiue thousand people (of all conditions, as I thinke) gathered together, spending al the day in dancings and other exercises: and when night came, vnder tents and bowes making great cheare, and meaning to obserue a wassaling watch all that night for your sake. *Bacchus* (the learned say) was begot with thunder: I think, that made him euer since so full of stur & debate. *Bacchus* indeed it was which souted the first trupet to

this rude alarm. For that barbarous opinion being generally among them, to thinke with vice to do honor, & with actiuitie in beastlines to shew abunda[n]ce of loue, made most of the[m] seeke to she[w] the depth of their affectio[n] in the depth of their draught. But being once wel chafed with wine (hauing spent al the night, & some peece of the morning in such reuelling) & imboldned by your absented maner of liuing, there was no matter their eares had euer heard of that grew not to be a subject of their winie conference. I speake it by prooffe: for I take witnes of the gods (who neuer leaue periuries vnpunished) that I ofte cried out against their impudency, & (whe[n] that would not serue) stopt mine eares, because I wold not be partaker of their blasphemies, till with buffets they forced me to haue mine eares & eies defiled. Publike affairs were mingled with priuate grudges, neither was any man thought of wit, that did not pretende some cause of mislike. Rayling was counted the fruite of freedome, and saying nothing had his vttermoste prayse in ignoraunce. At the length, your sacred person (alas why did I liue to heare it? alas how do I breath to vtter it? But your comandement doth not onely enioine obedience, but giue me force: your sacred person (I say) fell to be their table-talk: a proud word swelling in their stomacks, & disdainfull reproches against so great a greatnes, hauing put on the shew of greatnes in their little mindes: till at length the very vn-brideled vse of words hauing increased fire in their mindes (which God knowes thought their knowledge notable, because they had at all no knowledge to codemne their own want of knowledge) they descended (O neuer to be forgotten presumption) to a direct mislike of your liuing from among them. Whereupon it were tedious to remember their far-fetched constructions. But the summe was, you disdained them: and what were the pompes of your estate, if their armes mainteyned you not? Who woulde call you a Prince, if you had not a people? When certaine of them of wretched estates, and worse mindes (whose fortunes, change could not impaire) began to say, that your gouernment was to be looked into; how the great treasures (you had leuied amog the[m]) had bene spent; why none but great men & gentlemen could be admitted into counsel, that the com[m]ons (forsooth) were to plain headed to say their opinio[n]: but yet their blood & sweat must maintain all. Who could tell whether you were not betraied in this place, where you liued? nay whether you did liue or no? Therefore that it was time to come & see; and if you were here, to know (if *Arcadia* were growne lothsome in your sight) why you did not ridde your selfe of the trouble? There would not want those that would take so faire a cumber in good part. Since the Countrie was theirs, and the gouernement an adherent to the countrie, why should they not consider of the one, as well as inhabite the other? Nay rather (said they) let vs beginne that, which all *Arcadia* will followe. Let vs deliuer our Prince from daunger of practises, and our selues from want of a Prince. Let vs doo that, which all the rest thinke. Let it be said, that we onely are not astonished with vaine titles, which haue their force but in our force. Lastly, to haue saide & heard so much, was as da[n]gerous, as to haue atte[m]pted: & to atte[m]pt they had the name of glorious liberty with them. These

words being spoke (like a furious storme) presently caried away their wel inclined braines. What I, and some other of the honester sort could do, was no more, then if with a puffe of breath, one should goe about to make a saile goe against a mightie winde: or, with one hand, stay the ruine of a mightie wall. So generall grewe this madnes among them, there needed no drumme, where each man cried, each spake to other that spake as fast to him, and the disagreeing sounde of so many voices, was the chiefe token of their vnmeete agreement. Thus was their banquette turned to a battaile, their winie mirthes to bloudie rages, and the happie prayers for your life, to monstrous threatning of your estate; the solemnizing your birth-day, tended to haue been the cause of your funerals. But as a dronken rage hath (besides his wickednes) that follie, that the more it seekes to hurt, the lesse it considers how to be able to hurt: they neuer weyed how to arme theselues, but tooke vp euery thing for a weapon, that furie offered to their handes. Many swordes, pikes, and billes there were: others tooke pitchforkes and rakes, conuerting husbandrie to souldierie: some caught hold of spittes (thinges seruiceable for life) to be the instruments of death. And there was some such one, who held the same pot wherein he drank to your health, to vse it (as he could) to your mischiefe. Thus armed, thus gouerned, forcing the vnwilling, and hartening the willing, adding furie to furie, and encreasing rage with running, they came headlong towarde this lodge: no man (I dare say) resolued in his own hart, what was the uttermost he would doo when he came hether. But as mischief is of such nature, that it cannot stand but with strengthning one euill by an other, and so multiplie in it selfe, till it come to the highest, and then fall with his owne weight: so to their mindes (once passed the bounds of obedience) more and more wickednes opened it selfe, so that they who first pretended to preserue you, then to reforme you, (I speak it in my conscience, and with a bleeding hart) now thought no safetie for them, without murdering you. So as if the Gods (who preserue you for the preseruacion of *Arcadia*) had not shewed their miraculous power, and that they had not vsed for instruments, both your owne valour (not fit to be spoken of by so meane a mouth as mine) and some (I must confesse) honest minds, (who alas why should I mention, since what we did, reached not the hundred part of our duetie?) our hands (I tremble to think of it) had destroyed all that, for which we haue cause to reioyce that we are *Arcadians*.

With that the fellow did wring his hands, & wrang out teares: so as *Basilus*, that was not the sharpest pearcer into masked minds, toke a good liking to him; & so much the more as he had tickled him with praise in the hearing of his mistres. And therefore pitying his wou[n]d, 6 willed him to get him home, and looke well vnto it, & make the best search he could, to know if there were any further depth in this matter, for which he should be well rewarded. But before he went away, certain of the shepherds being come (for that day was appointed for their pastorals) he sent one of them to Philanax, and an other to other principal noble-men, and cities thereabouts, to make through-inquirie of this vprore, and withall, to place such garrisons in all the townes & villages neere vnto

him, that he might thereafter keep his solitary lodge in more security, vpo[n] the making of a fire, or ringing of a bell, hauing them in a redines for him.

CHAP. 28.

1 *The praises of Zelmanes act.* 2 *Dametas his caroll for sa-
uing himself, and his charge.* 3 *Basilus his conference with
Philanax of the Oracle (the ground of all this storie.)* 4 *His
wrong-construſtion of it.* 5 *His hymne to Apollo.* 6 *His cour-
ting turnde ouer to tale-telling.*



His, *Clinias* (hauing his eare one way when his eye was an other) had perceiued; & therefore hasted away, with mind to tell *Cecropia* that she was to take some speedie resolution, or els it were daunger those examinations would both discouer, & ruine her: and so went his way, leauing that little companie with embracements, and praising of *Zelmanes* excellent proceeding, to shew, that no decking sets foorth any thing so much, as affection. For as, while she stode at the discretion of those indiscreete rebelles, euerie angrie countenance any of them made, seemed a knife layde vpon their owne throates; so vnspeakable was now their ioy, that they saw (besides her safetie & their owne) the same wrought, and safely wrought by her meanes, in whom they had placed all their delightes. What examples *Greece* could euer alledge of witte and fortitude, were set in the ranke of trifles, being compared to this action.

But as they were in the midst of those vnfained ceremonies, a Gitterne, ill-played on, accompanied with a hoarce

voice (who seemed to sing maugre the Muses, and to be merie in spite of Fortune) made them looke the way of the ill-noysed song. The song was this.

A *Hatefull cure with hate to heale:*

A bloody helpe with blood to saue:

A foolish thing with fooles to deale:

Let him be bold that bobs will haue.

But who by meanes of wisdome hie

Hath saud his charge? it is euen I.

Let other deck their pride with skarres,

And of their wounds make braue lame showes:

*First let them die, then passe the starres,
When rotten Fame will tell their blowes.
But eye from blade, and eare from crie:
Who hath sau'd all? it is euen I.*

They had soone found it was *Dametas*, who came with no lesse lifted vp countenance, then if he had passed ouer the bellies of all his enemies: so wise a point he thought he had perfourmed, in vsing the naturall strength of a caue. But neuer was it his dooing to come so soone thence, till the coast were more assuredly cleare: for it was a rule with him, that after a

great storme there euer fell a fewe droppes before it be fully finished. „
But *Pamela* (who had now experienced how much care doth sollicite a Louers hart) vsed this occasion of going to her parents and sister, indeed aswel for that cause, as being vnquiet, till her eye might be assured, how her shepheard had gone through the daunger. But *Basilius* with the sight of *Pamela* (of whom almost his head otherwise occupied, had left the wonted remembrance) was sodainly stricken into a deuout kind of admiration, remembring the oracle, which (according to the fauning humour of false hope) he interpreted now his owne to his owne best, and with the willing blindness of affection (because his minde ran wholly vpon *Zelmane*) he thought the Gods in their oracles did principally minde her.

But as he was deeply thinking of the matter, one of the shepherds tolde him, that *Philanax* was already come with a
hundred horse in his company. For hauing by chaunce rid not farre of the little 3
desert, he had heard of this vprore, and so was come vpon the spurre (gathering a
company of Gentlemen as fast as he could) to the succour of his Master. *Basilius* was
glad of it; but (not willing to haue him, nor any other of the Noble men, see his
Mistresse) he himselfe went out of the Lodge, and so giuing order vnto him of placing
garrisons, and examining these matters; and *Philanax* with humble earnestnesse
beginning to entreate him to leaue of his solitarie course (which already had bene so
daungerous vnto him) Well (said *Basilius*) it may be ere long I wil codiscend vnto
your desire. In the meane time, take you the best order you can to keepe me safe in my
solitarinesse. But, (said he) doo you remember, how earnestly you wrote vnto me, that
I should not be moued by that Oracles authoritie, which brought me to this resolution?
Full well Sir (answered *Philanax*) for though it pleased you not as then to let me
knowe, what the Oracles words were, yet all Oracles holding (in my conceipt) one
degree of reputatio[n], it suffised me to know, it was but an Oracle, which led you
fro[m] your owne course. Well (said *Basilius*) I will now tell you the wordes; which
before I thought not good to doo; because when al the euent fall out (as some already
haue done) I may charge you with your incredulitie. So he repeated them in this sorte.

Thy elder care shall from thy carefull face
 By princely meane be stolne, and yet not lost.
 Thy yonger shall with Natures blisse embrace
 An vncouth loue, which Nature hateth most.
 Both they themselues vnto such two shall wed,
 Who at thy beer, as at a barre, shall plead;
 Why thee (a liuing man) they had made dead.
 In thy owne seate a forraine state shall sit.
 And ere that all these blowes thy head doo hit,
 Thou, with thy wife, adultery shall commit.

For you forsooth (said he) when I told you, that some super-naturall cause sent me strange visio[n]s, which being co[n]firmed with presagious chaunces, I had gone to *Delphos*, & there receiued this answe: you replied to me, that the onely super-naturall causes were the humors of my body, which bred such melancholy dreames; and that both they framed a mind full of conceipts, apt to make presages of things, which in the[m]selues were meerly chaungeable: & with all as I say, you reme[m]ber what you wrot vnto me, touching authoritie of the Oracle: but now I haue some notable triall of the truth therof, which hereafter I wil more largely com[m]unicate vnto you. Only now, know that the thing I most feared is alredy performed; I mean that a forraine state should possesse my throne. For that hath ben done by *Zelmane*, but not as I feared, to my ruine, but to my preseruatio[n]. But whe[n] he had once named *Zelmane*, that name was as good as a pully, to make the clocke of his praises run on in such sort, that (*Philanax* found) was more exquisite then the only admiration of vertue breedeth: which his faithful hart inwardly repining at, made him shrinke away as soone as he could, to go about the other matters of importance, which *Basilius* had enioyned vnto him.

Basilius returned into the Lodge, thus by him selfe construing the oracle, that in that he said, his elder care should by
 Princely meane be stolne away from him, and yet not lost, it was now
 performed, since *Zelmane* had as it were robd from him the care of his first
 begotten childe, yet was it not lost, since in his harte the ground of it remained. That
 his younger should with Natures blisse embrace the loue of *Zelmane*, because he had
 so commaunded her for his sake to doo; yet shoulde it be with as much hate of Nature,
 for being so hatefull an opposite to the iealousie hee thought her mother had of him.
 The sitting in his seate he deemed by her already performed: but that which most
 co[m]forted him, was his interpretation of the adulterie, which he thought he should
 commit with *Zelmane*, whom afterwards he should haue to his wife. The point of his
 daughters marriage, because it threatned his death withall, he determined to preuent,
 with keeping them vnmarried while he liued. But hauing as he thought, gotten thus

much vnderstanding of the Oracle, he determined for three daies after to perfourme certaine rites to *Apollo*: and euen then began with his wife and daughters to singe this Hymne, by them yearely vsed.

5

*A*pollo great, whose beames the greater world do light,
And in our little world do cleare our inward sight,
Which euer shine, though hid from earth by earthly shade,
Whose lights do euer liue, but in our darkenesse fade;
Thou God, whose youth was deckt with spoiles of Pythos skin:
(So humble knowledge can throw downe the snakish kinne)
Latonas sonne, whose birth in paine and trauaile long
Doth teach, to learne the good what trauailes do belong:
In trauaile of our life (a short but tedious space)
While brickie houre glas runnes, guide thou our panting pace:
Giue vs foresightfull mindes: giue vs minds to obaye
What foresight tels; our thoughts vpon thy knowledge staye.
Let so our frutes grow vp, that nature be maintainde:
But so our hartes keepe downe, with vice they be not stainde.
Let this assured holde our iudgements ouertake,
That nothing winnes the heauen, but what doth earth forsake.

"

"

Assone as he had ended his deuotion (all the priuiledged shepheards being now come) knowing well inough he might lay all his care vpon *Philanax*, he was willing to sweeten the fast of this passed tumult, with some rurall pastimes. For which while the shepheards prepared themselues in their best maner, *Basilius* tooke his daughter *Philoclea* aside, and with such hast, as if his eares hunted for wordes, desired to know how she had found *Zelmane*. She humbly answered him, according to the agreement betwixt them, that thus much for her sake *Zelmane* was content to descend from her former resolutio[n], as to heare him, whesoeuer he would speake; & further then that (she said) as *Zelmane* had not graunted, so she nether did, nor euer would desire. *Basilius* kist her with more then fatherly thanks, and straight (like a hard-kept warde new come to his lands) would faine haue vsed the benefite of that graunt, in laying his sicknes before his onely physition. But *Zelmane* (that had not yet fully determined with her selfe, how to beare her selfe toward him) made him in a few words vnderstand, that the time in respect of the co[m]panie was vnfit for such a parley, & therefore to keep his braines the busier, letting him vnderstand what she had learned of his daughters, touching *Eronas* distresse (whom in her trauaile she had knowne, and bene greatly beholding to) she desired him to finish the rest, for so far as *Pla[n]gus* had told him; Because she said (& she said truly) she was full of care for

6

that Ladie, whose desert (onely except an ouer-base choise) was nothing agreable to misfortune. *Basilus* glad that she would commaund him any thing, but more glad, that in excusing the vnfitnessse of that time, she argued an intention to graunt a fitter, obeyed her in this manner.

CHAP. 29.

- 1 *Antiphilus his base-borne pride borne high by flatterie.*
- 2 *His vnkinde hating the louing Erona, and fond louing of hating Artaxia.*
- 3 *Artaxias trap to take them both.*
- 4 *The mans weakenesse; and the womans strength in bearing captiuitie.*
- 5 *Plangus loue to her, employed by her to saue Antiphilus,*
- 6 *who againe betraies himselfe and them.*
- 7 *His execution by women.*
- 8 *Plangus hardy attempts to saue Erona,*
- 9 *The conditions of her death.*
- 10 *Her sorrow for Antiphilus,*
- 11 *and Plangus trauaile for her: with his crosses, and course therein.*



Adame (said he) it is very true, that since yeares enabled me to iudge what is, or is not to be pitied, I neuer saw anything that more moued me to iustifie a veheme[n]t compassion in my self, then the estate of that Prince, whom strong against al his owne afflictions (which yet were great, as I perceauē you haue heard) yet true and noble loue had so pulled downe, as to lie vnder sorrow for another. In so much as I could not temper my long idle pen in that subiect, which I perceiue you haue seene. But then to leaue that vnrepeated, which I finde my daughters haue told you, It may please you to vndersta[n]d, since it pleaseth you to demau[n]d, that *Antiphilus* being crowned, & so left by the famous Princes *Musidorus* & *Pyrocles* (led the[n]ce by the challenge of *Anaxius*, who is now in these prouinces of *Greece*, making a dishonorable enquire after that excellent prince *Pyrocles* already perished) *Antiphilus* (I say) being crowned, and deliuered from the presence of those two, whose vertues (while they were present, good schoolmasters) suppressed his vanities, he had not stre[n]gth of mind enough in him to make long delay, of discovering what maner of man he was. But streight like one caried vp to so hie a place, that he looseth the discerning of the ground ouer which he is; so was his mind lifted so far beyo[n]d the leuell of his owne discourse, that remembring only that himselfe was in the high seate of a King, he coude not perceiue that he was a king of reasonable creatures, who would quickly scorne follies, and repine at iniuries. But imagining no so true propertie of souereigntie, as to do what he listed, and to list whatsoever pleased his fansie, he quickly made his kingdome a Teniscourt, where his subiects should be the balles; not

in truth cruelly, but licenciously abusing them, presuming so far vpon himselfe, that what he did was liked of euery bodie: nay, that his disgraces were fauours, and all because he was a King. For in Nature not able to conceyue the bonds of great matters (suddenly borne into an vnknowne Ocean of absolute power) he was swayed withall (he knewe not howe) as euerie winde of passions puffed him. Whereto nothing helped him better, then that poysonous sugar of flatterie: which some vsed, out of the innate basenesse of their hart, straight like dogges fawning vpon the greatest; others secretly hating him, and disdayning his great rising so suddenly, so vnderuedly (finding his humour) bent their exalting him only to his ouerthrow; like the bird that carries the shell-fish high, to breake him the easier with his fall. But his minde (being an apt matter to receiue what forme their amplifying speeches would lay vpon it) daunced so prettie a musicke to their false measure, that he thought himselfe the wysest, the woorthiest, and best beloued, that euer gaue honour to a royall tytle. And being but obscurely borne, he had found out vnblushing pedegrees, that made him not onely of the blood royall, but true heyre, vniustly dispossessed by *Eronas* auncestours. And like the foolish birde, that when it so hides the heade that it sees not it selfe, thinkes no bodie else sees it: so did he imagine, that no bodie knew his basenesse, while he himselfe turned his eyes from it.

Then vainenesse (a meager friend to gratefulnesse) brought him so to despise *Erona*, as of whom he had receiued no benefit, that within halfe a yeeres manage he began to pretend barrennesse: and making first an vnlawfull law of hauing mo wiues then one, he still keeping *Erona*, vnder-ha[n]d, by message sought *Artaxia*, who no lesse hating him, then louing (as vnluckie a choise) the naughtie King *Plexirtus*, yet to bring to passe what he purposed, was content to train him into false hopes, till alreadie his imagination had crowned him King of *Armenia*, & had made that, but the foundation of more, and more monarchies; as if fortune had only gotte eies to cherish him. In which time a great assembly of most part of al the Princes of *Asia* being to do honour to the neuer sufficiently praised *Pyrocles* & *Musidorus*, he would be one not to acknowledge his obligation (which was as great as any of the others,) but looking to haue bene yong master among those great estates, as he was amog his abusing vnderlings. But so many valorous Princes, in-deed farre neerer to disdaine him then otherwise, he was quickly (as standing vpon no true ground, inwardly) out of countenance with himselfe, till his seldom-co[m]fortlesse flatterers (perswading him, it was enuie & feare of his expected greatnes) made him hast away fro[m] that company, & without further delay appointed the meeting with *Artaxia*; so incredibly blinded with the ouer-bright shining of his roialty, that he could thinke such a Queene could be content to be ioined-patent with an other to haue such an husband. Poore *Erona* to all this obeyed, either vehemecy of affection making her stoop to so ouerbase a seruitude, or astonished with an vnlooked-for fortune, dull to any behoofeful resolutio[n], or (as many times it falles out euen in great harts when they

can accuse none but the[m]selues) desperately bent to maintaine it. For so went she on in that way of her loue, that (poore Lady) to be beyond all other examples of ill-set affection, she was brought to write to *Artaxia*, that she was content, for the publike good, to be a second wife, and yeeld the first place to her: nay to extoll him, and euen woo *Artaxia* for him.

But *Artaxia* (mortally hating them both for her brothers sake) was content to hide her hate, til she had time to shewe it: and pretending that all her grudge was against the two paragons of 3
vertue, *Musidorus* & *Pyrocles*, euen met them halfe way in excusing her brothers murder, as not being principall actors; and of the other-side, driuen to what they did by the euer-pardonable necessitie: and so well handled the matter, as, though she promised nothing, yet *Antiphilus* promised himselfe all that she woulde haue him thinke. And so a solemne enter-view was appointed. But (as the Poets say) *Hymen* had not there his saffron-coloured cote. For *Artaxia* laying men secretly (and easily they might be secret, since *Antiphilus* thought she ouerran him in loue) when he came euen readie to embrace her, shewing rather a countenance of accepting then offering, they came forth, and (hauing much aduauntage both in number, valure, and fore-preparation) put all his companie to the sword; but such as could flie away. As for *Antiphilus* she caused him and *Erona* both to be put in irons, hasting backe toward her brothers tombe, vpo[n] which she ment to sacrifice them; making the loue of her brother stand betwene her and all other motions of grace, from which by nature she was alienated.

But great diuersitie in them two quickly discovered it selfe for the bearing of that affliction. For *Antiphilus* that had no
greatnesse but outwarde, that taken away, was readie to fall faster then calamitie 4
could thrust him; with fruitlesse begging (where reason might well assure him his death was resolued) and weake bemoning his fortune, to giue his enemies a most pleasing musique, with manie promises, and protestations, to as little purpose, as from a little minde. But *Erona* sadde in-deede, yet like one rather vsed, then new fallen to sadnesse (as who had the ioyes of her hart already broken) seemed rather to welcome then to shunne that ende of miserie, speaking little, but what she spake was for *Antiphilus*, remembring his guiltlesnesse, being at that time prisoner to *Tiridates*, when the valiant princes slue him: to the disgrace of men, shewing that there are women more wise to iudge what is to be expected, and more constant to beare it when it is happened.

But her witte endeared by her youth, her affliction by her birth, and her sadnesse by her beautie, made this noble prince
Plangus, who (neuer almost from his cousin *Artaxia*) was nowe present 5
at *Erona*'s taking, to perceyue the shape of loueliness more perfectly in wo, then in ioyfulness (as in a picture which receiues greater life by the darkenesse of shadowes, then by more glittering colours) and seeing to like; and liking to loue; and

louing straight to feele the most incident effects of loue, to serue and preserue. So borne by the hastie tide of short leysure, he did hastily deliuer together his affection, and affectionate care. But she (as if he had spoken of a small matter, when he mencioned her life, to which she had not leisure to attend) desired him if he loued her, to shew it, in finding some way to saue *Antiphilus*. For her, she found the world but a wearisom stage vnto her, where she played a part against her will: and therefore besought him, not to cast his loue in so vnfruitfull a place, as could not loue it selfe: but for a testimonie of constancie, and a sutableness to his word, to do so much comfort to her minde, as that for her sake *Antiphilus* were saued. He tolde me how much he argued against her tendering him, who had so vngratefully betrayed her, and foolishly cast away himselfe. But perceiuing she did not only bend her very goodwits to speake for him against her-selfe, but when such a cause could be allied to no reaso[n], yet loue would needs make it-self a cause, & barre her rather fro[m] hearing, then yeeld that she should yeeld to such arguments: he likewise in who[m] the power of Loue (as they say of spirits) was subiect to the loue in her, with grieffe co[n]sented, & (though backwardly) was dilige[n]t to labor the help of *Antiphilus*: a man whom he not onely hated, as a traitour to *Erona*, but enuied as a possessor of *Erona*. Yet Loue sware, his hart, in spite of his hart, should make him become a seruant to his riual. And so did he, seeking all the meanes of perswading *Artaxia*, which the authority of so neere, and so vertuous a kinsma[n] would giue vnto him. But she to whom the eloquence of hatred had giuen reuenge the face of delight, reiected all such motions; but rather the more closely imprisoning them in her chiefe citie, where she kept them with intention at the birth-day of *Tiridates* (which was very nere) to execute *Antiphilus*, & at the day of his death (which was about halfe a yeere after) to vse the same rigor towar[d]s *Erona*. *Plangus* much grieued (because much louing) attempted the humors of the *Lycians*, to see, whether they would come in with forces to succor their Princesse. But there the next inheritor to the crowne (with the true play that is vsed in the game of kingdo[m]s) had no sooner his mistres in captiuitie, but he had vsurped her place, & making her odious to her people, because of the vnfit electio[n] she had made, had so left no hope there: but which is worse, had sent to *Artaxia*, perswading the iusticing her, because that vniustice might giue his title the name of iustice. Wa[n]ting that way, *Plangus* practised with some deere friends of his, to saue *Antiphilus* out of prison, whose day because it was much neerer then *Eronaes*, & that he wel found, she had twisted her life vpo[n] the same threed with his, he determined first to get him out of prison: & to that end hauing prepared al matters as wel as in such case he could, where *Artaxia* had set many of *Tiridates* old seruants to haue well-marking eyes, he co[n]ferred with *Antiphilus*, as (by the auffhoritie he had) he found meanes to do; & agreed with him of the time and maner, how he should by the death of some of his iaylors escape.

But all being well ordered, and *Plangus* willinglie putting himselfe into the greatest danger, *Antiphilus* (who, like a

bladder, sweld redie to breake, while it was full of the winde of prosperitie, that
being out, was so abiected, as apt to be trode on by euery bodie) when it came to 6
the point, that with some hazard, he might be in apparant likelihoode to auoide the
uttermost harm, his harte fainted, and (weake foole, neither hoping, nor fearing as he
should) gat a conceite, that with bewraying his practise, he might obtaine pardon: and
therefore, euen a little before *Plangus* should haue come vnto him, opened the whole
practise to him that had the charge, with vnpittied teares idly protesting, he had rather
die by *Artaxias* commaundement, then against her will escape: yet begging life vpon
any the hardest, and wretchedest conditions that she woulde lay vpon him. His keeper
prouided accordingly, so that when *Plangus* came, he was like, himself to haue bene
entrapped: but that finding (with a luckie in-sight) that it was discouered, he retired;
and (calling his friendes about him) stood vpon his guard, as he had good cause.
For, *Artaxia* (accounting him most vngrateful considering that her brother and she,
had not onely preserued him against the malice of his father, but euer vsed him much
liker his birth, then his fortune) sent forces to apprehend him. But he among the
martiall men had gotten so great loue, that he could not onely keepe himself from the
malice, but worke in their mindes a compassion of *Eronas* aduersitie.

But for the succour of Antiphilus he could gette no bodie to ioyne with him, the
contempt of him hauing not bene able to qualifie the hatred; so that *Artaxia* might
easilie vpon him perfourme her will; which was (at humble suite of all the women of
that citie) to deliuer him to their censure, who mortally hating him for hauing made a
lawe of *Polygamie*, after many tortures, forste him to throwe himselfe from a
high *Pyramis*, which was built ouer *Tiridates* tombe, and so to end his fallse-harted
life, which had planted no strong thought in him, but that he could be vnkinde.

But *Plangus* well perceiuing that *Artaxia* staid onely for the appointed day, that
the faire *Eronas* bodie, (consumed to
ashes) should make a notorious testimonie, how deeply her brothers death was 8
engrauen in her brest, he assembled good numbers of friendes, who[m] his vertue
(though a stranger) had tied vnto him, by force to giue her libertie.
Contrariwise, *Artaxia*, to whom Anger gaue more courage then her sexe did feare,
vsed her regall authoritie (the most she could) to suppressse that sedition, and haue her
will: which (she thought) is the most princely thing that may be. But *Plangus*, who
indeede (as all men witnes) is one of the best captains (both for policie and valour)
that are trained in the schoole of *Mars*, in a conflict ouerthrew *Artaxias* power, though
of far greater number: and there toke prisoner a base sonne of her brothers, whom she
deerly affected, & then sent her word that he should run the same race of fortune
(whatsoever it was) that *Erona* did: & happy was that threatning for her; for
els *Artaxia* had hastened the day of her death, in respecte of those tumults.

But now (some principal noble-me[n] of that cuntry interposing the[m]selues) it
was agreed, that all persons els fullie

pardoned, and all prisoners (except *Erona*) deliuered, she should be put into the hands of a principall nobleman, who had a castle of great strength, vpon oath, that if by the day two yeare fro[m] *Tiridates* death, *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus* did not in person combat, & ouercome two knights, who she appointed to maintain her quarrell against *Erona* and them, of hauing by treason destroyed her brother, that the[n] *Erona* should be that same day burned to ashes: but if they came, and had the victorie, she should be deliuered; but vpon no occasion, neither freed, nor executed, till that day. And hereto of both sides, all toke solemne oath, and so the peace was concluded; they of *Plangus* partie forcing him to agree, though he himselfe the sooner condescended, knowing the courtesie of those two excellent Princes, not to refuse so noble a quarrell, and their power such, as two more (like the other two) were not able to resist. But *Artaxia* was more, and vpon better ground, pleased with this action; for she had euen newly receiued newes fro[m] *Plexirtus*, that vpon the sea he had caused them both to perish, and therefore she held her selfe sure of the match.

But poore *Plangus* knew not so much, and therefore seeing his partie (as most times it falles out in like case) hungry of conditions of peace, accepted them; & then obtained leaue of the Lord, that indifferently kept her, to visite *Erona*, whom he founde full of desperate sorowe, not suffering, neither his vnwoorthinesse, nor his wronges, nor his death (which is the naturall conclusion of all worldly acts) either to couer with forgetfulnes, or diminish with consideration, the affection she had borne him: but euen glorying in affliction, and shunning all comforte, she seemed to haue no delight, but in making her selfe the picture of miserie. So that when *Plangus* came to her, she fell in deadlie traunces, as if in him she had seene the death of *Antiphilus*, because he had not succoured him: and yet (her vertue striuing) she did at one time acknowledge her selfe bound, and professe her selfe iniured; in steede of allowing the conclusion they had made, or writing to the Princes (as he wisht her to doo) crauing nothing but some speedie death to followe, her (in spite of iust hate) beloued *Antiphilus*.

So that *Plangus* hauing nothing but a ravisht kisse from her hande at their parting, went away towarde *Greece*, whether-ward he vnderstoode the Princes were embarked. But by the way it was his fortune to intercept letters, written by *Artaxia* to *Plexirtus*: wherein she signified her accepting him to her husband, whom she had euer fauoured, so much the rather, as he had perfourmed the conditions of her mariage, in bringing to their deserued end, her greatest enemies: withall, thanking the sea, in such tearmes, as he might well perceiue, it was by some treason wrought in *Plexirtus* shippe. whereupon (to make more diligent search) he tooke shippe himselfe, and came into *Laconia*, enquiring, and by his enquirie finding, that such a shippe was indeede with fight, and fire, perished, none (almost) escaping. But for *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*, it was assuredly determined that they were cast away: for the name of such Princes (especially in *Greece*) would quickly els haue bene a large witnesse to the contrarie.

Full of griefe with that, for the losse of such, who left the world poor of perfection: but more sorie for *Eronas* sake, who now by them could not be relieued. A new aduertisement from *Armenia* ouertooke him, which multiplied the force of his anguish. It was a message from the Nobleman who had *Erona* in ward, giuing him to vndersta[n]d, that since his departure, *Artaxia* (using the benefite of time) had besieged him in his castell, demaunding present deliuiery of her, whom yet for his faith giuen, he would not, before the day appointed, if possibly he could resist, which he foresaw, lo[n]g he should not do for want of victuall, which he had not so wisely prouided, because he trusted vpon the generall oth taken for two yeares space: & therefore willed him to make hast to his succour, & come with no small forces; for all they that were of his side in *Armenia*, were consumed, & *Artaxia* had encreased her might by mariage of *Plexirtus*, who now crowned King there, stickt not to glory in the murder of *Pyrocles* and *Musidorus*, as hauing iust cause thereto, in respect of the deaths of his sister *Andramana*, her sonne his nephew, and his own daughter *Zelmane*, all whose losse he vniustly charged them withal, & now openly stickt not to co[n]fesse, what a reuenge his wit had brought forth. *Plangus* much astonished herewith, bethought himselfe what to doo. For to returne to *Armenia* was vaine, since his friends there were vtterly ouerthrowne. The[n] thought he of going to his father; but he had already (euen since the death of his stepmother, & brother) attempted the recouering his fauour, & all in vaine. For they, that had before ioined with *Andromana* to do him the wrong, thought now no life for the[m] if he returned, & therefore kept him stil (with new forged suspicions) odious to his father. So that *Plangus* reseruing that for a worke of longer time, then the sauing of *Erona* could beare, determind to go to the mighty and good King *Euarchus*: who lately hauing (to his eternall fame) fully, not onely conquered his enimies, but established good gouernment in their countries, he hoped he might haue present succour of him, both for the iustnes of the cause, & reuenge of his childrens death, by so hainous a treason murdered. Therefore with diligence he went to him; & by the way (passing through my country) it was my hap to find him, the most ouerthrowne ma[n] with griefe, that euer I hope to see againe. For stil it seemed he had *Erona* at a stake before his eies; such an apprehension he had taken of her daunger; which in despite of all the comfort I could giue him, he poured out in such lamentations, that I was moued not to let him passe, till he had made full declaration, which by peeces my daughters & I haue deliuered vnto you. Fayne he would haue had succour of my selfe, but the course of my life being otherwise bent, I onely accompanied him with some that might safely guide him to the great *Euarchus*: for my parte hauing had some of his speeches so feelingly in my memory, that at an idle time (as I tolde you) I set them downe Dialogue-wise, in such manner as you haue seene. And thus, excellent Ladie, I haue obeyed you in this storie; wherein if it well please you to consider, what is the straunge power of Loue, and what is due to his authoritie, you shall exercise therein the true noblenesse of your iudgement, and doo the more right to the vnfortunate

Historian. *Zelmane* (sighing for *Eronaes* sake, yet inwardly comforted in that she assured her selfe, *Euarchus* would not spare to take in hande the iust deliuering of her, ioyned with the iust reuenge of his childrens losse) hauing now what she desired of *Basilius*, to auoide his further discourses of affection, encouraged the shepheards to begin, whom she saw all ready for them.

The second Eclogues.



He rude tumulte of the *Enispian*s gaue occasion to the honest shepheards to beginne their pastorals this day with a dauce, which they called the skirmish betwixt *Reason* and *Passion*. For seuen shepheards (which were named the Reasonable shepheards) ioined theselues; foure of them making a square, and the other two going a litle wide of either side, like winges for the maine battell; and the seuenth man for-most, like the forlorne hope to begin the skirmish. In like order came out the seuen appassioned shepheards; all keeping the pase of their foote by their voice, and sundry consorted instrume[n]ts they held in their armes. And first, the formost of Reasonable side began to sing.

- R. *Thou Rebell vile, come, to thy master yelde.*
 And the other that met with him answered.
- P. *No, Tyrant, no: mine, mine shall be the fields.*
Reason. Can Reason then a Tyraunt counted be?
Passion. If Reason will, that Passions be not free.
- R. *But Reason will, that Reason gouerns most.*
 P. *And Passion will, that Passion rule the rost.*
 R. *Your will is will; but Reason reason is.*
 P. *Will hath his will, when Reasons will doth misse.*
 R. *Whom Passion leades vnto his death is bent.*
 P. *And let him die, so that he die content.*
 R. *By nature you to Reason faith haue sworne,*
 P. *Not so, but fellowlike together borne.*
 R. *Who Passion doth ensue, liues in annoy.*
 P. *Who Passion doth forsake, liues void of ioy.*
 R. *Passion is blinde, and treades an vnknowne trace.*
 P. *Reason hath eyes to see his owne ill case.*
- Then as they approched neerer, the two of *Reasons* sides, as if they shot at the other, thus sange.
- R. *Dare Passions then abide in Reasons light?*

P. And is not Reason dimde with Passions might?
R. O foolish thing, which glory doth destroye.
P. O glorious title of a foolish toye.
R. Weakenes you are, dare you with our strength fight?
P. Because our weaknes weakeneth all your might.
R. O sacred Reason, helpe our vertuous toiles.
P. O Passion, passe on feeble Reasons spoiles.
R. We with ourselues abide a dally strife.
P. We gladly vse the sweetnes of our life.
R. But yet our strife sure peace in end doth breede.
P. We now haue peace, your peace we doo not neede.

Then did the two square battailes meete, & in steed of fighting embrace one another, singing thus.

R. We are too strong: but Reason seekes no blood.
P. Who be too weake, do feigne they be too good.
R. Though we cannot orecome, our cause is iust.
P. Let vs orecome, and let vs be vniust.
R. Yet Passion, yeeld at length to Reasons stroke.
P. What shall we winne by taking Reasons yoke?
R. The ioyes you haue shall be made permanent.
P. But so we shall with grieffe learne to repent.
R. Repent indeed, tut that shall be your blisse.
P. How know we that, since present ioyes we misse?
R. You know it not: of Reason therefore know it.
P. No Reason yet had euer skill to show it.
R. P. Then let vs both to heauenly rules giue place,
Which Passions skill, and Reason do deface.

Then embraced they one another, and came to the King, who framed his praises of the[m] according to *Zelmanes* liking; whose vnrestrained parts, the minde & eie, had their free course to the delicate *Philoclea*, whose looke was not short in well requiting it, although she knew it was a hatefull sight to her iealous mother. But *Dicus* (that had in this time taken a great liking of *Dorus* for the good partes he found about his age in him) had a delight to taste the fruites of his wit, though in a subject which he him selfe most of all other despised: and so entred to speach with him in the manner of this following Eclogue.

Dicus. Dorus.

DOrus, *tell me, where is thy wonted motion
To make these woods resounde thy lamentation?
Thy sainte is dead, or dead is thy deuotion.*

Dicus.

*For who doth holde his loue in estimation,
To witnes, that he thinks his thoughts delicious,
Thinks to make ech thing badge of his sweet passion.*

Dorus.

*But what doth make thee Dicus so suspicious
Of my due faith, which needs must be immutable?
Who others vertue doubt, themselues are vicious.*

*Not so; although my mettall were most mutable,
Her beames haue wrought therin most faire impression:
To such a force some chaunge were nothing sutable.*

Dicus.

*The harte well set doth neuer shunne confession:
If noble be thy bandes, make them notorious:
Silence doth seeme the maske of base oppression.*

*Who glories in his loue, doth make Loue glorious:
But who doth feare, or bideth muet wilfully,
Showes, guilty harte doth deeme his state opprobrious.*

*Thou then, that framste both words & voice most skilfully.
Yeeld to our eares a sweet and sound relation,
If Loue tooke thee by force, or caught thee guilefully.*

Dorus.

*If Sunnie beames shame heauenly habitation;
If three-leau'd grasse seeme to the sheepe vnsauorie,
Then base and sower is Loues most high vocation.*

*Or if sheepes cries can helpe the Sunnes owne brauerie,
Then may I hope, my pipe may haue abilitie,
To helpe her praise, who decks me in her slauerie.*

*No, no: no wordes ennoble selfe-nobilitie.
As for your doubts; her voice was it deceaued me,
Her eye the force beyond all possibilitie.*

Dicus.

*Thy words well voiced, well gra'ste had almost heaued me
Quite from my selfe to loue Loues contemplation;
Till of these thoughts thy sodaine ende bereaued me.*

*Goe on therefore, and tell vs, by what fashion
In thy owne prooffe he gets so straunge possession,
And how possest he strengthens his inuasion?*

Dorus.

*Sight is his roote, in thought is his progression,
His childhood woonder, prenticeship attention,
His youth delight, his age the soules oppression:
Doubte is his sleepe, he waketh in inuention;
Fancie his foode, his clothing is of carefulnes;
Beautie his boote, his play louers dissention:
His eyes are curious search, but vailde with warefulnesse:
His wings desire oft dipt with desperation:
Largesse his hands could neuer skill of sparefulnesse.
But how he doth by might, or by persuasion
To conquere, and his conquest how to ratifie,
Experience doubts, and schooles holde disputation.*

Dicus.

*But so thy sheepe may thy good wishes satisfie
With large increase, and wooll of fine perfection,
So she thy loue, her eyes thy eyes may gratifie,
As thou wilt giue our soules a deare refection,
By telling how she was, how now she framed is
To helpe, or hurt in thee her owne infection.*

Dorus.

*Blest be the name, wherewith my mistres named is:
Whose wounds are salues, whose yokes please more then pleasure doth:
Her staines are beames; vertue the fault she blamed is.
The hart, eye, eare here onely find his treasure doth:
All numbring artes her endlesse graces number not:
Time, place, life, wit scarcely her rare gifts measure doth.
Is she in rage? so is the Sunne in sommer hot,
Yet haruest brings. Doth she alas absent herselfe?
The Sunne is hid; his kindly shadows cumber not.
But when to giue some grace she doth content herselfe,
O then it shines; then are the heau'ns distributed,
And Venus seemes, to make vp her, she spent herselfe.
Thus then (I say) my mischiefes haue contributed
A greater good by her diuine reflection;
My harmes to me, my blisse to her attributed,*

*Thus she is framde: her eyes are my direction;
Her loue my life; her anger my destruction.
Lastly what so she is, that's my protection.*

*Thy safetie sure is wrapped in destruction:
For that construction thine owne wordes do beare.
A man to feare a womans moodie eye,
Makes Reason lie a slaue to seruile Sense.
A weake defence where weakenesse is thy force:
So is remorse in follie dearely bought.*

Dicus.

*If I had thought to heare blasphemous wordes,
My brest to swords, my soule to hell haue solde
I rather would, then thus mine eares defile
With words so vile, which viler breath doth breed.
O beards take heed; for I a wolfe haue found;
Who hunting round the strongest for to kill,
His breast doth fill with earth of others, ioyes,
And laden so puts downe, puld downe destroyes.
O shepherds boyes, eschue these tongues of venome,
Which do enuenome both the soule and senses.
Our best defenses are to flie these adders.
O tongues like ladders made to clime dishonour,
Who iudge that honour, which hath scope to slander.*

Dorus.

*Dorus you wander farre in great reproches
So loue encroches on your charmed reason,
But it is season for to end our singing.
Such anger bringing: as for me, my fancie
In sicke-mans frenzie rather takes compassion,
Then rage for rage: rather my wish I send to thee,
Thou soone may haue some helpe, or change of passion.
She oft her lookes, the starres her fauour bend to thee:
Fortune store, Nature health, Loue grant perswasion.
A quiet mind none but thy selfe can lend to thee,
Thus I commend to thee all our former loue,*

Dicus.

*Well do I proue, errour lies oft in zeale,
Yet it is seale, though errour, of true hart.
Nought could impart such heates to friendly mind.
But for to find thy words did her disgrace,
Whose onely face the little heauen is,*

Dorus.
"
"

*Which who doth misse his eyes are but delusions,
Barred from their chiefest obiect of delightfulness,
Throwne on this earth the Chaos of confusions.*

*As for thy wish to my enraged spitefulness,
The louely blowne with rare reward, my prayer is
Thou mayest loue her that I may see thy sightfulness.*

*

*The quiet mind (whereof my selfe empairer is,
As thou doest thinke) should most of all disquiet me
Without her loue, then any mind who fairer is.*

*Her onely cure from surfet-woes can diet me:
She holdes the ballance of my contentation:
Her cleared eyes, nought els, in stormes can quiet me.*

*Nay rather then my ease discontentation
Should breed to her, let me for aye deiection be
From any ioy, which might her grieffe occasion.*

*With so sweete plagues my happie harmes infected be:
Paine willes me die, yet will of death I mortifie:
For though life irkes, in life my loues protected be.*

Thus for ech change my changelesse hart I fortifie.

When they had ended to the good pleasing of the assistants, especially of *Zelmane*, who neuer forgat to giue due com[m]edations to her friend *Dorus*, the more to aduance him in his pursute (although therein he had brought his matters to a more wished conclusion then yet she knew of) out starte a iolly yonker, his name was *Nico*, whose tongue had borne a very itching silence all this while. And hauing spied one *Pas*, a mate of his, as mad as himselfe (both indeed lads to clime any tree in the world) he bestowed this maner of salutation vpon him, and was with like reuerence requited.

Nico. Dorus. [Pas]

Nico.

*And are you there old Pas? in troth I euer thought,
Among vs all we should find out some thing of nought.*

Pas.

*And I am here the same, so mote I thriue and thee,
Despairde in all this flocke to find a knaue, but thee.*

Nico.

*Ah now I see, why thou art in thy selfe so blind:
Thy gray-hood hides the thing, that thou despairst to find.*

Pas.

*My gray-hood is mine owne, all be it be but gray,
Not like the scrippe thou stol'ste, while Dorcas sleeping lay.*

Nico.

*Mine was the scrippe: but thou, that seeming raid with loue,
Didst snatch from Cosmas hand her greeny wroughte gloue.*

Pas.

*Ah foole; so Courtiers do. But who did liuely skippe,
When for a treene-dish stolne, thy father did thee whippe?*

Nico,

*In deed the witch thy dam her crouch from shoulder spred
pilfring Lalus lambe, with crouch to blesse thy head.*

Pas.

*My voice the lambe did winne, Menalcas was our iudge:
Of singing match was made, whence he with shame did trudge*

Nico.

*Couldst thou make Lalus flie? so nightingales auoide
When with the kawing crowes their musicke is annoide.*

Pas.

*Nay like to nightingales the other birds giue eare:
My pipe and song made him both pipe and song forswear.*

Nico.

I thinke it well: such voice would make one musicke hate:

But if I had bene there, th'adst met another mate.

Pas.

*Another sure as is a gander from a goose:
But still when thou dost sing, me thinkes a colt is loose.*

Nico.

*Well aimed by my hat: for as thou sangst last day;
The neighbours all did crie, alas what asse doth bray?*

Pas.

*But here is Dicus old; let him then speake the woord,
To whether with best cause the Nymphes faire flowers affoord.*

Nico.

*Content: but I will lay a wager hereunto,
That profit may ensue to him that best can do.
I haue (and long shall haue) a white great nimble cat,
A king vpon a mouse, a strong foe to the rat,
Fine eares, long taile he hath, with Lions curbed clawe,
Which oft he lifteth vp, and stayes his lifted pawe,
Deepe musing to himselfe, which after-mewing showest
Till with lickt beard, his eye of fire espie his foes.
If thou (alas poore if) do winne, then winne thou this,
And if I better sing, let me thy Cosma kisse.*

Pas.

*Kisse her? now mayst thou kisse. I haue a better match;
A prettie curre it is; his name iwis is Catch,
No eare nor taile he hath, least they should him disgrace,
A ruddie haire his cote, with fine long spectled face:
He neuer musing standes, but with himselfe will play
Leaping at euery flie, and angrie with a flea:
He eft would kill a mouse, but he disdaines to fight,
And makes our home good sport with dauncing bolt vpright.
This is my pawne; the price let Dicus iudgement show:
Such oddes I willing lay; for him and you I know.*

Dicus.

*Sing then my lads, but sing with better vaine then yet,
Or else who singeth worst my skill will hardly hit.*

*Who doubts but Pas fine pipe againe will bring
The auncient prayse to Arcad shepherds skill?
Pan is not dead, since Pas beginnes to sing.*

Nico.

*Who euermore will loue Apollos quill.
Since Nico doth to sing so widely gape?
Nico his place farre better furnish will.*

Pas.

*Was not this he, who did for Syrinx scape
Raging in woes teach pastors first to plaine?
Do you not heare his voice, and see his shape?*

Nico.

*This is not he that failed her to gaine,
Which made a Bay, made Bay a holy tree:
But this is one that doth his musicke staine.*

Pas.

*O Faunes, O Fairies all, and do you see,
And suffer such a wrong? a wrong I trowe,
That Nico must with Pas compared be?*

Nico.

*O Nymphes, I tell you newes, for Pas you knowe:
While I was warbling out your woonted praise,
Nico would needes with Pas his bagpipe blowe.*

Pas.

*If neuer I did faile your holy-dayes,
With daunces, carols, or with barlybreake:
Let Pas now know, how Nico makes the layes*

Nico.

*If each day hath bene holy for your sake,
Vnto my pipe, O Nymphes, helpe now my pipe,
For Pas well knowes what layes can Nico make.*

Pas.

Alas how oft I looke on cherries ripe,

Nico.

*Me thinks I see the lippes my Leuca hath,
And wanting her, my weeping eyes I wipe.*

Pas.

*Alas, when I in spring meete roses rathe,
And thinke from Cosmas sweet red lips I liue,
I leaue mine eyes vnwipte my cheekes to bathe.*

Nico.

*As I of late, neer bushes vsde my siue,
I spied a thrush where she did make her nest,
That will I take, and to my Leuca giue.*

Pas.

*But long haue I a sparrow gailie drest,
As white as milke, and camming to the call,
To put it with my hand in Cosmas brest.*

Nico.

*I oft doo sue, and Leuca saith, I shall,
But when I did come neere with heate and hope,
She ranne away, and threw at me a ball.*

Pas.

*Cosma once said, she left the wicket ope,
For me to come, and so she did: I came,
But in the place found nothing but a rope.*

Nico.

*When Leuca dooth appeare, the Sunne for shame
Dooth hide himselfe: for to himselfe he sayes,
If Leuca liue, she darken will my fame.*

Pas.

*When Cosma doth come forth, the Sun displaies
His vtmost light: for well his witte doth know,
Cosmas faire beames emblemish much his rates.*

Nico.

*Leuca to me did yester-morning shows
In perfect light, which could not me deceaue,*

Her naked legge, more white then whitest snowe.

*But yesternight by light I did receaue
From Cosmas eyes, which full in darkenes shine,
I sawe her arme, where purest Lillies cleaue.*

Pas.

*She once starke nak'd did bathe a little time;
But still (me thought) with beauties from her fell,
She did the waters wash, and make more fine.*

Nico.

*She once, to coole her selfe, stood in a well,
But euer since that well is well besought,
And for Rose-water sould of rarest smell.*

Pas.

*To riuers banke, being on walking brought,
She bad me spie her babie in the brooke,
Alas (said I) this babe dooth nurce my thought.*

Nico.

*As in a glasse I held she once did looke,
I said, my hands well paide her for mine eyes,
Since in my hands selfe goodly sight she tooke.*

Pas.

*O if I had a ladder for the skies,
I would climbe vp, and bring a prettie starre,
To weare vpon her neck, that open lies.*

Nico.

*O if I had Apollos golden carre,
I would come downe, and yeeld to her my place,
That (shining now) she then might shine more farre.*

Pas.

*Nothing (O Leuca) shall thy fame deface,
While shepheards tunes be heard, or rimes be read,
Or while that shepheards loue a louely face.*

Nico.

*Thy name (O Cosma) shall with praise be spread,
As farre as any shepheards piping be:
As farre as Loue possesseth any head.*

Pas.

*Thy monument is layd in many a tree,
With name engrau'd: so though thy bodie die,
The after-folkes shall wonder still at thee.*

Nico.

*So oft these woods haue heard me Cosma crie,
That after death, to heau'n in woods resound,
With Echoes help, shall Cosma, Cosma flie.*

Pas.

*Peace, peace good Pas, thou weeriest euen the ground
With sluttish song: I pray thee learne to blea,
For good thou mayst yet prooue in sheepish sound.*

Nico.

*My father hath at home a prettie Iay,
Goe winne of him (for chattering) praise or shame:
For so yet of a conquest speake thou may.*

Pas.

*Tell me (and be my Pan) the monsters name,
That hath foure legs, and with two onely goes,
That hath foure eyes, and onely two can frame.*

Nico.

*Tell me (and Phœbus be) what monster growes
With so strong liues, that bodie cannot rest
In ease, vntill that bodie life forgoes.*

Pas.

*Enough, enough: so ill hath done the best,
That since the hauing them to neither's due,
Let cat and dog fight which shall haue both you.*

Dicus.

SOME speech there streight grew among the hearers, what they should meane by the

riddles of the two monsters. But *Zelmane*, whose harte better delighted in wailefull ditties, as more according to her fortune, she desired *Lamon*, he would againe repeate some other lamentation of the still-absent *Strephon* and *Klaius*. *Basilus* (as soone as he vnderstood *Zelmanes* pleasure) commaunded *Lamon* vpon paine of his life (as though euery thing were a matter of life and death, that pertained to his mistresse seruice) immediately to sing it: who with great cunning, varying his voice according to the diuersitie of the persons, began this Dizaine, answered in that kinde of verse, which is called the Crowne.

Strephon. Klaius.

Ioye in grieffe, and doo detest all ioyes:

Strephon.

*Despise delight, and tyrde with thought of ease
I turne my minde to all formes of annoyes,
And with the chaunge of them my fancie please.
I studie that which may me most displease,
And in despite of that displeasures might,
Embrace that most, that most my soule destroyes.
Blinded with beanies, fell darkenes is my sight:
Dale on my ruine feedes, with sucking smarte,
I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte,*

Klaius.

*I thinke from me, not from my woes to parte,
And loth this time, calld life, nay thinke, that life
Nature to me for torment did emparte;
Thinke, my horde haps haue blunted deaths sharpe knife,
Not sparing me, in whom his workes be rife:
And thinking this, thinke Nature, Life, and Death
Place Sorrowes triumph on my conquered brest:
Whereto I yeeld, and seeke none other breath,
But from the sent of some infectious graue:
Nor of my fortune ought, but mischieue craue.*

Strephon.

*Nor of my fortune ought but mischiefe craue,
And seeke to nourish that, which now contaynes
All what I am: if I my selfe will saue,
Then must I saue, what in me chiefly raignes,
Which is the hatefull web of Sorowes paines.*

*Sorow then cherish me, for I am sorowe:
No being now, but sorowe I can haue:
Then decke me as thine owne; thy helpe I bar owe,
Since thou my riches arte, and that thou haste
Enough to make a fertill minde lie waste.*

Kladius.

*Enough to make a fertill minde lie waste
Is that huge storme, which powres it selfe on me:
Hailestones of teares, of sighes a monstrous blast,
Thunders of cries; lightnings my wilde lookes be,
The darkened heau'n my soule which nought can see;
The flying sprites which trees by rootes vp teare
Be those despaires, which haue my hopes quite wast.
The diffrence is; all folkes those stormes forbear:
But I cannot; who then my selfe should flie
So close vnto my selfe my wrackes doo lie.*

Strephon.

*So close vnto my selfe my wrackes doo lie;
Both cause, effect, beginning, and the ende
Are all in me: what helpe then can I trie?
My ship, my selfe; whose course to loue doth bende,
Sore beaten doth her mast of Comforte spende:
Her cable, Reason, breakes from anchor,
Hope: Fancie, her tackling, torne away doth flie:
Ruine, the winde, hath blowne her from her scope:
Bruised with waues of Cares, but broken is
On rocke, Despaire, the buriall of my blisse.*

Kladius.

*On rocke, Despaire, the buriall of my blisse
I long doo plowe with plough of deepe Desire:
The seed Fast-meaning is, no truth to misse:
I harowe it with Thoughts, which all conspire
Fauour to make my chiefe and onely hire.
But, woe is me, the yeare is gone about,
And now I faine would reape, I reape but this,
Hate fully growne, Absence new sprongen out.
So that I see, although my sight empaire,
Vaine is their paine, who labour in Despaire.*

*Vaine is their paine, who labour in Despaire.
For so did I, when with my angle, Will,
I sought to catch the fish Torpedo faire.
Eu'n then Despaire did Hope already kill:
Yet Fancie would perforce employ his skill,
And this hath got; the catcher now is caught,
Lamde with the angle, which it selfe did teare,
And vnto death, quite drownde in Dolours, brought
To death, as then disguisde in her faire face.
Thus, thus I had, alas, my losse in chase.*

Strephon.

*Thus, thus I had, alas, my losse in chase,
When first that crowned Basiliske I knewe,
Whose footesteps I with hisses oft did trace,
Till by such hap, as I must euer rewe,
Mine eyes did light vpon her shining hewe,
And hers on me, astonisht with that sight.
Since then my harte did loose his wonted place,
Infected so with her sweet poysons might,
That, leauing me for dead, to her it went:
But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent.*

Klaius.

*But ah her flight hath my dead reliques spent,
Her flight from me, from me, though dead to me.
Yet liuing still in her, while her beames lent
Such vitall sparke, that her mine eyes might see.
But now those liuing lights absented be,
Full dead before, I now to dust should fall,
But that eternall paines my soule should hent,
And keepe it still within this body thrall:
That thus I must, while in this death I dwell,
In earthly fetters feele a lasting hell.*

Strephon.

*In earthly fetters feele a lasting hell
Alas I doo; from which to finde release,
I would the earth, I would the heauens fell.
But vaine it is to thinke these paines should cease.
Where life is death, and death cannot breed peace.*

Klaius.

*O faire, ô onely faire, from thee, alas,
 These foule, most foule, distresses to me fell;
 Since thou from me (ô me) ô Sunne didst passe.
 Therefore esteeming all good blessings toys
 I ioy in grieve, and doo detest all ioyes.*

Strephon.

*I ioye in grieve, and doo detest all ioyes.
 And now an ende, (ô Claius) now an ende
 For euen the hearbes our mournfull musique stroyes,
 And from our burning breath the trees doo bende.*

SO wel did *Lamons* voice expresse the passio[n]s of those shepherds, that all the Princely beholders were stricken in a silent co[n]sideration of them; indeed eury one making, that he heard of another the bala[n]ce of his own troubles. And *Basilius* perceiuing such melancholique musique best consorted to the humor of his mistresse, entreated againe the young melancholy shepherd, that he would emparte some part of the sorow his cou[n]tenaunce so well witnessed vnto them. Which he in parte to satisfie, began an Eclogue betwixt himself and the *Echo*: framing his voice in those deserte places, as what words he would haue the *Echo* replie, vnto those he would singe higher then the rest, and so kindly framed a disputation betwixt himselfe and it. Which with these *Hexameters* in the following order he uttered.

*FAire rocks, goodly riuers, sweet woods, when shall I see peace?
 Peace? who debars me my tongue? who is it that comes me so nie?
 O I doo know what guest I doo meete: it is Echo.
 Well mett Echo; aproch, and tell me thy will too.
 Echo, what doo I get yielding my sprite to my grieues?
 What medicine may I finde for a paine that drawes me to death?
 O poisonous medicine: what worse to me can be then it?
 In what state was I then, when I tooke this deadly disease?
 And what maner a minde, which had to that humor a vaine?
 Hath not reason enough vehemence the desire to reproue?
 Oft proue I: but what salue, when Reason seeks to be gone?
 O what is it? what is it, that may be a salue to my loue?
 What doo louers seeke for, long seeking for to enioye?
 What be the ioyes, for which t'enioye they went to the paines?
 Then to an earnest loue what doth best victorie lende?
 Ende? but I can neuer ende: Loue will not giue me the leaue.
 How be the mindes disposde, that cannot taste the Physicke?*

Echo.

*Peace.
 I.
 T'is Echo
 I will too.
 Grieues.
 Death.
 It.
 Ease.
 Vaine.
 Proue.
 One.
 Loue.
 Ioye.
 Paines.
 Ende.
 Leaue.
 Sicke.*

<i>Yet say againe th'aduice for th'ils that I tolde thee.</i>	<i>I told th[ee].</i>
<i>Doth th'infected wretch of his ill th'extremitie know?</i>	<i>No.</i>
<i>But if he know not his harmes, what guids hath he whilst he be blind?</i>	<i>Blinde.</i>
<i>What blinde guides can he haue that leades to a fancie?</i>	<i>A fancie.</i>
<i>Can fancies wante eyes? or he fall that steppeth aloft?</i>	<i>Oft.</i>
<i>What causes first made these torments on me to light?</i>	<i>Light.</i>
<i>Can then a cause be so light, that forceth a man to goe die?</i>	<i>I.</i>
<i>Yet tell, what light thing I had in me to drawe me to die?</i>	<i>Eye.</i>
<i>Eie-sight made me to yeeld: but what first pearst to my eyes?</i>	<i>Eyes.</i>
<i>Eyes hurters? eyes hurte? but what from them to me falls?</i>	<i>Falls.</i>
<i>But when I first did fall, what brought most fall to my harte?</i>	<i>Arte.</i>
<i>Arte? what can be that arte, which thou doost meane by thy speach?</i>	<i>Speach.</i>
<i>What be the fruites of speaking arte, what growes by the wordes?</i>	<i>Wordes.</i>
<i>O much more then wordes: those wordes serued more me to blesse.</i>	<i>Lesse.</i>
<i>O when shall I be knowne, where most to be known I doo long?</i>	<i>Longe.</i>
<i>Long be thy woes for such bad newes: how reckes she my thoughts?</i>	<i>Oughts.</i>
<i>Then, then what doo I gayne, since vnt' her will I doo winde?</i>	<i>Winde.</i>
<i>Winde, tempests, and stormes: yet in ende what giues she desire?</i>	<i>Ire.</i>
<i>Silly rewarde; yet aboue women hath she a title.</i>	<i>A tittle.</i>
<i>What great name may I giue to so heau'nly a woman?</i>	<i>A wo-man.</i>
<i>Woe, but seems to me ioye, that agrees to my thought so.</i>	<i>I thought so.</i>
<i>Thinke so: for of my desired blisse it is onely the course.</i>	<i>Course.</i>
<i>Curst be thy selfe for cursing that, which leades me to ioyes.</i>	<i>Toyes.</i>
<i>What be the sweete creatures where lowly demaundes be not harde?</i>	<i>Harde.</i>
<i>Harde to be gott, but got constant, to be helde very steeles.</i>	<i>Eeles.</i>
<i>How be they helde vnkinde? speake, for th' hast narrowly pry'de.</i>	<i>Pride.</i>
<i>How can pride come there since springs of beautie be thence?</i>	<i>Thence.</i>
<i>Horrible is this blasphemie vnto the most holie.</i>	<i>O lye.</i>
<i>Thou li'st, false Echo; their mindes, as vertue, be iuste.</i>	<i>Iuste.</i>
<i>Mockst thou those Diamonds, which onely be matcht by the Godds?</i>	<i>Odds.</i>
<i>Odds ? what an odds is there, since them to the heauens I preferre?</i>	<i>Erre.</i>
<i>Tell yet againe, how name ye the goodly made euill?</i>	<i>A deuill.</i>
<i>Deuill? in hell where such Deuill is, to that hell I doo goe.</i>	<i>Goe.</i>

AFTER this well placed *Echo*, the other shepherds were offering themselues to haue continued the sports: But the night had so quietly spent most part of her selfe, that the King for that time licensed them: & so bringing *Zelmane* to her lodging, who would much rather haue done the same for *Philoclea*, of all sides they went to counterfait a sleep in their beds, for a true one their agonies could not afoord them. Yet there lay they (for so might they be most solitarie) for the foode of their thoughts, till it was neere noone the next day. After which *Basilus* was to continue his *Apollo* deuotions, and the other to meditate vpon their priuate desires.

The end of the second Booke.

THE THIRD BOOKE OF THE COVNTESSE OF PEMBROKES ARCADIA.

CHAP. I.

*Dorus-his 1 faire and 2 foule weather in his loue. 3 His for-
lorne agonies. 4 His doubts to write, 5 and Pamelaes
to reade, 6 his elegie.*



His last dayes daunger, hauing made *Pamelaes* loue discerned, what a losse it

should haue suffered, if *Dorus* had bene destroyed, bredde such tendernesse of kindnes in her toward him: that she coulde no longer keepe Loue from looking through her eyes, and going forth in her words; whom before as a close prisoner she had to her hart onely committed; so as finding not only by his speeches & letters, but by the pitifull oratio[n] of a languishing behavior, & the easily discyphered character of a sorowful face, that Despair began nowe to threaten him destruction, she grewe content both to pitie him, and let him see she pityed him: as well by making her owne beautifull beames thawe away the former icinesse of her behaiour, as by entertaining his discourses (whensoeuer he did vse them) in the third person of *Musidorus*; to so farre a degree, that in the ende she said, that if she had bene the Princesse, whom that disguised Prince had vertuously loued, she

would haue requited his faith with faithfull affection: finding in her hart, that nothing could so hardly loue as vertue: with many mo words to the same sense of noble fauour, & chast plainnesse. Which when at the first it made that expected blisse shine vpon *Dorus*; he was like one frozen with extremitie of colde, ouer-hastily brought to a great fire, rather oppressed, then relieued with such a lightning of felicitie. But after the strength of nature had made him able to feel the sweetness of ioyfulness, that again being a child of Passion, & neuer acquainted with mediocrity, could not set bou[nds] vpon his happines, nor be content to giue Desire a kingdome, but that it must be an vnlimited Monarchy. So that the ground he stood vpon being ouer-high in happines, & slipperie through affection, he could not hold himselfe fro[m] falling into such an error, which with sighs blew all co[m]fort out of his brest,

& washt away all cheerfulness of his cheere, with teares. For this fauour filling him with hope, Hope encouraging his desire, & Desire considering nothing, but oportunitie: one time (*Mopsa* being called away by her mother, & he left alone with *Pamela*) the sudden occasion called Loue, & that neuer staid to aske Reasons leaue; but made the too-much louing *Dorus* take her in his armes, offering to kisse her, and, as it were, to establish a trophee of his victorie.

But she, as if she had bin ready to drinke a wine of excellent tast & colour, which suddenly she

perceiued had poison in it, so did she put him away fro[m] her: loking first vnto heauen, as amazed to find herselfe so beguiled in him; then laying the cruel punishment vpon him of angry Loue, and lowring beautie, shewing disdain, & a despising disdain, Away (said she) vnworthy man to loue, or to be loued. Assure thy selfe, I hate my selfe for being so deceiued; iudge then what I doo thee, for deceiuing me. Let me see thee no more, the only fall of my iudgement, and staine of my conscience. With that she called *Mopsa*, not staying for any answer (which was no other, but a flood of tears, which she semed not to mark (much lesse to pity) & chid her for hauing so left her alone. 2

It was not an amazement, it was not a sorrow, but it was euen a death, which then laid hold of

Dorus: which certainly at that instant would haue killed him, but that the feare to tary longer in her presence (contrary to her com[m]andement) gaue him life to cary himselfe away fro[m] her sight, and to run into the woods, where, throwing himselfe downe at the foot of a tree, he did not fall to lamentation (for that proceeded of pitying) or grieuing for himselfe (which he did no way) but to curses of his life, as one that detested himselfe. For finding himselfe not onely vnhappy, but unhappie after being falne from all happinesse: and to be falne from all happines, not by any misconceiuing, but by his own fault, and his fault to be done to no other but to *Pamela*: he did not tender his owne estate, but despised it; greedily drawing into his minde, all conceits which might more and more torment him. And so remained he two dayes in the woods, disdainig to giue his bodie food, or his mind comfort, louing in himselfe nothing, but the loue of her. And indeed that loue onely straue with the fury of his anguish, telling it, that if it destroyed *Dorus*, it should also destroy the image of her that liued in *Dorus*: and when the thought of that was crept in vnto him, it bega[n] to win of him some co[m]passion to the shrine of the image, & to bewaile not for himselfe (who[m] he hated) but that so notable a loue should perish. The began he onely so farre to wish his owne good, as that *Pamela* might pardon him the fault, though not the punishment: & the vttermost height he aspired vnto, was, that after his death, she might yet pittie his error, and know that it proceeded of loue, and not of boldnesse. 3

That conceit found such friendship in his thoughts, that at last he yelded, since he was banished

her prese[n]ce, to seeke some meanes by writing to shew his sorrow, & testifie his 4
repentance. Therefore getting him the necessarie instruments of writing, he thought
best to couterfaite his hand (fearing that as alreadie she knew his, she would cast it
away as soone as she saw it) and to put it in vers, hoping, that would draw her on to
read the more, chusing the Elegiac as fittest for mourning. But pen did neuer more
quakingly performe his office; neuer was paper more double moistned with inke &
teares; neuer words more slowly married together, & neuer the Muses more tired, then
now with changes & rechanges of his deuises: fearing howe to ende, before he had
resolued how to begin, mistrusting ech word, condemning eche sentence. This word
was not significant, that word was too plain: this would not be co[n]ceiued; the other
would be il conceiued. Here Sorow was not inough expressed; there he seemed too
much for his owne sake to be sory. This sentence rather shewed art, then passion; that
sentence rather foolishly passionate, then forcibly mouing. At last, marring with
mending, and putting out better, then he left, he made an end of it; & being ended, &
diuerse times ready to teare it: till his reason assuring him, the more he studied, the
worse it grew, he folded it vp, deuoutly inuoking good acceptation vnto it; and
watching his time, when they were all gone one day to dinner (sauing *Mopsa*) to the
other lodge, stale vp into *Pamelaes* chamber, and in her sta[n]dish (which first he
kissed & and craued of it a safe and friendly keeping) left it there, to be seene at her
next vsing her hike (himselpe returning againe to be true prisoner to desperate sorrow)
leauing her standish vpon her beds head, to giue her the more occasion to marke it:
which also fell out.

For she finding it at her after noone-returne, in another place then she left it, opened
it. But when

she saw the letter, her hart gaue her from whence it came. And therefore clapping 5
it to againe, she went away from it, as if it had bin a contagious garment of an
infected person: and yet was not long away, but that she wished she had read it,
though she were loth to reade it. Shall I (said she) second his boldnesse so farre, as to
reade his presumptuous letters? And yet (said she) he sees me not to growe the bolder
thereby: And how can I tell, whether they be presumptuous? The paper came from
him, and therefore not worthie to be receyued; and yet the paper (she thought) was not
guiltie. At last, she concluded, it were not much amisse to looke it ouer, that she might
out of his wordes picke some further quarrell against him. Then she opened it, and
threwe it away, and tooke it vp againe, till (ere she were aware) her eyes woulde
needes reade it, conteining this matter.

*V*Nto a caitife wretch, whom long affliction holdeth,

and now fully beleeuers helpe to be quite perished;

Grant yet, grant yet a looke, to the last monume[n]t of his anguish,

O you (alas so I find) came of his onely ruine.

*Dread not a whit (O goodly cruel) that pittie may enter
into thy hart by the sight of this Epistle I send:
And so refuse to behold of these strange wounds the recitall,
least it might th'allure home to thy selfe to returne,
Vnto thy selfe I do means those graces dwell so within thee,
gratefulness, sweetness, holy loue, hartie regard)
Such thing cannot I seeke (Despairs hath giu'n me my answer
despaire most tragicall clause to a deadly request)
Such thing can[n]ot he hope, that knowes thy determinat hardnes;
hard like a rich marble: hard, but a faire Diamond.
Can those eyes that of eyes drownd in most hartly flowing teares,
(teares and teares of a man) had no returne to remorse;
Can those eyes not yeeld to the kind conceit of a sorow,
which inke onely relates, but ne laments, ne replies?
Ah, that, that I do I not conceiue {though that to my blisse were)
more then Nestors yeares, more then a Kings diademe.
Ah, that, that I do not co[n]ceiue; to the heaue[n] when a mouse climes
then may I hope t'atchiue grace of a heauenly tiger.
But, but alas, like a man co[n]demn'd doth craue to be heard speake
not that he hopes for amends of the desaster he feeles,
But finding th' approach of death with an ougly relenting,
giues an adieu to the world, as to his onely delight:
Right so my boiling hart, enflamde with fire of a faire eye,
bubling out doth breath signes of his hugie dolours:
Now that he fends to what end his life and loue be reserued,
and that he hence must part where to liue onely he lou'd.
O faire, O fairest, are such thy triumphs to thy fairnesse?
can death beautie become? must be such a monument?
Must I be onely the marke, shall proue that Vertue is angrie?
shall proue that fiercenes can with a white doue abide?
Shall to the world appeare that faith and loue be rewarded
with mortall disdain, bent to vnendly reuenge? Vnto reuenge?
O sweete, on a wretch wilt thou be reuenged?
shall such high Plannets ende to the losse of a war me?
And to reuenge who[m] doo bend, would in that kind be reuenged,
as th' offence was done, and goe beyond if he can.
All my offence was Loue: with Loue then must I be chastned,
and with more, by the lawes that to Reuenge doo belong.
If that loue be a fault, more fault in you to be louely:
Loue neuer had me opprest, but that I saw to be lou'd.
You be the cause that I lou'd: what Reason blameth a shadowe,*

that with a body't goes? since by a body it is.
If that Loue you did hate, you should your beautie haue hidden:
you should those faire eyes haue with a veile couered.
But foole, foole that I am, those eyes would shine fro[m] a dark caue.
what veiles then doo preuaile, but to a more miracle?
Or those golden lockes, those lockes which lock me to bondage,
torne you should disperse vnto the blasts of a winde.
But foole, foole that I am, tho I had but a hair of her head fou[n]d,
eu'n as I am, so I should vnto that haire be a thrall.
Or with fair ha[n]ds-nailes (ô ha[n]d which nailes me to this death)
you should haue your face (since Loue is ill) blemished.
O wretch, what do I say? should that faire face be defaced?
should my too-much sight cause so true a Sunne to be lost?
First let Cimmerian darknes be my one/ habitation:
first be mine eyes pulde out, first be my braine perished;
Ere that I should consent to doo such excessiue a dammage
vnto the earth, by the hurt of this her heavenly iewell.
O no: but such loue you say you could haue afoorded,
as might learne Temperance voyde of a rages euent.
O sweet simplicitie: from whence should Loue so be learned?
vnto Cupid that boy shall a Pedante be found?
Well: but faultie I was: Reason to my Passion yeelded,
Passion vnto my rage, Rage to a hastie reuenge.
But whats this for a fault, for which such fault is abolisht,
such faith, so staineles, inuiolate, violent?
Shall I not? ô may I not thus yet refresh the remembrance,
what sweete ioyes I had once, and what a place I did hold?
Shall I not once obiect, that you, you graunted a fauour
vnto the man, whom now such miseries you awarde?
Red your thoghts to the dear sweet words which the[n] to me giu'n were:
think what a world is now, think who hath altred her hart.
What? was I then worthie such good, now worthie such euill?
now fled, then cherished? then so nie, now so remote?
Did not a rosed breath, from lips more rosie proceeding,
say, that I should well finde in what a care I was had?
With much more: now what doo I finde, but Care to abhor me,
Care that I sinke in grieffe, Care that I liue banished?
And banished doo I liue, nor now will seeke a recou'rie,
since so she will, whose will is to me more then a lawe.
If then a man in most ill case may giue you a farewell;

farewell, long farewell, all my woe, all my delight.

CHAP. 2.

1 *The young Ladies mette: 2 inuited to the countrie-wenches sports, 3 goe thether, 4 there are taken, and thence carted to Amphialus castle. 5 Their entertainment there. 6 Cecropias auricular confession of her proud cariage in prosperitie, 7 and ambitious practises in aduersitie. 8 Amphialus his affection in these actions.*



What this would haue wrought in her, she her selfe could not tell: for, before her

Reason could moderate the disputation betwene Fauour & Faultines, her sister, and *Miso*, called her downe to

1

entertaine *Zelmane*, who was come to visite the two sisters; about whom, as about two Poles, the Skie of Beautie was turned: while *Gynecia* wearied her bed with her melancholic sicknes, and made *Misos* shrewdnesse (who like a sprite, sette to keep a treasure, barde *Zelmane* from any further conference) to be the Lieutenant of her iealousie: Both she and her husband, driuing *Zelmane* to such a streit of resolution, either of impossible graunting, or dangerous refusing, as the best escape she had, was (as much as she coulde) to auoyde their companie. So as, this day, being the fourth day after the vprore, (*Basilus* being with his sicke wife, conferring vpon such examinations, as *Philanax*, and other of his noble-men had made of this late seditio[n], all touching *Cecropia* with veheme[n]t suspition of giuing either flame or fuell vnto it) *Zelmane* came with her bodie, to find her mind, which was gone long before her, & had gotten his seate in *Philoclea*: who now with a bashfull cheerefulnesse (as though she were ashamed, that she could not choose but be glad) ioyned with her sister, in making much of *Zelmane*.

And so as they sate deuising how to giue more feathers to the winges of Time, there came to the

lodge dore, sixe maides, all in one liuerie of skarlette petticotes, which were tuckt 2
vp almoste to their knees, the petticoates them selues beinge in many places
garnished with leaues, their legges naked, sauing that aboue the anckles they had little
black silke laces, vpon which did hang a few siluer belles: like which they had a little
aboute their elbowes, vpon their bare armes. Vpon their haire they ware garlandes of
roses and gilliflowers; and the haire was so drest, as that came againe aboute the
garlandes; enterchaunging a mutuall couering: so as it was doubtfull, whether the
haire drest the garlandes, or the garlandes drest the haire. Their breasts liberall to the

eye: the face of the formoste [of] them, in excellencie faire; and of the rest louely, if not beautifull: and beautifull would haue bene, if they had not suffered greedy *Phæbus*, ouer-often, and harde, to kisse them. Their countenaunces full of a gracefull grauitie; so as the gesture matcht with the apparrell, it might seem a wanton modestie, and an entising sobernes. Each of them had an instrument of musick in their hands, which consorting their wel-pleasing tunes, did charge each eare with vnsensiblenes, that did not lende it selfe vnto them. The Musicke entring alone into the lodge, the Ladies were all desirous to see from whence so pleasant a guest was come: and therefore went out together; where, before they coulde take the paines to doubt, much lesse to aske the question of their qualitie, the fairest of them (with a gay, but yet discrete demeanour) in this sort spake vnto them. Most excellent Ladies, (whose excellencies haue power to make cities enuie these woods, and solitarines to be accounted the sweetest companie) vouchsafe our message your gracious hearing, which as it comes from Loue, so comes it from louely persons. The maides of all this coast of *Arcadia*, vnderstanding the often accesse that certaine shepheards of these quarters, are allowed to haue in this forbidden place; and that their rurall sports are not disdained of you, haue bene stird with emulation to them, and affection to you, to bring forth some thing, which might as well breede your contentment: and therefore hoping that the goodnes of their intention, & the hurtlesnes of their sex shall excuse the breach of the commandeme[n]t in coming to this place vnsent for, they chose out vs, to inuite both your princely parents, & your selues, to a place in the woods about half a mile hence: where they haue prouided some such sports, as they trust your gracious acceptatio[n]s will interpret to be deliteful. We haue bene at the other lodge, but finding them there, busied in weightier affaires, our trust is, that you yet will not denie the shining of your eies vpo[n] vs.

The Ladies stood in some double, whether they should goe or not, lest *Basilus* might be angry

withall. But *Miso* (that had bene at none of the pastorals, and had a great desire to 3
lead her old senses abroad to some pleasure) told them plainly, they should nor
will, nor choose, but go thether, and make the honest countrie people know, that they
were not so squeamish as folkes thought of them. The Ladies glad to be warranted by
her authoritie; with a smiling humblenesse obeied her: *Pamela* only casting a seeking
looke, whether she could see *Dorus* (who poore wretch wandred halfe mad for sorrow
in the woods, crying for pardon of her, who could not heare him) but indeed was
griued for his absence, hauing giuen the wound to him through her owne harte. But
so the three Ladies & *Miso* went with those six Nymphes, conquering the length of the
way with the force of musique, leauing only *Mopsa* behind, who disgraced weeping
with her countenance, because her mother would not suffer her to shewe her
newskoured face among them. But the place apointed (as they thought) met them
halfe in their way, so well were they pleased with the sweete tunes and prettie
conuersation of their inuiters. There founde they in the midst of the thickest part of the

wood, a litle square place, not burdened with trees, but with a boord couered, & beautified with the pleasantest fruites, that Sun-burnd Autumne could deliuer vnto the[m]. The maids besought the Ladies to sit downe, and tast of the swelling grapes, which seemed great with child of *Bacchus*: & of the diuers coloured plums, which gaue the eye a pleasant tast before they came to the mouth. The Ladies would not shew to scorne their prouision, but eat, and dranke a little of their coole wine, which seemed to laugh for ioy to come to such lips.

But after the collation was ended, and that they looked for the coming foorth of such deuises, as

were prepared for them, there rusht out of the woods twentie armed men, who 4
round about enuironed them, & laying hold of *Zelmane* before she could draw her sword, and taking it from her, put hoods ouer the heads of all fower, and so muffled, by force set them on horsebacke and carried them away; the sisters in vaine crying for succour, while *Zelmanes* harte was rent in peeces with rage of the iniurie, and disdaine of her fortune. But when they had caried them a foure or fiue mile further, they lefte *Miso* with a gagge in her mouth, and bound hande and foote, so to take her fortune: and brought the three Ladies (by that time that the Night seemed with her silence to conspire to their treason) to a castle about ten mile of from the Lodges: where they were fayne to take a boate whiche wayted for them. For the castle stood in the midst of a great lake, vppon a high rocke, where partly by Arte, but principallie by Nature, it was by all men esteemed impregnable.

But at the Castle gate their faces were discouered, and there were mett with a great number of

torches, after whome the sisters knewe their aunt in lawe, *Cecropia*. But that sight 5
increased the deadly terrour of the Princesses, looking for nothing but death, since they were in the power of the wicked *Cecropia*: who yet came vnto them, making curtesie the outside of mischiefe, and desiring them not to be discomforted: for they were in a place dedicated to their seruice. *Philoclea* (with a looke where Loue shined through the miste of Feare) besought her to be good vnto them, hauing neuer deserued euill of her. But *Pamelas* high harte disdayning humblenesse to iniurie, Aunt, (said she) what you haue determined of vs I pray you doo it speedily: for my part I looke for no seruice, where I finde violence.

But *Cecropia* (using no more wordes with them) conueyed them all three to seuerall lodgings (*Zelmanes* harte so swelling with spite, that she coulde not bring foorth a worde) and so lefte them: first taking from them their kniues, because they should do themselues no hurte, before she had determined of them: and then giuing such order that they wanted nothing but libertie, & comfort, she went to her sonne, who yet kept his bed, because of his wound he had receiued of *Zelmane*, & told him, whom now he had in his power. *Amphialus* was but euen then returned from far countries, where he had wonne immortall fame, both of courage & curtesie, when he met with the Princesses, and was hurt by *Zelmane*, so as he was vtterly ignorant of all

his mothers wicked deuises; to which he would neuer haue consented, being (like a rose out of a brier) an excellent sonne of an euill mother: and now when he heard of this, was as much amazed, as if he had seen the Sunne fall to the earth. And therefore desired his mother that she would tell him the whole discourse, how all these matters had happened.

Sonne (said she) I will doo it willingly, and since all is done for you, I will hide nothing from you.

And howsoeuer I might be ashamed to tell it strangers, who would thinke it wickednesse, yet what is done for your sake (how euill soeuer to others) to you is vertue. To begin then euen with the beginning, this doting foole *Basilus* that now raignes, hauing liued vnmarried till he was nigh threescore yeares old (and in all his speaches affirming, and in all his doings assuring, that he neuer would marrie) made all the eyes of the country to be bent vpon your father, his onely brother (but then younger by thirty yeares) as vpon the vndoubted successour: being indeed a man worthy to raigne, thinking nothing enough for himselfe: where this goose (you see) puts downe his head, before there be any thing neere to touch him. So that he holding place and estimation as heyre of *Arcadia*, obteyned me of my father the King of *Argos*, his brother helping to the conclusion, with protesting his bachelorly intention: for else you may be sure the King of *Argos*, nor his daughter would haue suffered their Royall bloud to be stained with the base name of subiection. So that I came into this countrie as apparant Princesse therof, and accordingly was courted, and followed of all the Ladies of this countrie. My porte and pompe did well become a King of *Argos* daughter: in my presence their tongues were turned into eares, & their eares were captiues vnto my tongue. Their eyes admired my Maiestie, & happy was he or she, on whom I would suffer the beames thereof to fall. Did I goe to church? it seemed the very Gods wayted for me, their deuotions not being solemnized till I was ready. Did I walke abroad to see any delight? Nay, my walking was the delight it selfe: for to it was the concourse; one thrusting vpon another, who might shewe him selfe most diligent and seruiceable towards me: my sleepes were inquired after, and my wakings neuer vnsaluted: the very gate of my house full of principall persons, who were glad, if their presents had receaued a gratefull acceptation. And in this felicitie wert thou borne, the very earth submitting it selfe vnto thee to be troden on as by his Prince; and to that passe had my husbandes vertue (by my good helpe) within short time brought it, with a plot we laide, as we should not haue needed to haue waited the tedious worke of a naturall end of *Basilus*, when the heaue[n]s (I thinke enuying my great felicity) the[n] stopt thy fathers breath, whe[n] he breathed nothing but power and soueraigntie. Yet did not thy orphanie, or my widdowhood, depriue vs of the delightfull prospect, which the hill of honour dooth yeeld, while expectation of thy succession did bind dependencies vnto us.

But before, (my sonne) thou wert come to the age to feele the sweetnesse of 7
authoritie, this beast (whom I can neuer name with patience) falsely and foolishly
married this *Gynecia*, then a young girle, and brought her to sit aboute me in al " "
feasts, to turne her shoulder to me-ward in all our solemnities. It is certaine, it is
not so great a spite to be surmounted by straungers, as by ones owne allies. Thinke
then what my minde was, since withall there is no question: The fall is greater from
the first to the second, then from the second to the vndermost. The rage did swell in
my harte, so much the more as it was faine to be suppressed in sile[n]ce, & disguised
with humblenes. But aboute al the rest, the grieffe of grieues was, whe[n] with these
daughters (now thy prisoners) she cut of al hope of thy successio[n]. It was a tedious
thing to me; that my eies should looke lower then any bodies, that (my selfe being by)
another's voice then mine, should be more respected. But it was insupportable vnto
me, to think that not only I, but thou shouldst spend al thy time in such misery, & that
the Sun should see my eldest son lesse then a Prince. And though I had ben a saint I
could not choose, finding the chau[n]ge this change of fortune bred vnto me, for now
fro[m] the multitude of followers, sile[n]ce grew to be at my gate, & abse[n]ce in my
presence. The guesse of my mind could preuaile more before, then now many of my
earnest requests. And thou (my deare sonne) by the fickle multitude no more then
any ordinary person (borne of the mud of the people) regarded. But I (reme[m]bring
that in all miseries, weeping becomes fooles, and practize wise folks) haue tried,
diuers meanes to pull vs out of the mire of subiectio[n]. And though many times
Fortune failed me, yet did I neuer faile my self. Wild beasts I kept in a caue hard by
the lodges, which I caused by night to be fed in the place of their pastorals, I as then
liuing in my house hard by the place, and against the houre they were to meete
(hauing kept the beasts without meate) then let them loose, knowing that they would
seeke their food there, and deuoure what they founde. But blind Fortune hating
sharpe-sighted inuentions, made them vnluckily to be killed. After, I vsed my
seruant *Clinias* to stir a notable tumult of country people: but those louts were too
grosse instruments for delicate conceits. Now lastly, finding *Philanax*-his
examinations grow daungerous, I thought to play double or quit; & with a sleight I
vsed of my fine-witted we[n]ch *Artesia*, with other maids of mine, would haue sent
these good inheritrixes of *Arcadia*, to haue pleaded their cause before *Pluto*, but that
ouer-fortunatly for the[m], you made me know the last day how vehemently this
childish passion of loue doth torment you.

Therefore I haue brought them vnto you, yet wishing rather hate the[n] loue in you. " "
For Hate often begetteth victory; Loue commonly is the instrument of subiection. " "
It is true, that I would also by the same practise haue entrapped the parents, but
my maids failed of it, not daring to tary long about it. But this sufficeth, since (these
being taken away) you are the vndoubted inheritor, and *Basilus* will not long ouer-
liue this losse.

O mother (said *Amphialus*) speake not of doing them hurt, no more then to mine eies, or my

hart, or if I haue any thing more deare then eyes, or hart vnto me. Let others finde 8
what sweetnesse they will in euer fearing, because they are euer feared: for my
part, I will thinke my selfe highly intitled, if I may be once by *Philoclea* accepted for
a seruant. Well (said *Cecropia*) I would I had borne you of my minde, as well as of
my body: then should you not haue suncke vnder base weakenesses. But since you
haue tied your thoughts in so wilfull a knot, it is happie I haue brought matters to such
a passe, as you may both enioy affection, and vppon that build your soueraigntie. Alas
(said *Amphialus*) my hart would faine yeeld you thanks for setting me in the way of
felicitie, but that feare killes them in me, before they are fully borne. For
if *Philoclea* be displeased, how can I be pleased? if she count it vnkindnes, shal I giue
tokens of kindnes? perchance she co[n]demnes me of this action, and shall I triumph?
perchance she drownes nowe the beauties I loue with sorrowful teares, and where is
then my reioicing? You haue reason (said *Cecropia* with a feined grauitie) I will
therefore send her away presently, that her contentment may be recouered. No good
mother (said *Amphialus*) since she is here, I would not for my life constraine presence,
but rather would I die then co[n]sent to absence. Pretie intricat follies (said *Cecropia*)
but get you vp, & see how you can preuaile with her, while I go to the other sister. For
after we shal haue our hands full to defend our selues, if *Basilus* hap to besiege vs.
But remembring herself, she turned back, & asked him what he woulde haue done
with *Zelmane*, since nowe he might be reuenged of his hurt. Nothing
but honorably, answered *Amphialus*, hauing deserued no other of me, especially ..
being (as I heare) greatly cherished of *Philoclea*. And therefore I could wish they ..
were lodged together. O no (said *Cecropia*) company confirmes resolutio[n]s, &
lonelines breeds a werines of ones thoughts, and so a sooner consenting to reasonable
profers.

CHAP. 3.

1 *Amphialus* addressing him to *Philoclea*. 2 *Her melancholie habit*. 3 *His humble sute*. 4 *Her pitifull answer*:
5 *and his compassionate replie*. 6 *Their parting with cold comfort*.



Vt *Amphialus* (taking of his mother *Philocleas* kniues, which I he kept as a relique,

since she had worne them) gat vp, and calling for his richest 1
apparell, nothing seemed sumptuous inough for his mistresses eyes:
and that which was costly, he feared were not daintie: and though the
invention were delicat, he misdoubted the making. As carefull he was too of the
colour; lest if gay, he might seeme to glorie in his iniury, and her wrong; if mourning,
it might strike some euill presage vnto her of her fortune. At length he tooke a
garment more rich then glaring, the ground being black veluet, richly embrodered
with great pearle, & precious stones, but they set so among certaine tuffes of cypres,
that the cypres was like blacke clouds, through which the starrs might yeeld a darke
luster. About his necke he ware a brode & gorgeous coller; whereof the pieces
enterchangeably answering; the one was of Diamonds and pearle, set with a white
enamell, so as by the cunning of the workman it seemed like a shining ice, and the
other piece being of Rubies, and Opalles, had a fierie glistring, which he thought
pictured the two passions of Feare and Desire, wherein he was enchainned. His hurt
(not yet fully well) made him a little halt, but he straued to giue the best grace he could
vnto his halting.

And in that sort he went to *Philocleas* chamber: whome he found (because her
chamber was

ouer-lightsome) sitting of that side of her bedde which was from the windowe; 2
which did cast such a shadow vpon her, as a good Painter woulde bestowe
vpon *Venus*, when vnder the trees she bewayled the murther of *Adonis*: her handes
and fingers (as it were) indented one within the other: her shoulder leaning to her beds
head, and ouer her head a scarfe, which did eclipse almost halfe her eyes, which vnder
it fixed their beames vpon the wall by, with so steddie a maner, as if in that place they
might well chaunge, but not mende their obiect: and so remayned they a good while
after his comming in, he not daring to trouble her, nor she perceyuing him, till that (a
little varying her thoughts something quickening her senses) she heard him as he
happed to stirre his vpper garment: and perceyuing him, rose vp, with a demeanure,
where in the booke of Beautie there was nothing to be read but Sorrow: for Kindnesse
was blotted out, and Anger was neuer there.

But *Amphialus* that had entrusted his memorie with long and forcible speeches,
found it so

locked vp in amazement, that he could pike nothing out of it, but the beseeching 3
her to take what was don in good part, and to assure herselfe there was nothing
but honour meant vnto her person. But she making no other aunswere, but letting her
handes fall one from the other, which before were ioyned (with eyes something cast
aside, and a silent sigh) gaue him to vnderstande, that considering his dooings, she

thought his speech as full of incongruitie, as her aunswere would be voyde of purpose: whereuppon he kneeling downe, and kissing her hande, (which she suffered with a countenance witnessing captiuitie, but not kindnesse) he besought her to haue pitie of him, whose loue went beyonde the boundes of conceite, much more of vttering: that in her handes the ballance of his life or death did stande; whereto the least motion of hers woulde serue to determine, she being indeede the mistresse of his life, and he her eternall slaue; and with true vehemencie besought her that he might heare her speake, whereupon she suffered her sweete breath to turne it selfe into these kind of words.

Alas cousin, (saide she) what shall my tongue be able to doo, which is infourmed by the eares one

way, and by the eyes another? You call for pittie, and vse crueltie; you say, you loue me, and yet do the effectes of enmitie. You affirme your death is in my handes, but you haue brought me to so neere a degree to death, as when you will, you may lay death vpon me: so that while you say I am mistresse of your life, I am not mistresse of mine owne. You entitle your selfe my slaue, but I am sure I am yours. If then violence, iniurie, terror, and depriuing of that which is more dear then life it selfe, libertie, be fit orators for affection, you may expect that I will be easily perswaded. But if the nearenesse of our kinred breede any remorse in you, or there be any such thing in you, which you call loue towarde me, then let not my fortune be disgraced with the name of imprisonment: let not my hart waste it selfe by being vexed with feeling euill, and fearing worse. Let not me be a cause of my parents wofull destruction; but restore me to my selfe; and so doing I shall account I haue receyued my selfe of you. And what I say for my selfe, I say for my deare sister, and my friend *Zelmana*: for I desire no wel being, without they may be partakers. With that her teares rained downe from her heauenly eyes, and seemed to water the sweet and beautifull flowers of her face.

But *Amphialus* was like the poore woman, who louing a tame Doe she had, about all earthly

things, hauing long played withall, and made it feede at her hand and lappe, is constrained at length by famine (all her flocke being spent, and she fallen into extreeme pouertie) to kill the Deare, to sustaine her life. Manie a pitifull looke doth she cast vpon it, and many a time doth she draw backe her hand before she can giue the stroke. For euen so *Amphialus* by a hunger-sterued affection, was compelled to offer this iniurie, and yet the same affection made him with a tormenting grieffe, thinke vnkindnesse in himselfe, that he could finde in his hart any way to restraine her freedome. But at length, neither able to grant, nor denie, he thus answered her. Deare ladie (said he) I will not say vnto you (how iustly soeuer I may do it) that I am neither author, nor accessarie vnto this your withholding. For since I do not redres it, I am as faulty as if I had begun it. But this I protest vnto you (and this protestation of mine, let the heauens heare, and if I lie, let them answer me with a deadly thunderbolt) that in

my soule I wish I had neuer seene the light, or rather, that I had neuer had a father to beget such a child, the that by my meanes those eyes should ouerflow their owne beauties, then by my meanes the skie of your vertue should be ouerclouded with sorrow. But woe is me, most excellent Ladie, I finde my selfe most willing to obey you: neither truely doo mine eares receaue the least word you speak, with any lesse reuerence, then as absolute, and vnresistable commaundements. But alas, that Tyrant Loue, (which now possesseth the holde of all my life and reason) will no way suffer it. It is Loue, it is Loue, not I, which disobey you. What then shall I say? but that I, who am redie to lie vnder your feete, to venture, nay to loose my life at your least commandement: I am not the staye of your freedome, but Loue, Loue, which ties you in your owne knots. It is you your selfe, that imprison your selfe: it is your beautie which makes these castle-walles embrace you: it is your owne eyes, which reflect vpon themselues this iniurie. Then is there no other remedie, but that you some way vouchsafe to satisfie this Loues vehemencie; which (since it grewe in your selfe) without question you shall finde it (far more then I) tractable.


But with these wordes *Philoclea* fell to so extreame a quaking, and her liuely whitenesse did degenerate to so dead a palenesse, that *Amphialus* feared some daungerous traunce: so that taking her hande, and feelinge that it (which was woonte to be one of the chiefe firebrands of *Cupid*) had all the sense of it wrapt vp in coldnes, he began humblie to beseech her to put away all feare, and to assure herselfe vpon the vowe he made thereof vnto God, and her selfe, that the vttermost forces he would euer employ to conquere her affection, should be Desire, and Desert. That promise brought *Philoclea* againe to her selfe, so that slowly lifting vp her eyes vpon him, with a countenance euer courteous, but then languishing, she tolde him, that he should doo well to do so, if indeede he had euer tasted what true loue was: for that where now she did beare him good will, she should (if he tooke any other way) hate, and abhor the very thought of him: offering him withall, that though his mother had taken away her kniues, yet the house of Death had so many doores, as she would easilie flie into it, if euer she founde her honor endangered.

Amphialus hauing the colde ashes of Care cast vpon the coales of Desire, leauing some of his

mothers Gentlewomen to waite vpon *Philoclea*, himselfe indeede a prisoner to his 6
prisoner, and making all his authoritie to be but a footestoole to Humblenes, went from her to his mother. To whom with words which Affection endited, but Amazement vttered, he deliuered what had passed betwene him and *Philoclea*: beseeching her to trie what her perswasions could doo with her, while he gaue order for all such things as were necessarie against such forces, as he looked dayly *Basilius* would bring before his castle. His mother bade him quiette him selfe, for she doubted not to take fitte times. But that the best way was, first to let her owne Passion a little tire it selfe.

CHAP. 4.

1 *Amphialus warlike preparations. 2 His iustification. 3 His fortifications. 4 His Arte of men. 5 His Loue-passions, and passionate complaints.*

 O they calling *Clinias*, and some other of their counsell, aduised vpon their present affaires. First, he dispatched priuat letters to al those principall Lords and gentlemen of the country, who[m] he thought ether alliance, or friendship to himselfe might drawe; with speciall motions from the generall consideration of duetie: not omitting all such, whom either youthfull age, or youth-like mindes did fill with unlimited desires: besides such, whom any discontentment made hungry of change, or an ouer-spended wante, made want a ciuill warre: to each (according to the counsell of his mother) conforming himselfe after their humors. To his friends, friendlines; to the ambitious, great expectations; to the displeased, reuenge; to the greedie, spoyle: wrapping their hopes with such cunning, as they rather seemed giuen ouer vnto them as partakers: then promises sprong of necessitie. Then sent he to his mothers brother, the King of *Argos*: but he was as then so ouer-laide with warre himselfe, as from thence he could attend small succour.

But because he knewe, how violently rumors doo blow the sailes of popular iudgeme[n]ts, & how few there be, that can discern betweene trueth and truthlikenes, betweene showes and substance; he caused a iustification of this his action to be written, wherof were sowed abroad many copies, which with some glosses of probabilitie, might hide indeede the foulness of his treason; and from true common-places, fetch downe most false applications. For, beginning how much the duetie which is owed to the countrie, goes beyond all other duties, since in it selfe it conteines them all, and that for the respect therof, not onely all tender respects of kinred, or whatsoever other friendshipes, are to be laide aside, but that euen long-helde opinions (rather builded vpon a secrete of gouernement, then any grou[n]d of truthe) are to be forsaken. He fell by degrees to shew, that since the ende whereto any thing is directed, is euer to be of more noble reckning, then the thing thereto directed: that therefore, the weale-publicke was more to be regarded, then any person or magistrate that thereunto was ordeined. The feeling consideration whereof, had moued him (though as nere of kinne to *Basilus* as could be, yet) to set principally before his eyes, the good estate of so many thousands, ouer whom *Basilus* raigned: rather then so to hoodwinke himselfe with affection, as to suffer the realme to runne to manifest ruine. The care whereof, did kindly appertaine to those, who being subalterne magistrates and officers of the crowne, were to be employed as fro[m] the Prince, so for the people; and of all other, especiallie himselfe, who being descended of the

Royall race, and next heire male, Nature had no soner opened his eyes, but that the soyle whereupon they did looke, was to looke for at his hands a continuall carefulnes: which as fro[m] his childhood he had euer caried; so now finding that his vncler had not only giue ouer al care of gouernment, but had put it into the hands of *Philanax*, (a man neither in birth comparable to many, nor for his corrupt, prowde, and partiall dealing, liked of any) but beside, had set his daughters (in whom the whole estate, as next heires thereunto, had no lesse interest the[n] himselfe) in so vnfit & il-guarded a place, as it was not only da[n]gerous for their persons, but (if they should be conueied to any forraine country) to the whole common-wealth pernicious: that therefore he had brought them into this stro[n]g castle of his, which way, if it might seem strange, they were to consider, that new necessities require new remedies:

but there they should be serued & honored as belonged to their greatnes, vntil by the generall assembly of the estates, it should be determined how they should to their best (both priuate, and publique) advantage be matched; vowing all faith & duty both to the father & children, neuer by him to be violated. But if in the meane time, before the estates could be asse[m]bled, he were assailed, he would the[n] for his own defence take armes: desiring all, that either tendred the dangerous case of their country, or in their harts loued iustice, to defe[n]d him in this iust actio[n]. And if the Prince should commaund them otherwise, yet to know, that therein he was no more to be obeied, then if he should call for poison to hurt himself withall: since all that was done, was done for his seruice, howsoeuer he might (seduced by *Philanax*) interprete of it: he protesting, that what soeuer he should doo for his owne defence, should be against *Philanax*, & no way against *Basilus*.

To this effect:, amplified with arguments and examples, and painted with 3
rhetoricall colours, did he sow abroad many discourses: which as they preuayled with some of more quicke then sounde conceipte, to runne his fortune with him; so in many did it breed a coolnesse, to deale violently against him, and a false-minded neutralitie to expect the issue. But besides the waies he vsed to weaken the aduerse partie, he omitted nothing for the strengthening of his owne. The chiefe trust whereof (because he wanted men to keepe the field) he reposed in the suretie of his castle; which at lest would winne him much time, the mother of many mutations. To that therefore he bent his outward & inward eyes, striuing to make Art striue with Nature, to whether of them two that fortification should be most beholding. The seat Nature bestowed, but Arte gaue the building: which as his rocky hardnesse would not yeeld to vndermining force, so to ope assaults he tooke counsell of skill, how to make all approaches, if not impossible, yet difficult; as well at the foot of the castle, as round about the lake, to giue vnquiet lodgings to the[m], whom onely enmitie would make neighbors. Then omitted he nothing of defence, as wel simple defence, as that which did defend by offending, fitting instrume[n]ts of mischiefe to places, whence the mischiefe might be most liberally bestowed. Nether was his smallest care for victuals,

as well for the providing that which should suffice both in store & goodnesse, as in well preserving it, and wary distributing it, both in quantitie, and qualitie; spending that first which would keepe lest.

But wherein he sharpened his wits to the piercingest point, was touching his men 4
(knowing them to be the weapon of weapons, & master-spring (as it were) which makes all the rest to stir; and that therefore in the Arte of man stood the quintessence, & ruling skill of all prosperous gouvernement, either peaceable, or military) he chose in number as many as without pestring (and so daunger of infection) his victuall would seem for two yeare to maintaine; all of liable bodies, and some few of able mindes to direct, not seeking many commaunders, but contenting himselfe, that the multitude should haue obeying wills, euery one knowing whom he should commaund, and whom he should obey, the place where, and the matter wherein; distributing each office as neere as he could, to the disposition of the person that should exercise it: knowing no loue, daunger, nor discipline can sodainly alter an habite in nature. Therefore would he not employ the stil ma[n] to a shifting practise, nor the liberall man to be a dispenser of his victuals, nor the kind-harted man to be a punisher: but would exercise their vertues in sorts, where they might be profitable, employing his chief care to know the all particularly, & throughly, regarding also the co[n]stitutio[n] of their bodies; some being able better to abide watching, some hu[n]ger, some labour, making his benefit of ech hability, & not forcing beyond power. Time to euery thing by iust proportio[n] he allotted, & as well in that, as in euery thing els, no small errour winckt at, lest greater should be animated. euen of vices he made his profite, making the cowardly *Clinias* to haue care of the watch, which he knew his own feare would make him very wakefully performe. And before the siege began, he himselfe caused rumors to be sowed, and libels to be spread against himselfe, fuller of mallice, then witty persuasion: partly, to knowe those that would be apt to stumble at such motions, that he might cull them from the faithfuller band; but principally, because in necessitie they should not know when any such thing were in earnest attempted, whether it were, or not, of his owne inuention. But euen then (before the enemies face came neere to breed any terrour) did he exercise his men dayly in all their charges, as if Daunger had presently presented his most hideous presence: him selfe rather instructing by example, then precept; being neither more sparing in trauaile, nor spe[n]ding in diet, then the meanest souldier: his hand and body disdainning no base matters, nor shrinking from the heauy.

The onely ods was, that when others tooke breath, he sighed; and when others 5
rested, he crost his armes. For Loue passing thorow the pikes of Dau[n]ger, & tumbling it selfe in the dust of Labour, yet still made him remember his sweete desire, and beautifull image. Often when he had begun to commaund one, somewhat before halfe the sentence were ended, his inward guest did so entertaine him, that he would

breake it of, and a prettie while after end it, when he had (to the marvaile of the standers by) sent himself in to talke with his own thoughts. Sometimes when his hand was lifted vp to some thing, as if with the sight of *Gorgons* head he had bene sodainely turned into a stone, so would he there abide with his eyes planted, and handes lifted, till at length, comming to the vse of himself, he would looke about whether any had perceiued him; then would he accuse, and in himselfe condemne all those wits, that durst affirme Idlenesse to be the well-spring of Loue. O, would he say, al you that affect the title of wisdom, by vngratefull scorning the ornaments of Nature, am I now piping in a shaddow? or doo slouthfull feathers now enwrap me? Is not hate before me, and doubt behinde me? is not daunger of the one side, and shame of the other? And doo I not stande vpon paine, and trauaile, and yet ouer all, my affection triumphes? The more I stirre about urgent affaires, the more me thinks the very stirring breeds a breath to blow the coales of my loue: the more I exercise my thoughts, the more they encrease the appetite of my desires. O sweet *Philoclea* (with that he would cast vp his eies wherin some water did appeare, as if they would wash themselues against they should see her) thy heauenly face is my Astronomie; thy sweet vertue, my sweet Philosophie: let me profile therein, and farewell all other cogitations. But alas, my mind misgiues me, for your planets beare a contrarie aspect vnto me. Woe, woe is me, they threaten my destruction: and whom doo they threaten this destruction? euen him that loues them; and by what means will they destroy, but by louing them? O deare (though killing) eyes, shall death head his darte with the golde of *Cupids* arrowe? Shall death take his ayme from the rest of Beautie? O beloued (though hating) *Philoclea*, how if thou beest mercifull, hath crueltie stolne into thee? Or how if thou beest cruell, doth crueltie looke more mercifull then euer Mercie did? Or alas, is it my destinie that makes Mercie cruell? Like an euill vessell which turnes sweete licour to sowernes; so when thy grace fals vpon me, my wretched constitution makes it become fiercenesse. Thus would he exercise his eloquence, when she could not heare him, and be dumbe-stricken, when her presence gaue him fit occasion of speaking: so that his witte could finde out no other refuge, but the comfort and counsell of his mother, desiring her (whose thoughts were vnperplexed) to vse for his sake the most preuailing manners of intercession.

CHAP. 5.

1 *Suttle Cecropia visites sad Philoclea.* 2 *The shamelesse Aunt's shrewd temptations to loue and mariage: The modest neeces maidenly resistance.*



Cecropia seeing her sonnes safetie depende thereon, (though her pride much

disdained the name of a desire) tooke the charge vpon her, not doubting the easie conquest of an vnexpert virgin, who had alreadie with subtiltie and impudencie begun to vndermine a monarchy.

1

Therefore, waighing *Philocleas* resolutions by the counterpease of her own youthful thoughts, which she then called to minde, she doubted not at least to make *Philoclea* receiue the poyson distilled in sweete liquour, which she with little disguising had drunke vp thirstily. Therefore she went softly to *Philocleas* chamber, & peeping through the side of the doore, then being a little open, she sawe *Philoclea* sitting lowe vpon a cushion, in such a giuen-ouer manner, that one would haue thought, silence, solitarinesse, and melancholic were come there, vnder the ensigne of mishap, to conquere delight, and driue him from his naturall seate of beautie: her teares came dropping downe like raine in Sunshine, and she not taking heede to wipe the teares, they ranne downe vpon her cheekes, and lips, as vpon cherries which the dropping tree bedeweth. In the dressing of her haire and apparell, she might see neither a careful arte, nor an arte of carelesnesse, but euen left to a neglected chance, which yet coulde no more vnperfect her perfections, then a Die anie way cast, could loose his squarenesse.

Cecropia (stirred with no other pitie, but for her son) came in, and haling kindnesse into her countenance, What ayles this sweete Ladie, (said she) will you marre so good eyes with weeping? shall teares take away the beautie of that complexion, which the women of *Arcadia* wish for, and the men long after? Fie of this peeuish sadnesse; in sooth it is vntimely for your age. Looke vpon your owne bodie, and see whether it deserue to pine away with sorrow: see whether you will haue these hands (with that she tooke one of her hands and kissing it, looked vpon it as if she were enamoured with it) fade from their whitenesse, which makes one desire to touch them; & their softnesse, which rebounds againe a desire to looke on them, and become drie, leane and yellowe, and make euerie bodie woonder at the change, and say, that sure you had vsed some arte before, which nowe you had left? for if the beauties had beene naturall, they woulde neuer so soone haue beene blemished. Take a glasse, and see whether these tears become your eies: although, I must co[n]fesse, those eies are able to make tears comely. Alas Madame (answered *Philoclea*) I know not whether my teares become mine eyes, but I am sure mine eies thus beteared, become my fortune. Your fortune (saide *Cecropia*) if she could see to attire herselfe, would put on her best raiments. For I see, and I see it with grieffe, and (to tell you true) vnkindnes: you misconster euerie thing, that only for your sake is attempted. You thinke you are offended, and are indeed defended: you esteeme your selfe a prisoner, and are in truth a mistres: you feare hate, and shall find loue. And truely, I had a thing

2

to say to you, but it is no matter, since I find you are so obstinately melancholy, as that you woo his fellowship: I will spare my paines, and hold my peace: And so staid indeede, thinking *Philoclea* would haue had a female inquisitiuenesse of the matter. But she, who rather wished to vnknowe what she knewe, then to burden her hart with more hopeles knowledge, only desired her to haue pity of her, and if indeed she did meane her no hurt, then to grant her liberty: for else the very grieffe & feare, would proue her vnappointed executioners. For that (said *Cecropia*) beleue me vpo[n] the faith of a kings daughter, you shall be free, so soone as your freedome may be free of mortal da[n]ger, being brought hither for no other cause, but to preuent such mischiefes as you know not of. But if you thinke indeed to winne me to haue care of you, euen as of mine owne daughter, then lend your eares vnto me, & let not your mind arme it self with a wilfulnesse to be flexible to nothing. But if I speake reason, let Reason haue his due reward, persuasion. Then sweet neece (said she) I pray you presuppose, that now, eue[n] in the midst of your agonies, which you paint vnto your selfe most horrible, wishing with sighes, & praying with vowes. for a soone & safe deliuerie. Imagin neece (I say) that some heauenly spirit should appeare vnto you, and bid you follow him through the doore, that goes into the garden, assuring you, that you should therby return to your deare mother, and what other delights soeuer your mind esteemes delights: would you (sweet neece) would you refuse to folow him, & say, that if he led you not through the chiefe gate, you would not enioy your ouer-desired liberty? Would you not drinke the wine you thirst for, without it were in such a glasse, as you especially fancied? tel me (deare neece:) but I wil answer for you, because I know your reason and will is such, as must needs conclude, that such nicenesse can no more be in you, to disgrace such a mind, then disgracefulnesse can haue any place in so faultles a beauty. Your wisdom would assuredly determin, how the marke were hit, not whether the bow were of Ewe or no, wherein you shot. If this be so, and thus sure (my deare neece) it is, then (I pray you) imagin, that I am that same good Angel, who grieuing in your grieffe, and in truth not able to suffer, that bitter sighs should be sent foorth with so sweete a breath, am come to lead you, not only to your desired, and imagined happines, but to a true and essentiall happines; not only to liberty, but to libertie with commandement. The way I will shew you (which if it be not the gate builded hitherto in your priuate choise, yet shall it be a doore to bring you through a garden of pleasures, as sweet as this life can bring foorth; nay rather, which makes this life to be a life: (My son,) let it be no blemish to him that I name him my son, who was your fathers own nephew: for you know I am no smal kings daughter,) my sonne (I say) farre passing the neernesse of his kinred, with the neernesse of good-will, and striuing to match your matchlesse beautie with a matchlesse affection, doth by me present vnto you the full enioying of your liberty, so as with this gift you wil accept a greater, which is, this castell, with all the rest which you knowe he hath, in honorable quantitie; and will confirme his gift, and your receipt of both, with accepting him to be yours. I might say much both for the person and the

matter; but who will crie out the Sun shines? It is so manifest a profit vnto you, as the meanest iudgement must straight apprehend it: so farre is it from the sharpenesse of yours, therof to be ignorant. Therefore (sweet neece) let your gratefulness be my intercession, & your gentlenesse my eloquence, and let me cary comfort to a hart which greatly needs it. *Philoclea* looked vpon her, & cast downe her eie again. Aunt (said she) I would I could be so much a mistres of my owne mind, as to yeelde to my cousins vertuous request: for so I construe of it. But my hart is already set (and staying a while on that word, she brought foorth afterwards) to lead a virgins life to my death: for such a vow I haue in my selfe deuoutly made. The heauens preuent such a mischiefe (said *Cecropia*.) A vowe, quoth you? no, no, my deere neece, Nature, when you were first borne, vowed you a woma[n], & as she made you child of a mother, so to do your best to be mother of a child: she gaue you beautie to moue loue; she gaue you wit to know loue; she gaue you an excelle[n]t body to reward loue: which kind of liberall rewarding is crowned with vnspeakable felicitie. For this, as it bindeth the receiuer, so it makes happy the bestower: this doth not impouerish, but enrich the giuer. O the sweet name of a mother: O the co[m]fort of co[m]forts, to see your childre[n] grow vp, in who[m] you are (as it were) eternized: if you could conceiue what a hart-tickling ioy it is to see your own litle ones, with awfull loue come running to your lap, and like litle models of your selfe, still cary you about them, you would thinke vnkindnes in your own thoughts, that euer they did rebell against the mean vnto it. But percha[n]ce I set this blessednes before your eies, as Captains do victorie before their souldiers, to which they might come through many paines, grieues & dangers. No, I am co[n]tent you shrinke from this my counsel, if the way to come vnto it, be not most of all pleasant. I know not (answered the sweet *Philoclea*, fearing least silence would offend her sullennes) what contentment you speake of: but I am sure the best you can make of it, (which is mariage) is a burdenous yoke. Ah, deer neece (said *Cecropia*) how much you are deceiued? A yoke indeed we all beare, laid vpo[n] vs in our creation, which by mariage is not increased, but thus farre eased, that you haue a yoke-fellow to help to draw through the cloddy cumbers of this world. O widow-nights, beare witnes with me of the difference. How often alas do I embrace the orfan-side of my bed, which was wo[n]t to be imprinted by the body of my deare husband, & with teares acknowledge, that I now enioy such a liberty as the banished ma[n] hath; who may, if he list, wa[n]der ouer the world, but is euer restrained fro[m] his most delightful home? that I haue now such a liberty as the seele[y] dou hath, which being first depriued of eies, is then by the falconer cast off? For beleue me, neece, beleue me, mans experie[n]ce is woma[n]s best eie-sight. Haue you euer seene a pure Rosewater kept in a christal glas; how fine it lokes, how sweet it smels, while that beautifull glasse imprisons it? Breake the prison, and let the water take his owne course, doth it not imbrace dust, and loose all his former sweetnesse, and fairenesse? Truly so are we, if we haue not the stay, rather then the restraint of Cristalline mariage. My hart meltes to thinke of the sweete confortes, I in that happie

time receiued, when I had neuer cause to care, but the care was doubled: whe[n] I neuer reioiced, but that I saw my ioy shine in anothers eies. What shall I say of the free delight, which the hart might embrace, without the accusing of the inward conscience, or feare of outward shame? and is a solitary life as good as this? then can one string make as good musicke as a consort: the[n] can one colour set forth a beautie. But it may be, the generall consideration of mariage dooth not so much mislike you, as the applying of it to him. He is my sone, I must confesse, I see him with a mothers eyes, which if they doo not much deceiue me, he is no such one, ouer whom Contempt may make any iust challenge. He is comely, he is noble, he is rich; but that which in it selfe should carie all comelinesse, nobilitie, and riches, he loues you; and he loues you, who is beloued of others. Driue not away his affection (sweete Ladie) and make no other Ladie hereafter proudly bragge, that she hath robbed you of so faithfull and notable a seruant. *Philoclea* heard some pieces of her speches, no otherwise then one doth when a tedious pratler co[m]bers the hearing of a delightful musicke. For her thoughts had left her eares in that captiuitie, and conueied themselues to behold (with such eies as imagination could lend the[m]) the estate of her *Zelmane*: for who how wel she thought many of those sayings might haue ben vsed with a farre more gratefull acceptation. Therefore listing not to dispute in a matter whereof her selfe was resolute, and desired not to enforme the other, she onely told her, that whilst she was so captiued, she could not conceiue of any such persuasions (though neuer so reasonable) any otherwise, then as constraints: and as constraints must needs eue[n] in nature abhor the[m], which at her libertie, in their owne force of reason, might more preuaile with her: and so faine would haue returned the strength of *Cecropias* perswasions, to haue procured freedome.

CHAP. 6.

1 *Fresh motiues to Philoclea.* 2 *Cecropias new fetch to attempt Pamela.* 3 *Pamelas prayer,* 4 *and Sainct-like graces in it.* 5 *Her Auntes fruiteles argumentes.*

BVt neither her wittie wordes in anemie, nor those wordes, made more then eloquent with passing through such lips, could preuaile in *Cecropia*,¹ no more then her perswasions coulde winne *Philoclea* to disauowe her former vowe, or to leaue the prisoner *Zelmane*, for the commaunding *Amphialus*. So that both sides being desirous, and neither graunters, they brake of conference. *Cecropias* sucking vp more and more spite out of her deniall, which yet for her sonnes sake, she disguised with a visarde of kindnes, leauing no

office vnperformed, which might either witnes, or endear her sonnes affection. Whatsoever could be imagined likely to please her, was with liberall diligence performed: Musickes at her windowe, & especially such Musickes, as might (with dolefull embassage) call the mind to thinke of sorow, and thinke of it with sweetnes; with ditties so sensiblie expressing *Amphialus* case, that euerie worde seemed to be but a diuersifying of the name of *Amphialus*. Daily presents, as it were oblations, to pacific an angrie Deitie, sent vnto her: wherein, if the workmanship of the forme, had striuen with the sumptuousnes of the matter, as much did the inuention in the application, contende to haue the chiefe excellencie: for they were as so many stories of his disgraces, & her perfections; where the richnes did inuite the eyes, the fashion did entertaine the eyes, and the deuice did teach the eyes the present miserie of the presenter himselfe, awefully seruiceable: which was the more notable, as his authoritie was manifest. And for the bondage wherein she liued, all meanes vsed to make knowen, that if it were a bondage, it was a bondage onely knitte in loue-knots. But in harte alreadie vnderstanding no language but one, the Musicke wrought indeede a dolefulness, but it was a dolefulness to be in his power: the dittie intended for *Amphialus*, she translated to *Zelmane*: the presents seemed so many tedious clogs of a thrall'd obligation: and his seruice, the more diligent it was, the more it did exprobrate (as she thought) vnto her, her vnworthie estate: that euen he that did her seruice, had authentic of commanding her, onely construing her seruitude in his own nature, esteeming it a right, and a right bitter seruitude: so that all their shots (how well soeuer leuelled) being carried awrie from the marke, by the storme of her mislike, the Prince *Amphialus* affectionately languished, & *Cecropia* spitefullie cunning, disdained at the barrennes of their successe.

Which willingly *Cecropia* woulde haue reuenged, but that she sawe, her hurte 2
could not be diuided from her sonnes mischief: wherefore, she bethought her
self to attempt *Pamela*, whose beautie being equall, she hoped, if she might be woon,
that her sonnes thoughtes would rather rest on a beautifull gratefulnes, then still be
tormented with a disdaining beautie. Wherefore, giuing new courage to her wicked
inventions, and vsing the more industry, because she had mist in this, & taking euen
precepts of preuailing in *Pamela*, by her fayling in *Philoclea*, she went to her
chamber, & (according to her own vngratious method of a subtile proceeding) stood
listning at the dore, because that out of the circustance of her present behaiour, there
might kindly arise a fitte beginning of her intended discourse.

And so she might perceauie that *Pamela* did walke vp and down, full of deep 3
(though patient) thoughts. For her look and countenance was setled, her pace soft,
and almost still of one measure, without any passionate gesture, or violent motion: till
at length (as it were) awaking, & strengthening her selfe, Well (said she) yet this is the
best, & of this I am sure, that how soeuer they wro[n]g me, they cannot ouermaster

God. No darknes blinds his eyes, no Iayle barres him out. To whome then else should I flie, but to him for succoure? And therewith kneeling down, eue[n] in the same place where she stood, she thus said. O all-seeing Light, and eternal Life of all things, to whom nothing is either so great, that it may resist; or so small, that it is contemned: looke vpon my miserie with thine eye of mercie, and let thine infinite power vouchsafe to limite out some proportion of deliuerance vnto me, as to thee shall seem most conuenient. Let not iniurie, ô Lord, triumphe ouer me, and let my faultes by thy handes be corrected, and make not mine vniuste enemye the minister of thy Iustice. But yet, my God, if in thy wisdom, this be the aptest chastizement for my inexcusable follie; if this low bondage be fittest for my ouer-hie desires; if the pride of my not-inough humble harte, be thus to be broken, O Lord, I yeeld vnto thy will, and ioyfully embrace what sorrow thou wilt haue me suffer. Onely thus much let me craue of thee, (let my crauing, ô Lord, be accepted of thee, since euen that proceedes from thee) let me craue, euen by the noblest title, which in my greatest affliction I may giue my selfe, that I am thy creature, & by thy goodnes (which is thy self) that thou wilt suffer some beame of thy Maiestie so to shine into my mind, that it may still depende confidently vpon thee. Let calamitie be the exercise, but not the ouerthrowe of my vertue: let their power preuaile, but preuaile not to destruction: let my greatnes be their praie: let my paine be the sweetnes of their reuenge: let them (if so it seem good vnto thee) vexe me with more and more punishment. But, ô Lord, let neuer their wickednes haue such a hand, but that I may carie a pure minde in a pure bodie. (And pausing a while) And ô most gracious Lord (said she) what euer become of me, preserue the vertuous *Musidorus*.

The other parte *Cecropia* might well heare, but this latter prayer for *Musidorus*, 4
her hart helde it, as so iewel-like a treasure, that it would scarce trust her owne lippes withall. But this prayer, sent to heauen, from so heauenly a creature, with such a feruent grace, as if Deuotion had borrowed her bodie, to make of it self a most beautifull representation; with her eyes so lifted to the skie-ward, that one would haue thought they had begunne to flie thetherward, to take their place amo[n]g their felow stars; her naked hands raising vp their whole length, & as it were kissing one another, as if the right had bene the picture of *Zeale*, and the left, of *Humblenesse*, which both vnited themselues to make their suites more acceptable. Lastly, all her senses being rather tokens then instruments of her inwarde motions, altogether had so straunge a working power, that euen the harde-harted wickednesse of *Cecropia*, if it founde not a loue of that goodnes, yet it felt an abashment at that goodnes; & if she had not a kindly remorse, yet had she an yrksome accusation of her owne naughtines, so that she was put fro[m] the biasse of her fore-intended lesson. For well she found there was no way at that time to take that mind, but with some, at lest, image of Vertue, and what the figure thereof was her hart knew not.

Yet did she prodigally spende her uttermost eloquence, leauing no argument vnproued, which might with any force inuade her excellent iudgement: the iustnes of the request being, but for marriage; the worthinesse of the suiter: then her owne present fortune, if she would not onely haue amendment, but felicitie: besides falsely making her belieue, that her sister would thinke her selfe happie, if now she might haue his loue which before she contemned: and obliquely touching, what daunger it should be for her, if her sonne should accept *Philoclea* in marriage, and so match the next heire apparant, she being in his powre: yet plentifully periuring, how extreemely her sonne loued her, and excusing the little shewes he made of it, with the dutifull respect he bare vnto her, & taking vpo[n] her selfe that she restrayned him, since she found she could set no limits to his passions. And as she did to *Philoclea*, so did she to her, with the tribute of gifts, seeke to bring her minde into seruitude: and all other meanes, that might either establish a beholdingnesse, or at the lest awake a kindnes; doing it so, as by reason of their imprisonment, one sister knew not how the other was wooed; but each might thinke, that onely she was sought. But if *Philoclea* with sweete and humble dealing did auoid their assaults, she with the Maiestie of Vertue did beate them of. 5

CHAP. 7.

- 1 *An Allarme to the Amphialians.* 2 *Base cowardise in Clinias;* 3 *braue courage imaged in Amphialus.*
4 *His onset with the death of two friendes his foes.*
5 *The horroure of Mars-his game.* 6 *Two deaths taken where they were not lookt for, the third delayed where it was expected.*

BVt this day their speach was the sooner broken of, by reason that he, who stood as watche vpon the top of the keepe, did not onely see a great dust arise (which the earth sent vp, as if it would striue to haue clowdes as well as the aire) but might spie sometimes, especially when the dust (wherein the naked winde did appaile it self) was caried aside fro[m] them, the shining of armour, like flashing of lightning, wherwith the clowdes did seeme to be with child; which the Sunne gilding with his beames, it gaue a sight delightfull to any, but to them that were to abide the terrour. But the watch gaue a quick Alarum to the souldiers within, whome practise already hauing prepared, began each, with vnabashed hartes, or at lest countenaunces, to looke to their charge, or obedience, which was allotted vnto them. 1

Onely *Clinias* and *Amphialus* did exceed the bounds of: mediocrity: the one in his naturall

coldnesse of cowardise, the other in heate of courage. For *Clinias* (who was bold 2
onely in busie whisperings, and euen in that whisperingnes rather indeed
confident in his cunning, that it should not be bewraied, then any way bolde, if euer it
should be bewrayed) now that the enemy gaue a dreadful aspect vnto the castle, his
eyes saw no terror, nor eare heard any martiall sounde, but that they multiplied the
hideousnesse of it to his mated minde. Before their comming he had many times felt a
dreadfull expectation, but yet his minde (that was willing to ease it selfe of the burden
of feare) did somtimes feine vnto it selfe possibility of let; as the death of *Basilius*, the
discord of the nobility, & (when other cause fayled him) the nature of chaunce serued
as a cause vnto him: and sometimes the hearing other men speake valiantly, and the
quietnesse of his vnassailed senses, would make himselfe beleue, that he durst do
something. But now, that present daunger did display it selfe vnto his eye, & that a
daungerous dooing must be the onely meane to preue[n]t the da[n]ger of suffering,
one that had marked him would haue iudged, that his eies would haue run into him, &
his soule out of him; so vnkindly did either take a sent of danger. He thought the lake
was too shallow, & the walles too thin: he misdouted ech mans treason, and
coniectured eury possibilitie of misfortune, not onely fore-casting likely perils, but
such as all the planets together could scarce haue conspired: & already began to arme
him selfe, though it was determined he should tarrie within doores; and while he
armed himselfe, imagined in what part of the vault he might hide himselfe if the
enimies wonne the castle. Desirous he was that eury body should do valiantly, but
himselfe; and therefore was afraid to shew his feare, but for very feare would haue hid
his feare; lest it should disco[m]fort others: but the more he sought to disguise it, the
more the vnsutableness of a weake broke[n] voice to high braue wordes, and of a pale
shaking countenance to a gesture of animating, did discouer him.

But quite contrarily *Amphialus*, who before the enimies came was carefull, 3
prouidently diligent, and not somtimes without doubting of the issue; now the
nearer danger approached (like the light of a glow-worme) the lesse still it seemed: and
now his courage began to boile in choler, and with such impatience to desire to powre
out both vpo[n] the enimie, that he issued presently into certaine boates he had of
purpose, and carying with him some choise men, went to the fortresse he had vpo[n]
the edge of the lake, which he thought would be the first thing, that the enemy would
attempt; because it was a passage, which co[m]manding all that side [of] that country,
& being lost would stop victuall, or other supply, that might be brought into the castle:
& in that fortresse hauing some force of horsemen, he issued out with two hundred
horse, & fiue hu[n]dred footmen, embushed his footme[n] in the falling of a hill,
which was ouershadowed with a wood, he with his horsme[n] went a quarter of a mile
further; aside ha[n]d of which he might perceau the many troupes of the enimie, who

came but to take view where best to encampe themselues.

But as if the sight of the enimie had bene a Magnes stone to his courage he could 4
not co[n]taine himself, but shewing his face to the enimie, & his backe to his
souldiers, used that action, as his onely oration, both of denouncing warre to the one,
and persuading help of the other. Who faithfully folowing an example of such
authoritie, they made the earth to grone vnder their furious burden, and the enimies to
begin to be angry with the[m], whom in particular they knew not. Among whom there
was a young man, youngest brother to *Philanax*, whose face as yet did not bewray his
sex, with so much as shew of haire; of a minde hauing no limits of hope, nor knowing
why to feare; full of iollitie in conuersation, and lately growne a Louer. His name
was *Agenor*, of all that armie the most beautifull: who hauing ridden in sportfull
conuersatio[n] among the foremost, all armed sauing that his beauer was vp, to haue
his breath in more freedome, seing *Amphialus* come a pretty way before his
co[m]pany, neither staying the com[m]aundement of the captaine, nor recking
whether his face were armed, or no, set spurs to his horse, & with youthfull brauery
casting his staffe about his head, put it then in his rest, as carefull of comely carying it,
as if the marke had ben but a ring, & the lookers on Ladies. But *Amphialus* launce was
already come to the last of his descending line, and began to make the full point of
death against the head of this young Gentleman, when *Amphialus* perceyuing his
youth and beautie, Compassion so rebated the edge of Choller, that he spared that
faire nakednesse, and let his staffe fall to *Agenors* vamplat: so as both with braue
breaking should hurtleslie haue perfourmed that match, but that the pittillesse launce
of *Amphialus* (angry with being broken) with an vn lucky counterbuffe full of
vnsparing splinters, lighted vpon that face farre fitter for the combats of *Venus*; geuing
not onely a suddaine, but a fowle death, leauing scarcely any tokens of his former
beautie: but his ha[n]ds abandoning the reynes, and his thighes the saddle, he fell
sidewarde from the horse. Which sight comming to *Leontius*, a deere friende of his,
who in vayne had lamentably cried vnto him to stay, when he saw him beginne his
careere, it was harde to say, whether pittie of the one, or reuenge of the other, helde as
then the soueraigntie in his passions. But while he directed his eye to his friende, and
his hande to his enimie, so wrongly-consorted a power could not resist the ready
minded force of *Amphialus*: who perceyuing his il-directed direction against him, so
paide him his debt before it was lent, that he also fell to the earth, onely happy that
one place, & one time, did finish both their loues and liues together.

But by this time there had bene a furious meeting of either side: where after the 5
terrible salutation of warlike noyse, the shaking of handes was with sharpe
weapons: some launces according to the mettall they mett, and skill of the guider, did
staine themselues in bloud; some flew vp in pieces, as if they would threaten heauen,
because they fayled on earth. But their office was quickly inherited, either by (the

Prince of weapons) the sworde, or by some heauy mase, or biting axe; which hunting still the weakest chase, sought euer to light there, where smallest resista[n]ce might worse preuent mischief. The clashing of armour, and crushing of stauces; the iustling of bodies, the resounding of blowes, was the first part of that ill-agreeing musicke, which was beautified with the griselinesse of wounds, the rising of dust, the hideous falles, and grones of the dying. The verie horses angrie in their maisters anger, with loue and obedience brought foorth the effects of hate and resistance, and with minds of seruitude, did as if they affected glorie. Some lay deade vnder their dead maisters, whome vnknightly wounds had vniustly punished for a faithfull dutie. Some lay vpon their Lordes by like accidents, and in death had the honour to be borne by them, who in life they had borne. Some hauing lost their commaunding burthens, ranne scattered about the field, abashed with the madnesse of man-kinde. The earth it selfe (woont to be a buriall of men) was nowe (as it were) buried with men: so was the face thereof hidden with deade bodies, to whome Death had come masked in diuerse manners. In one place lay disinherited heades, dispossessed of their naturall seignories: in an other, whole bodies to see to, but that their harts wont to be bound all ouer so close, were nowe with deadly violence opened: in others, fowler deaths had ouglily displayed their trayling guttes. There lay armes, whose fingers yet mooued, as if they woulde feele for him that made them feele: and legges, which contrarie to common nature, by being discharged of their burthen, were growne heauier. But no sworde payed so large a tribute of soules to the eternall Kingdome, as that of *Amphialus*, who like a Tigre, from whome a companie of Woolues did seeke to rauish a newe gotten pray; so he (remembring they came to take away *Philoclea*) did labour to make valure, strength, hatred, and choller to answeere the proportion of his loue, which was infinit.

There died of his handes the olde knight *Æschylus*, who though by yeares might 6
well haue beene allowed to use rather the exercise of wisdom, then of courage;
yet hauing a lustie bodie & a merrie hart, he euer tooke the summons of Time in iest,
or else it had so creepingly stollen vpon him, that he had heard scarcely the noise of
his feete, and therefore was as fresh in apparell, and as forward in enterprises, as a
farre yonger man: but nothing made him bolder, then a certaine prophecie had beene
tolde him, that he shoulde die in the armes of his sonne, and therefore feared the lesse
the anne of anemie. But nowe, when *Amphialus* sworde was passed through his
throate, he thought himselfe abused; but that before he died, his sonne, indeede,
seeing his father beginne to fall, helde him vp in his armes, till a pitillesse souldier of
the other side, with a mace brained him, making father and sonne become twinnes in
their neuer againe dying birth. As for *Drialus*, *Memnon*, *Nisus* and *Policrates*; the first
had his eyes cut out so, as he could not see to bid the neare following death welcome:
the seconde had met with the same Prophet that olde *Æschylus* had, and hauing
founde manie of his speeches true, beleued this to, that he should neuer be killed, but

by his owne companions: and therefore no man was more valiant then he against an enemie, no man more suspicious of his friends: so as he seemed to sleepe in securitie, when he went to a battell, and to enter into a battaile, when he began to sleepe, such guards he would set about his person; yet mistrusting the verie guardes, that they would murther him. But nowe *Amphialus* helped to unriddle his doubts; for he ouerthrowing him from his horse, his owne companions comming with a fresh supplie, pressed him to death. *Nisus* grasping with *Amphialus*, was with a short dagger slaine. And for *Policrates*, while he shunned as much as he could, keeping onely his place for feare of punishment, *Amphialus* with a memorable blowe strake of his head, where, with the conuulsions of death setting his spurres to his horse, he gaue so braue a charge vpon the enemie, as it grewe a prouerbe, that *Policrates* was onely valiant, after his head was off. But no man escaped so well his handes as *Phebilus* did: for he hauing long loued *Philoclea*, though for the meannesse of his estate he neuer durst reueale it, nowe knowing *Amphialus*, setting the edge of a riual vpon the sworde of an enemie, he helde strong fight with him. But *Amphialus* had alreadie in the daungerousest places disarmed him, and was lifting vp his sworde to sende him away from him, when he thinking indeede to die, O *Philoclea* (said he) yet this ioyes me, that I die for thy sake. The name of *Philoclea* first staid his sworde, and when he heard him out, though he abhorde him much worse then before, yet could he not vouchsafe him the honour of dying for *Philoclea*, but turned his sword another way, doing him no hurt for ouer-much hatred. But what good did that to poore *Phebilus*, if escaping a valiant hand, he was slaine by a base souldiour, who seeing him so disarmed, thrust him through?

CHAP. 8.

The Basilians reembattelled 1 first by Philanax, 2 then by the blacke Knight. 3 Ismenus slaine by Philanax. Philanax captiued by Amphialus. 4 The blacke Knights exploits. 5 His encounter with Amphialus, parted by a by-blow. 6 The Amphialians retrait, and departure of the blacke Knight.



Thus with the well-followed valure of *Amphialus* were the other almost ouerthrowne, when *Philanax* (who was the marshal of the army) came in, with newe force reuening the almost decayed courage of his souldiers. For, crying to them (and asking them whether their backs or their armes were better fighters) he himselfe thrust into the presse, and making force and furie waite vpon discretion and gouernement, he might seeme a

braue Lion, who taught his yong Lionets, how in taking of a pray, to ioine courage with cunning. The[n] Fortune (as if she had made chases inow of the one side of that bloody Teniscourt) went of the other side the line, making as many fall downe of *Amphialus* followers, as before had done of *Philanax* his; they loosing the ground, as fast as before they had woon it, only leauing them to keepe it, who had lost themselues in keeping it. Then those that had killed, inherited the lot of those that had bene killed; and cruel Death made the[m] lie quietly together, who most in their liues had sought to disquiet ech other; and many of those first ouerthrowne, had the comfort to see the murtherers ouerrun them to Charons ferrie.

Codrus, *Ctesiphon*, and *Milot* lost their liues vpon *Philanax*-his sword: but no 2
bodies case was more pitied, then of a yong esquire of *Amphialus*, called *Ismenus*, who neuer abandoning his maister, and making his tender age aspire to actes of the strongest manhoode, in this time that his side was put to the worst, and that *Amphialus*-his valure was the onely stay of them from deliuering themselues ouer to a shamefull flight, he sawe his masters horse killed vnder him. Whereupon, asking no aduise of no thought, but of faithfulnes and courage, he presently lighted from his owne horse, and with the helpe of some choise and faithfull seruants, gat his master vp. But in the multitude that came of either side, some to succour, some to saue *Amphialus*, he came vnder the hande of *Philanax*: and the youth perceyuing he was the man that did most hurt to his partie, (desirous eue[n] to change his life for glorie) strake at him, as he rode by him, and gaue him a hurt vpon the leg, that made *Philanax* turn towards him; but seing him so yo[n]g, & of a most louely presence, he rather toke pity of him; meaning to make him prisoner, & the[n] to giue him to his brother *Agenor* to be his companion, because they were not much vnlike, neither in yeeres, nor countenance. But as he loked down vpon him with that thought, he spied wher his brother lay dead, & his friend *Leontius* by him, eue[n] almost vnder the squiers feet. The[n] soroing not only his owne sorow, but the past-co[m]fort sorow, which he fore-knew his mother would take, (who with many teares, & misgiuing sighs had suffred him to go with his elder brother *Philanax*) blotted out all figures of pitie out of his minde, and putting foorth his horse (while *Ismenus* doubled two or three more valiant, then well set blowes) saying to himselfe, Let other mothers bewaile an vntimely death as well as mine; he thrust him through. And the boy fearece though beautiful; & beautifull, though dying, not able to keepe his failing feete, fel downe to the earth, which he bit for anger, repining at his Fortune, and as long as he could resisting Death, which might seeme vnwilling to; so long he was in taking away his yong struggling soule.

Philanax himselfe could haue wished the blow vngiuen, when he saw him fall 3
like a faire apple, which some vncourteous bodie (breaking his bowe) should throwe downe before it were ripe. But the case of his brother made him forget both

that, and himselfe: so as ouerhastily pressing vpon the retiring enemies, he was (ere he was aware) further engaged then his owne souldiers could relieue him; were being ouerthrowne by *Amphialus*, *Amphialus* glad of him, kept head against his enemies while some of his men caried away *Philanax*.

But *Philanax*-his men as if with the losse of *Philanax* they; had lost the fountaine of their valure,

had their courages so dried vp in feare; that they began to set honour at their 4
backes, and to vse the vertue of pacience in an vntimely time: when into the presse comes (as hard as his horse, more afraied of the spurre, then the sword could carie him) a Knight in armor as darke as blacknes coulde make it, followed by none, and adorned by nothing; so far without authoritie that he was without knowledge. But vertue quickly made him knowne, and admiration bred him such authoritie, that though they of whose side he came knew him not, yet they all knew it was fitte to obey him: and while he was followed by the valiantest, he made way for the vilest. For, taking part with the besiegers, he made the *Amphialians* bloud serue for a caparison to his horse, and a decking to his armour. His arme no oftner gaue blowes, then the blowes gaue wounds, then the wounds gaue deathes: so terrible was his force, and yet was his quicknes more forcible then his force, and his iudgement more quick then his quicknes. For though the sword went faster then eyesight could follow it, yet his owne iudgement went still before it. There died of his hand, *Sarpedon*, *Plistonax*, *Strophilus*, and *Hippolitus*, men of great prooue in warres, and who had that day undertaken the guard of *Amphialus*. But while they sought to saue him, they lost the fortresses that Nature had placed them in. The[n] slew he *Megalus*, who was a little before proude, to see himselfe stained in the bloud of his enemies: but when his owne bloud came to be married to theirs, he then felt, that

Crueltie dooth neuer enjoy a good cheape glorie. After him sent he *Palemon*, who ..
had that daye vowed (with foolish brauerie) to be the death of tenne: and nine already he had killed, and was carefull to performe his (almost performed) vowe, when the Blacke Knight helpt him to make vp the tenth himselfe.

And now the often-changing Fortune began also to change the hewe of the 5
battailes. For at the first, though it were terrible, yet Terror was deckt so brauelie with rich furniture, guilte swords, shining armours, pleasant pensils, that the eye with delight had scarce leasure to be afraide: But now all uniuersally defiled with dust, bloud, broken armours, mangled bodies, tooke away the maske, and sette foorth Horror in his owne horrible manner. But neither could danger be dreadfull to *Amphialus*-his undismayable courage, nor yet seeme ougly to him, whose truely-affected minde, did still paint it ouer with the beautie of *Philoclea*. And therefore he, rather enflamed then troubled with the encrease of dangers, and glad to finde a woorthie subiect to exercise his courage, sought out this newe Knight, whom he might easilie finde: for he, like a wanton rich man, that throwes down his neighbours houses, to make himselfe the better prospecte, so had his sworde made him so spatious a

roome, that *Amphialus* had more cause to wonder at the finding, then labour for the seeking: which, if it stirred hate in him, to see how much harme he did to the one side, it prouoked as much æmulation in him, to perceauē how much good he did to the other side. Therefore, they approaching one to the other, as in two beautifull folkes, Loue naturally stirres a desire of ioyning, so in their two courages Hate stirred a desire of triall. Then began there a combatte betweene them, worthy to haue had more large listes, and more quiet beholders: for with the spurre of Courage, and the bitte of Respect, each so guided himselfe, that one might well see, the desire to ouercome, made them not forget how to ouercome: in such time & proportion they did employ their blowes, that none of *Ceres* seruauents coulde more cunningly place his flaile: while the lefte foote spurre set forwarde his owne horse, the right sette backward the contrarie horse, euen sometimes by the aduantage of the enemies legge, while the lefte hande (like him that helde the Sterne) guyded the horses obedient courage: All done in such order, that it might seeme, the minde was a right Prince indeede, who sent wise and diligent Lieutenants into each of those well gouerned partes. But the more they fought, the more they desired to fight; and the more they smarted, the lesse they felte the smarte: and now were like to make a quicke prooue, to whom Fortune or Valour woulde seeme most friendly, when in comes an olde Gouvernour of *Amphialus*; alwayes a good Knight, and carefull of his charge; who giuing a sore wounde to the blacke Knights thigh, while he thought not of him, with an other blowe slewe his horse vnder him. *Amphialus* cried to him, that he dishonoured him: You say well (answered the olde Knight) to stande now like a priuate souldier, setting your credite vpon particular fighting, while you may see *Basilus* with all his hoste, is getting betweene you and your towne.

He looked that way, and found that true indeede, that the enemy was
beginning to encompassse him about, and stoppe his returne: and therefore causing 6
the reite to be sounded, his Gouvernour ledde his men homewarde, while he kepte
him selfe still hindmoste, as if hee had stode at the gate of a sluse, to lette the
streame goe, with such proportion, as shoulde seeme good vnto him: and with so
manfull discretion perfourmed it, that (though with losse of many of his men) he
returned in him selfe safe, and content, that his enemies had felte, how sharpe the
sworde coulde bite of *Philocleas* Louer. The other partie being sorie for the losse
of *Philanax*, was yet sorrier when the blacke Knight could not be found. For he
hauing gotten on a horse, whom his dying master had bequeathed to the world, finding
himselfe sore hurt, and not desirous to be knowen, had in the time of the enemies
retiring, retired away also: his thigh not bleeding bloud so fast, as his harte bledde
reuenge. But *Basilus* hauing attempted in vaine to barre the safe returne
of *Amphialus*, encamped himselfe as strongly as he could, while he (to his grief)
might heare the ioy was made in the towne by his owne subiectes, that he had that day
sped no better. For *Amphialus* (being well beloued of that people) when they sawe
him not vanquished, they esteemed him as victorious, his youth setting a flourishing

shew vpon his worthinesse, and his great nobilitie ennobling his dangers.

CHAP. 9.

1 *The Loue-diuning dreame of Amphialus song to Philoclea.* 2 *Philanax his captiuitie, and deaths-dooome,* 3 *for Philocleas sake turnde to life and libertie.* 4 *His loyall answers of his Lords intents.* 5 *Cecropias artes to perswade the sisters.*



Vt the first thing *Amphialus* did, being returned, was to visite *Philoclea*, and first presuming to cause his dreame to be song vnto her (which he had seen the night before he fell in loue with her) making a fine boy he had, accorde a prettie dolefulnes vnto it. The song was this.

Now was our heauenly vaulte deprived of the light

*With Sunnes depart: and now the darkenes of the night
Did light those beamye stars which greater light did darke:
Now each thing that enioy'd that firie quickning sparke
(Which life is cald) were mou'd their spirits to repose,
And wanting vse of eyes their eyes began to close:
A silence sweet each where with one consent embraste
(A musique sweet to one in carefull musing plaste)
And mother Earth, now clad in mourning weeds, did breath
A dull desire to kisse the image of our death:
When I, disgraced wretch, not wretched then, did giue
My senses such reliefe, as they which quiet liue,
Whose braines broile not in woes, nor brests with beatings ake,
With natures praise are wont in safest home to take.
Far from my thoughts was ought, whereto their minds aspire,
Who vnder courtly pompes doo hatch a base desire.
Free all my powers were from those captiuing snares,
Which heau'nly purest gifts defile in muddy cares.
Ne could my soule it selfe accuse of such a faulte,
As tender conscience might with furious panges assaulte.
But like the feeble flower (whose stalke cannot sustaine
His weighty top) his top doth downward drooping leane:
Or as the silly birde in well acquainted nest
Doth hide his head with cares but onely how to rest:*

*So I in simple course, and vntangled minde
Did suffer drousie lids mine eyes then chare to blinde;
And laying downe my head, did natures rule obserue,
Which senses vp doth shut the senses to preserue.
They first their vse forgot, then fancies lost their force;
Till deadly sleepe at length possest my liuing coarse.
A liuing coarse I lay: but ah, my wakefull minde
(Which made of heau'nly stuffe no mortal chaunge doth blind)
Flew vp with freer wings of fleshly bondage free;
And hauing plaste my thoughts, my thoughts thus placed me.
Me thought, nay sure I was, I was in fairest wood
Of Samothea lande; a lande, which whilom stood
An honour to the world, while Honour was their ende,
And while their line of yeares they did in vertue spende.
But there I was, and there my calmie thoughts I fedd
On Natures sweet repast, as healthfull senses ledd.
Her giftes my study was, her beauties were my sporte:
My worke her workes to know, her dwelling my resorte.
Those lampes of heau'nly fire to fixed motion bound,
The euer-turning spheares, the neuer-mouing ground;
What essence destinie hath; if fortune be or no;
Whence our immortall soules to mortall earth doo flowe:
What life it is, and how that all these liues doo gather.
With outward makers force, or like an inward father.
Such thoughts, me thought, I thought, and straind my single mind
Then void of neerer cares, the depth of things to find.
When lo with hugest noise (such noise a tower makes
When it blowne downe with winde a fall of ruine takes)
(Or such a noise it was, as highest thunders sende,
Or canons thunder-like, all shot together, lende)
The Moone a sunder rent; whereout with sodaine fall
(More swift then falcons stoops to feeding Falconers call)
There came a chariot faire by doues and sparrowes guided:
Whose stormelike course staid not till hard by me it bided.
I wretch astonisht was, and thought the deathfull doome
Of heauen, of earth, of hell, of time and place was come.
But streight there issued forth two Ladies (Ladies sure
They seemd to me) on whom did waite a Virgin pure:
Straunge were the Ladies weeds; yet more vnfit then strange.
The first with cloth's tuckt vp as Nymphes in woods do range;
Tuckt vp euen with the knees, with bowe and arrowes prest:*

*Her right arme naked was, discovered was her brest.
But heauy was her pace, and such a meagre cheere,
As little hunting minde (God knowes) did there appeere.
The other had with arte (more then our women knowe,
As stuffe meant for the sale set out to glaring showe)
A wanton womans face, and with curld knots had twinde
Her haire, which by the helpe of painters cunning, shinde.
When I such guests did see come out of such a house,
The mountaines great with childe I thought brought foorth a mouse.
But walking forth, the first thus to the second saide,
Venus come on: said she, Diane you are obaide.
Those names abasht me much, whe[n] those great names I hard:
Although their fame (me seemd) from truth had greatly iard.
As I thus musing stood, Diana cald to her
The waiting Nymphe, a Nyrnphe that did excell as farr
All things that earst I sawe, as orient pearles exceed,
That which their mother hight, or els their silly seed.
Indeed a perfect hewe, indeed a sweet consent
Of all those Graces giftes the heauens haue euer lent.
And so she was attirde, as one that did not prize
Too much her peerles parts, nor yet could them despise.
But cald, she came apace; a pace wherein did moue
The bande of beauties all, the little world of Loue.
And bending bumbled eyes (ô eyes the Sunne of sight)
She waited mistresse will: who thus disclosd her spright.
Sweet Mira mine (quoth she) the pleasure of my minde,
In whom of all my rules the perfect prooffe I finde,
To onely thee thou seest we graunt this speciall grace
Vs to attend, in this most priuate time and place,
Be silent therefore now, and so be silent still
Of that thou seest: close vp in secrete knot thy will.
She answered was with looke, and well perform'd behest:
And Mira admirde: her shape sonke in my brest.
But thus with irefull eyes, and face that shooke with spite
Diana did begin. What mou'd me to inuite
Your presence (sister deare) first to my Moony spheare,
And hither now, vouchsafe to take with willing eare.
I know full well you know, what discord long hath raign'd
Betwixt vs two; how much that discord foule hath stain'd
Both our estates, while each the other did depraue,
Prooffe speakes too much to vs that feeling triall haue.*

*Our names are quite forgot, our temples are defaced:
Our offerings spoil'd, our priest from priesthood are displaced
Is this the fruite of strife? those thousand churches hie,
Those thousand altars faire now in the dust to lie?
In mortall mindes our mindes but planets names preserue:
No knees once bowed, forsooth, for them they say we serue.
Are we their seruants growne? no doubt a noble staye:
Celestiall powers to wormes, Ioues children serue to claye.
But such they say we be: this praise our discord bred,
While we for mutuall spight a striuing passion fed.
But let vs wiser be; and what foule discorde brake,
So much more strong againe let fastest concorde make.
Our yeares doo it require: you see we both doo feele
The weakning worke of Times for euer-whirling wheele.
Although we be diuine, our grandsire Saturne is
With ages force decayed, yet once the heauen was his.
And now before we seeke by wise Apollos skill
Our young yeares to renew (for so he saith he will)
Let vs a perfect peace betweene vs two resolue:
Which lest the ruinous want of gouernment dissolue;
Let one the Princesse be, to her the other yeeld:
For vaine equalitie is but contentions field.
And let her haue the giftes that should in both remaine:
In her let beautie both, and chastnesse fully raigne.
So as if I preuaile, you giue your giftes to me:
If you, on you I lay what in my office be.
Now resteth onely this, which of vs two is she,
"To whom precedence shall of both accorded be.
For that (so that you like) hereby doth lie a youth
(She beckned vnto me) as yet of spotlesse truth,
Who may this doubt discern: for better, witt, then lot
Becommeth vs: in vs fortune determines not.
This crowne of amber faire (an amber crowne she held)
To worthiest let him giue, when both he hath beheld:
And be it as he saith. Venus was glad to heare
Such proffer made, which she well showd with smiling cheere.
As though she were the same, as when by Paris doome
She had chiefe Goddesses in beautie ouercome.
And smirkly thus gan say. I neuer sought debate
Diana deare; my minde to loue and not to hate
Was euer apt: but you my pastimes did despise.*

*I neuer spited you, but thought you ouerwise.
 Now kindnesse profred is, none kinder is then I:
 And so most ready am this meane of peace to trie.
 And let him be our iudge: the lad doth please me well.
 Thus both did come to me, and both began to tell
 (For both together spake, each loth to be behinde)
 That they by solemne oth their Deities would binde
 To stand vnto my will: their will they made me know.
 I that was first agast, when first I saw their showe:
 Now bolder waxt, waxt prowde, that I such sway must beare:
 For neere acquaintance dooth diminish reuerent feare.
 And hauing bound them fast by Styx, they should obaye
 To all what I decreed, did thus my verdict saye.
 How ill both you can rule, well hath your discord taught:
 Ne yet for ought I see, your beauties merite ought.
 To yonder Nympe therefore (to Mira I did point)
 The crowne aboue you both for euer I appoint.
 I would haue spoken out: but out they both did crie;
 Fie, fie, what haue we done? vngodly rebell fie.
 But now we needs must yeelde, to that our othes require.
 Yet thou shalt not go free (quoth Venus) such a fire
 Her beautie kindle shall within thy foolish minde,
 That thou full oft shalt wish thy iudging eyes were blinde.
 Nay then (Diana said) the chastnesse I will giue
 In ashes of despaire (though burnt) shall make thee liue.
 Nay thou (said both) shalt see such beames shine in her face
 That thou shalt neuer dare seeke helpe of wretched case.
 And with that cursed curse away to heauen they fled,
 First hauing all their giftes vpon faire Mira spred.
 The rest I cannot tell, for therewithall I wak'd
 And found with deadly feare that all my sinewes shak'd.
 Was it a dreame? O dreame, how hast thou wrought in me,
 That I things erst vnseene should first in dreaming see?
 And thou ô traytour Sleepe, made for to be our rest,
 How hast thou framde the paine wherewith I am opprest?
 O cowarde Cupid thus doost thou thy honour keepe,
 Vnarmde (alas) vnwares to take a man asleepe?*

Laying not onely the conquests, but the hart of the co[n]querour at her feet. *** But she receiuing him after her woonted sorrowfull (but otherwise vnmoued) maner, it made him thinke, his good successe was but a pleasant monument of a dolefull

buriall: Ioy it selfe seeming bitter vnto him, since it agreed not to her taste.

Therefore, still crauing his mothers helpe to persuade her, he himself sent
for *Philanax* vnto him, whom he had not onely long hated, but nowe had his hate 2
greatly encreased by the death of his Squire *Ismenus*. Besides he had made him as one
of the chiefe causes that mooued him to this rebellion, and therefore was enclined (to
colour the better his action, and the more to embrew the handes of his accomplices
by making them guiltie of such a trespasse) in some formall sort to cause him to be
executed: being also greatly egged thereunto by his mother, and some other, who long
had hated *Philanax*, onely because he was more worthy to be loued then they.

But while that deliberation was handeled, according rather to the humour then the 3
reason of ech speaker, *Philoclea* comming to knowledge of the hard plight
wherein *Philanax* stood, she desired one of the gentlewomen appoynted to waite vpon
her, to goe in her name, and beseech *Amphialus*, that if the loue of her had any power
of perswasion in his minde, he would lay no further punishment, then imprisonment,
vppon *Philanax*. This message was deliuered euen as *Philanax* was entring to the
presence of *Amphialus*, comming (according to the warning was giuen him) to
receyve a iudgement of death. But when he with manfull resolution attended the fruite
of such a tyrannicall sentence, thinking it wrong, but no harme to him that shoulde die
in so good a cause; *Amphialus* turned quite the fourme of his pretended speech, and
yeelded him humble thankes, that by his meanes he had come to that happinesse, as to
receiue a commaundement of his Ladie: and therefore he willingly gaue him libertie
to returne in safetie whither he would; quitting him, not onely of all former grudge,
but assuring him that he would be willing to do him any friendship, and seruice: onely
desiring thus much of him, that he would let him know the discourse and intent
of *Basilius*-his proceeding.

Truely my Lorde (answered *Philanax*) if there were any such knowne to me, secrete
in my

maisters counsaile, as that the reuealing thereof might hinder his good successe, I 4
shoulde loath the keeping of my blood, with the losse of my faith; and woulde
thinke the iust name of a traitour a harde purchase of a fewe yeares liuing. But since it
is so, that my maister hath indeede no way of priuie practise, but meanes openly and
forcibly to deale against you, I will not sticke in fewe wordes to make your required
declaration. Then tolde he him in what amaze of amazement,
both *Basilius* and *Gynecia* were, when they mist their children and *Zelmane*.
Sometimes apt to suspect some practise of *Zelmane*, because she was a straunger;
sometimes doubting some reliques of the late mutinie, which doubt was rather
encreased, then any way satisfied, by *Miso*: who (being founde, almost deade for
hunger, by certaine Countrey-people) brought home worde, with what cunning they

were trayned out, and with what violence they were caried away. But that within a few days they came to knowledge where they were, with *Amphialus*-his, owne letters sent abroad to procure confederates in his attemptes. That *Basilius* his purpose was neuer to leaue the siege of this towne, till he had taken it, and reuenged the iniurie done vnto him. That he meant rather to winne it by time, and famine, then by force of assault: knowing howe valiaunt men he had to deale withall in the towne: that he had sent order, that supplyes of souldiours, pioners, and all things else necessarie, shoulde dayly be brought vnto him: so as, my Lorde (sayde *Philanax*) let me nowe, hauing receyved my life by your grace, let me giue you your life and honour by my counsaile; protesting vnto you, that I cannot choose but loue you, being my maister-his nephewe; and that I wish you well in all causes: but this, you knowe his nature is as apte to forgiue, as his power is able to conquere. Your fault passed is excusable, in that Loue perswaded, and youth was perswaded. Do not vrge the effects of angrie victorie, but rather seeke to obtaine that constantly by courtesie, which you can neuer assuredly enioy by violence. One might easily haue seene in the cheare of *Amphialus*, that disdainfull choller woulde faine haue made the aunswere for him, but the remembraunce of *Philoclea* serued for forcib[ly]e barriers betweene Anger, and angry effects: so as he saide no more, but that he woulde not put him to the trouble to giue him any further counsaile: But that he might returne, if he listed, presently. *Philanax* glad to receyve an uncorrupted libertie, humbly accepted his fauourable conuoy out of the towne; and so departed, not hauing visited the Princesses, thinking it might be offensiue to *Amphialus*, and no way fruitfull to them, who were no way but by force to be relieued.

The poore Ladies indeede, not suffered either to meet together, or to haue co[n]ference with any

other, but such as *Cecropia* had already framed to sing all her songs to her tune, 5
she herselfe omitting no day, and catching holde of euerie occasion to mooue
forwarde her sonnes desire, and remoue their knowne resolutions: vsing the same
arguments to the one sister, as to the other; determining that whome she coulde winne
first, the other shoulde (without her sonnes knowledge) by poyson be made away. But
though the reasons were the same to both, yet the handeling was diuerse, according as
she sawe their humours to preferre a more or lesse aptnesse of apprehension: this day
hauing vsed long speech to *Philoclea*, amplifying not a little the great duetifnesse
her sonne had shewed in deliuering *Philanax*: of whome she coulde get no aunswere,
but a silence sealed vp in vertue, and so sweetly graced, as that in one instant it caried
with it both resistance, and humblenesse.

CHAP. 10.

1 *Pamelas exercise. Cecropias talke with her* 2 *of Beautie*
3 *and the vse thereof.* 4 *The Auntes Atheisme* 5 *refu-*
ted by the Neeces Diuinitie.



Cecropia threatning in her selfe to runne a more ragged race with her,
went to her

sister *Pamela*: who that day hauing wearied her selfe with reading, 1
and with the height of her hart disdainning to keepe companie with
any of the Gentlewomen appointed to attende her, whome she accounted
her iaylours, was working vpon a purse certaine Roses and Lillies, as by the
finenesse of the worke, one might see she had borowed her wittes of the sorow that
owed them, & lent them wholly to that exercise. For the flowers she had wrought,
caried such life in them, that the cuningest painter might haue learned of her needle:
which with so prety a maner made his careers to & fro[m] through the cloth, as if the
needle it selfe would haue bene loth to haue gone froward such a mistres, but that it
hoped to return the[n]ceward very quickly againe: the cloth loking with many eies
vpon her, & louingly embracing the wounds she gaue it: the sheares also were at hand
to behead the silke, that was growne to short. And if at any time she put her mouth to
bite it off, it seemed, that where she had beene long in making of a Rose with her
hand, she would in an instant make Roses with her lips; as the Lillies seemed to haue
their whitenesse, rather of the hande that made them, then of the matter whereof they
were made; and that they grew there by the Sunes of her eyes, & were refreshed by
the most in discomfort comfortable ayre, which an vnwares sigh might bestow vpon
them. But the colours for the grounde were so well chosen, neither sullenly darke, nor
glaringly lightsome, and so well proportioned, as that, though much cunning were in
it, yet it was but to serue for an ornament of the principall woorke; that it was not
without marvaile to see, howe a minde which could cast a carelesse semblant vpon
the greatest conflictes of Fortune, coulde commaunde it selfe to take care for so small
matters. Neither had she neglected the daintie dressing of her selfe: but as it had ben
her mariage time to Affliction, she rather semed to remember her owne worthinesse,
then the unworthinesse of her husband. For well one might perceyve she had not
reiected the counsaile of a glasse, and that her handes had pleased themselves, in
paying the tribute of vndeceyuing skill, to so high perfections of Nature.

The sight whereof so diuerse from her sister, (who rather suffered sorrow to
distresse it selfe in her beautie, then that she would bestow any intertainment of so
vnwelcome a guest) made *Cecropia* take a suddaine assurednesse of hope, that she
should obtaine somewhat of *Pamela*: thinking (according to the squaring out of her
own good nature) that beauty, carefully set forth, wold soone proue a signe of an
unrefusing harborough. Animated wherewith, she sate downe by *Pamela*: and taking
the purse, and with affected curiositie looking vpon the worke, Full happie is he (saide
she) at least if he knew his owne happinesse, to whom a purse in this maner, and by

this hand wrought, is dedicated. In faith he shall haue cause to account it, not as a purse for treasure, but as a treasure it selfe, worthie to be pursed vp in the purse of his owne hart. And thinke you so indeed (said *Pamela* halfe smiling) I promise you I wrought it, but to make some tedious houres beleue, that I thought not of them: for else I valued it, but euen as a verie purse. It is the right nature (saide *Cecropia*) of Beautie, to woorke vnwitting effectes of wonder. Truely (saide *Pamela*) I neuer thought till nowe, that this outward glasse, intituled Beautie, which it pleaseth you to lay to my (as I thinke) vnguiltie charge, was but a pleasaunt mixture of naturall colours, delightfull to the eye, as musicke is to the eare, without any further consequence: since it is a thing, which not onely beastes haue; but euen stones and trees many of them doo greatly excell in it. That other thinges (answered *Cecropia*) haue some portion of it, takes not away the excellencie of it, where indeede it doth excell: since we see, that euen those beastes, trees, & stones, are in the name of Beauty only highly praised. But that the beautie of humaine persons be beyond all other things there is great likelihood of reason, since to them onely is giuen the iudgement to discern Beautie; and among reasonable wights, as it seemes, that our sex hath the preheminance, so that in that preheminance, Nature counter-vailles all other liberalities, wherin she may be thought to haue dealte more fauourably towarde mankind. How doo men crowne (thinke you) themselues with glorie, for hauing either by force brought others to yeeld to their minde, or with long studie, and premeditated orations, perswaded what they woulde haue perswaded? and see, a faire woman shall not onely commaund without authentic, but perswade without speaking. She shall not neede to procure attention, for their owne eyes will chaine their eares vnto it. Men venture liues to conquire; she conqueres liues without venturing. She is serued, and obeyed, which is the most notable, not because the lawes so commaund it, but because they become lawes to the[m]selues to obey her; not for her parents sake, but for her owne sake. She neede not dispute, whether to gouerne by Feare, or by Loue, since without her thinking thereof, their loue will bring foorth feare, and their feare will fortifie their loue: and she neede not seeke offensiue, or defensiue force, since her lippes may stande for ten thousand shieldes, and tenne thousand vneuitable shot goe from her eyes. Beautie, Beautie (deare Neece) is the crowne of the feminine greatnes; which gifte, on whom soeuer the heauens (therein most nigardly) do bestowe, without question, she is bound to vse it to the noble purpose, for which it is created: not onely winning, but preseruing; since that indeede is the right happines, which is not onely in it selfe happie, but can also deriue the happines to another. Certainly Aunt (said *Pamela*) I feare me you will make me not onely thinke my selfe fairer then euer I did, but think my fairnes a matter of greater valew then heretofore I coulde imagine it. For I euer (till now) conceaued these conquests you spake of, rather to proceed from the weakenes of the conquered, then from the strength of the co[n]quering power: as they say, the Cranes ouerthrowe whole battailes of *Pygmees*, not so much of their Cranish courage, as because the other are *Pygmees*: and that we see, young babes

think babies of woonderful excellencie, and yet the babies are but babies. But since your elder yeares, and abler iudgement, finde Beautie to be worthy of so incomparable estimation, certainly me thinks, it ought to be held in dearnes, according to the excellencie, and (no more then we would do of things which we accou[n]t pretious) euer to suffer it to be defiled.

Defiled? (said *Cecropia*) Mary God forbid that my speech should tend to any such purpose, as should deserue so foul a title. My meaning is to ioyn your beauty to loue; your youth to delight. For truely, as colours should be as good as nothing, if there were no eyes to behold them: so is Beauty nothing, without the eye of Loue behold it: and therefore, so far is it from defiling it, that it is the only honoring of it, the only preseruing of it: for Beauty goes away, deuoured by Time, but where remains it euer flourishing, but in the hart of a true louer? And such a one (if euer there were any) is my son: whose loue is so subiected vnto you, that rather then breed any offence vnto you, it will not delight it selfe in beholding you. Ther is no effect of his loue (answered *Pamela*) better pleaseth me then that: but as I haue ofte[n] answered you, so, resolutely I say vnto you, that he must get my parents consent, & then he shall know further of my mind; for, without that, I know I should offend God. O sweet youth (said *Cecropia*) how vntimely subiect it is to deuotion? No, no sweet neece, let vs old folks think of such precise consideratio[n]s, do you enioy the heauen of your age, whereof you are sure: and like good hous-holders, which spend those thinges that will not be kept, so do you pleasantly enioy that, which else will bring an ouer-late repentance, whe[n] your glas shall accuse you to your face, what a change there is in you. Do you see how the spring-time is ful of flowers, decking it self with them, & not aspiring to the fruits of Autumn? what lesson is that vnto you, but that in the april of your age, you should be like *April*? Let not some of the, for whom alredy the graue gapeth, & perhaps enuy the felicity in you, which the[m]selues cannot enioy, perswade you to lose the hold of occasio[n], while it may not only be taken, but offers, nay sues to be take[n]: which if it be not now taken, will neuer hereafter be ouertaken. Your self know, how your father hath refused all offers made by the greatest Princes about you, & wil you suffer your beauty to be hid in the wrinkles of his peuish thoughts? If he be peuish (said *Pamela*) yet is he my father, & how beautiful soeuer I be, I am his daughter: so as God claimes at my hands obedience, and makes me no iudge of his imperfections.

These often replies vpon conscience in *Pamela*, made *Cecropia* thinke, that there was no righter

waye for her, then as she had (in her opinion) set her in liking of Beautie, with perswasion not to suffer it to be voide of purpose, so if she coulde make her lesse feeling of those heauenly conceipts, that then she might easilie winde her to her croked bias. Therefore, employing the vttermost of her mischieuous witte, and speaking the more earnestly, because she spake as she thought, she thus dealt with

3

4

her. Deare neece, or rather, deare daughter (if my affection and wishe might preuaile therein) how much dooth it increase (trowe you) the earnest desire I haue of this blessed match, to see these vertues of yours knit fast with such zeale of Deuotion, indeede the best bonde, which the most politicke wittes haue found, to holde mans witte in well doing? For, as children must first by feare be induced to know that, which after (when they doo know) they are most glad of: So are these bug-bearers of opinions brought by great Clearkes into the world, to serue as shewelles to keepe them from those faults, whereto els the vanitie of the worlde, and weakenes of senses might pull them. But in you (Neece) whose excellencie is such, as it neede not to be helde vp by the staffe of vulgar opinions, I would not you should loue Vertue seruillie, for feare of I know not what, which you see not: but euen for the good effects of vertue which you see. Feare, and indeede, foolish feare, and fearefull ignorance, was the first inuenter of those conceates. For, when they heard it thunder, not knowing the naturall cause, they thought there was some angrie body aboue, that spake so lowde: and euer the lesse they did perceiue, the more they did conceiue. Whereof they knew no cause that grewe streight a miracle: foolish folks, not marking that the alterations be but vpon particular accidents, the vniuersalitie being alwaies one. Yesterday was but as to day, and to morrow will tread the same footsteps of his foregoers: so as it is manifest inough, that all things follow but the course of their own nature, sauing only Man, who while by the pregnancie of his imagination he striues to things supernaturall, meane-while he looseth his owne naturall felicitie. Be wise, and that wisdom shalbe a God vnto thee; be contented, and that is thy heauen: for els to thinke that those powers (if there be any such) aboue, are moued either by the eloquence of our prayers, or in a chafe by the folly of our actions; caries asmuch reason as if flies should thinke, that men take great care which of them hums sweetest, and which of them flies nimblest.

She would haue spoken further to haue enlarged & co[n]firmed her discourse: 5
but *Pamela* (whose cheeks were died in the beautifullest graine of vertuous anger, with eies which glistered forth beames of disdain) thus interrupted her. Peace (wicked woman) peace, vnworthy to breathe, that doest not acknowledge the breath-giuer; most vnworthy to haue a tongue, which speakest against him, through whom thou speakest: keepe your affection to your self, which like a bemired dog, would defile with fauning. You say yesterday was as to day. O foolish woman, and most miserably foolish, since wit makes you foolish. What dooth that argue, but that there is a constancie in the euerlasting gouernour? Would you haue an inconstant God, since we count a man foolish that is inconstant? He is not seene you say, and would you thinke him a God, who might be seene by so wicked eyes, as yours? which yet might see enough if they were not like such, who for sport-sake willingly hoodwincke themselues to receaue blowes the easier. But though I speake to you without any hope of fruite in so rotten a harte, and there be no bodie else here to iudge of my

speeches, yet be thou my witnesse, O captiuitie, that my cares shall not be willingly guiltie of my Creators blasphemie. You saie, because we know not the causes of things, therefore feare was the mother of superstition: nay, because we know that each effect hath a cause, that hath engendred a true & liuely deuotion. For this goodly worke of which we are, and in which we liue, hath not his being by Chaunce; on which opinion it is beyond mervaille by what chaunce any braine could stumble. For if it be eternall (as you would seeme to conceiue of it) Eternity, & Chaunce are things vnsufferable together. For that is chaunceable which happeneth; & if it happen, there was a time before it hapned, when it might not haue happened; or els it did not happen; and so of chaunceable, not eternall, as now being, the[n] not being. And as absurd it is to thinke that if it had a beginning, his beginning was deriued fro[m] Chaunce: for Chaunce could neuer make all thinges of nothing: and if there were substaunces before, which by chaunce shoulde meete to make vp this worke, thereon followes another bottomlesse pitt of absurdities. For then those substaunces must needes haue bene from euer, and so eternall: and that eternall causes should bring forth chaunceable effects, is as sensible, as that the Sunne should be the author of darkenesse. Againe, if it were chaunceable, then was it not necessarie; whereby you take away all consequents. But we see in all thinges, in some respect or other, necessitie of consequence: therefore in reason we must needes know that the causes were necessarie.

Lastly, Chaunce is variable, or els it is not to be called Chaunce: but we see this worke is steady and permanent. If nothing but Chaunce had glewed those pieces of this All, the heauie partes would haue gone infinitely downwarde, the light infinitely vpwarde, and so neuer haue mett to haue made vp this goodly bodie. For before there was a heauen, or a earth, there was neyther a heauen to stay the height of the rising, nor an earth, which (in respect of the round walles of heauen) should become a centre. Lastly, perfect order, perfect beautie, perfect constancie, if these be the children of Chaunce, or Fortune the efficient of these, let Wisedome be counted the roote of wickednesse, and eternitie the fruite of her inconstancie. But you will say it is so by nature, as much as if you said it is so, because it is so: if you meane of many natures conspiring together, as in a popular gouernement to establish this fayre estate; as if the Elementishe and ethereall partes should in their towne-house set downe the boundes of each ones office; then consider what followes: that there must needes haue bene a wisedome which made them concurre: for their natures beyng absolute contrarie, in nature rather woulde haue sought each others ruine, then haue serued as well consorted partes to such an vnexpressable harmonie. For that contrary things should meete to make vp a perfectio[n] without a force and Wisedome aboue their powers, is absolutely impossible; vnles you will flie to that hissed-out opinion of Chaunce againe. But you may perhaps affirme, that one vniuersall Nature (which hath bene for euer) is the knitting together of these many partes to such an excellent vnitie. If you meane a Nature of wisdome, goodnes, & prouidence, which knowes what it doth, then

say you that, which I seeke of you, and cannot conclude those blasphemies, with which you defiled your mouth, & mine eares. But if you meane a Nature, as we speake of the fire, which goeth vpward, it knowes not why: and of the nature of the Sea which in ebbing and flowing seemes to obserue so iust a daunce, and yet vnderstands no musicke, it is but still the same absurditie subscribed with another title. For this worde, one, being attributed to that which is All, is but one mingling of many, and many ones; as in a lesse matter, when we say one kingdome which conteines many citties; or one cittie which conteines many persons, wherein the vnder ones (if there be not a superiour power and wisdom) cannot by nature regarde to any preseruation but of themselues: no more we see they doo, since the water willingly quenches the fire, and drownes the earth; so farre are they from a conspired unitie: but that a right heauenly Nature indeed, as it were vnnaturing them, doth so bridle them.

Againe, it is as absurde in nature that from an vnitie many contraries should proceede still kept in an vnitie: as that from the number of contrarieties an vnitie should arise. I say still, if you banish both a singularitie, and pluralitie of iudgement from among them, then (if so earthly a minde can lift it selfe vp so hie) doo but conceaue, how a thing whereto you giue the highest, and most excellent kinde of being (which is eternitie) can be of the base and vilest degree of being, and next to a not-being; which is so to be, as not to enioy his owne being? I will not here call all your senses to witnes, which can heare, nor see nothing, which yeeldes not most euident euidence of the vnspeakeablenesse of that Wisdom: each thing being directed to an ende, and an ende of preseruation: so proper effects of iudgement, as speaking, and laughing are of mankind.

But what madd furie can euer so enueagle any conceipte, as to see our mortall and corruptible selues to haue a reason, and that this vniuersalitie (whereof we are but the lest pieces) should be vtterly deuouide thereof? as if one should saie, that ones foote might be wise, and him selfe foolish. This hearde I once alledged against such a godlesse minde as yours, who being driuen to acknowledge these beastly absurdities, that our bodies should be better then the whole worlde, if it had the knowledge, whereof the other were voide; he sought (not able to answer directly) to shifte it of in this sorte: that if that reason were true, then must it followe also, that the worlde must haue in it a spirite, that could write and reade to, and be learned; since that was in vs so commendable: wretched foole, not considering that Bookes be but supplies of defects; and so are praysed, because they helpe our want, and therefore cannot be incident to the eternall intelligence, which needes no recording of opinions to confirme his knowledge, no more then the Sunne wants waxe to be the fewell of his glorious lightfulness. This worlde therefore cannot otherwise consist but by a minde of Wisdom, whiche gouernes it, which whether you wil allow to be the Creator thereof, as vndoubtedly he is, or the soule and gouernour thereof, most certaine it is that whether he gouerne all, or make all, his power is aboue either his creatures, or his

gouuernement. And if his power be aboue all thinges, then consequently it must needs be infinite, since there is nothing aboue it to limit it. For beyond which there is nothing, must needs be boundlesse, and infinite: if his power be infinite, then likewise must his knowledge be infinite: for else there should be an infinite proportion of power which he shoulde not know how to vse; the vnsensiblenesse whereof I thinke euen you can conceaue: and if infinite, then must nothing, no not the estate of flies (which you with so vnsauerie skorne did iest at) be vnknowne vnto him. For if it were, then there were his knowledge bounded, and so not infinite: if knowledge and power be infinite, then must needs his goodnesse and iustice march in the same rancke: for infinitenes of power, & knowledge, without like measure of goodnesse, must necessarily bring foorth destruction and ruine, and not ornament and preservation. Since then there is a God, and an all-knowing God, so as he sees into the darkest of all naturall secretes, which is the harte of Man; and sees therein the deepest dissembled thoughts, nay sees the thoughts before they be thought: since he is iust to exercise his might, and mightie to performe his iustice, assure thy selfe, most wicked woman (that hast so plaguily a corrupted minde, as thou canst not keepe thy sicknesse to thy selfe, but must most wickedly infect others) assure thy selfe, I say, (for what I say dependes of euerlasting and vnremoueeable causes) that the time will come, when thou shalt knowe that power by feeling it, when thou shalt see his wisdom in the manifesting thy ougly shamelesnesse, and shalt onely perceiue him to haue bene a Creator in thy destruction.

CHAP. 11.

1 *Cecropia malcontent, still practiseth.* 2 *The besiegers discipline, and attempts of the besieged.* 3 *Phalantus challengeth* 4 *by Letter Amphialus:* 5 *who by Letter accepteth it.* 6 *Amphialus* 7 *and Phalantus militar accoustrements.* 8 *Their fo-like combate,* 9 *but friendly conclusion.*



Thus she saide, thus she ended, with so faire a maiestie of vnconquered vertue, that captiuitie might seeme to haue authoritie ouer tyrannie: so fowly was the filthinesse of impietie discovered by the shining of her vnstayed goodnes, so farre, as either *Cecropia* saw indeed, or else the guilty amazement of her selfe-accusing conscience, made her eies vntrue iudges of their natural obiect, that there was a light more then humaine, which gaue a lustre to her perfections. But *Cecropia*, like a Batte (which though it haue eyes to discern that

there is a Sunne, yet hath so euill eyes, that it cannot delight in the Sunne) found a trueth, but could not loue it. But as great persons are woont to make the wrong they haue done, to be a cause to doo the more wrong, her knowledge rose to no higher point, but to enuie a worthier, and her will was no otherwise bent, but the more to hate, the more she founde her enemie prouided against her. Yet all the while she spake (though with eyes cast like a horse that woulde strike at the stirrop, and with colour which blushed through yellownesse) she sate rather still then quiet, and after her speech rather muttered, then replied; for the warre of wickednesse in her selfe, brought forth disdainfull pride to resist cunning dissimulation; so as, saying little more vnto her, but that she shoulde haue leysure inough better to bethinke her selfe; she went away repining, but not repenting: condemning greatly (as she thought) her sonnes ouer-feeble humblenesse, and purposing to egge him forward to a course of violence. For her selfe, determining to deale with neither of them both any more in maner of a suter: for what maiestie of vertue did in the one, that did silent humblenesse in the other. But finding her sonne ouer-apt to lay both condemnation, and execution of sorrowe vppon himselfe, she sought to mitigate his minde with feigned delayes of comforte, who (hauing this inward ouerthrow in himselfe) was the more vexed, that he coulde not vtter the rage thereof vpon his outward enemies.

For *Basilus* taught by the last dayes triall, what daungerous effectes chosen courages can bring forth, rather vsed the spade, then the sworde; or the sworde, but to defende the spade; girding aboute the whole towne with trenches; which beginning a good way of from the towne, with a number of well directed Pioners, he still caryed before him till they came to a neere distance, where he builded Fortes, one answering the other, in such sort, as it was a prettie consideration in the discipline of warre, to see building used for the instrument of ruine, and the assayler entrenched as if he were besieged. But many sallies did *Amphialus* make to hinder their woorking. But they (exercising more melancholie, then choller in their resolution) made him finde, that if by the aduantage of place, fewe are able to defende themselues from manie, that manie must needes haue power, (making themselues strong in seate) to repell fewe; referring the reuenge rather to the ende, then a present requitall. Yet oftentimes they dealt some blowes in light skirmishes, eche side hauing a strong retyring place, and rather fighting with manie alarums, to vexe the enemie, then for anie hope of great successe.

Which euerie way was a tedious comber to the impacient courage of *Amphialus*: till the fame of this warre, bringing thither diuerse, both straungers, and subiects, as well of princely, as noble houses, the gallant *Phalantus*, who restrayned his sportfull delightes as then, to serue *Basilus*, (whome he honoured for receyued honours) when he had spent some time in considering the *Arcadian* maner in marching, encamping, and fighting, and had learned in what points of gouernement, and obedience their discipline differed from others, and had satisfied his minde in the knowledge, both for the cutting off the enemies helpes, and furnishing ones selfe,

which *Basilus* orders coulde deliuer vnto him, his yong spirites (wearie of wanting cause to be wearie) desired to keepe his valure in knowledge, by some priuate acte, since the publike policie restrayned him; the rather, because his olde mistresse *Artesia* might see, whome she had so lightly forsaken: and therefore demaunding and obteyning leaue of *Basilus*; he caused a Heralde to be furnished with apparell of his office, and tokens of a peaceable message, and so sent him to the gate of the towne to demaunde audience of *Amphialus*: who vnderstanding thereof, caused him both safely, and courteously to be brought into his presence: who making lowly reuerence vnto him, presented his Letters, desiring *Amphialus* that whatsoever they conteyned, he woulde consider that he was onely the bearer, but not the inditer. *Amphialus* with noble gentlenesse assured him both, by honourable speeches, and a demeanure which aunswered for him, that his reuenge, whensoever, should sort vnto it selfe a higher subiect. But opening the Letters, he found them to speake in this maner.

P*halantus* of *Corinthe*, to *Amphialus* of *Arcadia*, sendeth the greeting of a hatelesseemie. The

liking of martiall matters without anie mislike of your person, hath brought me rather to the companie, then to the minde of your besiegers: where languishing in idlenesse, I desire to refresh my minde with some exercise of armes, which might make knowne the doers, with delight of the beholders. Therefore, if there be any Gentleman in your Towne, that eyther for the loue of Honour, or honour of his Loue, well armed, on horsebacke, with launce, and sworde, will winne another, or loose himselfe, to be a prisoner at discretion of the conquerour, I will to morrowe morning by Sunne rising, with a trumpet and a Squire onely, attende him in like order furnished. The place I thinke fittest, the Iland within the Lake, because it standes so well in the view of your Castell, as that the Ladies may haue the pleasure of seeing the combate: which though it be within the commaundement of your Castell, I desire no better securitie, then the promise I make to my selfe of your vertue. I attende your aunswere, and wish you such successe as may be to your honour, rather in yeelding to that which is iust, then in mainteyning wrong by much violence.

Amphialus read it with cheerefull countenance, and thinking but a little with himselfe, called for inke and paper, and wrote this aunswere.

A*mphialus* of *Arcadia*, to *Phalantus* of *Corinthe*, wisheth all his owne wishes, sauing those which may be hurtful to another. The matter of your letters so fit for a worthy minde, and the maner so sutable to the noblenesse of the matter, giue me cause to thinke howe happie I might accounte my selfe, if I coulde get such a friende, who

esteeme it no small happinesse to haue mette with so noble anemie. Your challenge shall be aunswered, and both time, place, and weapon accepted. For your securitie for any treacherie (hauing no hostage woorthie to countervaile you) take my woorde, which I esteeme aboue all respectes. Prepare therefore your armes to fight, but not your hart to malice; since true valure needes no other whetstone, then desire of honour.

HAuing writte and sealed his letter, he deliuered it to the Heralde, and withall tooke a faire chaine

from off his owne necke, and gaue it him. And so with safe conuoy sent him away from out his Citie: and he being gone, *Amphialus* shewed vnto his mother, and some other of his chiefe Counsaillours, what he had receyued, and howe he had aunswered: telling them withall, that he was determined to aunswere the challenge in his owne person. His mother with prayers authorized by motherly commaundement; his olde gouernour with perswasions mingled with reprehensions, (that he would rather affect the glorie of a priuate fighter, then of a wise Generall) *Clinias* with falling downe at his feete, and beseeching him to remember, that all their liues depended vppon his safetie, sought all to dissuade him. But *Amphialus* (whose hart was enflamed with courage, and courage enflamed with affection) made an imperious resolution cutte off the tediousnesse of replyes, giuing them in charge, what they shoulde doo vppon all occasions, and particularly to deliuer the Ladies, if otherwise then well happened vnto him: onely desiring his mother, that she would bring *Philoclea* to a window, where she might with ease perfectly discerne the combat. And so, as soone as the morning beganne to draw dewe from the fairest greenes, to wash her face withall, against the approach of the burning Sunne, he went to his stable, where himselfe chose out a horse, whom (though he was neere twentie yeere olde) he preferred for a peece of sure seruice, before a great nu[m]ber of yonger. His colour was of a browne bay, dapled thick with black spots; his forehead marked with a white starre; to which, in all his bodie there was no part sutable, but the left foote before; his mane and taile black, and thick, of goodly, and well proportioned greatnes. He caused him to be trimmed with a sumptuous saddle of tawnie, and golde ennamell, enriched with pretious stones: his furniture was made into the fashio[n] of the branches of a tree, from which the leaues were falling: and so artificiallie were the leaues made, that as the horse moued, it seemed indeed that the leaues wagged, as when the winde plaies with them; and being made of a pale cloath of gold, they did beare the straw-coloured liuerie of ruine. His armour was also of tawnie and golde, but formed into the figure of flames darckened, as when they newelie breake the prison of a smoakie furnace. In his shielde he had painted the *Torpedo* fish. And so appointed, he caused himselfe, with his trumpet and squire (whom he had taken since the death of *Ismenus*) to be ferried ouer into the Iland: a place well chosen for such a

purpose. For, it was so plaine, as there was scarcely any bush, or hillock, either to vnleuell, or shadowe it: of length and breadth enough, to trie the vttermost both of launce and sword, and the one end of it facing of the castle, the other extending it selfe toward the campe, and no accesse to it, but by water: there coulde no secrete trecherie be wrought, and for manifest violence, ether side might haue time inough to succour their party.

But there he found *Phalantus*, alredy waiting for him vpon a horse, milke 7
white, but that vpon his shoulder and withers, he was fretned with red staines, as when a few strawberries are scattered into a dish of creame. He had caused his mane and taile to be died in carnation; his reines were vine branches, which ingendring one with the other, at the end, when it came to the bitte, there, for the bosse, brought forth a cluster of grapes, by the workeman made so liuely, that it seemed, as the horse champed on his bitte, he chopped for them, and that it did make his mouth water, to see the grapes so neere him. His furniture behind was of vines, so artificially made, as it semed the horse stood in the shadow of the vine, so pretily were clusters of rubie grapes dispersed among the trappers which embraced his sides. His armour was blew, like the heauen, which a Sun did with his rayes (proportionately deliuered) guilde in most places. His shield was beautified with this deuice; A greyhound, which ouerrunning his fellow, and taking the hare, yet hurts it not whe[n] it takes it. The word was, *The glorie, not the pray.*

8
But as soone as *Amphialus* landed, he sent his squire to *Phalantus*, to tel him, that there was the Knight, redy to know whether he had any thing to him. *Phalantus* answered, that his answeere now must be in the la[n]guage of launces; & so each attended the warning of the tru[m]pets, which were to sound at the appointment of foure iudges, who with consideration of the same, had deuided the ground. *Phalantus*-his horse young, and feeling the youth of his master, stode coruetting; which being wel gouerned by *Phala[n]tus*, gaue such a glittering grace, as when the Sunne shines vpon a wauing water, *Amphialus*-horse stood panting vpon the ground, with his further foot before, as if he would for his masters cause begin to make himselfe angry: till the trumpet sounded together. Together they set spurres to their horses, together took their launces from their thighes, conueied them vp into their restes together, together let them sinke downward; so as it was a delectable sight, in a dangerous effect; and a pleasant consideration, that there was so perfect agreement, in so mortall disagreement: like a musick, made of cunning discords. But their horses keeping an euen line their masters had skilfully allotted vnto them, passed one by another without encountring, although either might feel the angry breath of other. But the stauies being come to a iust descent, but euen when the mark was ready to meet them, *Amphialus* was runne through the vamplate, and vnder the arme: so as the staffe appearing behind him, it semed to the beholders he had bene in danger. But he strake *Phalantus* iust vpon the gorget, so as he battred the lamms therof, and made

his head almost touch the back of his horse. But either side hauing staid the spur, & vsed the bit to stop their horses fury, casting away the tro[n]cheons of their staues, & drawing their swords, they attended the second summons of the death-threatening trumpet, which quickly folowed; and they assoone making their horses answer their ha[n]ds, with a ge[n]tle galop, set the one toward the other; til being come in the neernes of litle more then a staues length. *Amphialus* trusting more to the strength, then to the nimblenes of his horse, put him foorth with speedie violence, and making his head ioyne to the others flanke, guiding his blow with discretion, and strengthning it with the course of his horse, strake *Phalantus* vpon the head, in such sort, that his feeling sense did both dazell his sight, and astonish his hearing. But *Phalantus* (not accustomed to be vngratefull to such benefites) strake him vpon the side of his face, with such a force, that he thought his iawe had bene cut asunder: though the faithfulness of his armour indeede garded him from further damage. And so remayned they awhile, rather angry with fighting, then fighting for anger, till *Amphialus*-his horse, leaning harde vpon the other, and winning ground, the other horse feeling himselfe prest, began to rise a little before, as he was woont to doo in his coruette: which advantage *Amphialus* taking, set forward his own horse with the further spurre, so as *Phalantus*-his horse came ouer with his master vnder him.

Which *Amphialus* seeing, lighted, with intention to help *Phalantus*. But his horse that had faulted, rather with vntimely arte, then want of force, gatte vp from burdning his burden, so as *Phalantus* (in the fall hauing gotten his feete free of & the stirrop) could (though something bruised) arise, seeing *Amphialus* neere him, he asked him, Whether he had giue[n] him any help in remouing his horse. *Amphialus* said No. Truly sayd *Phalantus*, I asked it, because I would not willingly haue fought with him, that had had my life in his mercie. But now (said *Phalantus*) before we proceed further, let me know who you are, because neuer yet did any man bring me to the like fortune. *Amphialus* listing to keepe him selfe vnknowne, told him he was a Gentlema[n], to whom *Amphialus* that day had giuen armour and horse to trie his valour, hauing neuer before bene in any combat worthy remembrance. Ah, (said *Phalantus* in a rage) And must I be the exercise of your prentisage? & with that, choler tooke away either the bruse, or the feeling of the bruse, so as he entred a fresh into the co[m]bat, & boiling in his armes the disdain of his harte, strake so thicke vpon *Amphialus*, as if euery blow would faine haue bene foremost.

But *Amphialus* (that many like trials had taught, great spending to leaue small remnants) let passe the storme with strong wardes, and nimble auoidings: till seeing his time fit, both for distaunce and nakednes, he strake him so cruell a blow on the knee, that the poore Gentleman fell downe withall in a sowne.

But *Amphialus*, pittying approued valoure, made pretious by naturall curtesie, 9
went to him; & taking of his head-piece to giue him aire, the young Knight
(disdained to buy life with yeelding) had him vse his fortune: for he was resolued
neuer to yeeld. No more you shall (said *Amphialus*) if it be not to my request, that you

will account your self to haue great interest in me. *Phalantus* more ouercome by his kindnes, the[n] by his fortune, desired yet once againe to know his name, who in his first beginning had shewed such furie in his force, and yet such stay in his furie. *Amphialus*, then named himselfe, telling him withal, he would think his name much bettred, if it might be honored by the title of his frie[n]d. But no Baulme could be more comfortable to his wound, then the knowledge thereof was to his mind, when he knew his mishap should be excused by the renomed valour of the other. And so promising each to other assurednes of good will, *Phalantus*, (of whom *Amphialus* would haue no other raunsome, but his word of frie[n]dship) was conueyed into the campe, where he would but litle remaine among the enimies of *Amphialus*: but went to seeke his aduentures other-where.

CHAP. 12.

1 *Philocleas il-taking Amphialus wel-meaning.* 2 *His challenge and conquests continued for Loue, & his loue.* 3 *Argalus sent for to this challenge.* 4 *The coniugall happines of him and his wife.* 5 *The passions stirred by this message.* 6 *Their sorrow-sounding farewell.* 7 *Argalusis defie.* 8 *Amphialusis answeare.* 9 *Argalusis furniture.* 10 *Their combat, bloody to both, deadly to Argalus.* 11 *Parthenia comes to the end of it, and him.* 12 *Her* 13 *and his lamentations.* 14 *The funerals.*



AS for *Amphialus* he was receaued with triumph into the castle; although one might

see by his eyes (humbly lifted vp to the window

where *Philoclea* stood) that he was rather suppliant, then

victorious: whiche occasion *Cecropia* taking, (who as then stode

by *Philoclea*, and had lately lefte *Pamela* in another roome, whence also she might

see the combate) Sweet Lady (said she) now you may see, whether you haue cause to loue my sonne, who then lies vnder your feete, when he standes vpon the necke of his brauest enemies. Alas said *Philoclea*, a simple seruice to me, me thinkes it is, to haue those, who come to succour me, destroyed: If it be my dutie to call it loue, be it so: but the effects it brings foorth I confesse I account hatefull. *Cecropia* grew so angry with this vnkind answeare, that she could not abstayne from telling her, that she was like them that could not sleepe, when they were softly layed: but that if her sonne would follow her counsell, he should take another course with her: and so flange away from her.

Yet (knowing the desperate melancholy of *Amphialus* in like cases) framed to 2
him a very thankfull message, poudring it with some hope-giuing phrases; which
were of such ioy to *Amphialus*, that he (though against publike respect:, &
importunity of dissuaders) presently caused it to be made knowne to the campe, that
whatsoeuer Knight would trie the like fortune as *Phalantus* did, he should in like sorte
be answered: so as diuers of the valiantest, partly of themselues, partly at the
instigation of *Basilius*, attempted the combat with him: and according to euery ones
humour, so were the causes of the challege grou[n]ded: one laying treason to his
charge; another preferring himselfe in the worthines to serue *Philoclea*; a third,
exalting some Ladies beautie beyond ether of the sisters; a fourth, laying disgraces to
Loue it selfe, naming it the bewitcher of the witt, the rebell to Reason, the betrayer of
resolution, the defiler of thoughts, the vnderminer of magnanimitie, the flatterer of
vice, the slaue to weakenesse, the infection of youth, the madnesse of age; the curse of
life, and reproch of death; a fifth, disdayning to caste at lesse then at all, woulde
make the cause of his quarrell the causers of loue, and proclayme his blasphemies
against womankind; that namely that sex was the ouersight of Nature, the disgrace of
reasonablenes, the obstinate cowards, the slaue-borne tyrants, the shops of vanities,
the guilded wethercocks; in who[m] conscience is but peeuishnes, chastitie
waywardnes, & gratefulness a miracle. But all these challenges (how wel so euer
endited) were so well answered, that some by death taught others, though past
learning themselues; & some by yeelding gaue themselues the lie for hauing
blasphemed; to the great grieffe of *Basilius*, so to see his Rebell preuaile, and in his
own sight to crowne himselfe with deserued honour.

Wherupon thirsting for reuenge, & else not hoping to preuaile, the best of his 3
campe being already ouerthrowne; he sent a messenger to *Argalus*, in whose
approued courage and force, he had (and had cause) to haue great confidence, with a
letter; requiring him, to take this quarrell in hand, from which he had hetherto spared
him in respect: of his late mariage. But now his honour, and (as he esteemed it)
felicities standing vpon it, he could no longer forbear to challenge of him his faithfull
seruice.

The messenger made speede, and found *Argalus* at a castle of his owne, sitting in a
parler with the

faire *Parthenia*, he reading in a booke the stories of *Hercules*, she by him, as to 4
heare him reade; but while his eyes looked on the booke, she looked on his eies,
& sometimes staying him with some pretty question, not so much to be resolued of the
double; as to giue him occasion to looke vpon her. A happy couple, he ioying in her,
she ioying in her selfe, but in her selfe, because she enioyed him: both encreasing
their riches by giuing to each other; each making one life double, because they made a
double life; one, where desire neuer wanted satisfactio[n], nor satisfaction neuer bred
sacietie; he ruling, because she would obey: or rather because she would obey, she
therein ruling.

But when the messenger came in with letters in his hand, & hast in his countenance, though she

knew not what to feare, yet she feared, because she knew not; but she rose, and went aside, while he deliuered his letters and message; yet a far of she looked, now at the messenger, & then at her husband: the same feare, which made her loth to haue cause of feare, yet making her seeke cause to nourish her feare. And wel she fou[n]d there was some serious matter; for her husbands countenance figured some resolution betweene lothnesse and necessitie: and once his eie cast vpon her, & finding hers vpon him, he blushed; & she blushed, because he blushed; and yet streight grew paler, because she knew not why he had blushed. But when he had read, & heard, & dispatched away the messenger (like a man in whom Honour could not be rocked on sleepe by Affection) with promise quickly to follow; he came to *Parthenia*, and as sorie as might be for parting, and yet more sorie for her sorrow, he gaue her the letter to reade. She with fearful slownes tooke it, and with fearefull quicknesse read it; and hauing read it, Ah my *Argalus* (said she) and haue you made such hast to answeere? and are you so soone resolved to leaue me? But he discoursing vnto her, how much it imparted his honour (which since it was deare to him, he knew it would be deare vnto her) her reason ouerclouded with sorow, suffered her not presently to replie, but left the charge thereof to teares, and sighes; which he not able to beare, left her alone, and went to giue order for his present departure.

By that time he was armde, and readie to go, she had recouered a little strength of spirite againe, &

coming out, & seing him armed, & wanting nothing for his departure but her farewell, she ran to him, tooke him by the arme, and kneeling downe without regard, who either heard her speach, or saw her demeanour, My *Argalus*, my *Argalus* (said she) doo not thus forsake me. Remember, alas, Remember that I haue interest in you, which I will neuer yeeld shalbe thus aduentured. Your valour is already sufficiently knowne: sufficiently haue you already done for your country: ennow, ennow there are besides you to loose lesse worthie liues. Woe is me, what shall become of me, if you thus abandon me? Then was it time for you to follow these aduentures, when you aduentured no body but your selfe, and were no bodies but your owne. But now pardon me, that now, or neuer, I claime mine owne; mine you are, & without me you can vndertake no da[n]ger: & will you endager *Parthenia*? *Parthenia* shalbe in the battle of your fight: *Parthenia* shall smart in your paine, & your blood must be bled by *Parthenia*. Deare *Parthenia* (said he) this is the first time, that euer you resisted my will: I thanke you for it; but perseuer not in it; & let not the teares of those most beloued eies be a presage vnto me of that, which you would not should happen. I shal liue, doubt not: for so great a blessing, as you are, was not giuen vnto me, so soone to be depriued of it. Looke for me therefore shortly, and victorious; and prepare a ioyfull welcome, and I will wish for no other triumph. She answered not, but stood as it were thunder-stricken with amazement: for true Loue

made obedience stande vp against all other passions. But when he tooke her in his armes, and sought to printe his harte in her sweete lippes, she fell in a sounde, so as he was faine to leaue her to her Gentlewomen; and caried away by the tyrannie of Honour, though with manie a backe-cast looke, and hartie grone, went to the campe. When vnderstanding the notable victories of *Amphialus*, he thought to giue him some dayes respite of rest, because he woulde not haue his victorie disgraced by the others wearinesse. In which dayes, he sought by all meanes (hauing leaue to parley with him) to dissuade him from his enterprise: and then imparting his mind to *Basilus*, because he found *Amphialus* was inflexible, wrote his defie vnto him in this maner.

RIght famous *Amphialus*, if my persuasion in reason, or praier in good wil, 7
might preuaile with you, you should by better meanes be like to obtaine your
desire. You shoulde make many braue enemies become your faithful serua[n]ts, &
make your honor flie vp to the heaue[n], being caried vp by both the wings of valure
& iustice; whereof now it wants the latter. But since my suite, nor counsel can get no
place in you, disdain not to receiue a mortall chalenge, from a man so farre inferiour
vnto you in vertue, as that I do not so much mislike of the deed, as I haue the doer in
admiration. Prepare therefore your self, according to the noble maner you haue vsed,
and think not lightly of neuer so weake an arme, which strikes with the sword of
iustice.

To this quickly he receiued this answer.

MVch more famous *Argalus*, I, whom neuer threatnings could make afraid, am now
terrified by

your noble curtesie. For wel I knowe, from what height of vertue it doth proceed, 8
and what cause I haue to doubt such vertue bent to my ruine: but Loue, which
iustifieth the vniustice you lay vnto me, dooth also animate me against all daungers,
since I come full of him by whom your selfe haue beene (if I be not deceiued)
sometimes conquered. I will therefore attend your apperaunce in the Ile, carying this
advantage with me, that as it shal be a singular honour if I get the victorie, so there
can be no dishonour in being ouercome by *Argalus*.

The chalenge thus denounced, and accepted, *Argalus* was armed in a white armour,
which was

gilded ouer with knots of womans haire, which came downe from the crest of 9
his head-peece, and spred it selfe in rich qua[n]titie ouer all his armour: his
furniture was cut out into the fashion of an Eagle, whereof the beake (made into a rich
iewell) was fastened to the saddle, the taile couered the crooper of the horse, and the
wings serued for trappers; which falling of ech side, as the horse stirred, the bird
seemed to flie. His pettrell and reines, were embrodered with feathers sutable vnto it:
vpon his right arme he ware a sleeue, which his deare *Parthenia* had made for him, to
be worne in a iustee, in the time that successe was vngratefull to their well-deserued

loue: It was full of bleeding hartes, though neuer intended to any blooddie enterprise. In this shield (as his owne deuice) he had two Palme trees, neere one another, with a worde signifying, *In that sort flourishing*. His horse was of a fine sorrell, with blacke feete, and blacke list on his back, who with open nostrrels breathed warre, before he could see an enemy: and now vp with one legge, and then with another, seemed to complain of Nature, that she had made him any whit earthie.

But he had scarcely viewed the ground of the Ilande, and considered the
advantages (if any were) therof, before the Castel boat had
deliuered *Amphialus*, in al points prouided to giue a hard entertainme[n]t. And then
sending ech to other their Squires in honourable maner, to knowe whether they should
attende any further ceremony; the trumpets sounding, the horses with smooth running,
their staues with vnshaked motion, obediently performed their cholericke
co[m]mandements. But when they drew nere, *Argalus*-his horse being hot, prest in
with his head: which *Amphialus* perceiuing, knowing if he gaue him his side, it should
be to his disaduauntage, prest in also with him, so as both the horses & men met
shoulder to shoulder, so as the horses (hurt as much with the striking, as being striken)
tumbled downe to the earth, daungerously to their maister, but that they by strength
nimble, and by use skilfull, in the falling shunned the harme of the fall, and without
more respite, drewe out their swordes with a gallant brauerie, eche striuing to shewe
himselpe the lesse endamaged, and to make knowne that they were glad, they had
nowe nothing else to trust to, but their owne vertue. True it is, that *Amphialus* was the
sooner vp; but *Argalus* had his sworde out the sooner: and then fell they to the
cruellest combate, that any present eye had seene. Their swordes first, like Canons,
battering downe the walles of their armour, making breaches almost in euerie place
for troupes of woundes to enter. Among the rest, *Argalus* gaue a great wound
to *Amphialus*-his disarmed face; though part of the force of it *Amphialus* warded vpon
his shielde, and with-all (first casting his eye vp to *Philocleas* Window, as if he had
fetched his courage thence) feyning to entend the same sort of blowes, turned his
sword, and with a mightie reuerse, gaue a cruell wounde to the right arme of *Argalus*,
the vnfaythfull armour yeelding to the swoordes strong-guided sharpenesse. But
though the blood accused the hurt of *Argalus*, yet woulde he in no action of his
confesse it: but keeping himselpe in a lower warde, stode watching with timely
thrustes to repaire his losse; which quickly he did. For *Amphialus* (following his
fawning fortune) laid on so thicke vpon *Argalus*, that his shield had almost fallen
peece-meale to the earth, when *Argalus* comming in with his right foote, and
something stowping to come vnder his armour, thrust him into the belly daungerously,
and mortally it would haue beene, but that with the blowe before, *Amphialus* had
ouerthrowne himselpe so, as he fell side-warde downe, and with falling saued himselpe
from ruine. The sworde by that meanes slipping aside, and not pearcing more
deepely, *Argalus* seeing him fall, threatning with voyce and sworde, bad him yeelde.
But he striuing without aunswere to rise, *Argalus* strake with all his might vpon his

head. But his hurte arme not able to maister so sounde a force, let the swoorde fall so, as *Amphialus*, though astonished with the blowe, could arise:

which *Argalus* considering, ranne in to graspe with him, and so closed together; falling so to the grounde, nowe one getting aboue, and then the other; at length, both wearie of so vnlovely embracements, with a dissenting consent gate vp, and went to their swordes: but happened eche of his enemies: where *Argalus* finding his foes sworde garnished in his blood, his hart rase with the same swoorde to reuenge it, and on that blade to allie their bloods together. But his minde was euill wayted-on by his lamed force, so as he receyued still more and more woundes, which made all his armour seeme to blush, that it had defended his master no better.

But *Amphialus* perceiuing it, & waying the small hatefulnessse of their quarrell, with the worthinesse of the Knight, desired him to take pitie of himselfe. But *Argalus*, the more repining, the more he founde himselfe in disaduauntage, filling his veynes with spite in steade of blood, and making courage arise agaynst faintnesse, (like a Candle, which a little before it goes out, giues then the greatest blaze) so did he vnite all his force, that casting away the little remnaunt of his shielde, and taking his swoorde in both handes, he stroke such a notable blowe, that he cleft his shielde, armour, and arme almost to the bone.

But then *Amphialus* forgat all ceremonies, and with cruell blowes made more
of his blood succeed the rest; til his hand being staid by his eare, his eare filled 11
with a pitifull crie, the crie guided his sight to an excellent faire Ladie, who came
running as fast as she could, and yet because she coulde not as fast as she would, she
sent her lamentable voyce before her: and being come, and being knowne to them
both, to be the beautifull *Parthenia*, (who had that night dreamed shee sawe her
husbande in such estate, as she then founde him, which made her make such haste
thither) they both maruailed. But *Parthenia* ranne betweene them (feare of loue
making her forget the feare of Nature) and then fell downe at their feete, determining
so to part them, till she coulde get breathe to sigh out her doolefull speeches: and
when her breath (which running had spent, and dismayednesse made slowe to returne)
had by sobbes gotten into her sorow-closed breast, for a while she coulde say nothing,
but, O wretched eyes of mine, O wailefull sight, O day of darkenesse: at length
turning her eyes (wherein sorrowe swamme) to *Amphialus*, My Lorde (saide she) it is
saide you loue; in the power of that loue, I beseech you to leaue of this combate, as
euen your harte may finde comfort in his affection, euen for her sake, I craue it: or if
you be mortally determined, be so pitifull vnto me, as first to kill me, that I may not
see the death of *Argalus*.

Amphialus was aboute to haue aunswered, when *Argalus*, vexed with his Fortune,
but most vexed that she shoulde see him in that fortune, Ah *Parthenia* (saide he) neuer
till nowe vnwelcome vnto me, do you come to get my life by request? And can
not *Argalus* liue but by request? Is it a life? With that he went aside, for feare of
hurting her, and woulde haue begunne the combate afresh. But *Amphialus* not onely

coniuired by that which helde the Monarchie of his mind, but euen in his noble hart melting with compassion at so passionate a sight, desired him to withhold his handes, for that he shoulde strike one, who sought his fauour, and woulde not make resistance. A notable example of the woonderfull effectes of Vertue, where the conquerour, sought for friendship of the conquered, and the conquered woulde not pardon the conquerour: both indeede being of that minde to loue eche other for accepting, but not for giuing mercie, and neyther affected to ouer-liue a dishonour: so that *Argalus* not so much striuing with *Amphialus* (for if he had had him in the like sorte, in like sort he would haue dealt with him) as labouring against his owne power (which he chiefly despised) set himselfe forward, stretching his strength to the vttermost. But the fire of that strife, blowen with his inward rage, boyled out his bloud in such aboundance, that he was driuen to rest him vpon the pommel of his sword: and then each thing beginning to turne rounde in the daunce of Death before his eyes, his sight both dazled, and dimmed, till (thinking to sit downe) he fell in a sowne. *Parthenia*, and *Amphialus* both hastely went vnto him: *Amphialus* tooke of his helmet, and *Parthenia* laid his head in her lap, tearing of her linnen sleeues & partlet, to serue about his wounds; to bind which, she tooke of her hair-lace, and would haue cut of her faire haire herselfe, but that the squires and iudges came in with fitter things for the purpose: while she bewayled her selfe with so lamentable sweetnes, as was inough to haue taught sorrow to the gladdest thoughts, and haue engraued it in the mindes of hardest mettall.

O *Parthenia*, no more *Parthenia* (said she) What art thou? what seest thou? 12
 how is thy blisse in a moment fallen? how art thou, euen-now before all Ladies
 the example of perfect happines, and now the gasing-stock of endles miserie? O God,
 what hath bene my desert to be thus punished? or if such haue bene my desert, why
 was I not in my selfe punished? O wandring life, to what wildernes wouldst thou lead
 one? But Sorow, I hope thou art sharp inough to saue my labour from other
 remedies. *Argalus*, *Argalus*, I will folow thee, I wil folow thee.

But with that *Argalus* came out of his sowne, and lifting vp his languishing eyes
 (which a painefull
 rest, and iron sleepe did seeke to lock vp) seeing her, in who[m] (euen dying) he 13
 liued, and him selfe seated in so beloued a place, it seemed a little cheerefull
 bloud came vp to his cheekes, like a burning cole, almost dead, if some breath a little
 reuiue it: & forcing vp (the best he could) his feeble voice, My deare, my deare, my
 better halfe (said he) I finde I must now leaue thee: and by that sweet hand, and faire
 eyes of thine I sweare, that Death bringes nothing with it to grieue me, but that I must
 leaue thee, and cannot remaine to answere part of thy infinit deserts, with being some
 comfort vnto thee. But since so it pleaseth him, whose wisdom and goodnesse
 guideth all, put thy confidence in him, and one day we shall blessedly meet againe,
 neuer to depart: meane while liue happily, deare *Parthenia*, and I perswade my selfe,
 it will increase the blessednes of my soule, so to see thee. Loue well the remembrance

of thy louing, and truely louing, *Argalus*: and let not (with that worde he sighed) this disgrace of mine, make thee one day thinke, thou hadst an vnwoorthie husband. They could scarcely vnderstand the last wordes: for Death began to seaze him selfe of his harte, neither coulde *Parthenia* make answeere, so full was her breast of anguish. But while the other sought to stanch his remediles wounds, she with her kisses made him happie: for his last breath was deliuered into her mouth.

But when indeede she found his ghost was gone, then Sorrowe lost the witte 14
of vtterance, and grewe ragefull, and madde, so that she tare her beautifull face,
and rent her haire, as though they could serue for nothing, since *Argalus* was gone;
till *Amphialus* (so moued with pittie of that sight, as that he honoured his aduersaries
death with teares) caused her (with the helpe of her women that came with her)
partelie by force, to be conueyed into boate, with the dead body of *Argalus*, from
which she could not depart. And being come of the other side, there she was receaued
by *Basilus* him selfe, with all the funerall pompe of militarie discipline, trayling all
their Ensignes vpon the ground, making his warlike instruments sound dolefull notes,
and *Basilus* (with comfort in his mouth, and woe in his face) sought to perswade
some ease into *Parthenias* minde: but all was as easefull to her, as the handling of
sore woundes: all the honour done, being to her but the triumph of her ruine, she
finding no comfort, but in desperate yeelding to Sorrow: and rather determined to hate
her selfe, if euer she should finde ease thereof. And well might she heare as she past
through the Campe, the great prayses spoken of her husbände, which all were recordes
of her losse. But the more excellent he was (being indeede accounted seconde to none
in all *Greece*) the more did the breath of those praises, beare vp the winges
of *Amphialus*-his fame: to whom yet (such was his case) that Trophe vpon Trophe,
still did but builde vp the monume[n]t of his thraldome; he euer finding himselfe in
such fauour of Philoclea, that she was most absent, when he was present with her; and
euer sorriest, when he had best successe: which would haue made him renounce all
comfort, but that his mother, with diuersity of deuises, kept vp his hart.

But while he allayed thus his outward glorie, with inward discomfort, he was like to
haue bene ouertaken with a notable treason, the beginning wherof (though meerely
ridiculous) had like to haue brought forth vnto him a weeping effect.

CHAP. 13.

1 *Dametas put in harte* 2 *to defie Clinias.* 3 *Clinias out of harte to see the vie.* 4 *Dametas brauerie, adouvements, and imprese.* 5 *Clinias drawne* 6 *to answeere him.* 7 *Their passions in comming to the field.* 8 *Their actions in it, not so doubtly, as their fortune doubtfull.* 9 *Clinias yeelding to*

triumphant Dametas.



Among other that attended *Basilus* in this expedition, *Dametas* was one; whether to

be present with him, or absent from *Miso*: once, certaine it was 1
without any minde to make his sworde cursed by any widow.

Nowe, being in the campe, while each talke seemed iniurious, which did not acknowledge some duety to the fame of *Amphialus*, it fell out sometimes in communication, that as the speech of heauen doth often beget the mention of hell, so the admirable prowes of *Amphialus* (by a cotrarie) brought forth the remembrance of the cowardise of *Clinias*: in so much, as it grew almost to a prouerb, As very a cowarde, as *Clinias*. Describing him in such sort, that in the end, *Dametas* began to thinke with himselfe, that if he made a chalenge vnto him, he would neuer answeere it; and that then he should greatly encrease the fauourable conceite of *Basilus*. This fancie of his he uttered to a young Gentleman, that waited vpon *Phiilanax*, in whose friendship he had especiall co[n]fidence, because he haunted his company, laughing often merely at his speeches, and not a little extolling the goodly dotes of *Mopsa*. The young Gentleman as glad, as if he had found a Hare sitting, egd him on, breaking the matter with *Philanax*, and then (for feare the humour should quayle in him) wrote a challenge him selfe for *Damætas*, and brought it to him. But when *Damætas* read it, putting his head on his shoulder, and somewhat smiling; he said, it was prettie indeed; but that it had not a loftie stile enough: and so would needes indite it in this sort.

2

O *Clinias, thou Clinias, the wickedest worme that euer went, vpon two legges; the very fritter of fraude, and seething pot of iniquitie: I Damætas, chiefe gouernour of all the royall cattell, and also of Pamela {whom thy Maister most perniciously hath suggested out of my dominion} doo defie thee, in a mortall affray from the bodkin to the pike vpwarde. Which if thou doost presume to take in hande, I will out of that superfluous bodie of thine make thy soule to be euacuated.*

The young Gentleman seemed dumbe-stricken with admiration, and presently tooke vpon him to be

the bearer thereof, while the heate of the fit lasted: and hauing gotten leaue 3
of *Basilus* (euery one helping on, to ease his minde ouercharged with melancholy) he went into the towne according to the manner before time vsed, and in the presence of *Amphialus* deliuered this letter to *Clinias*; desiring to haue an answeere, which might be fit for his reputation. *Clinias* opened it, and read it; and in the reading, his bloud not daring to be in so daungerous a place, went out of his face, and hid it selfe more inwardly: and his very wordes (as if they were afraid of blowes) came very

slowly out of his mouth: but, aswell as his painting breath would utter it, he bad him tell the lowte that sent him, that he disdained to haue any thing to doo with him. But *Amphialus*, perceauing the matter, tooke him aside, and very earnestly dealt with him not to shame himselfe; *Amphialus* not onely desirous to bring it to passe to make some sport to *Philoclea*, but not being able to perswade with him, *Amphialus* licenced the Gentleman, telling him, by the next morning he should haue answeere.

The yong Gentlema[n] (sory he had sped no better) returned to *Damætas*, who 4 had fetched many a sower-breathed sigh, for fear *Clinias* would accept the chale[n]ge. But whe[n] he perceiued by his trusty messenger, that this delay was in effect a denial, there being no dispositio[n] in him to accept it; then lo, *Damætas* began to speake his lowd voice, to looke big, to march vp & down, & in his march to lift his legs higher the he was wont, swearing by no meane deuotio[n]s, that the wals should not keepe the coward fro[m] him, but he would fetch him out of his connie-berrie: & then was hotter then euer to prouide himselfe of horse & armour, saying, he would go to the Iland brauely addoubed, & shew himself to his charge *Pamela*. To this purpose many willing ha[n]ds were about him, letting him haue reynes, pettrell, with the rest of the furniture, and very braue bases; but all comming from diuers houses, nether in coulour or fashion, shewing any kinred one with another; but that liked *Damætas* the better: for that he thought would argue, that he was maister of many braue furnitures. Then gaue he order to a painter for his deuice; which was, a plowe with the oxen lewsed from it, a sword with a great many armes and legges cut of; and lastly a great armie of pen and inke-hornes, and bookes. Nether did he sticke to tell the secrete of his intent, which was, that he had lefte of the plowe, to doo such bloody deedes with his swoorde, as many inkehornes and bookes should be employed about the historifying of them: and being asked, why he set no worde vnto it, he said, that was indeede like the painter, that sayeth in his picture, Here is the dog, and here is the Hare: & with that he laughed so perfectly, as was great consolation to the beholders. Yet remembring, that *Miso* would not take it well at his returne, if he forgat his dutie to her, he caused about in a border to be written:

Miso mine own pigsnie, thou shalt heare news o' Damætas.

Thus all things being condignely ordered, with an ill fauoured impatiencie he waited, vntil the next morning, that he might make a muster of him selfe in the Iland; often asking them that very diligently wayted vpon him, whether it were not pittie, that such a coward, as *Clinias*, should set his runaway feete vpon the face of the earth?

But as he was by diuers principal yong Gentlemen, to his no small glory, lifted 5 vp on horsebacke, comes me a page of *Amphialus*, who with humble smiling reuerence deliuered a letter vnto him from *Clinias*: whom *Amphialus* had brought to this, first with perswasions (that for certaine, if he did accept the combat, *Damætas* would neuer dare to appeare, and that then the honour should be

his) but principally threatning him, that if he refused it, he would turne him out of the towne to be put to death for a traitour by *Basilus*: so as the present feare (euer to a coward most terrible) of being turned out of the towne, made him, though full vnwillingly, vndertake the other feare, wherein he had some shewe of hope, that *Damætas* might hap either to be sick, or not to haue the courage to performe the matter. But when *Damætas* heard the name of *Clinias*, very aptly suspecting what the matter might be, he bad the page carry backe his letter, like a naughty boy as he was: for he was in no humour, he tolde him, of reading letters. But *Damætas*-his frie[n]d, first persuading him, that for certaine it was some submission, tooke vpon him so much boldnesse, as to open his letter, and to reade it alowd in this sort.

6

*F*Ilthy driuell, vnworthy to haue thy name set in any letter by a souldiers hande written: could thy wretched harte thinke it was timorousnesse, that made *Clinias* suspende a while his answer? No caitiffe, no: it was but as a Ramme, which goes backe to returne with the greater force. Know therefore that thou shalt no sooner appeare (appeare now if thou darest) I say thou shalt no sooner appeare in the Ilande (O happy thou, if thou doo not appeare) but that I will come vpon thee withall my force; and cut thee in pieces (marke, what I saie) ioynte after ioynte, to the eternall terrour of all presumptuous villaynes. Therefore looke what thou doost: for I tell thee, horrible smarte, and paine shalbe thy lot, if thou wilt needes be so foolish (I hauing giuen thee no such cause) as to meete with me.

These terrible wordes *Clinias* vsed, hoping they would giue a cooling to the heate of *Damætas*-his

courage: and so indeede they did, that he did grone to heare the thundring of those 7
 threatnings. And when the Gentleman had ended the reading of them, *Damætas* tolde them, that in his opinion he thought his answer came too late, and that therefore he might very well go, and disarme him selfe: especially considering, the other had in curteous maner warned him not to come. But they (hauing him now on horsebacke) led him vnto the ferrie, and so into the Iland; the clashing of his owne armour striking miserable feare into him, and in his minde thinking greate vnkindnesse in his friende, that he had brought him to a matter so contrarie to his complexion. There stayed he but a little (the Gentlemen that came with him teaching him how to vse his sworde and launce, while he cast his eye about, to see which way he might runne away, cursing all Ilands in being euill scituated) when *Clinias* with a braue sounde of trumpets landed at the other ende: who came all the way debating with himselfe, what he had deserued of *Amphialus* to driue him to those inconueniences. Sometimes his witte made him bethinke him selfe what was beste to be done: but feare did so corrupt his witt, that whatsoever he thought was best, he still found daunger therein; fearefulnesse (contrarie to all other vices) making

him thinke the better of another, the worse he found him selfe; rather imagining in him selfe, what wordes he would vse (if he were ouercome) to get his life of *Damætas*, then how to ouercome, whereof he could thinke with no patience. But oftentimes looking to the Earth pittifully complayning, that a man of such sufficiencie (as he thought him selfe) shoulde in his best yeares be swallowed vp by so base an element. Faine he would haue prayed, but he had not harte inough to haue confidence in praier; the glittering of the armour, and sounding of the trumpets giuing such an assault to the weake-breache of his false senses, that he grewe from the degree of feare to an amazement, not almost to know what he did; till two iudges (chosen for the purpose) making the trumpets cease, and taking the oth of those champions, that they came without guile or witchcraft, set them at wonted distaunce; one from the other.

Then the trumpets sounding, *Damætas*-his horse (used to such causes) when he 8 thought lest of the matter, started out so lustely, that *Damætas* was iogde back with head, and bodie, and pulling withall his bridle-hande, the horse (that was tender of mouth) made halfe a stop, and fell to bounding, so that *Damætas* threw away his launce, and with both his hands held by the pummell: the horse, halfe running, halfe leaping, till he met with *Clinias*: who fearing he should misse his reste, had put his staffe therein before he began his careere: neither would he then haue begun, but that at the trumpets warning, one (that stood behinde) strake on his horse, who running swiftly, the winde tooke such holde of his staffe, that it crost quite ouer his breast, and in that sorte gaue a flat bastonado to *Damætas*: who, halfe out of his sadle, went neere to his olde occupation of digging the earth, but with the creste of his helmet. *Clinias* when he was paste him, not knowing what he had done, but fearing lest *Damætas* were at his backe, turned with a wide turne; & seeing him on the ground, he thought then was his time, or neuer, to treade him vnder his horses feete; & withall (if he could) hurt him with his launce, which had not broken, the encounter was so easie. But putting forth his horse, what with the falling of the staffe to low before the legs of the horse, & the[n] coming vpon *Damætas*, who was then scra[m]bling vp, the horse fell ouer & ouer, and lay vpon *Clinias*.

Which *Damætas* (who was gotten vp) perceiuing, drew out his sword, prying which way he might best come to kil *Clinias* behind. But the horse that lay vpon him, kept such a pawing with his feet, that *Damætas* durst not approch, but verie leysurely; so as the horse (being lustie) gat vp, and withall fell to strike, and leape, that *Damætas* started vp a good way, and gaue *Clinias* time to rise, but so bruised in bodie, and broken in hart, that he meant to yeeld himselfe to mercie: and with that intent drew out his sworde, entending when he came nearer, to present the pommell of it to *Damætas*. But *Damætas*, when he sawe him come with his sword drawne, nothing conceiuing of any such intent, went backe as fast as his backe and heeles woulde leade him. But as *Clinias* founde that, he beganne to thinke a possibilitie in the victorie, and therefore followed with the cruell haste of a preuailing cowarde; laying vpon *Damætas*, who did nothing but crie out to him to holde his hand:

sometimes that he was dead, sometimes that he woulde complaine to *Basilius*: but still bare the blowes vngratefully, going backe, till at length he came into the water with one of his feete.

But then a new feare of drowning tooke him, so that not daring to go back, nor 9
to deliberat (the blows stil so lighted on him) nor to yeelde (because of the cruell
threatnings of *Clinias*) feare being come to the extremitie, fell to a madnesse of
despaire: so that (winking as hard as euer he could) he began to deale some blowes,
and his arme (being used to a flaile in his youth) laid the[m] on so thick,
that *Clinias* now began with lame[n]table eies to see his owne blood come out in many
places, and before he had lost halfe an ounce, finding in himselfe that he fainted, cried
out aloud to *Damætas* that he yeilded. Throw away thy sword then (said *Damætas*)
and I will saue thee; but still laying on, as fast as he could. *Clinias* straight obeyed,
and humbly craued mercie, telling him, his sworde was gone. Then *Damætas* first
opened his eyes, and seeing him indeed vnweaponed, made him stande a good way of
from it; and then willed him to lie downe vpon the earth as flat as he
could. *Clinias* obeyed; and *Damætas* (who neuer could thinke himselfe safe,
till *Clinias* were deade) began to thinke with himselfe, that if he strake at him with his
sworde, if he did not kill him at the first blowe, that then *Clinias* might happe to arise,
and reuenge himselfe. Therefore he thought best to kneele downe vpon him, and with
a great whittle he had (hauing disarmed his heade) to cut his throate, which he had
vsed so with Calues, as he had no small dexteritie in it. But while he sought for his
Knife, which vnder his armour he coulde not well finde out, and that *Clinias* lay with
so sheepish a countenaunce, as if he would haue beene glad to haue his throate cut for
feare of more paine, the Iudges came in, and tooke v from off him, telling him he did
against the lawe of Armes, hauing promised life, if he threwe away his
sworde. *Damætas* was loath to consent, till they sware, they woulde not suffer him to
fight any more, when he was vp: and then more forced, then perswaded, he let him
rise, crowing ouer him, and warning him to take heede how he dealt any more with
any that came of his fathers kinred. But thus this combate of cowardes being
finished, *Damætas* was with much mirth and melodie receiued into the campe as
victorious, neuer a Page there failing to waite vpon this Triumph.

CHAP. 14.

1 *Clinias a slie traitour.* 2 *Artesia his malcontent accomplice.*
3 *Zelmanes passions.* 4 *Her practise with Artesia.* 5 *The
complot reuealed to the disliking sisters,* 6 *bewrayed by
Pamela.*



Vt *Clinias*, though he wanted hart to preuent shame, yet he wanted not witte to feele shame; not so much repining at it for the abhorring of shame, 1 as for the discommodities, that to them that are shamed, ensue. For well he deemed, it would be a great barre to practize, and a pulling on of iniuries, when men needed not care, how they vsed him. Insomuch, that *Clinias* (finding himselfe the scorning-stocke of euery companie) fell with repining to hate the cause thereof; & hate in a cowards hart, could set it selfe no other limites, but death. Which purpose was well egged on by representing vnto himselfe, what daunger he lately was in; which still kept no lesse ougly figure in his minde, then when it was present: and quickly (euen in his dissembling countenance) might be discerned a concealed grudge. For though he forced in himselfe a farre more diligent officiousnesse towarde *Amphialus*, then euer before, yet a leering eye vpon the one side at him, a countenance still framed to smiling before him (how little cause soeuer there was of smiling) and grombling behind him, at any of his commaundements, with an vncertaine manner of behaiour: his words comming out, though full of flatterie, yet slowly, and hoarcely pronounced, might well haue blazed, what armes his false hart bare. But despised, because of his cowardlinesse, and not marked, because despised, he had the freer scope of practize. Which he did the more desperately enter into, because the dayly dangers *Amphialus* did submit himselfe into, made *Clinias* assuredly looke for his ouerthrow, and for his owne consequently, if he did not redeme his former treason to *Basilus*, with a more treasonable falshood toward *Amphialus*.

His chiefe care therefore was, to find out among all sorts of *Amphialus* whom 2 either like feare, tediousnes of the siege, or disco[n]tentment of some vnsatisfied ambitio[n] would make apt to dig in the same mine that he did: & some alredy of welthy weary folks, & unconsta[n]t youths (who had not found such sudden successe as they had promised the[m]selues) he had made stoupe to the lure. But of none he made so good account as of *Artesia*, sister to the late slain *Ismenus*, & the chiefe of six maids, who had trained out the Princesses to their banket of miserie: so much did the sharpnes of her wit counteruaile (as he thought) any other defects of her sex: for she had vndertaken that dangerous practise by the persuasion of *Cecropia*; who assured her that the two princesses should be made away; & the[n] *Amphialus* wold marry her: which she was the apter to beleue, by some false persuasio[n] her glas had giue[n] her of her own inco[m]parable excellencies, & by the great fauor she knew he bare to her brother *Ismenus*, which (like a self-flattering woma[n]) she conceiued was done for her sake. But when she had atchieued her attempt, & that she found the Princesses were so far fro[m] their intended death, as that the one of them was like to be her souereigne, & that neither her seruice had woon of *Amphialus* much more the ordinary fauor, nor her ouer-large offring herself to a mind otherwise owed, had obtained a

loked-for acceptatio[n]; disdain to be disdained spite of a frustrate hope, & percha[n]ce vnquenched lust-growne rage, made her vnquiet thoughts find no other rest, but malice: which was increased by the death of her brother, who[m] she iudged neither succoured against *Philanax*, nor reueged vpon *Philanax*. But all these coles were wel blowne by the co[m]pany she especially kept with *Zelmane*, all this time of her imprisonment. For finding her presence vncheerfull to the mourning *Philoclea*, and contemned of the hie harted *Pamela*, she spent her time most with *Zelmane*. Who though at the first hardly broking the instrument of their miserie, learning cunning in the schoole of aduersitie, in time framed her selfe to yeeld her acceptable intertainment.

For *Zelmane*, when she had by that vnexpected mischief her bodie imprisoned, 3
her valure ouermastred, her wit beguiled, her desires barred, her loue eclipsed; assured of euill, fearing worse, able to knowe *Philocleas* misfortune, and not able to succour her, she was a great while, before the greatnes of her hart could descend to sorow, but rather rose boyling vp in spight and disdain; Reason hardly making Courage beleue, that it was distressed: but as if the walles would be afraid of her, so woulde her lookes shoote out threatning vpon them. But the fetters of seruitude (growing heauier with wearing) made her feele her case, and the little preuailing of repining: and then grieffe gat seate in her softned minde, making sweetnesse of passed comfortes by due title claime teares of present discomfort: and since her fortune made her able to helpe as litle as any bodie, yet to be able to waile as much as any bodie; solitarie Sorowe, with a continuall circle in her selfe, going out at her owne mouth, to come in againe at her owne eares. Then was the name of *Philoclea* graued in the glas windowes, and by the foolish idolatrie of affection, no sooner written, the[n] adored; & no sooner adored, the[n] pitied: al the wo[n]ted praises (she was wont to giue vnto her) being now but figures of rethorick to amplifie the iniuries of misfortune; against which being alone, she woulde often make inuectiue declamations, methodized onely by raging sorow.

But whe[n] *Artesia* did insinuat herself into her acquaintance, she gaue the 4
gouernment of her courage to wit, & was co[n]tent to familiarize herselfe with her: so much the rather, as that she perceiued in her certaine flawes of il-co[n]cealed discontentme[n]t. Insomuch that whe[n] *Zelmane* would sweete her mouth with the praises of the sisters, especially setting forth their noble gratefulness, in neuer forgetting wel-intended seruices, & inuoking the iustice of the gods, not to suffer such treasures to be wro[n]g-fully hidde[n], & somtimes with a kind vnkindnes, charging *Artesia* that she had ben abused to abuse so worthy perso[n]s: *Artesia* (though falsly) wold protest, that she had bin beguiled in it, neuer meaning other matter the recreatio[n]: & yet withall (by alleaging how vngratefully she was dealt with) it was easie to be seene, it was the vnrewarding, & not the euil employing her seruice, which grieued her. But *Zelmane* (using her own bias to bowle neer the mistresse of her owne thoughtes) was content to lende her beleefe, and

withall, to magnifie her desert, if willingly she would deliuer, whom vnwillingly she had imprisoned; leauing no argument which might tickle ambition, or flatter reuenge. So that *Artesia*, (pusht forward by *Clinias*, and drawne onward by *Zelmane*) bound her selfe to that practise; wherin *Zelmane* (for her part) desired no more, but to haue armour and weapons brought into her chamber, not doubting, therewith to perfourm any thing, how impossible soeuer, which longing Loue can perswade, and inuincible Valour dare promise.

But *Clinias* (whose faith could neuer comprehend the misteries of Courage) 5
perswaded *Artesia*, while he by corruptio[n] had drawn the guard of one gate, to open it (when he would appoint the time) to theemie: that she should impoysen *Amphialus*, which she might the easier do, because she her selfe had vsed to make the broaths, when *Amphialus* (either wearied or wounded) did vse such diet. And al things alreedy were ready to be put in executio[n], when they thought best to breake the matter with the two excellent sisters, not doubting of their co[n]sent in a thing so behoofefull to the[m]selues: their reasons being, that the Princesses knowing their seruice, might be sure to preserue them from the fury of the entring souldiers: whereof *Clinias* (euen so) could scarcely be sufficiently certaine: and withall, making them priuie to their action, to binde them afterwarde to acknowledg gratefulnes towards them. They went therefore at one time, when they knewe them to be alone, *Clinias* to *Philoclea*, and *Artesia* to *Pamela*: and *Clinias*, with no fewe words, did set forth what an exploite was intended for her seruice. But *Philoclea* (in whose cleere minde treason could finde no hiding place) told him, that she would be glad, if he could perswade her cosin to deliuer her, and that she would neuer forgett his Seruice therin: but that she desired him to lay down any such way of mischiefe, for that (for her part) she would rather yeeld to perpetuall imprisonment, then consent to the destroying her cosin, who (she knewe) loued her, though wronged her. This vnlooked-for answer amazed *Clinias*, so that he had no other remedie in his minde, but to kneele downe to *Philoclea*, and beseech her to keep it secrete, considering that the intention was for her seruice: and vowing (since she misliked it) to proceed no further therin. She comforted him with promise of silence, which she perfourmed.

But that little auayled: for *Artesia* hauing in like sort opened this deuce 6
to *Pamela*, she (in whose mind Vertue gouerned with the scepter of Knowledge) hating so horrible a wickednes, and streight iudging what was fitte to doo, Wicked woman (said she) whose vnrepenting harte can find no way to amend treason, but by treason: nowe the time is come, that thy wicked wiles haue caught thy selfe in thine owne nette: as for me, let the Gods dispose of me as shall please them; but sure it shall be no such way, nor way-leader, by which I will come to libertie. This she spake something with a lowder voice then she was woont to vse, so as *Cecropia* heard the noise; who was (sooner then *Artesia* imagined she would) come vp, to bring *Pamela* to a window, where she might see a notable skirmish happened in the Campe, as she thought, among themselues: and being a cunning fisher in troubled

waters, streight found by their voices and gestures, there was some matter of consequence, which she desired *Pamela* to tell her. Aske of her (said *Pamela*) & learne to know, that who do falshoode to their superiours, teach falshoode to their inferiours. More she would not say. But *Cecropia* taking away the each-way guiltie *Artesia*, with feare of torture, gat of her the whole practise: so as *Zelmane* was the more closely imprisoned, and *Clinias* (with the rest of his corrupted mates, according to their merites) executed: For, as for *Artesia*, she was but lockt vp in her chamber, *Amphialus* not consenting (for the loue he bare *Ismenus*) that further punishment should be laide vpon her.

CHAP. 15.

1 *Proude Anaxius breaketh through the besiegers.* 2 *His welcome by Amphialus.* 3 *The Musicke,* 4 *and loue-song made to Philoclea.* 5 *The sallie of Anaxius and his on the Basilians,* 6 *backt by Amphialus,* 7 *beaten backe by three vnknownen Knightes.* 8 *The Retraite of both sides.*



Vt the noyse they hearde in the campe, was occasioned by the famous Prince

Anaxius, nephew to the Giant *Euardes* whom *Pyrocles* slew: A Prince, of body excedingly strong; in armes so skilfull and fortunate, as no man was thought to excel him; of courage that knew not how to feare: partes worthie praise, if they had not bene guyded by pride, and followed by vniustice. For, by a strange composition of minde, there was no man more tenderly sensible in any thing offred to himselfe, which in the farthest-fette construction, might be wrested to the name of wro[n]g; no man, that in his own actions could worse distinguish betwene Valour and Violence: So proud, as he could not abstaine from a *Thraso*-like boasting, and yet (so vnluckie a lodging his vertues had gotten) he would neuer boast more then he would accomplish: falsly accounting an vnflexible anger, a courageous constancie: esteeming feare, and astonishment, righter causes of admiration, then Loue and Honour. This man had foure sundrie times fought with *Amphialus*, but Mars had bene so vnpartiall an arbiter, that neither side gate aduantage of the other. But in the end it hapned, that *Anaxius* found *Amphialus* (vnknownen) in a great danger, and saued his life: wherupon (louing his owne benefite) began to fauour him, so much the more, as, thinking so well of himselfe, he coulde not choose but like him, whom he founde a match for himselfe: which at last grewe to as much friendship towards him, as could

by a proud harte be conceiued. So as in this trauaile (seeking *Pyrocles* to be reuenged of his vnckles death) hearing of this siege, neuer taking paines to examine the quarrell (like a man whose will was his God, and his hand his lawe) taking with him his two brothers (men accounted little inferiour to him selfe in martiall matters) and two hundred chosen horsemen (with whome he thought him selfe able to conquere the world) yet commaunding the rest of his forces to follow, he him selfe vpon such an vnexpected suddainnesse entred in vpon the backe of *Basilus*, that many with great vnkindnesse tooke their death, not knowing why, nor how they were so murdred. There, if euer, did he make knowne the wonderfulnes of his force. But the valiant, & faithfull *Philanax*, with

wel gouerned speed made such head against him, as would haue shewed, how
soone Courage falles in the ditch which hath not the eie of Wisdome: but
that *Amphialus* at the same time issued out, & winning with an abondance of
courage one of the sconses, which *Basilus* had builded, made waie for his
friend *Anaxius* with great losse of both sides, but especially of the *Basilians*; such
notable monuments had those two swords especially lefte of their Maisters
redoubted worthynesse. 2

There with the respect fit to his estate, the honour dewe to his worthynesse, and the kindnesse which accompanies friendship (made fast by enterchaunged benefites) did *Amphialus* enforce him selfe (as much as in a besieged towne he could) to make *Anaxius* know, that his succour was not so needefull, as his presence gratefull. For causing the streates and houses of the towne to witnes his welcome (making both souldiers and Magistrates in their countenaunces to shewe their gladnesse of him) he led him to his mother, whom he besought to entertain him with no lesse loue and kindnesse, then as one, who once had saued her sonnes life, and now came to saue both life and honour. Tush (said *Anaxius*, speaking alowde, looking vpon his brothers) I am onely sorie there are not halfe a dozen Kinges more about you: that what *Anaxius* can doo, might be the better manifested. His brothers smiled, as though he had ouer-modestly spoken farre vnderneath the pitch of his power. Then was he disarmed at the earnest request of *Amphialus*: for *Anaxius* boiled with desire to issue out vpon the enemies, perswading himselfe, that the Sunne shoulde not be sette, before he had ouerthrowne them. And hauing reposed himselfe, *Amphialus* asked him, whether he woulde visite the yong Princesses. But *Anaxius* whispered him in the eare: In trueth (saide he) deare friende *Amphialus*, though I am none of those, that loue to speake of themselues, I neuer came yet in companie of Ladies, but that they fell in loue with me. And I that in my hart scorne them as a peeuish paltrie sexe, not woorthie to communicate with my vertues, would not do you the wrong: since (as I heare) you doo debase your selfe so much as to affect them. The curteous *Amphialus* could haue beene angrie with him for those wordes; but knowing his humour, suffered him to daunce to his owne musicke: and gaue himselfe to entertaine both him and his brothers, with as cheerefull a maner, as coulde issue from

a minde whome vnluckie loue had filled with melancholie. For to *Anaxius* he yeilded the direction of all. He gaue the watchwoorde, and if any grace were graunted, the meanes were to be made to *Anaxius*. And that night when supper was ended, wherein *Amphialus* woulde needes himselfe waite vpon him, he caused in Boates vpon the Lake an excellent musicke to be ordered: which, though *Anaxius* might conceiue was for his honour, yet indeede he was but the Bricke-wall to conuey it to the eares of the beloued *Philoclea*.

The musicke was of Cornets, whereof one aunswearing the other, with a sweete emulation, striuing for the glorie of musicke, and striking vpon the smooth face of the quiet Lake, was then deliuered vp to the castell walles, which with a proude reuerberation, spreading it into the aire; it seemed before the harmonic came to the eare, that it had enriched it selfe in trauaile, the nature of those places adding melodie to that melodious instrument. And when a while that instrument had made a braue proclamation to all vnpossessed mindes of attention, an excellent consort streight followed of fiue Violles, and as manie voyces; which all being but Oratours of their maisters passions, bestowed this song vpon her, that thought vpon another matter.

4

T*He Fire to see my woes for anger burneth:
The Aire in raine for my affliction weepeth:
The Sea to ebbe for grieffe his flowing turneth:
The Earth with pitie dull his center turneth.*

*Fame is with wonder blazed:
Time runnes away for sorrow:
Place standeth still amazed.
To see my night of ils, which hath no morrowe.
Alas all onely she no pitie taketh
To know my miseries, but chaste and cruell
My fall her glory maketh;
Yet still her eyes giue to my flames their fuell.*

*Fire, burne me quite till sense of burning leaue me'
Aire, let me drawe thy breath no more in anguish:
Sea, drown'd in thee of tedious life bereaue me:
Earth, take this earth wherein my spirits languish.
Fame, say I was not borne:
Time, hast my dying hower:
Place, see my graue vptorne:
Fire, aire, sea, earth, fame, time, place show your power.
Alas from all their helpe I am exiled:
For hers am I, and Death feares her displeasure.*

*Fie Death thou art beguiled:
Though I be hers, she sets by me no treasure,*

But *Anaxius* (seeming a weary before it was ended) told *Amphialus*, that for his part he liked no

musick, but the neighing of horses, the sound of trumpets, and the cries of yeelding persons: and therefore desired, that the next morning they shoulde issue vpon the same place, where they had entred that day, not doubting to make them quickly a wearie of being the besiegers of *Anaxius*. *Amphialus*, who had no whit lesse courage, though nothing blowne vp with pride, willingly condescended: and so the next morning (giuing false alarum to the other side of the campe) *Amphialus* at *Anaxius* earnest request, staying within the towne to see it garded, *Anaxius* and his brethren, *Lycurgus*, and *Zoilus*, sallied out with the best chosen men. But *Basilius* (hauing bene the last day somewhat vnprouided) now had better fortified the ouerthrowne sconse; and so well had prepared euery thing for defence, that it was impossible for any valour from within, to preuaile. Yet things were perfourmed by *Anaxius* beyonde the credite of the credulous. For thrise (valiantly followed by his brothers) did he set vp his banner vpon the rampire of the enemy: though thrise againe by the multitude, and aduantage of the place, but especially by the comming of three valiant Knights, he were driuen downe againe. Nu[m]bers there were that day, whose deathes and ouerthrowes were executed by the well knowne sworde of *Anaxius*: but the rest, by the length of time and iniurie of Historians, haue bene wrapped vp in darke forgetfulnesse: onely *Tressennius* is spoken of, because when all abandoned the place, hee onely made head to *Anaxius*; till hauing lost one of his legs, yet not lost the harte of fighting, *Lycurgus* (second brother to *Anaxius*) cruellie murdered him; *Anaxius* him selfe disdayning any further to deale with him.

But so farre had *Anaxius* at the thirde time preuayled, that now the *Basilians* began to let their

courage descende to their feete, *Basilius*, and *Philanax* in vaine striuing, with reuerence of authoritie to bridle the flight of astonishment, and to teach Feare discretion: so that *Amphialus*, seeing Victorie shew such a flattering countenance to him, came out with all his force; hoping that day to end the siege.

But that fancie altered quicklie by the suddaine comming to the other side of three Knights, whereof the one was in white armour, the other in greene, and the thirde by his blacke armour, and deuce streight knowne to be the notable Knight, who the first day had giuen Fortune so short a stoppe with his notable deedes, and fighting hand to hand with the deemed inuincible *Amphialus*. For the very cowardes no sooner saw him, but as borrowing some of his spirit, they went like yong Eagles to the pray, vnder the wing of their damme. For the three aduenturers, not content to keepe them

from their rampier, leapt downe among them, and entered into a braue combate with the three valiaunt brothers. But to whether side Fortune woulde haue beene partiall, could not be determind. For the *Basilians*, lightened with the beames of these straungers valure; followed so thicke, that the *Amphialians* were glad with some haste to retire to the walles warde: though *Anaxius* neither reason, teare, nor example, coulde make him asswage the furie of his fight: vntill one of the *Basilians* (vnwoorthie to haue his name registred, since he did it cowardly, sidewarde, when he least looked that way) almost cut off one of his legges: so as he fell downe, blaspheming heauen, that all the influences thereof had power to ouerthrow him; and there death would haue seized of his proude hart, but that *Amphialus* tooke in hand the blacke knight, while some of his souldiers conueied away *Anaxius*, so requiting life for life vnto him.

And for the loue and example of *Amphialus*, the fight began to enter into a new fitte of heate: when *Basilius* (that thought inough to be done for that day) 3
caused retraite to be sounded; fearing least his men following ouer-hastily, [8]
might bee the losse of those excellent Knights whom he desired to knowe. The "
Knights as soone as they heard the retraite (though they were eagerly set, "
knowing that courage without discipline is nearer beastlinesse then manhood)
drew backe their swords, though hungrie of more blood: especially the blacke Knight,
who, knowing *Amphialus*, could not refraine to tell him, that this was the second time
he escaped out of his hands, but that he would shortly bring him a bill of all the
former accounts. *Amphialus* seing it fit to retire also (most of his people being hurt,
both in bodies and harts) withdrew himselfe, with so well seated a resolution, that it
was as farre from anger, as from dismayednesse; answering no other to the blacke
Knights threats, but that when he brought him his account, he should finde a good
pay-master.

CHAP. 16.

1 *The vnknowne Knights will not be knowne.* 2 *The Knight of the Tombes shew,* 3 *and challenge accepted by Amphialus.* 4 *Their fight, with the death of the Tombe-knight.* 5 *Who that Knight was.* 6 *The dying speeches, and* 7 *the lamentable funerals.*



The fight being ceased, and ech side withdrawne within their strengthes, *Basilus* sent *Philanax* to entertaine the straunge Knights, and to bring them vnto him, that he might acknowledge what honour was due to their vertue. But they excused themselues, desiring to be knowne first by their deedes, before their names should accuse their vnworthinesse: and though the other replied according as they deserued, yet (finding that vnwelcome curtesie is a degree of iniury) he suffered them to retire themselues to a tent of their owne without the campe, where they kept themselues secrete: *Philanax* himselve being called away to another straunge Knight; straunge not onely by the vnlookedfornesse of his comming, but by the straunge maner of his comming.

For he had before him foure damosels, and so many behind him, all vpon palfreys, & all appareled in mourning weedes; ech of them seruants of ech side, with like lieries of sorrow. Himselve in an armour, all painted ouer with such a cunning of shadow, that it represented a gaping sepulchre, the furniture of his horse was all of Cypresse braunches; wherwith in olde time they were woont to dresse graues. His Bases (which he ware so long, as they came almost to his ankle) were imbrodered onely with blacke wormes, which seemed to crawle vp and downe, as readie alreadie to deuoure him. In his shielde for *Impresa*, he had a beautifull childe, but hauing two heades; whereof the one shewed, that it was alreadie dead: the other aliue, but in that case, necessarily looking for death. The word was, *No way to be rid from death, but by death.*

This Knight of the tombe (for so the souldiours termed him) sent to *Basilus*, to demaund leaue to send in a damosel into the towne, to cal out *Amphialus*, according as before time some others had done. Which being grated (as glad any would vndertake the charge, which no bodie else in that campe was knowne willing to do) the damosell went in, and hauing with tears sobbed out a braue challenge to *Amphialus*, from the Knight of the Tombe, *Amphialus*, honourably entertaining the gentlewoman, & desiring to know the Knights name (which the doolefull Gentlewoman would not discouer) accepted the challenge, onely desiring the Gentlewoman to say thus much to the strange Knight, from him; that if his minde were like to his title, there were more cause of affinitie, then enmitie betweene them. And therefore presently (according as he was woont) as soone as he perceyued the Knight of the Tombe, with his Damosels and Iudge, was come into the Iland, he also went ouer in accustomed maner: and yet for the curtesie of his nature, desired to speake with him.

But the Knight of the Tombe, with silence, and drawing his horse backe, shewed no will to heare, nor speake: but with Launce on thigh, made him knowe, it was fitte for him to go to the other ende of the Career, whence wayting the starte of

the unknowne Knight, he likewise made his spurres claime haste of his horse. But when his staffe was in his rest, comming downe to meete with the Knight, nowe verie neere him, he perceyued the Knight had mist his rest: wherefore the curteous *Amphialus* woulde not let his Launce descende, but with a gallant grace, ranne ouer the heade of his there-in friendedemie: and hauing stopped his horse, and with the turning of him, blessed his sight with the Windowe where he thought *Philoclea* might stand, he perceyued the Knight had lighted from his horse, and throwne away his staffe, angrie with his misfortune, as hauing mist his rest, and drawne his sworde to make that supply his fellowes fault. He also lighted, and drew his sworde,

esteeming victorie by aduantage, rather robbed then purchased: and so the other comming eagerly toward him, he with his shield out, and sword aloft, with more brauerie then anger, drew vnto him; and straight made their swords speake for them a pretie while with equall fearcenes. But *Amphialus* (to whom the earth brought forth few matches) hauing both much more skill to choose the places, and more force to worke vpon the chosen, had already made many windowes in his armour for death to come in at; whe[n] (the noblenes of his nature abhorring to make the punishment ouergoe the offence) he slept a little backe, and withal, Sir Knight (said he) you may easely see, that it pleaseth God to fauour my cause; employ your valour against them that wish you hurte: for my part, I haue not deserued hate of you. Thou lyst false traitor, saide the other, with an angrie, but weake voyce. But *Amphialus*, in whome abused kindnesse became spitefull rage, Ah barbarous wretch (said hee) onely couragious in discourtesie; thou shalt soone see whether thy toonge hath betrayed thy harte, or no: and with that, redoubling his blowes, gaue him, a great wounde vpon his necke, and closing with him ouerthrew him, and with the fall thrust him mortally into the bodie: and with that went to pull off his helmet, with intention to make him giue himselfe the lye, for hauing so saide, or to cut off his head.

But the head-peece was no sooner off, but that there fell about the shoulders of the ouercome Knight the treasure of faire golden haire, which with the face (soone knowne by the badge of excellencie) witnessed that it was *Parthenia*, the vnfortunatellie vertuous wife of *Argalus*: her beautie then euen in despite of the passed sorrow, or comming death, assuring all beholders, that it was nothing short of perfection. For her exceeding faire eyes, hauing with continuall weeping gotten a little rednesse about them; her roundy sweetly swelling lippes a little trembling, as though they kissed their neighbour death; in her cheekes the whitenesse striuing by little and little to get vpon the rosinesse of them; her necke, a necke indeed of Alablaster, displaying the wounde, which with most daintie blood laboured to drowne his owne beauties; so as here was a riuer of purest redde, there an Iland of perfittest white, each giuing lustre to the other; with the sweete countena[n]ce (God-knowes) full of an vnaffected languishing: though these thinges to a grosly conceauing sense might seeme disgraces; yet indeed were they but apparailing beautie in a new fashion, which

all looked-vpon thorough the spectacles of pittie, did eue[n] encrease the lynes of her naturall fairenes, so as *Amphialus* was astonished with grieffe, compassion, & shame, detesting his fortune, that made him vnfortunate in victory.

Therefore, putting off his headpeece & gauntlet; kneeling down vnto her, & with teares testifying his sorow, he offred his (by

himselpe accursed) hands to helpe her: protesting his life and power to be readie 6
to doo her honour. But *Parthenia* (who had inward messingers of the desired
deathes approach) looking vpon him, and streight turning away her feeble sight, as
from a delightlesse obiect, drawing out her wordes, which her breath (loath to parte
from so sweete a bodie) did faintly deliuer, Sir (saide she) I pray you (if prayers haue
place in enemies) to let my maides take my body vntouched by you: the onely honour
I now desire by your meanes, is, that I haue no honour of you. *Argalus* made no such
bargaine with you, that the hands which killed him, shoulde helpe me. I haue of them
(and I doo not onely pardon you, but thanke you for it) the seruice which I desired.
There rests nothing now, but that I go liue with him, since whose death I haue done
nothing but die. Then pawsing, and a little fainting, and againe comming to herselfe,
O sweete life, welcome (saide she) nowe feele I the bandes vntied of the cruell death,
which so long hath helde me. And O life, O death, aunswere for me, that my thoughts
haue not so much as in a dreame tasted any comfort; since they were deprived
of *Argalus*. I come, my *Argalus*, I come: And, O God hide my faultes in thy mercies,
and graunt (as I feele thou doost graunt) that in thy eternall loue, we may loue eche
other eternally. And this O Lorde: But there *Atropos* cut off her sentence: for with
that, casting vp both eyes and hands to the skies, the noble soule departed (one might
well assure himselpe) to heauen, which left the bodie in so heauenly a demeanure.

But *Amphialus* (with a hart oppressed with grieffe, because of her request)
withdrew himselfe, but the Iudges, as full of pitie, had bene al this while disarming
her, and her gentlewomen with lamentable cries, laboring to stanch the remediles
wounds: & a while she was dead before they perceiued it; death being able to diuide
the soul, but not the beauty fro[m] that body. But whe[n] the infallible tokens of death
assured the[m] of their losse, one of the women would haue killed her selfe, but that
the squire of *Amphialus* perceauing it, by force held her. Others that had as strong
passions, though weaker resolution, fell to cast dust vpon their heads, to teare their
garments: all falling vpon, and crying vpon their sweet mistres; as if their cries could
perswade the soul to leaue the celestiall happines, to come again into the eleme[n]ts of
sorrow: one time calling to remembrance her vertue, chastnes, sweetnes, goodnes to
them: another time accusing themsel[e]s, that they had obeyed her, they hauing bene
deceaued by her words, who assured the, that it was reuealed vnto her, that she should
haue her harts desire in the battaile against *Amphialus*, which they wrongly
vnderstood. Then kissing her cold hands and feet, wearie of the world, since she was
gone, who was their world. The very heauens semed, with a cloudie countenance, to
loue at the losse, and Fame it selfe (though by nature glad to tell rare accidents, yet)

could not choose but deliuer it in lamentable accents, & in such sort went it quickly all ouer the Campe: &, as if the aire had bene infected with sorow, no hart was so hard, but was subiect to that contagion; the rarenes of the accident, matching together (the rarely matched together) pittie with admiration, *Basilius* himselfe came foorth, and brought foorth the faire *Gynecia* with him, who was gone into the campe vnder colour of visiting her husband, and hearing of her daughters: but indeed *Zelmane* was the Saint, to which her pilgrimage was entended: cursing, enuying, blessing, and in her harte kissing the walles which imprisoned her. But both they with *Philanax*, and the rest of the principall Nobilitie, went out, to make Honour triumph ouer Death, conueying that excellent body (wherto *Basilius* himself would needes bend his shoulder) to a church a mile from the campe, where the valiant *Argalus* lay intombed; recommending to that sepulchre, the blessed reliques of faithfull and vertuous Loue: giuing order for the making of marble images, to represent them, & each way enriching the tombe. Vpon which, *Basilius* himself caused this Epitaphe to be written.

[blank box in source text]

CHAP. 17.

1 *The remorse of Amphialus for his last deede, and lasting destinie.* 2 *His reuerent respect in loue.* 3 *His mothers ghostly counsell to a rape.*



Then with eyes full of teares, and mouthes full of her prayes, returned they to the campe, with more and more hate against *Amphialus*: who (poore Gentleman) had therefore greater portion of woe, then any of them. For that courteous harte, which would haue grieued but to haue heard the like aduenture, was rent with remembring himselfe to be the author: so that his wisdom could not so farre temper his passion, but that he tooke his sword, counted the best in the world (which with much bloud he had once conquered of a mightie Giant) and brake it into many peeces (which afterwarde he had good cause to repent) saying, that neither it was worthie to serue the noble exercise of chivalrie, nor any other worthie to feel that sword, which had stroken so excellent a Ladie: & withall, banishing all cheerfulness of his countenance, he returned home. Where he gate him to his bed, not so much to rest his restles minde, as to auoyd all companie, the sight whereof was tedious vnto him. And then melancholic (onely riche in vnfortunate remembrances) brought before him all the mishappes, with which his life had wrestled: taking this, not onely as a confirming of the former, but a presage of following miserie; and to his harte (alredie ouercome by sorrowfulness) euen trifling misfortunes came, to fill vp the rolle of a grieued memorie, labouring onely his wittes to pearce farther and farther into his owne wretchednes. So all that night (in despite of darkenes) he held his eyes open; and the morning when the light began to restore to each body his colour, then with curtaines barde he himselfe from the enioying of it: neither willing to feele the comfort of the day, nor the ease of the night: vntill his mother (who neuer knew what loue meant, but onely to himward) came to his bed side, and beginning with louing earnestnes to lay a kinde chiding vpon him, because he would suffer the weakenesse of sorow, to conquire the strength of his vertues; he did with a broaken peecemeale speach (as if the tempest of passion vnorderly blewe out his words) remember the mishappes of his youth, the euils he had bene cause of, his rebelling with Shame, and that shame increased with shamefull accidents, the deaths of *Philoxenus* and *Parthenia*, wherein he found himselfe hated of the euer-ruling powers, but especially (and so especially, as the rest seemed nothing when he came to that) his fatall loue to *Philoclea*: to whom he had so gouerned himselfe, as one that could neither conquire, nor yeeld; being of the one side a slaue, and of the other a iaylor: and with all, almost vp-brayding vnto his mother the little successe of her large hoping promises, he in effect finding *Philoclea* nothing mollified, and now himselfe so cast downe, as he thought him vnworthy of better.

But his mother (as she had plentiful cause) making him see, that of his other griefes there was little or no faulte in him selfe, and therefore there ought to be little or no grieve in him; when she came to the head of the sore, indeed seeing that she could not patch vp her former promises (he taking a desperate deafnesse to all delaying hopes) she confest plainly, that she could preuaile nothing: but the faulte was his owne, who had marred the yong Girle by seeking to haue that by praier, which he

should haue taken by authoritie. That as it were an absurd cunning to make hie ladders to go in a plaine way; so was it an vntimely and foolish flattery, there to beseech, where one might commaund, puffing the vp[m] by being besought, with such a selfe-pride of superioritie, that it was not (forsooth) to be held out, but by a denial. O God (said *Amphialus*) how wel I thought my fortune would bring forth this end of your labors? assure your self, mother, I will sooner pull out these eies then they shal looke vpon the heauenly *Philoclea*, but as vpo[n] a heaue[n], whence they haue their light, & to which they are subiect, if they

will power down any influe[n]ces of co[m]fort, O happy I: but if by the sacrifice ..
of a faithfull hart, they will not be called vnto me, let me languish, & wither with ..
languishing, & grieue with withering, but neuer so much as repine with neuer so
much grieuing. Mother, ô Mother, lust may well be a tyrant, but true-loue where
it is indeed, it is a seruant. Accursed more then I am, may I be, if euer I did 3
approch her, but that I friezed as much in a fearefull reuerence, as I burned in a
vehement desire. Did euer mans eye looke thorough loue vpo[n] the maiesty of vertue,
shining through beauty, but that he became (as it wel became him) a captiue? & is it
the stile of a captiue, to write, *Our will and pleasure?*

Tush, tush sonne (said *Cecropia*) if you say you loue, but withall you feare; you
feare lest you should offend; offend? & how know you, that you should offend?
because she doth denie: denie? Now by my truth; if your sadnes would let me laugh, I
could laugh hartily, to see that yet you are ignorant, that No, is no negatiue in a
womans mouth. My sonne, beleue me, a woma[n], speaking of women: a louers
modesty among us is much more praised, then liked: or if we like it, so well we like
it,

that for marring of his modestie, he shall neuer proceed further. Each vertue hath ..
his time: if you com[m]and your souldier to march formost, & he for curtesie put
others before him, would you praise his modesty? loue is your Generall: he bids you
dare: & will *Amphialus* be a dastard? Let examples seru[e:] doo you
thinke *Theseus* should euer haue gotten *Antiope* with sighing, and crossing his armes?
he rauished her, and rauished her that was an *Amazon*, and therefore had gotten a
habite of stoutnes aboue the nature of a woman; but hauing rauished her, he got a
child of her. And I say no more, but that (they say) is not gotten without consent of
both sides. *Iole* had her owne father killed by *Hercules*, & her selfe rauished, by force
rauished, & yet ere long this rauished, and vnfathered Lady could sportfully put on the
Lions skin vpon her owne faire shoulders, & play with the clubbe with her owne
delicate hands: so easily had she pardoned the rauisher, that she could not but delight
in those weapo[n]s of rauishing. But aboue all, mark *Helen* daughter to *Iupiter*, who
could neuer brooke her manerly-wooing *Menelaus*, but disdained his humblenes, &
lothed his softnes. But so well she could like the force of enforcing *Paris*, that for him
she could abide what might be abidden. But what? *Menelaus* takes hart; he recouers
her by force; by force carries her home; by force inioies her; and she, who could neuer

like him for seruiceablenesse, euer after loued him for violence. For what can be more agreable, then vpon force to lay the fault of desire, and in one instant to ioyne a deare delight with a iust excuse? or rather the true cause is (pardon me ô woman-kinde for reuealing to mine owne sonne the truth of this mystery) we thinke there wants fire, where we find no sparkles at lest of furie. Truly I haue knowen a great Lady, long sought by most great, most wise, most beautifull, most valiant persons; neuer wonne; because they did ouer-suspiciously sollicite her: the same Ladie brought vnder by an other, inferiour to all them in all those qualities, onely because he could vse that imperious maisterfulnesse, which nature giues to men aboute women. For indeede (sonne, I confesse vnto you) in our very creatio[n] we are seruants: and who prayseth his seruaunts shall neuer be well obeyed: but as a ready horse streight yeeldes, when he findes one that will haue him yeelde; the same fals to boundes when he feeles a fearefull horseman. Awake thy spirits (good *Amphialus*) and assure thy selfe, that though she refuseth, she refuseth but to endeere the obtaining. If she weepe, and chide, and protest, before it be gotten, she can but weepe, and chide, and protest, when it is gotte. Thinke, she would not striue, but that she meanes to trie thy force: and my *Amphialus*, know thy selfe a man, and shew thy selfe a man: and (beleue me vpon my word) a woman is a woman.

CHAP. 18.

1 *The forsaken Knights defie.* 2 *Amphialus answereth.* 4 *The one 3 and others armour and impresse.* 5 *The issue of their quarrell.* 6 *Their heroicall monomachy on horse,* 7 *and foot.* 8 *Their breathings,* 9 *& reencounters.* 10 *Amphialus rescued by Anaxius brethren, the Blacke Knight by the greene and white.* 11 *The supply of both sides to cary away the breathles Knights.* 12 *The Blackknights grieues.*



*A*mphialus was aboute to answer her, when a Gentlema[n] of his made him vnderstande, that there was a messenger come, who had brought a letter vnto him from out of the campe: whom he presently calling for, tooke, opened, and read the letter, importing this.

To thee Amphialus of Arcadia, the forsaken Knight wisheth I health, and courage, that by my hand thou maiest receyue punishment for thy treason, according to thine owne offer, which wickedly occasioned, thou haste proudly begun, and accursedly mainteyned. I will presently (if thy minde faint thee not for his owne guiltinesse) meete thee in thy Iland, in such order, as hath by the former beene vsed: or if thou likest not the time, place, or weapon, I am ready to take thine owne reasonable chaise in any of

them; so as thou do perfourme the substaunce. Make me such answere as may shew that thou hast some taste of honour: and so I leaue thee, to liue till I meete thee.

Amphialus read it, and with a deepe sigh (according to the humour of inward affection) seemed euen to co[n]demne him selfe, as though indeed his reproches were true. But howsoeuer the dulnes of Melancholy would haue languishingly yeelded thereunto, his Courage (vnused to such iniuries) desired helpe of Anger to make him this answere.

2

F*O**rsaken Knight, though your namelesse challenge might carry in it selfe excuse for a man of my birth and estate, yet herein set your harte at rest, you shall not be forsaken. I will without stay answere you in the woonted manner, and come both armed in your foolish threatnings, and yet the more fearelesse, expecting weake blowes, where I finde so strong wordes. You shall not therefore long attende me in the Ilande, before prooffe teache you, that of my life you haue made your selfe too large a promise. In the meane time, Farewell.*

3

This being written, and deliuered, the messenger tolde him, that his Lord would (if he liked the same) bring two Knights with him to be his Patrons. Which *Amphialus* accepted, and withall shaking of (with resolution) his mothers importunate disswasions, he furnished him selfe for the fight: but not in his wonted furniture. For now (as if he would turne his inside outwarde) he would needes appeare all in blacke; his decking both for him selfe, and horse, being cut out into the fashion of very ragges: yet all so dainty, ioyned together with pretious stones, as it was a braue raggednesse, and a riche pouertie: and so cunningly had a workeman followed his humour in his armour, that he had giuen it a rustie shewe, and yet so, as any man might perceiue was by arte, and not negligence; carying at one instant a disgraced handsomnesse, and a new oldnes. In his shield he bare for his deuise, a Night, by an excellently painter, with a Sunne with a shadow, and vpon the shadow with a speech signifying, that it onely was *barrd from inioying that, whereof it had his life: or, From whose I am bannished*. In his creste he caried *Philocleas* kniues, the onely token of her forward fauour.

So past he ouer into the and, taking with him the two brothers of *Anaxius*; where he founde the forsaken Knight, attired in his owne luerie, as blacke, as sorrowe it selfe could see it selfe in the blackest glasse: his ornaments of the same hew, but formed in the figure of Rauens, which seemed to gape for carrion: onely his raynes were snakes, which finely wrapping themselues one within the other, their heads came together to the cheekes and bosses of the bit, where they might seeme to bite at the horse, and the horse (as he champte the bit) to bite at them; and that the white foame was ingendred by the poysonous furie of the combatt. His *Impresa* was a *Catoblepta* which so long

lies dead, as the Moone (whereto it hath so naturall a sympathie) wants her light. The worde signified that *The Moone wanted not the light, but the poore beast wanted the Moones light*. He had in his headpiece, a whippe, to witnesse a selfe-punishing repentaunce. Their very horses were cole-blacke too, not hauing so much as one starre to giue light to their night of blackenesse: so as one would haue thought they had bene the two sonnes of Sorrow, and were come thether to fight for their birth-right in that sorie inheritance.

Which aliance of passions so moued *Amphialus* (alredy tender-minded by the afflictions of Loue) that without staffe or sword drawne, he trotted fairely to the forsake[n] Knight, willing to haue put off his combat, to which his melancholy hart did (more then euer in like occasion) misgiue him: and therefore saluting him, Good Knight (said he) because we are men, and should knowe reason why we doo things; tell me the cause, that makes you thus eager to fight with me. Because I affirme (answered the forsaken Knight) that thou dost most rebellious iniurie to those Ladies, to whome all men owe seruice. You shall not fight with me (saide *Amphialus*) vpon that quarrell: for I confesse the same too: but it proceeds from their owne beauty, to inforce Loue to offer this force. I maintaine then (said the forsaken Knight) that thou art not worthy so to loue. And that confesse I too (saide *Amphialus*) since the world is not so richly blessed, as to bring forth any thing worthy thereof. But no more vnworthy then any other, since in none can be a more worthy loue. Yes, more vnworthy then my self (said the forsaken Knight) for though I deserue contempt, thou deseruest both contempt, and hatred. 5

But *Amphialus* by that thinking (though wrongly, each indeede mistaking other) that he was his riually, forgot all minde of reconciliation, and hauing all his thoughts bou[n]d vp in choler, neuer staying either iudge, tru[m]pet, or his owne lau[n]ce, drew out his sword, & saying, Thou lyest false villaine, vnto him; his words & blowes came so quick together, as the one seemed a lightning of the others thu[n]der. But he fou[n]d no barre grou[n]d of such seede: for it yeilded him his owne with such encrease, that though Reason and Amazement go rarely together, yet the most reasonable eies that saw it, founde reason to be amazed at the fury of their combat. Neuer game of death better plaid; neuer fury set it self forth in greater brauerie. The curteous *Vulcan*, whe[n] he wrought at his nowe more curteous wiues request, *Aeneas* an armour, made not his hammer beget a greater sounde; then the swordes of those noble Knights did; they needed no fire to their forge; for they made the fire to shine at the meeting of their swords, & armours; ech side fetching new spirit from the castle window, and careful of keeping their sight, it was a matter of greater consideration in their combat, then either the aduantage of Sun or winde: which Sunne and wind (if the astonished eies of the beholders were not by the astonishment deceiued) did both stand still to be beholders of this rare match. For neither could their amazed eies discerne motion in the Sunne, and no breath of wind stirred, as if either for feare it would not come amo[n]g such blows, or with delight 6

had his eies so busie, as it had forgot to open his mouth. This fight being the more cruell, since both Loue and Hatred conspired to sharpen their humours, that hard it was to say, whether Loue with one trumpet, or Hatred with another, gaue the lower alarum to their courages. Spite, rage, disdain, shame, reuenge, came waighting vpon Hatred: of the other side came with loue-longing Desire, both inuincible Hope, and fearelesse Despaire, with riuallike Iealousie, which (although brought vp within doores in the schoole of *Cupid*) would shewe themselues no lesse forward, then the other dustie bande of *Mars*, to make themselues notable in the notablenes of this combat. Of eyther side Confidence, vnacquainted with Losse, but assured trust to ouercome, and good experience howe to ouercome: nowe seconding their terrible blowes with cunning labouring the horses, to winne ground of the enimie; now vnlooked-for parting one from the other, to win aduantage by an aduantageous retourne. But force against force, skill against skill, so enterchangeably encountred, that it was not easie to determine, whether enterprising, or preuenting came former: both, sometimes at one instant, doing and suffring wrong, and choller no lesse rising of the doing, then of the suffring. But as the fire, the more fuell is put to it, the more hungrie still it is to deuoure more: so the more they strake, the more vnsatisfied they were with striking. Their verie armour by piecemeale fell away from them: and yet their flesh abode the wounds constantly, as though it were lesse sensible of smarte, then the senselesse armour: their blood in most places staying the blacke, as if it would giue a more liuely coulour of mourning, then blacke can doo. And so a long space they fought, while neither vertue, nor fortune seemed partiall of either side: which so tormented the vnquiet hart of *Amphialus*, that he resolved to see a quicke ende: and therefore with the violence of courage, adding strength to his blow, he strake in such wise vpon the side of the others heade, that his remembrance left that battered lodging: so as he was quite from himselfe, casting his armes abroade, and redie to fall downe; his sword likewise went out of his hande; but that being fast by a chaine to his arme, he could not loose. And *Amphialus* vsed the fauour of occasion, redoubling his blowes: but the horse (weary to be beaten, as well as the master) carried his master away, till he came vnto himselfe: But then who could haue seene him, might wel haue discerned shame in his cheekes, and reuenge in his eyes: so as setting his teeth together with rage, he came running vpon *Amphialus*, reaching out his arme, which had gathered vp the sword, meaning with that blow to haue cleaued *Amphialus* in two. But *Amphialus* seeing the blow comming, shunned it with nimble turning his horse aside; wherwith the forsaken Knight ouer-strake himself so, as almost he came downe with his owne strength. But the more hungrie he was of his purpose, the more he was bard the food of it: disdainng the resistance, both of force, and fortune, he returned vpon the spurre againe, and ranne with such violence vpon *Amphialus*, that his horse with the force of the shocke rose vp before, almost ouerturned: which *Amphialus* perceauing, with rayne and spurre put forth his horse; and withall gaue a mightie blow in the descent of his horse, vpon the shoulder of the

forsaken Knight; from whence sliding, it fell vpon the necke of his horse, so as horse and man fell to the ground: but he was scarce downe before he was vp on his feete againe, with braue gesture shewing rising of corage, in the falling of fortune.

But the curteous *Amphialus* excused himselfe, for hauing (against his will) kild 7 his horse. Excuse thy selfe for viler faults (answered the forsaken Knight) and vse this poore aduantage the best thou canst; for thou shalt quickly finde thou hast neede of more. Thy folly (said *Amphialus*) shall not make me forget my selfe: and therewith (trotting a little aside) alighted from his horse, because he would not haue fortune come to claime any part of the victory. Which curteous act would haue mollified the noble harte of the forsaken Knight, if any other had done it, besides the Iaylor of his mistres: but that was a sufficient defeazaunce for the firmest bonde of good nature; and therefore he was no sooner alighted, but that he ranne vnto him, re-entring into as cruel a fight, as eye did euer see, or thought could reasonably imagine; farre beyond the reach of weak words to be able to expresse it. For what they had done on horsebacke, was but as a morsell to keep their stomakes in appetite, in comparison of that, which now (being themselues) they did. Nor euer glutton by the cha[n]ge of daintie diet could be brought to fetch feeding (when he might haue bene satisfied before) with more earnestnes, then those (by the change of their maner of fight) fell cleane to a new fight, though any else would haue thought they had had their fill alredy. *Amphialus* being the taller man, for the most part stood with his right legge before; his shield at the vttermost length of his arme; his sword hie, but with the point toward his enemy. But whe[n] he strake, which came so thick, as if euery blow would striue to be foremost, his arme seemed still a postillion of death. The forsaken Knight shewed with like skil, vnlike gesture, keeping himselfe in continual motion, proportioning the distance betweene the[m] to any thing that *Amphialus* attempted: his eye guided his foote, and his foote conueighed his hand; and since nature had made him something the lower of the two, he made art follow, and not striue with nature: shunning rather the[n] warding his blowes; like a cun[n]ing mastiffe, who knowes the sharpnes of the horne, and stre[n]gth of the Bul; fights low to get his proper adua[n]tage; answering mightines with nimblenes, and yet at times imploying his wonderfull force, wherein he was seconde to none. In summe, the blowes were stronge, the thrusts thicke, and the auoydings cunning. But the forsaken Knight (that thought it a degree of being co[n]quered to be long in conquering) strake so mightie a blow, that he made *Amphialus* put knee to the ground, without any humblenes. But when he felt himselfe striken downe, and saw himselfe striken downe by his riual, then shame seemed one arme, and disdaine another; fury in his eyes, and reuenge in his hart; skill and force gaue place, & they tooke the place of skil & force: with so vnweariable a manner, that the forsaken Knight was also driuen to leaue the streame of cunning, and giue himselfe wholly to be guided by the storme of fury: there being in both (because hate would not suffer admiration) extreame disdaine to finde themselues so matched.

What (said *Amphialus* to himselfe) am I *Amphialus*, before whom so many 8
monsters & Gyants haue falne dead, when I onely sought causelesse aduentures?
and can one Knight now withstand me in the presence of *Philoclea*, and fighting
for *Philoclea*? or since I lost my liberty, haue I lost my courage? haue I gotten the hart
of a slaue, as well as the fortune? If an armie were against me in the sight
of *Philoclea*, could it resist me? O beast, one man resistes thee; thy ryuall resists thee:
or am I indeed *Amphialus*? haue not passions kild him, and wretched I (I know not
how) succeeded into his place? Of the other side the forsaken Knight with no lesse
spite, fel out with himself; Hast thou broke[n] (said he to himselfe) the
com[m]a[n]deme[n]t of thy only Princesse to come now into her prese[n]ce, & in her
prese[n]ce to proue thy self a coward? Doth *Asia* and *Ægypt* set vp Trophes vnto thee,
to be matched here by a traytor? O noble *Barsanes*, how shamed will thy soule be,
that he that slew thee, should be resisted by this one man? O incomparable *Pyrocles*,
more grieued wilt thou be with thy friends shame, the[n] with thine owne
imprisonment, when thou shalt know how
little I haue bene able to doo for the deliuerie of thee, and those heauenlie Princesses.
Am I worthie to be friend to the most valourous Prince that euer was entituled
valourous, and shewe my selfe so weake a wretch? No, shamed *Musidorus*, worthie
for nothing, but to keepe sheepe, get thee a sheephooke again, since thou canst vse a
sword no better.

Thus at times did they, now with one thought, then with another, sharpen their 9
ouer-sharpe humors; like the Lion, that beates himselfe with his owne taile, to
make himselfe the more angrie. These thoughtes indeede not staying, but whetting
their angrie swordes, which now had put on the apparraile of Crueltie: they bleeding
so abundantly, that euery bodie that sawe them, fainted for them, & yet they fainted
not in themselues: their smart being more sensible to others eyes, then to their owne
feeling: Wrath and Courage barring the common sense from bringing any message of
their case to the minde: Paine, Wearines, and Weakenes, not daring to make known
their case (though already in the limits of death) in the presence of so violent furie:
which filling the veines with rage, in stead of bloud, and making the minde minister
spirites to the bodie, a great while held out their fight, like an arrowe shotte vward by
the force of the bowe, though by his owne nature he would goe downward. The
forsaken Knight had the more wounds, but *Amphialus* had the soarer; which the other
(watchinge time and place) had coningly geuen vnto him. Who euer saw a well-mand
Galley fight with a tall ship, might make vnto himselfe some kind of comparison of
the difference of these two Knights; a better couple then which, the world could not
bragge of. *Amphialus* seemed to excell in strength, the forsaken Knight in nimblenes;
and yet did the ones strength excel in nimblenes, and the others nimblenes excell in
strength: but now, strength and nimblenes were both gone, and excesse of courage
only maintayned the fight. Three times had *Amphialus* with his mightie blowes driuen
the forsaken Knight to go staggering backwarde, but euery one of those times he

requited pain with smarte, and shame with repulse. And now, whether he had cause, or that ouer-much confidence (an ouer-forward scholer of vnconquered Courage) made him think he had cause, he bega[n] to persuade himself he had the adua[n]tage of the combat, though the aduantage he toke himselfe to haue, was onely that he should be the later to die: which hopes, Hate (as vnsecrete as Loue) could not conceale, but drawing himself a little back fro[m] him, brake out in these maner of words.

Ah *Amphialus* (said the forsaken knight) this third time thou shalt not escape 8
me, but thy death shall satisfie thy iniury, & my malice; and pay for the cruelty thou shewedst in killing the noble *Argalus*, & the fair *Parthenia*. In troth (said *Amphialus*) thou art the best knight that euer I fought withal, which would make me willing to graut thee thy life, if thy wit were as good as thy corage; that (besides other follies) layest that to my charge, which most against my will was committed. But whether my death be in thy power, or no, let this tel thee; And vpon the worde wayted a blow, which parted his shield into two peeces; & despising the weak resistance of his alredie broke[n] armor, made a great breach into his hart side, as if he would make a passage for his loue to get out at.

But paine rather seemed to increase life, then to weaken life in those 9
champions. For, the forsaken Knight comming in with his right leg, and making it guide the force of the blow, strake *Amphialus* vpon the bellie, so horrible a wou[n]d, that his guts came out withall. Which *Amphialus* perceauing (fearing death, onely because it should come with ouerthrow) he seemed to coniure all his strength for one moments seruice; and so, lifting vp his sword with both hands, hit the forsaken knight vpo[n] the head, a blow, wherewith his sword brake. But (as if it would do a notable seruice before it died) it preuayled so, euen in the instant of breaking, that the forsaken Knight fell to the ground, quite for that instant forgetting both loue and hatred: and *Amphialus* (finding him self also in such weaknes, as he loked for speedy death) glad of the victorie, though little hoping to enioy it, puld vp his visar, meaning with his dagger to giue him death; but in stead of death, he gaue him life: for, the aire so reuiued his spirits, that comming to himself, and seeing his present danger, with a life conquering death, he tooke *Amphialus* by the thigh, & together rose himselfe, and ouerturned him. But *Amphialus* scrambled vp againe, both now so weake indeede, as their motions rather seemed the afterdrops to a storme, then any matter of great furie.

But *Amphialus* might repent himselfe of his wilfull breaking his good sword: for, the forsaken Knight (hauing with the extremitie of iustly-conceiued hate, and the vnpitifulnes of his owne neere-threatning death, blotted out all complements of courtesie) let flie at him so cruelly, that though the blowes were weake, yet weaknes vpon a weakned subiect, proued such stre[n]gth, that *Amphialus* hauing attempted in vaine, once or twice to close with him, receauing wound vpo[n] wound, sent his whole burden to strike the earth with falling, since he could strike his foe no better in

standing: geuing no other tokens of himself, then as of a man euen ready to take his oath to be Deathes true seruant.

Which when the hardie brothers of *Anaxius* perceaued, not recking law of armes, nor vse of chiuallrie, they flew in to defende their friende, or reuenge their losse of him. But they were foorthwith encountred with the two braue co[m]panions of the forsaken Knight; whereof the one being all in greene, both armour and furniture, it seemed a pleasant garden, wherein grewe orange trees, which with their golden fruites, cunningly beaten in, & embrodered, greatly enriched the eye-pleasing colour of greene. In his shield was a sheep, feeding in a pleasant field, with this word, *Without feare, or enuie*. And therefore was called the Knight of the sheep. The other Knight was all in milke white, his attiring els, all cutte in starres, which made of cloath of siluer, and siluer spangles, each way seemed to cast many aspects. His deuice was the very Pole it selfe, about which many starres stirring, but the place it selfe lefte void. The word was, *The best place yet reserued*. But these foure Knights, inheriting the hate of their friends, began a fierce combat: the forsaken Knight himselfe not able to helpe his side, but was driuen to sit him downe, with the extreame faintnesse of his more & more fainting body. But those valiant couples seeking honour by dishonouring, and to build safety vpon ruine, gaue new appetites, to the almost gluttred eies of the beholders: and now bloud began to put sweat from the full possession of their outsides, no aduantage being yet to be seene; onely the Knight of the sheepe seeming most deliuer, and affecting most all that viewed him, when a company of souldiers sent by *Cecropia*, came out in boates to the Ilande: and all came running to the destruction of the three Knights, whereof the one was vtterly vnable to defend himselfe.

But then did the other two Knights shewe their wonderfull courage, and fidelitie. For turning backe to backe, and bothe bestriding the blacke forsaken Knight (who had fainted so long till he had lost the feeling of faintnesse) they helde playe against the rest, though the two brothers vnknightly helped them; till *Philanax* (who watchfully attended such traiterous practises) sent likewise ouer, both by boate and swimming, so choise a number as did put most of the other to the sworde. Onely the two Brothers, with some of the brauest of them, carrying away the body of *Amphialus*, which they would rather haue died, then haue left behind them.

So was the forsaken Knight (layed vpon clokes) carried home to the campe. But his two friends knowing his earnest desire

not to be knowen, couering him from any bodies eyes, conueyed him to their owne tente: *Basilus* himselfe conquering his earnest desire to see him, with feare to displease him, who had fought so notably in his quarrell. But Fame set the honour vpon his backe, which he would not suffer to shine in his face: no mans mouth being barrein of prayses to the noble Knight, that had bettered the most esteemed Knight in the world: euery bodie praying for his life, and thinking that therein they

prayed for themselues. But he him selfe, when by the diligent care of friends, and well applied cunning of surgeons, he came to renewe againe the league betweene his minde and body, then fell he to a freshe warre with his owne thoughts, wrongfully condemning his manhood, laying cowardise to him selfe, whome the impudentest backbiter would not so haue wro[n]ged. For his courage (used to vse victory as an inheritaunce) could brooke no resistance at any time: but now that he had promised him selfe, not onely the conquest of him, but the scaling of the walles, and deliury of *Pamela*, though he had done beyond al others expectation, yet so short was he of his owne; that he hated to looke vpon the Sunne, that had seene him do so weakely: and so much abhorred all visitation or honour, whereof he thought him selfe vnworthy, that he besought his two noble friends to carrie him away to a castle not far of, where he might cure his wounds, and neuer be knowne till he made successe excuse this (as he thought) want in him. They louingly obeyed him, leauing *Basilus* and all the campe very sorrie for the parting of these three vnknowne Knights, in whose prowesse they had reposed greatest trust of victory.

CHAP. 19.

1 *The state of the leaguer, and beleaguered.* 2 *The agonies of Amphialus.* 3 *The wit-craft of Cecropia, to threaten Basilus with the three Ladies death.* 4 *Kalanders compassion.* 5 *Philanax-his counter-counsell.* 6 *The breaking vp the siege.*



Vt they being gone, *Basilus* and *Philanax* gaue good order to the strengthening of the siege, fortifying
 themselues, so as they feared no more any such suddaine onset, as
 that of *Anaxius*. And they within (by reaso[n] of *Anaxius* hurt, but
 especially of *Amphialus*-his) gaue themselues onely to diligent watch &
 ward, making no sallies out, but committing the principall trust
 to *Zoilus* and *Lycurgus*. For *Anaxius* was yet forced to keepe his chamber. And as
 for *Amphialus*, his body had such wounds, and gaue such wounds to his mind, as
 easily it coulde not be determind, whether death or he made the greater hast one to
 the other: for when the diligent care of cunning surgeons, had brought life to the
 possession of his owne right, Sorrowe and Shame (like two corrupted seruants) came
 waiting of it, perswading nothing but the giuing ouer of it selfe to destruction. They
 laide before his eyes his present case, painting euey piece of it in moste ougly
 colours: they shewed him his loue wrapped in despaire, his fame blotted by
 ouerthrow; so that if before he languished, because he could not obtaine his desiring,
 he now lamented because he durst not desire the obtaining. Recreant *Amphialus*,

(would he say to him selfe) how darest thou intitle thy selfe the louer of *Philoclea*, that hast neither shewed thy self a faithfull coward, nor a valiant rebell, but both rebellious and cowardly, which no law ca[n] quite, nor grace haue pitie of? Alas life, what little pleasure thou doost me, to giue me nothing but sense of reproach, and exercise of ruine? I would sweete *Philoclea*, I had died, before thy eies had seene my weaknes: & then perchance with some sigh thou wouldest haue co[n]fessed, thou hadst lost a worthy seruauant. But now, caitife that I am, what euer I haue done, serues but to builde vp my riualls glory. To these speeches he would couple such gestures of vexation, & would fortifie the gestures with such effects of furie, as sometimes offering to teare vp his wou[n]ds, sometimes to refuse the sustenance of meat, & counsell of phisitions, that his perplexed mother was driuen to make him by force to be tended, with extreame corsey to her selfe, & annoiance to him: till in the end he was contented to promise her, he would attempt no violence vpon himself, vpon condition he might be troubled by no body, but onely his Phisitions: his melancholy detesting all co[m]pany, so as not the very surgeons nor seruants durst speak vnto him in doing him seruice: only he had praied his mother, as she tendered his life, she would procure him grace; and that without that, she would neuer come at him more.

His mother, who had co[n]fined all her loue only vnto him, set only such about 3
him, as were absolutely at her com[m]andement, whom she forbad to let him know any thing that passed in the castle, till his wounds were cured, but as she from time to time should instruct them: she (for her selfe) being resolued, now she had the gouernment of al things in her owne hands, to satisfie her sonnes loue, by their yeelding, or satisfie her owne reuenge in their punishment. Yet first, because he should be the freer fro[m] outward force, she sent a messenger to the campe, to denounce vnto *Basilus*, that if he did not presently raise his siege, she would cause the heads of the three Ladies, prisoners, to be cut of before his eies. And to make him the more feare a present performance, she caused his two daughters & *Zelmane* to be led vnto the wals, where she had made a scaffold, easie to be seene by *Basilus*: and there caused the[m] to be kept, as ready for the slaughter, til answere came from *Basilus*. A sight full of pittie it was, to see those three (all excelling in all those excellencies, wherwith Nature can beautifie any body: *Pamela* giuing sweetnes to maiesty, *Philoclea* enriching noblenes with humblenes, *Zelmane* setting in womanly beautie manlike valour) to be thus subiected to the basest iniury of vniust Fortune. One might see in *Pamela* a willingnesse to die, rather then to haue life at others discretion, though sometimes a princely disdain would sparkle out of her Princely eies, that it should be in others power to force her to die. In *Philoclea* a prety feare came vp, to endamaske her rosie cheekes: but it was such a feare, as rather seemed a kindly childe to her innate humblenes, then any other dismaiednes: or if she were dismaied, it was more for *Zelmane*, then for her selfe; or if more for her selfe, it was because *Zelmane* should loose her. As for *Zelmane*, as she went with her hands bound (for they durst not aduenture on her well knowne valour, especially amo[n]g people

which percha[n]ce might be moued by such a spectacle to some reuoke) she was the true image of ouer-maistred courage, & of spite, that sees no remedie. For her breast swelled withall, the bloud burst out at her nose, and she looked paler then accustomed, with her eies cast on the ground, with such a grace, as if she were fallen out with the heauens, for suffering such an iniury. The lookers on were so moued withal, as they misliked what themselues did, and yet still did what themselues misliked. For some, glad to rid themselues of the dangerous annoyaunce of this siege, some willing to shorten the way to *Amphialus*-his succession (whereon they were dependents) some, & the greatest some, doing because others did, and suffring because none durst begin to hinder, did in this sort set their hands to this (in their owne conscience) wicked enterprise.

But whe[n] this message was brought to *Basilus*, & that this pittifull preparation was a sufficient letter of credit for him to beleue it, he called vnto him his chief cou[n]celors: amo[n]g which, those he chiefly trusted were *Philanax* and *Kalander* (lately come to the campe at *Basilus* co[m]mandement, & in him selfe wery of his solitary life, wanting his sons presence, & neuer hauing heard him his beloued gwestes since they parted from him). Now in this doubt what he should do, he willed *Kalander* to giue him his aduise: who spake much to this purpose. You co[m]maund me Sir (said he) to speake, rather because you will keepe your wonted graue, & noble manner, to do nothing of importa[n]ce without cou[n]cell, then that in this cause (which indeed hath but one way) your mind needs to haue any counsell: so as my speech shall rather be to co[n]firme what you haue alredey determined, the[n] to argue against any possibilitie of other determination. For what sophistical scholler can finde any question in this, whether you will haue your incomparable daughters liue, or dye? whether since you be here to cause their deliuerance, you will make your being here the cause of their destruction? for nothing can be more vnsensible, then

to thinke what one doth, & to forget the end why it is done. Do therefore as I am sure you meane to doo, remoue the siege, and after seeke by practise, or other ge[n]tle meanes, to recouer that which by force you ca[n]not: & therof is indeed (whe[n] it please you) more cou[n]sel to be take[n]. Once, in extremities the winning of time is the purchase of life, & worse by no meanes then their deaths ca[n] befall vnto you. A ma[n] might vse more words, if it were to any purpose to guild gold, or that I had any cause to doubt of your mind: But you are wise, & are a father. He said no more, for he durst not attempt to perswade the marrying of his daughter to *Amphialus*, but left that to bring in at another consultation. But *Basilus* made signe to *Philanax*, who sta[n]ding a while in a maze as inwardly perplexed, at last thus deliuered his opinio[n].

If euer I could wish my faith vntried, & my counsell vntrusted, it should be at this time, whe[n] in truth I must co[n]fesse I

would be content to purchase silence with discredit. But since you
command, I obey: onely let me say thus much, that I obey not to these excellent
Ladies father, but to my Prince: & a Prince it is to whom I giue counsel. Therefore
as to a Prince I say, that the graue and (I well know) true-minded counsell of my
Lord *Kalander* had come in good time when you first tooke armes, before al your
subjects gate notice of your intention, before so much blood was spent, & before
they were driue[n] to seek this shift for their last remedy. But if now, this force you
away, why did you take armes since you might be sure when euer they were in
extremitie they would haue recourse to this threatning? and for a wise man to take in
hand that which his enimie may with a word ouerthrow, hath in my conceit great
incongruity, & as great not to forethink what his enemy in reason wil doo. But they
threaten they wil kil your daughters. What if they promised you if you remoued your
siege, they would honorably send home your daughters? would you be angled by their
promises? truly no more ought you be terrified by their threatnings. For yet of the two,
promise binds faith more then threatning. But indeede a Prince of iudgement
ought not to consider what his enimies promise, or threaten, but what the
promisers and threatners in reason wil do: & the neerest conjecture therunto,
is what is best for their own behoofe to do. They threate if you remoue not, they
wil kil your daughters, and if you doo remoue, what surety haue you, but that they
will kil the[m], since if the purpose be to cut off al impediments of *Amphialus*-his
ambition, the same cause wil continue when you are away; & so much the more
encouraged, as the reuenging power is absent, & they haue the more oportunitie to
draw their factious friends about them: but if it be for their security onely, the
same cause wil bring forth the same effect: & for their security they wil preserue
the[m]. But it may be said, no man knows what desperate folkes will do: it is true, and
as true that no reason nor policie can preuent what desperate folks wil do: & therefore
they are among those dangers, which wisdom is not to recke. Only let it suffice to
take away their despaire, which may be by granting pardon for what is past; so as the
Ladies may be freely deliuered. And let them that are your subjects, trust you that are
their Prince: doo not you subject your selfe to trust them, who are so vntrusty as to be
manifest traitors. For if they finde you so base-minded, as by their th[reatning] to
remoue your force, what indignitie is it, that they would not bring you vnto, still by
the same threatning? since then if Loue stir them, loue will keep them from
murthering what they loue; and if Ambition prouoke them, ambitious they will be,
when you are away, as well as while you are here: take not away your force, which
bars not the one, & bridels the other. For as for their shewes and words they are but to
feare babes, not worthy once to moue a worthy mans conceit; which must still
consider what in

reaso[n] they are like to do. Their despaire I grant you shall do wel to preuent, „
 which as it is the last of all resolutions, so no man fals into it, while so good a „
 way as you may offer, is open vnto the[m]. In su[m], you are a Prince, & a father „
 of people, who ought with the eye of wisdome, the hand of fortitude, and the hart „
 of iustice to set downe all priuate conceits, in comparison of what for the publike 6
 is profitable.

He would haue proceeded on, whe[n] *Gynecia* came riu[n]ning in amazed for her daughter *Pamela*, but mad for *Zelmane*; & falling at *Basilius* feet, besought him to make no delay: using such gestures of co[m]passio[n] instead of stopped words, that *Basilius*, otherwise enough tender minded, easily granted to raise the siege, which he saw dangerous to his daughters: but indeed more carefull for *Zelmane*, by whose besieged person, the poore old man was streightly besieged: so as to rid him of the famine of his minde, he went in speed away; discharging his souldiors: only leauing the authority, as before, in *Philanax* his hands, he himselfe went with *Gynecia* to a strong Castle of his, where he took cou[n]sell how first to deliuer *Zelmane*, whom he called the poore stranger, as though onely Law of hospitalitie moued him; and for that purpose sent diuers messengers to trafficke with *Cecropia*.

CHAP. 20.

[T]he sweete resistance of the true sisters 1 to the sower assaultes
 of their false Aunt. The whipping of 3 *Philoclea* 5 and *Pamela*. 4 The patience of both 6 and passions for their louers.



Cecropia by this meanes rid of the present daunger of the siege
 (desiring *Zoilus* and *Lycurgus* to take the
 care, till their brother recouered, of reuictualling, and furnishing the 1
 Citie, both with men and what els wanted, against any new occasion
 should vrge them, she her selfe disdainig to harken to *Basilius*, without
 he would grant his daughter in mariage to her son, which by no means he would be
 brought vnto) bent all the sharpenesse of her malicious wit, how to bring a
 comfortable graunt to her sonne; whereupon she well found no lesse then his life
 depended. Therefore for a while she atte[m]pted all meanes of eloquent praying, and
 flattering perswasion, mingling sometimes gifts, somtimes threatnings, as she had
 cause to hope, that either open force, or vndermining, would best winn the castle of
 their Resolution. And euer as much as she did to *Philoclea*, so much did she to
Pamela, though in manner sometimes differing, as she found fit to leuell at the ones
 noble height, and the others sweet lowlinesse. For though she knew her sonnes harte
 had wholly giuen it selfe to *Philoclea*, yet seeing the equall gifts in *Pamela*, she

hoped, a faire grant would recouer the sorrow of a faire refusal: cruelly enteding the present impoysoning the one, as soone as the others affection were purchased.

But in vaine was all her vaine oratory employed. *Pamelaes* determination was built vpo[n] so braue a Rock, that no shot of hers could reach vnto it: and *Philoclea* (though humbly seated) was so inuironed with sweete riuers of cleere vertue, as could neither be battred, nor vndermined: her witty perswasions had wise answeres; her eloquence recompenced with sweetnes; her threatnings repelled with disdain in the one, & patience in the other; her gifts either not accepted, or accepted to obey, but not to bind. So as *Cecropia* in nature violent; cruel, because ambitious; hateful, for old rooted grudge to their mother, & now spitefull because she could not preuaile with girles, as she counted them; lastly, drawne on by her loue to her son, & held vp by a tyrannical authoritie, forthwith followed the byas of her own crooked disposition, & doubling and redoubling her threatnings, fel to co[n]firme some of her threatned effects: first withdrawing al co[m]fort, both of serua[n]ts, & seruice from the[m]. But that those excelle[n]t Ladies had bene vsed vnto, eue[n] at home, & the[n] fou[n]d in the[m]selues how much good the hardnes of educatio[n] doth to the resista[n]ce of misery. Then dishonorably vsing them both in dyet, and lodging, by a contempt to pull downe their thoughts to yeelding. But as before, the consideration of a prison had disgraced al orname[n]ts, so now the same co[n]sideratio[n] made the[m] attend al diseasefulness. Then stil, as she found those not preuaile, would she go forward with giuing them terrors, sometimes with noices of horror, sometimes with suddaine frightings in the night, when the solitary darkenesse thereof might easier astonish the disarmed senses. But to all Vertue, and Loue resisted, strengthned one by the other, when each found it selfe ouer-vehemently assaulted. *Cecropia* still sweetning her fiercenesses with faire promises, if they would promise faire; that feeling euill, and seing a way far better, their minds might the sooner be mollified. But they that could not taste her behaiour, when it was pleasing, indeed could worse now, when they had lost al taste by her iniuries.

She resoluing all extremities, rather then faile of co[n]quest, pursued on her rugged way: letting no day passe, without new and new perplexing the poore Ladies minds, and troubling their bodies: and still swelling, the more she was stopped, and growing hot with her owne doings, at length, abhominable rage carried her to absolute tyranies, so that taking with her certaine olde women (of wicked dispositions, and apt for enuie-sake to be cruel to youth and beautie) with a countena[n]ce impoysoned with malice, flew to the sweet *Philoclea*, as if so many Kites should come about a white Doue, & matching violent gestures with mischieuous threatnings, she hauing a rod in her ha[n]d (like a fury that should carry wood to the burning of *Dianas* temple) fel to scourge that most beautifull body: Loue in vaine holding the shield of Beautie against her blind cruelty. The Son drew clouds vp to hide his face from so pitiful a sight; & the very stone wals did yeeld drops of sweate for agonie of such a mischiefe: each senselesse thing had sense of pittie; onely they that had sense,

were senseles. Vertue rarely found her worldly weakenes more, then by the oppression of that day: and weeping *Cupid* told his weeping mother, that he was sorie he was not deaf, as well as blind, that he might neuer know so lamentable a worke. *Philoclea*, with tearefull eyes, and sobbing breast (as soon as her wearines rather then compassion, gaue her respite) kneeled dow[n]e to *Cecropia*, and making pittie in her face honourable, and torment delightfull, besought her, since she hated her (for what cause she tooke God to witness she knew not) that she would at once take away her life, and not please her self with the tormenting of a poore Gentlewoman. If (said she) the common course of hu[m]anitie cannot moue you, nor the hauing me in your owne walles, cannot claime pittie: nor womanly mercie, nor neere alliance, nor reme[m]brance (how miserable so euer now) that I am a Princes daughter; yet let the loue (you haue often tolde me) your sonne beares me, so much procure, that for his sake, one death may be thought inough for me; I haue not liued so many yeares, but that one death may be able to conclude them: neither haue my faults, I hope, bene so many, but that one death may satisfie them. It is no great suite to an enemye, when but death is desired. I craue but that, and as for the graunting your request, know for certaine you lose your labours, being euey day furtherof-minded from becoming his wife, who vseth me like a slaue. But that in stead of getting grace renewed againe *Cecropias*, fury: so that (excellent creature) she was newly againe tormented by those hellish monsters: *Cecropia* vsing no other words, but that she was a proud and vngratefull wench: and that she would teach her to know her owne good, since of her selfe she would not conceaue it.

So with silence and patience (like a faire gorgeous armour, hammered vpon by 4
an ilfauoured Smith) she abode their pittiles dealing with her: till, rather reseruing
her for more, then meaning to end, they left her to an vncomfortable leysure, to
consider with her selfe her fortune; both helplesse her selfe, being a prisoner, and
hopeles, since *Zelmane* was a prisoner: who therein onely was short of the bottome of
miserie, that she knew not how vnworthilie her Angell, by these deuils was abused:
but wanted (God wot) no stings of grieffe, when those words did but strike vpon her
hart, that *Philoclea* was a captiue, and she not able to succour her. For well she knew
the confidence *Philoclea* had in her, and well she knew, *Philoclea* had cause to haue
confidence: and all troden vnder foot by the wheele of senselesse Fortune. Yet if there
be that imperious power in the soule, as it can deliuer knowledge to another, without
bodilie organs; so vehement were the workings of their spirites, as one mette with
other, though themselues perceaued it not, but only thought it to be the doubling of
their owne louing fancies. And that was the onely wordly thing,
whereon *Philoclea* rested her minde, that she knewe she should die beloved
of *Zelmane*, and shoulde die, rather then be false to *Zelmane*. And so this most daintie
Nimphe, easing the paine of her minde with thinking of anothers paine; and almost
forgetting the paine of her bodie, through the paine of her minde, she wasted, euen
longing for the conclusion of her tedious tragedie.

But for a while she was vnuisited, *Cecropia* employing her time in vsing the
like crueltie vpon *Pamela*, her harte growing not onely to desire the fruite of 5
punishing them, but euen to delight in the punishing them. But if euer the beames of
perfection shined through the clowdes of affliction, if euer Vertue tooke a bodie to
shewe his (els vnconceaueable) beautie, it was in *Pamela*. For when Reason taught
her there was no resistance, (for to iust resistance first her harte was enclined) then
with so heauenly a quietnes, and so gracefull a calmenes, did she suffer the diuers
kinds of torments they vsed to her, that while they vexed her faire bodie, it seemed,
that she rather directed, then obeyed the vexation. And when *Cecropia* ended, and
asked whether her harte woulde yeelde: she a little smiled, but such a smiling as
shewed no loue, and yet coulde not but be louelie. And then, Beastly woman (saide
she) followe on, doo what thou wilt, and canst vpon me: for I know thy power is not
vnlimited. Thou maist well wracke this sillie bodie, but me thou canst neuer
ouerthrowe. For my part, I will not doo thee the pleasure to desire death of thee: but
assure thy self, both my life and death, shall triumph with honour, laying shame vpon
thy detestable tyranny.

And so; in effect, conquering their doing with her suffering, 4
while *Cecropia* tried as many sorts of paines, as might rather vexe them, then
spoyle them (for that she would not do while she were in any hope to winne either of
them for her sonne) *Pamela* remained almost as much content with triall in her selfe,
what vertue could doo, as griued with the miserie wherein she found her selfe
plunged: only sometimes her thoughts softned in her, when with open wings they flew
to *Musidorus*. For then she would thinke with her selfe, how
griuously *Musidorus* would take this her miserie; and she, that wept not for her selfe,
wept yet *Musidorus*-his teares, which he would weep for her. For gentle Loue did
easlier yeeld to lamentation, then the constancy of vertue would els admitte. Then
would she remember the case wherein she had left her poore shepheard, and she that
wished death for her self, feared death for him; and she that condemned in her selfe
the feeblenes of sorrow, yet thought it great reason to be sory for his sorow: & she that
long had prayed for the vertuous ioyning themselues together, now thinking to die
herself, hartely prayed, that long time their fortunes might be seperated. Liue long
my *Musidorus* (would she say) and let my name liue in thy mouth; in thy harte my
memorie. Liue long, that thou mayst loue long the chast loue of thy dead *Pamela*.
Then would she wish to her selfe, that no other woman might euer possesse his harte:
and yet scarcely the wish was made a wish, when her selfe would finde fault with it,
as being too vniust, that so excellent a man should be banished from the comfort of
life. Then would she fortifie her resolution, with bethinking the worste, taking the
counsell of vertue, and comfort of loue.

CHAP. 21.

1 *Cecropias indurate tyrannies.* 2 *Her devise with the death of one to threaten another.* 3 *Philoclea threatned, persisteth.* 4 *The execution done in sight of Philoclea & Zelmane.* 5 *Philocleas sorrow for her sister.*



SO these diamonds of the worlde whom Nature had made to be preciously set in the eyes of her creatures, to be the chiefe workes of her workemanship, the chiefe ornaments of the worlde, and Princesses of felicitie, by rebellious iniury were brought to the vttermost distres that an enemies hart could wish, or a womans spite inuent: *Cecropia* dayly in one or other sorte punishing the[m], still with her euill torments giuing them feare of worse, making the feare it selfe the sorriest torment of all; that in the end wearie of their bodies they should be content to bestow them at her appointme[n]t. But as in labour, the more one doth exercise it, the more by the doing one is enhabled to doo; strength growing vpo[n] the worke, so as what at first would haue seemed impossible, after growes easie: so these Princesses second to none, and far from any second, only to be matched by the[m]selues, with the vse of suffering their minds gat the habit of suffring so, as all feares & terrors were to them but summons to a battaile, whereof they knew before ha[n]d they would be victorious, & which in the suffering was painfull, being suffered, was a trophe to it self: whereby *Cecropia* found her self still farder of: for where at first she might perchance haue perswaded them to haue visited her sonne, and haue giuen him some comfote in his sicknesse, drawing neere to the co[n]fines of Deaths kingdome, now they protested, that they would neuer otherwise speake to him, then as to the enemy, of most vniust cruelty towards them, that any time or place could euer make them know.

This made the poison swell in her cankred brest, perceiuing that (as in water) the more she grasped the lesse she held: but yet now hauing run so long the way of rigour, it was too late in reason, and too contrary to her passion, to returne to a course of meekenesse. And therefore (taking counsell of one of her olde associates who so far excelled in wickednesse as that she had not onely lost all feeling of conscience, but had gotten a very glory in euill) in the ende they determined, that beating, and other such sharp dealing did not so much pull downe a womans harte, as it bred anger, and that nothing was more enemy to yeelding, then anger; making their te[n]der harts take on the armour of obstinacy: (for thus did their wicked mindes blind to the light of vertue, & owly eied in the night of wickednes interpret of it) & that therfore that was no more to be tried. And for feare of death (which no question would doo most with them) they had bene so often threatened, as they began to be familiarly acquainted with it, and learned to esteeme threatning wordes to be but words.

Therefore the last, but best way now was, that the one seing indeede the others death, should perceiue, there was no dallying meant: and then there was no doubt, that a womans soule would do much, rather then leaue so beautifull a body.

This being concluded, *Cecropia* went to *Philoclea*, and tolde her, that now she 3
was to come to the last parte of the play: for her part, though she found her hard
harted obstinacie such, that neither the sweetnesse of louing meanes, nor the force of
harde meanes could preuaile with her, yet before she would passe to a further degree
of extremity; she had sought to win her sister; in hope, that her sonne might be with
time satisfied with the loue of so faire a Lady: but finding her also rather more then
lesse wilful, she was now minded that one of their deathes should serue for an
example to the other, that despising worthy folks was more hurtfull to the despiser,
then the despised: that yet because her sonne especially affected her, & that in her
owne selfe she was more inclinable to pittie her, the she had deserued, she would
begin with her sister; who that

afternoone should haue her head cut of before her face; if in the mean time one of ..
them, did not pull out their il-wrought stiches of vnkindnes, she bad her looke for
no other, nor lo[n]ger time the she told her. There was no assault giue[n] to the
sweet *Philocleas* mind, that entered so far, as this: for where to all paines and
daungers of her selfe, foresight with (his Lieutenant Resolution) had made ready
defence; now with the loue she bare her sister, she was driuen to a stay, before she
determined: but long she staled not, before this reason did shine vnto her, that since in
her selfe she preferred death before such a base seruitude, loue did teach her to wish
the same to her sister. Therefore crossing her armes, & looking sideward vpon the
grou[n]d, Do what you wil (said she) with us: for my part, heauen shall melt before I
be remoued. But if you will follow my counsell, for your owne sake (for as for praiers
for my sake I haue felt how little they preuaile) let my death first serue for example to
win her, who perchance is not so resolued against *Amphialus*, and so shall you not
onely iustly punish me (who indeede doo hate both you and your sonne) but, if that
may mooue you, you shall doo more vertuously in preseruing one most worthy of life,
and killing an other most desirous of death: lastly in winning her, in steed of a peeuish
vnhappie creature, that I am, you shall blesse your sonne with the most excellent
woman in all praise-worthy thinges, that the worlde holdeth. But *Cecropia*, (who had
already set downe to her selfe what she would do) with bitter both termes, &
countenance, told her, that she should not neede to woo death ouer-egerly: for if her
sister going before her did not teach her witt, herselfe should quickly follow. For since
they were not to be gotten, there was no way for her sonnes quiet, but to know, that
they were past getting. And so since no intreating, nor threatning might preuayle, she
bad her prepare her eies for a new play, which she should see within fewe houres in
the hall of that castle.

A place indeed ouerfit for so vnfit a matter: for being so stately made that the 4
bottome of it being euen with the grounde, the rooffe reached as hie as any part of
the castle, at either ende it had conuenient lodgeings. In the one end was (one storie
from the ground) *Philocleas* abode, in the other of euen height, *Pamelas*,
and *Zelmanes* in a chamber aboue her: but all so vaulted of strong, and thickly built
stone, as one could no way heare the other: each of these chambers had a litle
windowe to looke into the hall, but because the sisters should not haue so much
comforte, as to looke out to one another, there was (of the outsides) curtaynes drawne,
which they could not reach with their hands, so barring the reach of their sight. But
when the houre came that the Tragedie should beginne, the curtaynes were
withdrawen from before the windowes of *Zelmane*, and of *Philoclea*: a sufficient
challenge to call their eyes to defende themselues in such an incounter. And by and by
came in at one ende of the hall, with about a dozen armed souldiers a Ladie, led by a
couple, with her handes bounde before her: from aboue her eyes to her lippes muffled
with a faire kerchiefe, but from her mouth to the shoulders all bare: and so was led on
to a scaffold raised a good deale from the floore, and all couered with crimson veluet.
But neither *Zelmane*, nor *Philoclea* needed to be tolde, who she was: for the apparell
she ware made them too well assured, that it was the admirable *Pamela*. Whereunto
the rare whitenesse of her naked necke gaue sufficient testimonie to their astonnished
senses. But the fayre Ladie being come to the scaffold, and then made to kneele
downe, and so lefte by her vnkinde supporters, as it seemed that she was about to
speake somewhat (whereunto *Philoclea*, poore soule, earnestly listned, according to
her speach euen minded to frame her minde, her harte neuer till then almost wauering
to saue her sisters life) before the vnfortunate Ladie could pronounce three wordes,
the executioner cutt of the ones speech, and the others attention, with making his
sworde doo his cruell office vpon that beautifull necke. Yet the pittillesse sworde had
such pittie of so pretious an obiect, that at first it did but hitte flat long. But little
auailed that, since the Ladie falling downe astonnished withall, the cruell villayne
forced the sworde with another blowe to diuorce the faire marriage of the head and
body.

And this was done so in an instant, that the very act did 5
ouerrun *Philocleas* sorrow (sorrow not being able so quickly to thunderbolte her
harte thorough her senses, but first onely opprest her with a storme of amazement) but
when her eies saw that they did see, as condemning themselues to haue seene it, they
became weary of their owne power of seing: & her soule then drinking vp woe with
great draughts, she fel downe to deadly trau[n]ces: but her waiting iaylors with cruell
pitty brought lothed life vnto her; which yet many times tooke his leaue as though he
would indeed depart: but when he was staid by force, he kept with him deadly
Sorrow, which thus exercised her mourning speech. *Pamela* my sister, my
sister *Pamela*, woe is me for thee, I would I had died for thee. *Pamela* neuer more
shall I see thee: neuer more shall I enioy thy sweet companie, and wise counsell. Alas,

thou arte gone to beautifie heauen, and haste thou lefte me here, who haue nothing good in me, but that I did euer loue thee, and euer will lament thee? Let this day be noted of all vertuous folkes for most vnfortunate: let it neuer be mentioned, but among curses; and cursed be they that did this mischiefe, and most accursed be mine eyes that behelde it. Sweete *Pamela*; that head is striken of, where onely wisdom might be spoken withall; that bodie is destroyed, which was the liuing booke of vertue. Deare *Pamela*, how haste thou lefte me to all wretchednesse, and miserie? Yet while thou liuedst, in thee I breathed, of thee I hoped. O *Pamela*, how much did I for thy excellencie honour thee, more then my mother, and loue thee more then my selfe? Neuer more shall I lie with thee: neuer more shall we bathe in the pleasant riuer together: neuer more shall I see thee in thy shepheard appaell. But thou arte gone, and where am I? *Pamela* is dead; and liue I? My God, And with that she fell againe in a soune, so as it was a great while before they could bring her to her selfe againe; but being come to herselfe, Alas (said she) vnkind women, since you haue giuen me so many deathes, torment me not now with life: for Gods sake let me goe, and excuse your hands of more blood. Let me follow my *Pamela*, whom euer I sought to follow. Alas *Pamela*, they will not let me come to thee. But if they keepe promise, I shall treade thine owne steppes after thee. For to what am I borne (miserable soule) but to be most vnhappy in my selfe, and yet more vnhappy in others? But ô that a thousand more miseries had happened vnto me, so thou haddest not dyed: *Pamela*, my sister *Pamela*. And so, like lamentable *Philomela*, complained she the horrible wrong done to her sister, which if it stird not in the wickedly closed minds of her tormentors, a pittie of her sorrow, yet bredde it a wearinesse of her sorrow: so as onely leauing one to preuent any harme she should doo her selfe, the rest went away, consulting againe with *Cecropia*, how to make profite of this their late bloodie act.

CHAP. 22.

1 *Cecropias pollicie to vse Zelmanes intercession*, 2 *Zelmanes selfe-conflict*. 3 *Her motion to Philoclea rather to dissemble then dye*. 4 *Philocleas resolution rather to dye then dissemble*. 5 *At sight of Philocleas head Zelmanes extasies*, 7 *desperate deseignes*, 8 *and comfortlesse complaints*.



IN the ende, that woman that vsed most to keep company with *Zelma*, told *Cecropia*, that she founde by many most sensible proofes in *Zelma*, that there was neuer woman so loued another, as she loued *Philoclea*: which was the cause that she (further then the commandement of *Cecropia*) had caused *Zelmanes* curtaines to be also drawne: because hauing the same spectacle

that *Philoclea* had, she might stand in the greater feare for her, whom she loued so wel: and that indeed she had hit the needle in that deuise: for neuer saw she creature so astonished as *Zelmane*, exceedingly sorry for *Pamela*, but exceedingly exceeding that exceedingnes in feare for *Philoclea*. Therefore her aduice was, she should cause *Zelmane* to come and speake with *Philoclea*. For there being such vehemencie of friendship between them, it was both likely to moue *Zelmane* to perswade, and *Philoclea* to be perswaded. *Cecropia* liked wel of the counsell, and gaue order to the same woman to go deale therein with *Zelmane*, and to assure her with othe, that *Cecropia* was determined *Philoclea* should passe the same way that *Pamela* had done, without she did yeeld to satisfie the extremitie of her sonnes affection: which the woman did, adding therunto many (as she thought) good reasons to make *Zelmane* thinke *Amphialus* a fit match for *Philoclea*.

But *Zelmane* (who had from time to time vnderstood the cruell dealing they had vsed to the sisters, & now had her own eies

wounded with the sight of ones death) was so confused withall (her courage still 2
rebellig against her wit, desiring still with force to doo impossible matters) that
as her desire was stopped with power, so her co[n]ceit was darkned with a mist of
desire. For blind Loue, & inuincible valure stil would cry out, that it could not
be, *Philoclea* should be in so miserable estate, and she not relieue her: and so while
she haled her wit to her courage, she drew it from his owne limits. But
now *Philocleas* death (a word able to marshall al his thoughts in order) being come to
so short a point either with smal delay to be suffred, or by the giuing her selfe to
another to be preuented, she was driue to think, and to desire some leasure of
thinking: which the woman granted for that night vnto her. A night that was not halfe
so blacke, as her mind; not halfe so silent, as was fit for her musing thoughts. At last,
he that would faine haue desperatly lost a thousand liues for her sake, could not finde
in his harte, that she should loose any life for her owne sake; and he that despised his
owne death in respect of honour, yet could well nye dispense with honor it self in
respect of *Philocleas* death: for once the thought could not enter into his harte, nor the
breath issue out of his mouth, which could consent to *Philocleas* death for any
bargaine. Then how to preuent the next degree to death (which was her being possesst
by another) was the point of his minds labour: and in that he found no other way, but
that *Philoclea* should pretend a yeelding vnto *Cecropias* request; & so by speaking
with *Amphialus*, and making faire (but delaying) promises, procure libertie
for *Zelmane*; who onely wisht but to come by a sword, not doubting then to destroy
them all, and deliuer *Philoclea*: so little did both the me[n], and their forces seeme in
her eyes, looking downe vpon them from the hie toppe of affections tower.

With that minde therefore (but first wel bound) she was brought to *Philoclea*, 3
hauing alredy plotted out in her co[n]ceite, how she would deale with her: & so
came she with hart and eyes, which did each sacrifice either to Loue vpon the aultar of
Sorrow: and there had she the pleasing displeasing sight of *Philoclea*: *Philoclea*, who

alredie the extreame sense of sorrow had brought to a dulnesse therin, her face not without tokens that beautie had bene by many miseries cruelly battered, & yet shewed it most the perfection of the beautie, which could remaine vnouerthrowne by such enimies. But whe[n] *Zelmane* was set downe by her, & the wome[n] gone away (because she might be the better perswaded whe[n] no body was by, that had heard her say she would not be perswaded) then began first the eyes to speake, and the harts to crie out: Sorrow a while would needes speake his owne language without vsing their tongues to be his interpreters. At last *Zelmane* brake silence, but spake with the onely eloquence of amazement: for all her long methodized oration was inherited onely by such kinde of speeches. Deare Ladie, in extreame necessities we must not. But alas vnfortunate wretch that I am, that I liue to see this day. And I take heauen and earth to witnesse, that nothing: and with that her brest swelled so with spite and grieffe, that her breath had not leasure to turne her selfe into words. But the sweet *Philoclea* that had alredie dyed in *Pamela*, and of the other side had the heauines of her hart somthing quickned in the most beloued sight of *Zelmane*, ghessed somewhat at *Zelmanes* minde; and therefore spake vnto her in this sort. My *Pyrocles* (said she) I know this exceeding comfort of your presence, is not brought vnto me for any good-will that is owed vnto me: but (as I suppose) to make you perswade me to saue my life with the ransome of mine honour: although no bodie should be so vnfit a pleader in that cause, as your selfe, yet perchance you would haue me liue. Your honour? God forbid (said *Zelmane*) that euer, for any cause, I should yeeld to any touch of it. But a while to pretend some affection, til time, or my libertie might worke somthing for your seruice: this, if my astonished senses would giue me leaue, I would faine haue perswaded you.

To what purpose my *Pyrocles*? (said *Philoclea*) of a miserable time what gaine 4
is there? hath *Pamelaes* example wrought no more in me? is a captiue life so much worth? ca[n] euer it goe out of these lips, that I loue any other but *Pyrocles*? shal my tongue be so false a traitor to my hart, as to say I loue any other but *Pyrocles*? And why should I do all this? to liue? O *Pamela*, sister *Pamela*, why should I liue? onely for thy sake *Pyrocles* I would liue: but to thee I know too well I shal not liue; and if not to thee, hath thy loue so base allay, my *Pyrocles*, as to wish me to liue? for dissimulation, my *Pyrocles*, my simplicitie is such, that I haue hardly bene able to keepe a straight way; what shall I doo in a crooked? But in this case there is no meane of dissimulation, not for the cunningest: present answeere is required, and present performance vpon the answeere. Art thou so terrible, ô Death? No my *Pyrocles*; and for that I doo thanke thee, and in my soule thanke thee; for I confesse the loue of thee is heerein my chiefest vertue. Trouble me not therefore, deare *Pyrocles*, nor double not my death by tormenting my resolution: since I cannot liue with thee, I wil dye for thee. Onely remember me deare *Pyrocles*; and loue the remembrance of me: and if I may craue so much of thee, let me be thy last loue, for though I be not worthy of thee (who indeed art the worthiest creature liuing) yet remember that my loue was a

worthy loue. But *Pyrocles* was so ouercome with sorrow (which wisdome & vertue made iust in so excellent a Ladies case, ful of so excelle[n]t kindnes) that words were ashamed to come forth knowing how weake they were to expresse his mind, & her merit: and therefore so stayed in a deadly silence, forsaken of hope, & forsaking comfort: till the appointed gardians came in, to see the fruits of *Zelma*'s labour: & then *Zelma* warned by their presence, fel againe to perswade, though scarcely her selfe could tell what; but in sum, desirous of delays. But *Philoclea* sweetly continuing co[n]stant, & in the end punishing her importunity with silence, *Zelma* was faine to ende. Yet crauing an other times co[n]ference, she obtained it, & diuers others; till at the last *Cecropia* found it was to no purpose, and therefore determined to follow her owne way. *Zelma* yet stil desirous to win (by any meanes) respite, euen wasted with sorrow, & vncertaine, whether in worse case in her prese[n]ce, or absence, being able to do nothing for *Philoclea*'s succour, but by submitting the greatest corage of the earth to fall at the feete of *Cecropia*, and craue stay of their sentence till the vttermost was seene, what her perswasions might doo.

Cecropia seemed much to be moued by her importunitie, so as diuers dayes were wonne of painefull life to the excellent *Philoclea*: while *Zelma* suffred some hope to cherrish her mind, especially trusting vpon the helpe of *Musidorus*, who (she knew) would not be idle in this matter, till one morning a noise awaked *Zelma*, from whose ouer-watchfull mind, the tired body had stolne a little sleep: and straight with the first opening of her eyes, Care taking the woonted place, she ranne to the window which looked into the hall (for that way the noise guided her,) and there might she see (the curtaine being left open euer since the last execution) seuen or eight persons in a cluster vpon the scaffold: who by & by retiring themselues, nothing was to be seene thereupon, but a bason of golde, pitifully enameled with bloud, and in the midst of it, the head of the most beautifull *Philoclea*. The horriblenes of the mischief was such, as *Pyrocles* could not at first beleue his own senses, hut bent his woful eyes to discerne it better: where too well he might see it was *Philoclea*'s selfe, hauing no veile, but beautie, ouer the face, which still appeared to be aliue: so did those eyes shine, euen as they were wont, and they were woont more then any other: and sometimes as they moued, it might well make the beholder think, that death therein had borrowed their beutie, and not they any way disgraced by death: so sweet and pearsing a grace they caried with them.

It was not a pitie, it was not an amazement, it was not a sorow which then laid holde on *Pyrocles*, but a wilde furie of

desperate agonie, so that he cried out, O tyraunt heauen, traytor earth, blinde prouidence; no iustice, how is this done? how is this suffered? hath this world a gouernment? If it haue, let it poure out all his mischiefes vpon me, and see whether it haue power to make me more wretched then I am. Did she excell for this? haue I prayed for this? abhominable hande that did it; detestable deuil that commaunded it; cursed light that beheld it: and if the light be cursed, what are then mine eyes that haue

seene it? And haue I seen *Philoclea* dead, and doo I liue? and haue I liued, not to help her, but to talke of her? and stande I still talking? And with that (caried with the madnes of anguish, not hauing a redier way to kill himselfe) he ranne as hard as euer he could, with his head against the wall, with intention to braine himself: but the haste to doo it, made the doing the slower. For, as he came to giue the blow, his foot tript, so as it came not with the full force: yet forcible inough to strike him downe, and withall, to depriue him of his sense, so that he lay a while, comforted by the hurt, in that he felte not his discomfort.

And when he came againe to himselfe, he heard, or he thought he heard a voice, which cried, Reue[n]ge, Reuenge; whether indeed it were his good Angell, which vsed that voice to stay him from vnnaturall murdering of him selfe; or that his wandering spirites lighted vpon that conceite, and by their weakenes (subiect to apprehensions) supposed they heard it. But that indeed, helped with Vertue, and her valiant seruant Anger, stopped him from present destroying him selfe: yeelding, in reason and manhoode, first to destroy, man, woman, and childe, that were any way of kinne to them that were accessarie to this crueltye; then to raze the Castle, and to builde a sumptuous monument for her sister, and a most sumptuous for her selfe; and then, himselfe to die vpon her tomb. This determing in himselfe to do, and to seeke all meanes how (for that purpose) to get out of prison: he was content a while to beare the thirst of death: and yet went he againe to the windowe, to kisse the beloued head with his eies, but there saw he nothing but the scafiold, all couered ouer with skarlet, and nothing but solitarie silence, to mourn this mischiefe. But then, Sorrow hauing disperste it selfe from his harte, in all his noble partes, it proclaimed his authoritie, in cries, and teares, and with a more gentle dolefulnes, could poure out his inward euill.

Alas (said he) and is that head taken away too, so soone from mine eyes? 8
What, mine eyes, perhappes they enuie the excellencie of your sorrow? Indeede, there is nothing now left to become the eyes of all ma[n]kind, but teares: and wo be to me, if any excede me in wofulnes. I do coniure you all, my senses, to accept no obiect, but of Sorow: be ashamed, nay, abhor to thinke of comfort. Vnhappie eyes, you haue seene too much, that euer the light should be welcome to you: vnhappie eares, you shall neuer heare the musicke of Musicke in her voice: vnhappie harte, that hast liued to feel these pangues. Thou hast done thy worst, World, & cursed be thou, and cursed art thou, since to thine owne selfe thou hast done the worst thou couldest doo. Exiled Beautie, let onely now thy beautie be blubbered faces. Widowed Musick, let now thy tunes be rorings, and lamentations. Orphane Vertue, get thee winges, and flie after her into heauen; here is no dwelling place for thee. Why liued I, alas? Alas why loued I? to die wretched, and to be the example of the heuens hate? And hate, & spare not, for your worst blow is striken. Sweet *Philoclea*, thou art gone, and hast caried with thee my loue; & hast thy loue in me, & I wretched ma[n] do liue; I liue, to die co[n]tinually, till thy reuenge do giue me leaue to dy: & then dy I will, my *Philoclea*, my hart willinglie makes this promise to it selfe. Surely he did not

looke vpon thee, that gaue the cruell blow: for no eye coulde haue abidden to see such beautie ouerthrowen by such mischiefe. Alas, why should they diuide such a head from such a bodie? no other bodie is worthy of that head; no other head is woorthie of that body: O yet, if I had taken my last leaue, if I might haue taken a holie kisse from that dying mouth. Where art thou Hope which promisest neuer to leaue a ma[n] while he liueth? Tell me, what canst thou hope for? nay tel me, what is there which I would willingly hope after? Wishing power (which is accounted infinite) what now is left to wish for? She is gone, and gone with her all my hope, all my wishing. Loue, be ashamed to be called Loue: cruell Hate, vnspeakable Hate is victorious ouer thee. Who is there now left, that can iustifie thy tyrannie, and giue reason to thy passion? O cruell diorce of the sweetest mariage that euer was in Nature: *Philoclea* is dead, and dead is with her all goodnesse, all sweetnesse, all excellencie. *Philoclea* is dead, and yet Life is not ashamed to co[n]tinue vpon the earth. *Philoclea* is dead: O deadly word; which containeth in it selfe the vttermost of all misfortunes. But happie worde when thou shalt be said of me, and long it shall not be, before it be said.

CHAP. 17 [23].

1 *A Ladies kinde comforts to Pyrocles comfortlesse vnkindnesse.* 2 *His hardly knowing her.* 3 *Her vnmasking of Cecropias fruitlesse sophistrie.* 4 *Their medley of solace and sorowe.*



Then stopping his woordes with sighes, drowning his sighes I in teares, & drying againe his teares in rage, he would sitte a while in a wandring muse, which represented nothing but vexations vnto him: then throwing himselfe somtimes vpon the floore, and sometimes vpon the bedde: then vp againe, till walking was wearisome, and rest loathsome: and so neither suffering foode, nor sleepe to helpe his afflicted nature, all that day and night he did nothing, but weepe *Philoclea*, sigh *Philoclea*, and crie out *Philoclea*: till as it happened (at that time vpon his bed) towarde the dawning of the day, he heard one stirre in his chamber, by the motion of garme[n]ts; and he with an angry voice asked, Who was there? A poore Gentlewoman (answered the partie) that wish long life vnto you. And I soone death to you (said he) for the horrible curse you haue giuen me. Certainly (said she) an vnkinde answere, and far vnworthy the excellencie of your mind; but not vnsutable to the rest of your behauiour. For most parte of this night I haue hearde you (being let into your chamber, you neuer perceiuing it, so was your minde estraunged from your senses) and haue hearde nothing of *Zelmane*, in *Zelmane*, nothing but weake waylings, fitter for some nurse of a village, then so famous a creature as you are. O God (cried

out *Pyrocles*) that thou wert a man that vvest these wordes vnto me. I tell thee I am sorry: I tell thee I will be sorry in despite of thee, and all them that would haue me ioyfull. And yet (replied she) perchance *Philoclea* is not dead, whom you so much bemone. I would we were both dead of that condition, said *Pyrocles*. See the folly of your passion (said she) as though you should be neerer to her, you being dead, and she aliue; then she being dead, & you aliue: & if she be dead, was she not borne to die? what then do you crie out for? not for her, who must haue died one time or other; but for some fewe yeares: so as it is time, & this world that seeme so louely things, and not *Philoclea* vnto you. O noble Sisters (cried *Pyrocles*) now you be gone (who were the onely exalters of all womankind) what is left in that sex, but babling, and businesse? And truly (said she) I will yet a little longer trouble you. Nay, I pray you doo (said *Pyrocles*) for I wishe for nothing in my shorte life, but mischiefes, and combers: and I am content you shall be one of them. In truth (said she) you would thinke your selfe a greatly priuiledged person, if since the strongest buildings, and lastingest monarchies are subiect to end, onely your *Philoclea* (because she is yours) should be exempted. But indeede you bemone your selfe, who haue lost a friende: you cannot her, who hath in one act both preserued her honour, and lefte the miseries of this worlde. O womans philosophie, childish follie (said *Pyrocles*) as though if I do bemone my selfe, I haue not reason to doo so, hauing lost more then any Monarchie, nay then my life can be woorth vnto me. Alas (said she) comforte your selfe, Nature did not forget her skill, when she had made them: you shall find many their superiours, and perchance such, as (when your eyes shall looke abroad) your selfe will like better.

But that speech put all good maners out of the conceit of *Pyrocles*; in so much, 2
that leaping out of his bed, he ran to haue striken her: but coming neere her (the morning then winning the field of darkenesse) he saw, or he thought he sawe, indeede, the very face of *Philoclea*; the same sweetnesse, the same grace, the same beautie: with which carried into a diuine astonishment, he fell downe at her feete. Most blessed Angell (said he) well haste thou done to take that shape, since thou wouldest submit thy selfe to mortall sense; for [a] more Angelicall forme could not haue bene created for thee. Alas, euen by that excellent beautie, so beloued of me, let it be lawfull for me to aske of thee, what is the cause, that she, that heauenly creature, whose forme you haue taken, should by the heauens be destined to so vnripe an ende? Why should vniustice so preuaile? Why was she seene to the world, so soone to be rauished from vs? Why was she not suffered to liue, to teach the world perfection? Doo not deceiue thy selfe (answered she) I am no Angell; I am *Philoclea*, the same *Philoclea*, so truly louing you, so truly beloued of you. If it be so (said he) that you are indeede the soule of *Philoclea*, you haue done well to keepe your owne figure: for heauen could haue giuen you a better. Then alas, why haue you taken the paines to leaue your blisfull seat to come to this place most wretched, to me, who am wretchednes it selfe, & not rather obtain for me, that I might come where you are, there eternally to behold, &

eternally to loue your beauties? you know (I know) that I desire nothing but death, which I only stay, to be iustly reuenged of your vniust murtherers.

Deare *Pyrocles* (said she) I am thy *Philoclea*, and as yet liuing: not mured, as you supposed, and therefore to be comforted. And with that gaue him her hand. But the sweet touch of that hande, seemed to his astraied powers so heauenly a thing, that it rather for a while confirmed him in his former beliefe: till she, with vehement protestations (and desire that it might be so, helping to perswade that it was so) brought him to yeeld; yet doubtfully to yeelde to this height of al comfort, that *Philoclea* liued: which witnessing with the teares of ioy, Alas (said he) how shall I beleue mine eies any more? or doo you yet but appeare thus vnto me, to stay me from some desperate end? For alas I sawe the excellent *Pamela* beheaded: I saw your head (the head indeede, and chiefe parte of all natures workes) standing in a dishe of golde, too meane a shrine (God wote) for such a relike. How can this be, my onely deare, and you liue? or if this be not so, how can I bel[ee]ue mine owne senses? and if I can not beleue the, why should I now beleue these blessed tidings they bring me?

The truth is (said she) my *Pyrocles*, that nether I (as you finde) nor yet my 3
deare sister is dead: although the mischieuously suttle *Cecropia* vsed slightes to make either of vs thinke so or other. For, hauing in vaine attempted the fardest of her wicked eloquence, to make eyther of vs yeeld to her sonne, and seeing that neither it, accompanied with great flatteries, and riche presents, could get any grounde of vs, nor yet the violent way she fell into of crueltie, tormenting our bodies, could preuayle with vs; at last, she made either of vs thinke the other dead, and so hoped to haue wrested our mindes to the forgetting of vertue: and first she gaue to mine eyes the miserable spectacle of my sisters (as I thought) death: but indeede not my sister: it was onely *Artesia*, she who so cunningly brought vs to this misery. Truly I am sorry for the poore Gentlewoman, though iustly she be punished for her double falshood: but *Artesia* muffled so, as you could not easily discerne her; and in my sisters apparell (which they had taken from her vnder colour of giuing her other) did they execute: And when I (for thy sake especially deare *Pyrocles*) could by no force, nor feare be won, they assayed the like with my sister, by bringing me downe vnder the scaffold, and (making me thrust my head vp through a hole they had made therin) they did put about my poore necke a dishe of gold, whereout they had beaten the bottome, so as hauing set bloud in it, you sawe how I played the parte of death (God knowes euen willing to haue done it in earnest) and so had they set me, that I reached but on tiptoes to the grounde, so as scarcely I could breathe, much lesse speake: And truly if they had kepte me there any whit longer, they had strangled me, in steed of beheading me: but then they tooke me away, and seeking to see their issue of this practise, they found my noble sister (for the deare loue she vouchsafeth to beare me) so griued withall, that she willed them to doo their vttermost crueltie vnto her: for she vowed, neuer to receiue sustenance of them, that had bene the causers of my murther: and finding both of vs, euen giuen ouer, not like to liue many houres longer, and my

sister *Pamela*, rather worse then my selfe, (the strength of her harte worse bearing those indignities) the good woman *Cecropia* (with the same pittie as folkes keepe foule, when they are not fatte inough for their eating) made vs know her deceipt, & let vs come one to another; with what ioye you can well imagine, who I know feele the like; sauing that we only thought our selues reserued to miseris, and therefore fitter for condoling, then congratulating. For my parte, I am fully perswaded, it is but with a little respite, to haue a more feeling sense of the tormentes she prepares for vs. True it is, that one of my guardians would haue me to beleue, that this proceedes of my gentle cousin *Amphialus*: who hauing hearde some inckling that we were euill entreated, had called his mother to his bedside, from whence he neuer rose since his last combat, and besought, & charged her vpon all the loue she bare him, to vse vs with all kindnesse: vowing, with all the imprecations he could imagine, that if euer he vnderstood for his sake, that I receiued further hurt then the want of my libertie, he woulde not liue an houre longer. And the good woman sware to me that he would kill his mother, if he knewe how I had bene dealte with; but that *Cecropia* keeps him from vnderstanding thinges how they passe, onely hauing heard a whispering, and my selfe named, he had (of aboundaunce, forsooth, of honorable loue) giuen this charge for vs. Whereupon this enlargement of mine was growne: for my parte I know too well their cunning (who leaue no mony vnoffered that may buy mine honour) to beleue any worde they say, but (my deare *Pyrocles*) euen looke for the worste, and prepare my selfe for the sam[e]. Yet I must confesse, I was content to robbe from death, and borrowe of my misery the sweet comfort of seeing my sweet sister, and moste sweete comforte of thee my *Pyrocles*. And so hauing leaue, I came stealing into your chamber: where (O Lord) what a ioy it was vnto me, to heare you solemnise the funerals of the poore *Philoclea*? That I my selfe might liue to heare my death bewailed? and by whom? by my deere *Pyrocles*. That I saw death was not strong enough to diuide thy loue from me? O my *Pyrocles*, I am too well paide for my paines I haue suffred: ioyfull is my woe for so noble a cause; and welcome be all miseris, since to thee I am so welcome. Alas how I pittied to heare thy pittie of me; and yet a great while I could not finde in my hart to interrupt thee, but often had euen pleasure to weepe with thee: and so kindly came forth thy lamentations, that they inforced me to lament to, as if indeed I had beene a looker on, to see poore *Philoclea* dye. Til at last I spake with you, to try whether I could remoue thee fro[m] sorrow, till I had almost procured my selfe a beating.

And with that she pretily smiled, which, mingled with her teares, one could not tell whether it were a mourning pleasure, or a delightful sorrow: but like whe[n] a few Aprill drops are scattered by a gentle *Zephyrus* among fine coloured flowers. But *Pyrocles*, who had felt (with so smal dista[n]ce of time) in himself the ouerthrow both of hope and despaire, knew not to what key he should tune his mind, either of ioy, or sorrow. But finding perfite reason in neither, suffred himselfe to be caried by the tide of his imagination, & his imaginations to be raised euen by the sway, which

hearing or seing, might giue vnto the[m]: he saw her aliue, he was glad to see her aliue: he saw her weep, he was sory to see her weep: he heard her co[m]fortable speeches, nothing more gladsome: he hard her prognosticating her own destructio[n], nothing more dolefull. But when he had a little taken breath from the panting motion of such contrarietie in passions, he fell to consider with her of her present estate, both comforting her, that certainly the worst of this storme was past, since alreadie they had done the worst, which mans wit could imagine: and that if they had determined to haue killed her, they would haue now done it: and also earnestly counselling her, and inhabling his counsels with vehement prayers, that she would so far second the hopes of *Amphialus*, as that she might but procure him liberty; promising then as much to her, as the liberalitie of louing corage durst promise to himselfe.

CHAP. 24.

1 *Amphialus excuseth.* 2 *The Princesses accuse.* 3 *Cecropia seeking their death* 4 *findeth her owne.* 5 *Amphialus-his death-panges and selfe-killing.* 6 *The wofull knowledge of it.*



Vt who would liuely describe the manner of these speeches, should paint out the lightsome coulours of affection, shaded with the deepest shadowes of sorrow, finding them betweene hope and feare, a kind of sweetenes in teares: til *Philoclea* content to receaue a kisse, and but a kisse of *Pyrocles*, sealed vp with mouing lippes, and closed them vp in comfort: and herselfe (for the passage was left betweene them open) went to her sister: with whom she had stayed but a while, fortifying one another (while *Philoclea* tempered *Pamelas* iust disdain, and *Pamela*ennobled *Philocleas* sweete humblenesse) when *Amphialus* came vnto them: who neuer since he had heard *Philoclea* named, coulde bee quiet in himselfe, although none of them about him (fearing more his mothers violence the his power) would discouer what had passed: and many messages he sent to know her estate, which brought answeere backe, according as it pleased *Cecropiato* indite them, till his hart full of vnfortunate affliction, more and more misgiuing him, hauing impatiently borne the delay of the nights vnfitnesse, this morning he gat vp, and though full of wounds (which not without daunger could suffer such exercise) he apparelled himselfe, and with a countenance, that shewed strength in nothing but in griefe, he came where the sisters were; and weakely kneeling downe, he besought them to pardon him, if they had not bene vsed in that castle according to their worthines, arid

his duetie; beginning to excuse small matters, poore Gentleman, not knowing in what sort they had bene handled.

But *Pamelaes* hie hart (hauing conceiued mortall hate for the iniurie offred to her and her sister) coule scarcely abide his sight, much lesse heare out his excuses; but interrupted him with these words. Traitor (said she) to thine owne blood, and false to the profession of so much loue as thou hast vowed, doo not defile our eares with thy excuses; but pursue on thy crueltie, that thou and thy godly mother haue vsed towards vs: for my part, assure thy self, and so do I answere for my sister (whose mind I know) I do not more desire mine owne safetie then thy destruction. Amazed with this speech, he turned his eye, ful of humble sorrowfulnesse, to *Philoclea*. And is this (most excellent Ladie) your doome of me also? She, sweete Ladie, sate weeping: for as her most noble kinsman she had euer fauoured him, & loued his loue, though she could not be in loue with his person; and now partly vnkindnes of his wrong, partly pittie of his case, made her sweete minde yeelde some teares, before she could answere; and her answere was no other, but that she had the same cause as her sister had. He replyed no further, but deliuering from his hart two or three (vntaught) sighes, rose, and with most low reuerence went out of their chamber: and streight by threatning torture, learned of one of the women, in what terrible manner those Princesses had bene vsed. But when he heard it, crying out, O God; and then not able to say any more (for his speech went backe to rebounde woe vpon his hart) he needed no iudge to goe vpon him: for no man could euer thinke any otherworthy of greater punishme[n]t, the[n] he thought himselfe.

Ful therefore of the horriblest despaire, which a most guiltie conscience could breed, with wild lookes promising some terrible issue, vnderstanding his mother was on the toppe of the leades, he caught one of his seruants swords from him, and none of them daring to stay him, he went vp, carried by furie, in steede of strength; where she was at that time, musing how to goe thorough with this matter, and resolving to make much of her Neeces in shew, and secretly to impoison them; thinking since they were not to be wonne, her sonnes loue woulde no otherwise be mitigated.

But when she sawe him come in with a sworde drawne, and a looke more terrible then the sworde, she streight was stricke

with the guiltines of her own conscience: yet the wel known humblenes of her son somewhat animated her, till he, comming nearer her, and crying to her, Thou damnable creature, onely fit to bring forth such a monster of vnhappines as I am; she fearing he would haue stricken her (though indeed he meant it not, but onely intended to kill himselfe in her presence) went backe so far, til ere she were aware, she ouerthrew her selfe from ouer the Leades, to receaue her deathes kisse at the ground: and yet was she not so happie as presently to dye, but that she had time with hellish agonie to see her sonnes mischiefe (whom she loued so well) before her end; when

she confest (with most desperate, but not repe[n]ting mind) the purpose she had to impoison the princesses, & would then haue had them murthred. But euerie bodie seing, and glad to see her end, had left obedience to her tyranny.

And (if it could be) her ruine increased woe in the noble hart of *Amphialus*,
5 who when he saw her fal, had his owne rage stayed a little with the soddennes of
her destruction. And was I not enough miserable before (said he) but that before my
end I must be the death of my mother? who how wicked so euer, yet I would she had
receaued her punishme[n]t by some other. O *Amphialus*) wretched *Amphialus*; thou
hast liued to be the death of thy most deere co[m]panion & friend *Philoxenus*, and of
his father, thy most carefull fosterfather. Thou hast liued to kill a Ladie with thine
owne handes, and so excellent, and vertuous a Lady, as the faire *Parthenia* was: thou
hast liued to see thy faithfull *Ismenus* slaine in succouring thee, and thou not able to
defende him: thou hast liued to shew thy selfe such a coward, as that one vnknowne
Knight could ouercome thee in thy Ladies presence: thou hast liued to beare armes
against thy rightfull Prince, thine owne vnckle: Thou hast liued to be accounted, and
iustly accounted, a traitor, by the most excellent persons, that this world holdeth: Thou
hast liued to bee the death of her, that gaue thee life. But ah wretched *Amphialus*, thou
hast liued for thy sake, and by thy authoritie, to haue *Philoclea* tormented: O heauens,
in *Amphialus* castle, where *Amphialus* commaunded; tormented, tormented? torment
of my soule, *Philoclea* tormented: and thou hast had such comfort in thy life, as to liue
all this while. Perchance this hande (used onely to mischieuous actes) thinkes it were
too good a deede to kill me[n]; or else filthy hande, onely woorthy to kill women, thou
art afraide to strike a man. Feare not cowardly hand, for thou shalt kill but a cowardly
traitor: and doo it gladlie; for thou shalt kill him, whome *Philoclea* hateth. With that,
furiously he tare open his doublet, and setting the pommell of the sworde to the
grounde, and the point to his brest, hee fell vpon it. But the sworde more mercifull
then hee to himselfe, with the slipping of the pommell, the point swarued, and razed
him but vpon the side: yet with the fall, his other wounds opened so, as hee bledde in
such extremitie, that *Charons* boate might verie well be carried in that flood: which
yet he sought to hasten by this meanes. As he opened his dublet, and fell, there fell
out *Philocleas* kniues, which *Cecropia* at the first had taken from her, and deliuered to
her sonne; and he had euer worne them next his hart, as the only relique he had of his
Saint: now seeing them by him, (his sword being so, as weakenes could not well draw
it out from his doublette) he tooke the kniues, and pulling one of them out, and many
times kissing it, and then, first with the passions of kindnes, and vnkindnes, melting in
teares, O deare kniues, you are come in a good time, to reuenue the wrong; I haue
done you all this while, in keeping you from her blessed side, and wearing; you
without your mistresse leaue. Alas, be witnes with me, yet before I die, (and well you
may, for you haue layn next my hart) that by my consent, your excellent mistresse
should haue had as much honour, as this poore place could haue brought foorth, for so
high an excellencie; and now I am condemned to die by her mouth. Alas, other, far

other hope would my desire often haue giuen me: but other euent it hath pleased her to lay vpon me. Ah *Philoclea* (with that his teares gushed out, as though they would striue to ouerflow his bloud) I would yet thou knewest how I loue thee. Vnworthie I am, vnhappy I am, false I am; but to thee, alas, I am not false. But what a traitor am I, any way to excuse him, whom she condemne? Since there is nothing left me, wherein I may do her seruice, but in punishing him, who hath so offended her. Deare knife, then doo your noble mistresses commaundement. With that, he stabbed himselfe into diuers places of his breast, and throte, vntill those wounds (with the old, freshly bleeding) brought him to the senselesse gate of Death.

By which time, his seruants hauing (with feare of his furie) abstained a while from comming vnto him, one of them (preferring duetifull affection before fearfull duetie) came in, and there found him swimming in his owne bloud, there giuing a pittiful spectacle, where the conquest was the conquerors ouerthrow, and self-ruine the onely triumph of a battaile, fought betweene him, and himselfe. The time full of danger, the person full of worthines, the maner full of horror, did greatlie astonish all the beholders; so as by and by, all the town was full of it, and then of all ages came running vp to see the beloued body; euery body thinking, their safetie bledde in his woundes, and their honor died in his destruction. 6

CHAP. 25.

1 *Anaxius-his rages for the death* 2, *Queen Helens comming for the cure of Amphialus.* 3 *Her complaints ouer him.* 4 *Her pasport and safeconduct, to carrie him to her Chirurgion.* 5 *The peoples sorow,* 6 *set downe in a song.*



Vt when it came, (and quickly it came) to the eares of his proude friende *Anaxius*, (who by that time was growe[n] well of his wou[n]d, but neuer had come abroad, disdayning to abase himselfe to the companie of any other but of *Amphialus*) he was exceedingly vexed, either with kindnes, or (if a proud hart be not capable therof) with disdain, that he, who had the honor to be called the frend of *Anaxius*, should come to such an vnexpected ruine. Therefore, then comming abroad, with a face red in anger, and engrained in pride, with liddes rayсед vp, and eyes leuelling from toppe to the toe of them that met him, treading, as though he thought to make the earth shake vnder him, with his hande vpon his sword; short speeches, and disdainfull answeres, giuing streight order to his two brothers, to goe take the oath of obedience, in his name, of all the souldiers, and Citizens in the towne: and withall, to swear them to reuenge the death of *Amphialus*, vpon *Basilius*. He 1

himself went to see him, calling for all the surgeons & physicians there; spending some time in vewing the body, and threatning them all to be hanged, if they did not heale him. But they (taking view of his woundes, and falling down at *Anaxius* feete) assured him, that they were mortall, & no possible meanes to keep him about two dayes aliue: and he stood partly in doubt, to kil, or saue them, betweene his own furie, and their humblenes. But vowing, with his owne hands to kill the two sisters, as causers of his friends death: when his brothers came to him, & told him they had done his commaundement, in hauing receaued the oath of allegeance, with no great difficultie: the most part terrified by their valure, & force of their seruants, & many that had bene forward actors in the rebellion, willing to do any thing, rather then come vnder the subiection of *Basilus* againe; and such fewe as durst gainesay, being cut of by present slaughter.

But withall (as the chiefe matter of their comming to him) they told *Anaxius*,
2
that the faire Queen *Helen* was come, with an honorable retinue, to the towne:
hu[m]blie desiring leaue to see *Amphialus*, who she had sought in many places of the
world; & lastly, being returned into her owne countrie, she heard together of the late
siege and of his combat with the strange Knight, who had dangerously hurt him.
Wherupon, full of louing care (which she was content euen to publish to the world,
how vngratefully soeuer he dealt with her) she had gotten leaue of *Basilus*, to come
by his frontiers, to cary away *Amphialus* with her, to the excellentest surgeon then
known, whom she had in her Countrey, but so olde, as not able to trauaile: but had
giuen her soueraigne annointments, to preserue his body withal, till he might be
brought vnto him: and that *Basilus* had graunted leaue: either naturall kindnes
preuailing ouer all the offences done, or rather glad to make any passage, which might
leade him out of his countrie, and from his daughters. This
discourse *Lycurgus* vnderstanding of *Helene*, deliuered to his brother, with her
vehement desire to see the body, and take her last farewell of him. *Anaxius*, though he
were fallen out with all womankind (in respect of the hate he bare the sisters, whom
he accounted murtherers of *Amphialus*) yet at his brothers request, graunted her leaue.
And she (poore Lady) with grieuous expectation, and languishing desire, caried her
faint legs to the place where he lay, ether not breathing, or in all appearance breathing
but death.

In which pittious plight when she saw him, though Sorow had set before her
3
minde the pittifullest conceit thereof that it could paint, yet the present sight went
beyond all former apprehensions: so that beginning to kneele by the bodie, her sight
ranne from her seruice, rather then abide such a sight; and she fell in a soun vpon
him, as if she could not choose but die of his wounds. But when her breath (awearie to
be closed vp in woe) broke the prison of her faire lippes, and brought memorie (with
his seruaunt senses) to his naturall office, she yet made the breath conuey these
dolefull wordes with it. Alas (said she) *Amphialus*, what strange diseases be these, that
hauing sought thee so long, I should be now sorie to finde thee? that these eyes should

looke vpon *Amphialus*, and be grieued withall? that I should haue thee in my power without glory, and embrace thee without comfort? How often haue I blest the means that might bring me neer thee? Now, woe worth the cause that brings me so neer thee. Often, alas, often hast thou disdained my teares: but now, my deare *Amphialus*, receiue them: these eies can serue for nothing else, but weepe for thee; since thou wouldest neuer vouchsafe them thy comforte, yet disdaine not them thy sorrowe. I would they had bene more deare vnto thee; for then hadst thou liued. Woe is me that thy noble harte could loue who hated thee, and hate who loued thee. Alas, why should not my faith to thee couer my other defects, who only sought to make my Crowne thy foote-stoole, my selfe thy seruauant? that was all my ambition; and alas thou disdainedst it to serue them, by whom thy incomparable selfe were disdained. Yet (ô *Philoclea*) wheresoeuer you are, pardon me, if I speake in the bitternes of my soule, excellent may you be in all other things (and excellent sure you are since he loued you) your want of pittie, where the fault onely was infinitenesse of desert, cannot be excused. I would, O God, I would that you had graunted his deserued suite of marrying you, and that I had bene your seruing-maide, to haue made my estate the foile of your felicitie, so he had liued. How many weary steps haue I trodden after thee, while my onely complaint was, that thou werte vnkinde? Alas I would now thou werte, to be vnkind. Alas why wouldest thou not com[m]aund my seruice, in persuading *Philoclea* to loue thee? who could, or (if euery one could) who would haue recounted thy perfections so well, as I? who with such kindly passions could haue stirred pittie for thee as I? who should haue deliuered not onely the wordes but the teares I had of thee? and so shouldest thou haue exercised thy disdaine in me, and yet vsed my seruice for thee.

With that the body mouing somewhat, and giuing a grone full of deaths musicke, she fell vpon his face, & kist him, and with all cried out. O miserable I, 4
that haue onely fauour by miserie: and then, would she haue returned to a fresh careere of complaints, when an aged and wise Gentleman came to her, and besought her, to remember what was fit for her greatnesse, wisdom, & honour: and with al, that it was fitter to shew her loue, in carying the body to her excellent Surgeon, first applying such excellent medicines as she had receiued of him for that purpose, rather then onely shew her selfe a woman-louer in fruitles lame[n]tations. She was streight warned with the obedience of an ouerthrowen mind, and therefore leauing some surgeons of her owne to dresse the body, went her selfe to *Anaxius*, & humbling her selfe to him, as lowe as his owne pride could wish, besought him, that since the surgeons there had vtterly giuen him ouer, that he would let her carrie him away in her litter with her, since the worst he could haue should be to die, and to die in her armes that loued him aboue al things; & where he should haue such monuments erected ouer him, as were fit for her loue, & his worthines: beseeching him withall, since she was in a country of enemies (where she trusted more to *Anaxius* valour, then *Basilus* promise) that he would conuey them safely out of those territories. Her

reasons something moued him, but nothing thoroughly perswaded him, but the last request of his helpe: which he straight promised, warra[n]ting all securitie, as long as that sword had his master aliue. She as happy therein as vnhappines could be (hauing receiued as small co[m]fort of her owne surgeons as of the others) caused yet the body to be easily conueyed into the litter: all the people then beginning to roare and crie, as though neuer till then they had lost their Lorde. And if the terrour of *Anaxius* had not kept them vnder, they would haue mutinied, rather then suffered his bodie to be caried away.

But *Anaxius* him selfe riding before the litter, with the choyce men of that place, they were affraid euen to crie, though they were readie to crie for feare: but (because that they might doo) euery bodie forced (euen with harming themselues) to doo honour to him: some throwing themselues vpon the grounde; some tearing their clothes, and casting duste vpon their heades, and some euen wounding themselues, and sprinkling their owne bloud in the aire. Among the rest, one accounted good in that kinde, and made the better by the true feeling of sorrowe, roared out a song of Lamentation, which (as well as might be) was gathered vp in this forme. 5

*S*ince that to death is gone the shepheard hie,

*Whom most the silly shepheard pipe did pryse,
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.* 6

*And you ô trees (if any life there lies
In trees) now through your porous barkes receaue
The straunge resounde of these my causefull cries:
And let my breath vpon your braunches leaue,
My breath distinguish'd into wordes of woe,
That so I may signes of my sorrowe leaue.
But if among yourselues some one tree growe,
That aptest is to figure miserie,
Let it embassage beare your grieues to showe.
The weeping Myrrhe I thinke will not denie
Her helps to this, this iustest cause of plaint.
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.*

*And thou poore Earth, whom fortune doth attaint
In Natures name to suffer such a harme,
As for to loose thy gemme, and such a Sainct,
Vpon thy face let coaly Rauens swarme:
Let all the Sea thy teares accounted be:
Thy bowels with all killing mettals arme.*

*Let golde now rust, let Diamonds waste in thee:
Let pearls be wan with woe their damme doth beare;
Thy selfe henceforth the light doo neuer see.
And you, ô flowers, which sometimes Princes were,
Till these straunge altrings you did hap to trie,
Of Princes losse your selues for tokens reare.
Lilly in mourning blacke thy whitenes die:
O Hiacinthe let Ai be on thee still.
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.*

*O Echo, all these woods with roaring fill,
And doo not onely marks the accents last,
But all, for all reach out my wailefull will:
One Echo to another Echo cast
Sounde of my griefes, and let it neuer ende,
Till that it hath all woods and waters past.
Nay to the heau'ns your iust complaining sende,
And stay the starrs inconstant constant race,
Till that they doo vnto our dolours bende:
And aske the reason of that speciall grace,
That they, which haue no liues, should liue so long,
And vertuous soules so soone should loose their place?
Aske, if in great men good men doo so thronge,
That he for want of elbowe roome must die?
Or if that they be skante, if this be wronge?
Did Wisedome this our wretched time espie
In one true chest to rob all Vertues treasure?
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.*

*And if that any counsell you to measure
Your dolefull tunes, to them still playning say,
To well felte grieffe, plainte is the onely pleasure.
O light of Sunne, which is entitled day,
O well thou doost that thou no longer bidest;
For mourning light her blacke weedes may display.
O Phœbus with good cause thy face thou bidest,
Rather then haue thy all-beholding eye
Fould with this sight, while thou thy chariot guidest.
And well (me thinks) becomes this vaultie skie
A stately tombe to couer him deceased.
Your dolefull tunes sweet Muses now applie.*

*O Philomela with thy brest oppressed
By shame and grieve, helpe, helpe me to lament
Such cursed harmes as cannot be redressed.
Or if thy mourning notes be fully spent,
Then giue a quiet eare vnto my playning:
For I to teach the world complainte am bent.
You dimmy clowdes, which well employ your stayning
This cheerefull aire with your obscured cheere,
Witnesse your wofull teares with daily rayning.
And if, ô Sunne, thou euer didst appeare,
In shape, which by mans eye might be perceiued;
Vertue is dead, now set thy triumph here.
Now set thy triumph in this world, bereaued
Of what was good, where now no good doth lie;
And by thy pompe our losse will be conceaued.
O notes of mine your selues together tie:
With too much grieve me thinkes you are dissolued.
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.*

*Time euer old, and yonge is still reuolued
Within it selfe, and neuer tasteth ende:
But mankind is for aye to nought resolued.
The filthy snake her aged coate can mende,
And getting youth againe, in youth doth flourish:
But vnto Man, age euer death doth sende.
The very trees with grafting we can cherish,
So that we can long time produce their time:
But Man which helpeth them, helplesse must perish.
Thus, thus the mindes, which ouer all doo clime,
When they by yeares experience get best graces,
Must finish then by deaths detested crime.
We last short while, and build long lasting places:
Ah let vs all against foule Nature crie:
We Natures workes doo helpe, she vs defaces.
For how can Nature vnto this reply?
That she her child, I say, her best child killeth?
Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now apply.*

*Alas, me thinkes, my weakned voice but spilleth,
The vehement course of this iust lamentation:*

*Me thinks, my sound no place with sorrow filleth,
 I know not I, but once in detestation
 I haue my selfe, and all what life containeth,
 Since Death on Vertues fort hath made inuasion.
 One word of woe another after traineth:
 Ne doo I care how rude be my inuention,
 So it be seene what sorrow in me raigneth.
 O Elements, by whose (men say) contention,
 Our bodies be in liuing power maintained,
 Was this mans death the fruite of your dissention?
 O Phisickes power, which (some say) hath restrained
 Approch of death, alas thou helpst meagerly,
 When once one is for Atropos distrained.
 Great be Physitions brags, but aid is beggerly,
 When rooted moisture failes, or groweth drie,
 They leaue off al, and say, death comes too eagerlie.
 They are but words therefore that men do buy,
 Of any since God Æsculapius ceased.
 Your dolefull tunes sweete Muses now applie.
 Iustice, iustice is now (alas) oppressed:
 Bountifulnes hath made his last conclusion:
 Goodnes for best attire in dust is dressed.
 Shepherds bewaile your vttermost confusion;
 And see by this picfure to you presented,
 Death is our home, life is but a delusion.
 For see alas, who is from you absented?
 Absented? nay I say for euer banished
 From such as were to dye for him contented?
 Out of our sight in turne of hand is vanished
 Shepherd of shepherds, whose well settled order
 Priuate with welth, publike with quiet garnished.
 While he did liue, farre, farre was all disorder;
 Example more preuailing then direction,
 Far was homestrife, and far was foe from border.
 His life a law, his looke a full correction:
 As in his health we healthfull were preserued,
 So in his sicknesse grew our sure infection.
 His death our death. But ah; my Muse hath swarued,
 From such deepe plaint as should such woes descrie,
 Which he of vs for euer hath deserued.
 The stile of heaue hart can neuer flie*

*So high, as should make such a paine notorious:
 Cease Muse therefore: thy dart ô Death applie;
 And farewell Prince, whom goodnesse hath made glorious.*

CHAP. 26.

*1 The publike griefe amplified. 2 Anaxius death-threatning
 to the Princesses. 3 Their resolutenes in it. 4 His returne,
 and stop. 5 Zelmanes braue challenge vnto him 6 scorned
 by him. 7 His loue to Pamela scorned by her. 8 His bro-
 thers braue loues haue as meane successe.*



He general consort of al such numbers mourning, perfourmed so the
 naturall times of sorrow; that euen to
 them (if any such were) that felt not the losse, yet others grief
 taught them griefe; hauing before their compassionate sense so
 passionate a spectacle, of a young man, of great beautie, beautified with
 great honour, honored by great valure, made of inestimable valure, by the noble vsing
 of it, to lye there languishing, vnder the arrest of death, and a death, where the manner
 could be no comfort to the discomfortableness of the matter. But when the bodie was
 carried thorough the gate, and the people (sauing such as were appointed) not suffred
 to goe further, then was such an vniuersal crie, as if they had all had but one life, and
 all receiued but one blow.

Which so moued *Anaxius* to consider the losse of his friend, that (his minde apter to
 reuenge, then tendernesse) he presently

giuing order to his brother to keepe the prisoners safe, and vnuisited, till his
 retourne from coueying *Helen*, he sent a messenger to the sisters, to tel them this
 curteous message: that at his retourne, with his owne hands, he would cut off their
 heads, and send them for tokens to their father.

This message was brought vnto the sisters, as they sate at that time together
 with *Zelmae*, conferring how to carrie themselues, hauing heard of the death
 of *Amphialus*. And as no expectation of death is so painfull, as where the
 resolution is,, hindred by the intermixing of hopes, so did this new alarum, though not
 remoue, yet moue somewhat the co[n]stancy of their minds, which were so
 vnconstantly dealt with. But within a while, the excellent *Pamela* had brought her
 minde againe to his old acquaintance: and then, as carefull for her sister (whom most
 deerely she loued) Sister (said she) you see how many acts our Tragedy hath: Fortune
 is not yet a wearie of vexing vs: but what? A shippe is not counted strong for byding
 one storme? It is but the same trumpet of death, which now perhaps giues the last

sounde: and let vs make that profile of our former miseries, that in them we learned to dye willingly. Truly said *Philoclea*, deare sister, I was so beaten with the euils of life, that though I had not vertue enough to despise the sweetnesse of it, yet my weaknesse bredde that strength, to be wearie of the paines of it: onely I must confesse, that little hope, which by these late accidents was awaked in me, was at the first angrie withall. But euen in the darkenesse of that horroure, I see a light of comfort appeare; and how can I treade amisse, that see *Pamelas* steppes? I would onely (O that my wish might take place) that my schoole-Mistres might liue, to see me say my lesson truly. Were that a life, my *Philoclea*? said *Pamela*. No, no, (said she) let it come, and put on his worst face: for at the worst it is but a bug-bear. Ioy is it to me to see you so well resolued; and since the world will not haue vs, let it lose vs. Onely (with that she stayed a little, and sight) onely my *Philoclea*, (then she bowed downe, and whispered in her eare) onely *Musidorus*, my shepheard, comes betweene me and death, and makes me thinke I should not dye, because I know he would not I should dye. With that *Philoclea* sighed also, saying no more, but looking vpon *Zelmane*: who was walking vp & downe the chamber, hauing heard this message from *Anaxius*, and hauing in times past heard of his nature, thought him like enough to performe it, which winded her againe into the former maze of perplexitie. Yet debating with her selfe of the manner how to preuent it, she continued her musing humour, little saying, or indeed, little finding in her hart to say, in a case of such extremitie, where peremptorily death was threatned: and so stayed they; hauing yet that comfort, that they might tarrie together. *Pamela* nobly, *Philoclea* sweetly, and *Zelmane* sadly, and desperately none of them entertaining sleepe, which they thought should shortly begin, neuer to awake.

But *Anaxius* came home, hauing safely conducted *Helen*: and safely he might 4
wel do it: For though many of *Basilus* Knights would haue attempted something vpon *Anaxius*, by that meanes to deliuer the Ladies, yet *Philanax*, hauing receiued his masters commadement, & knowing his word was giue[n], would not co[n]sent vnto it. And the black-Knight (who by the was able to carie abroad his wou[n]ds) did not know therof; but was bringing forces, by force to deliuer his Lady. So as *Anaxius*, interpreting it rather feare, then faith, and making euen chance an argument of his vertue, returned: and as soone as he was returned, with a felon hart calling his brothers vp with him, he went into the chamber, where they were all three together; with full intention to kill the sisters with his owne hands, and send their heads for tokens to their father: Though his brothers (who were otherwise inclined) dissuaded him: but his reuerence stayed their perswasions. But when he was come into the chamber, with the very words of cholerike threatning climbing vp his throate, his eies first lighted vpon *Pamela*; who hearing he was comming, and looking for death, thought she would keepe her owne maiestie in welcomming it; but the beames thereof so strake his eyes, with such a counterbuffe vnto his pride, that if his anger could not so quickly loue, nor his pride so easily honor, yet both were forced to finde a worthinesse.

Which while it bred a pause in him, *Zelmane* (who had ready in her mind both what and how to say) stept out vnto him, & with a resolute stayednes (void either of anger, kindnes, disdain, or humblenesse) spake in this sort. *Anaxius* (said she) if Fame haue not bene ouerpartiall to thee, thou art a man of exceeding valour. Therefore I doo call thee euen before that vertue, and will make it the iudge betweene vs. And now I doo affirme, that to the eternall blot of all the faire actes that thou hast done, thou doest weakly, in seeking without daunger to reuenge his death, whose life [with] daunger thou mightst perhaps haue preserued: thou doost cowardly, in going about by the death of these excellent Ladies, to preuent the iust punishme[n]t, that hereafter they by the powers, which they better then their father, or any other could make, might lay vpon thee; and doost most basely, in once presenting thy selfe as an executioner; a vile office vpon men, and in a iust cause: beyond the degree of any vile worde, in so vniust a cause, and vpon Ladies, and such Ladies. And therefore, as a hangman, I say, thou art vnworthy to be counted a Knight, or to be admitted into the companie of Knights. Neither for what, I say, will I alleadge other reasons, of wisdome, or iustice, to prooue my speech, because I know thou doost disdain to be tied to their rules: but euen in thine owne vertue (whereof thou so much gloriest) I will make my triall: and therefore defie thee, by the death of one of vs two, to proue, or disproue these reproaches. Choose thee what armes thou likest, I onely demaund, that these Ladies (whom I defend) may in liberty see the combat.

When *Zelmane* began her speech, the excellency of her beautie, and grace, made him a little content to heare. Besides that, a new lesson he had read in *Pamela*, had already taught him some regard. But when she entered into brauerie of speech, he thought at first, a mad, and railing humor possest her; till, finding the speeches hold well together, and at length come to flatte challenge of combat; he stood leaning back with his bodie and head, sometimes with bent browes looking vpon the one side of her, sometimes of the other, beyonde maruell marvailing, that he, who had neuer heard such speeches from any Knight, should be thus rebuffed by a woman; and that maruell made him heare out her speech: which ended, he turned his head to his brother *Zoilus*, and said nothing, but onely lifting vp his eyes, smiled. But *Zelmane* finding his minde, *Anaxius* (said she) perchance thou disdaynest to answere me, because, as a woman, thou thinkest me not fitte to be fought withall. But I tell thee, that I haue bene trayned vp in martial matters, with so good successe, that I haue many times ouercome better Knightes then thy selfe: and am well knowen to be equall in feates of armes, to the famous *Pyrocles*, who slewe thy valiaunt Vncle, the Giant *Euardes*. The remembraunce of his Vncles death something netled him, so as he answered thus.

Indeed (saide he) any woman may be as valiaunt as that coward, and traytorly boy, who slewe my Vncle trayterouslie, and after ranne from me in the plaine field. Fiue thousand such could not haue ouercome *Euardes*, but by falshood. But I sought him all ouer *Asia*, following him still from one of his cony-holes to another: till, comming

into this Countrie, I heard of my friendes being besieged, and so came to blowe away the wretches that troubled him. But wheresoeuer the miserable boy flie, heauen, nor hell, shall keep his harte from being torne by these handes. Thou lyst in thy throate (said *Zelmane*) that boye, where euer he went, did so noble actes, as thy harte (as proude as it is) dares not thinke of, much lesse perfourme. But to please thee the better with my presence, I tell thee, no creature can be neerer of kinne to him, then my selfe: and so well we loue, that he woulde not be sorrier for his owne death, then for mine: I being begotten by his father, of an *Amazon* Ladie. And therefore, thou canst not deuise to reuenge thy selfe more vpon him, then by killing me: which, if thou darest doo manfullie, doo it; otherwise, if thou harme these incomparable Ladies, or my selfe, without daring to fight with me, I protest before these Knightes, and before heauen, and earth, (that will reueale thy shame) that thou art the beggerliest dastardly villaine, that dishonoureth the earth with his steppes: and if thou lettest me ouer-liue them, so will I blaze thee. But all this could not moue *Anaxius*, but that he onely said, euill should it become the terror of the world, to fight, much lesse to skolve with thee.

But (said he) for the death of these same (pointing to the Princesses) of my grace, I giue them life. And withall, going to

Pamela, and offring to take her by the chin, And as for you, Minion (said he) 7
yeeld but gently to my will, and you shall not only liue, but liue so happely, He
would haue said further, whe[n] *Pamela*, displeas'd both with words, matter, and
maner, putting him away with her faire hand, Proud beast (said she) yet thou 8
plaiest worse thy Comedy, then thy Tragedy. For my part, assure thy selfe, since
my destiny is such, that at ech moment my life & death stand in equall balance, I had
rather haue thee, & think thee far fitter to be my hangman, then my husband. Pride &
anger, would faine haue cruelly reue[n]ged so bitter an answer, but alredey *Cupid* had
begun to make it his sport, to pull his plumes: so that, vnused to a way of courtesie,
and put out of his byas of pride, he hastily went away, grumbling to himselfe, betwene
threatning & wishing; leauing his brothers with the[m]: the elder of whom, *Lycurgus*,
liked *Philoclea*, & *Zoilus* would nedes loue *Zelmane*; or at lest, entertain themselues
with making the[m] beleue so. *Lycurgus* more braggard, & nere his brothers humor,
bega[n], with setting foorth their bloud, their deedes, how many they had despised, of
most excellent wome[n]; how much they were bou[n]d to them, that would seek that
of them. In summe, in all his speeches, more like the bestower, then the desirer of
felicitie. Whom it was an excellent pastime (to those that would delight in the play of
vertue) to see, with what a wittie ignorance she would not vnderstand: and how,
acknowledging his perfections, she would make, that one of his perfections, not to be
iniurio[us] to Ladies. But when he knew not how to replie, then would he fall to
touching and toying, still vewing his graces in no glasse but self-liking. To
which, *Philocleas* shamefastnes, and humblenes, were as strong resisters, as choller,
and disdaine. For though she yeelded not, he thought she was to be ouercome: and
that thought a while stayed him from further violence. But *Zelmane* had eye to his

behaviour, and set in her memorie, vpon the score of Reuenge, while she her selfe was no lesse attempted by *Zoilus*; who lesse full of bragges, was forwardest in offering (indeed) dishonourable violence.

CHAP. 27.

1 *Zelma*nes *perswasions to temporize, and referre them to Basilius.* 2 *Anaxius-his embassage to treate the marriage.* 3 *Basilius recourse to a newe Oracle,* 4 *and his negatiue thereon.* 5 *The flattering relation of his Mercurie.* 6 *The brothers course to resist force without, and vse force within.*



But when after their fruitlesse labours they had gone away, called by their brother, (who began to be perplexed betweene new conceaued desires, and disdaine, to be disdained) *Zelma*ne (who with most assured quietnesse of iudgement looked into their present estate) earnestly perswaded the two sisters, that to auoide the mischiefes of prowde outrage, they would onely so farre sute their behaviour to their estates, as they might winne time; which as it could not bring them to worse case then they were, so it might bring forth unexpected relief. And why (said *Pamela*) shal we any longer flatter aduersity? Why should we delight to make our selues any longer balls to iniurious *Fortune*, since our owne kinne are content traitorously to abuse vs? Certainly, in mishap it may be some comforte to vs, that we are lighted in these fellowes handes, who yet will keepe vs from hauing cause of being miserable by our friends meanes. Nothing grieues me more, then that you, noble Ladie *Zelma*ne (to whome the worlde might haue made vs able to doo honour) shoulde receaue onely hurte by the contagion of our miserie. As for me, and my sister, vndoubtedly it becomes our birth to thinke of dying nobly, while we haue done, or suffered nothing, which might make our

soule ashamed at the parture from these bodies. Hope is the fawning traitour of the minde, while vnder colour of friendship, it robbes it of his chiefe force of resolution. Vertuous and faire Ladie (said *Zelma*ne) what you say is true; and that truth may well make vp a part in the harmonie of your noble thoughts. But yet the time (which ought alwaies to be one) is not tuned for it; while that may bring foorth any good, doo not barre your selfe thereof: for then would be the time to die nobly, when you ca[n] not liue nobly. Then so earnestly she perswaded with them both, to referre themselues to their fathers consent (in obtayning whereof they knewe some while would be spent) and by that meanes to temper the mindes of their prowde

woers; that in the ende *Pamela* yeelded to her, because she spake reason; and *Philoclea* yeelded to her reason, because she spake it.

And so when they were againe sollicited in that little pleasing petition, *Pamela* forced her selfe to make answer to *Anaxius*, that if her father gaue his consent she would make her selfe belieue, [t]hat such was the heauenly determination, since she had no meanes to auoide it. *Anaxius* (who was the most franke promiser to him selfe of successe) nothing doubted of *Basilus* consent, but rather assured him selfe, he would be his oratour in that matter: And therefore he chose out an officious seruaunt (whome he esteemed very wise, because he neuer found him but iust of his opinion) and willed him to be his embassadour to *Basilus*, and to make him knowe, that if he meant to haue his daughter both safe and happie, and desired him selfe to haue such a sonne in lawe, as would not onely protect him in his quiet course, but (if he listed to accept it) would giue him the monarchy of the worlde, that then he should receaue *Anaxius*, who neuer before knewe what it was to pray any thing. That if he did not, he would make him know, that the power of *Anaxius* was in euery thing beyonde his will, and yet his will not to be resisted by any other power. His seruaunt with smiling and caste-*vp* looke, desired God to make his memorie able to containe the treasure of that wise speach: and therefore besought him to repeate it againe, that by the oftener hearing it, his mind might be the better acquainted with the diuinenesse therof, and that being graciously granted, he then doubted not by carying with him in his conceit, the grace wherewith *Anaxius* spake it, to persuade rocky minds to their owne harme: so little doubted he to win *Basilus* to that, which he thought would make him thinke the heauens opened, when he harde but the proffer thereof. *Anaxius* grauely allowed the probabilitie of his coniecture, and therefore sent him away, promising him he should haue the bringing *vp* of his second sonne by *Pamela*.

The messenger with speede perfourmed his Lords commaundement to *Basilus*, who by nature quiet, and by superstition made doubtfull, was lothe to take any matter of armes in hand, wherin already he had found so slowe successe; though *Philanax* vehemently *vrged* him therunto, making him see that his retiring back did encourage iniuries. But *Basilus* betwixt the feare of *Anaxius* might, the passio[n] of his loue, & iealousie of his estate, was so perplexed, that not able to determine, he tooke the com[m]on course of me[n], to flie only the[n] to deuotio[n], whe[n] they want resolutio[n]: so detaining the messeger with delaies, he deferred the directing of his course to the counsell of *Apollo*, which because himself at that time could not well go to require, he entrusted the matter to his best trusted *Philanax*: who (as one in whom obedience was a sufficient reason vnto him) wente with diligence to *Delphos*, where being entred into the secrete place of the temple, and hauing performed the sacrifices usuall, the spirite that possesseth the pro[p]hesying woman, with a sacred fury, attended not his demaund, but as if it would argue him of incredulitie,

tolde him, not in darke wonted speeches, but plainely to be vnderstood, what he came for, and that he should returne to *Basilus*, and will him to denie his daughters to *Anaxius* and his brothers, for that they were reserued for such as were better beloued of the gods. That he should not doubt, for they should returne vnto him safely and speedily. And that he should keepe on his solitary course, till bothe *Philanax* and *Basilus* fully agreed in the vnderstanding of the former prophecie: withall, commaunding *Philanax* from thence forward to giue tribute, but not oblation, to humane

wisedome.

Philanax then finding that reason cannot shewe it self more reasonable, then to leaue reasoning in things about reason, returnes to his Lorde, and like one that preferred truth before the maintaining of an opinion, hidde nothing from him, nor from thence forth durste any more dissuade him, from that which he founde by the celestially prouidence directed; but he him selfe looking to repayre the gouernment as much as in so broken an estate by ciuill dissencion he might, and fortifying with notable arte, bothe the lodges, so as they were almost made vnapprochable, he left *Basilus* to bemoane the absence of his daughters, and to bewaile the imprisonment of *Zelma*: yet wholly giuen holily to obey the Oracle, he gaue a resolute negatiue vnto the messenger of *Anaxius*, who all this while had waited for it, yet in good termes desiring him to shewe him selfe, in respect of his birth and profession, so Princely a Knight, as without forcing him to seeke the way of force, to deliuer in noble sorte those Ladies vnto him, and so should the iniurie haue bene in *Amphialus*, and the benefite in him.

The messenger went backe with this answer, yet hauing euer vsed to sugre any thing which his Maister was to receaue, he tolde him, that when *Basilus* first vnderstood his desires, he did ouerreach so farre all his most hopefull expectations, that he thought it were too great a boldnesse to harken to such a man, in whome the heauens had such interest, without asking the Gods counsell, and therefore had sent his principall counsailour to *Delphos*, who although he kepte the matter neuer so secrete, yet his diligence, inspired by *Anaxius* his priuiledge ouer all worldly thinges, had founde out the secrete, which was, that he should not presume to marrie his daughters, to one who already was enrolled among the demie-Gods, and yet much lesse he should dare the attempting to take them out of his hands.

Anaxius, who till then had made Fortune his creator, and Force his God, nowe beganne to finde an other wisdom to be

about, that iudged so rightly of him: and where in this time of his seruantes wayting for *Basilus* resolution, he and his brothers had courted their Ladies, as whome they vouchsafed to haue for their wiues, he resolved now to dally no longer in delays, but to make violence his Oratour, since he had found persuasions had gotten nothing but answeres. Which intention he opened to his brothers, who hauing all this

while wanted nothing to take that way, but his authoritie, gaue spurres to his running, and, vnworthy men, neither feeling vertue in themselues, nor tendring it in others, they were headlong to make that euill consorte of loue and force, when *Anaxius* had worde, that from the Tower there were descried some companies of armed men, marching towards the towne; wherefore he gaue presente order to his seruantes, and souldiers, to goe to the gates and walles, leauing none within but himselfe, and his brothers: his thoughts then so full of their intended pray, that *Mars*-his lowdest trumpet could scarcely haue awaked him.

CHAP. 28.

1 *Zoilus the messenger, 2 and first offerer of force, 3 is forced to flie, and die. 4 Lycurgus pointed to kill, 5 is fought withal, 6 foiled, 7 & killed. 8 Anaxius the Reuenger with Pyrocles the Punisher braue, and brauely combatted.*



Vt while he was directing what he would haue done, his yongest brother *Zoilus*, glad that he had the

commission, went in the name of *Anaxius*, to tel the sisters, that since he had answeere from their father, that he and his

1

brother *Licurgus*, should haue them in what sort it pleased them, that they would now graunt them no longer time, but presently to determine, whether they thought it more honorable comfort to be compelled, or perswaded. *Pamela* made him answeere, that in a matter whereon the whole state of her life depended, and wherin she had euer answered, she would not lead, but follow her parents pleasure; she thought it reason she should, either by letter, or particular messeger vndersta[n]d somthing from the[m]selues, & not haue her beleef bound to the report of their partiall seruants, & therefore, as to their words, she & her sister, had euer a simple & true resolution, so against their vniust force, God, they hoped, would either arme their liues, or take away their liues.

Wel Ladies (said he) I wil leaue my brothers, who by & by wil come vnto you, to be their own embassadors, for my parte, I must now do my self seruice. And with that turning vp his mustachoes, and marching as if he would begin a pauen, he went toward *Zelmane*. But *Zelmane* (hauing had all this while of the messengers being with *Basilus*, much to do to keepe those excellent Ladies from seeking by the passport of death, to escape those base dangers whereunto they found themselues subiect) still hoping that *Musidorus* would finde some meanes to deliuer them; and therefore had often both by her owne example, & comfortable reasons, perswaded the[m] to ouerpasse many insolent indignities of their proud suters, who thought it was a sufficient fauour not to doo the vttermost iniurie, now come againe to the streight she

2

most feared for them, either of death or dishonor, if heroicall courage would haue let her, she had beene beyonde herselfe amazed: but that yet held vp her wit, to attend the vttermost occasion, which eue[n] then brought his hairie forehead vnto her: for *Zoilus* smacking his lippes, as for the Prologue of a kisse, and something advancing himselfe, Darling (said he) let thy hart be full of ioy, and let thy faire eies be of counsel with it, for this day thou shalt haue *Zoilus*, who[m] many haue lo[n]ged for; but none shall haue him, but *Zelmane*. And oh, how much glory I haue to think what a race will be betwene vs. The world, by the heauens, the world will be too litle for them: And with that, he would haue put his arme about her necke, but she, withdrawing her selfe from him, My Lord (said she) much good may your thoughts do you, but that I may not dissemble with you, my natiuitie being cast by one that neuer failed in any of his prognostications, I haue bene assured, that I should neuer be apt to beare children. But since you wil honor me with so hie fauor, I must onely desire that I may performe a vow which I made among my coutriwomen, the famous *Amazons*, that I would neuer marrie none, but such one as was able to withstand me in Armes: therefore, before I make mine own desire seruiceable to yours, you must vouchsafe to lend me armor and weapons, that at least, with a blow or two of the sword, I may not finde my selfe periured to my selfe. But *Zoilus* (but laughing with a hartie lowdnes) went by force to embrace her; making no other answere, but since she had a minde to trie his Knighthood, she should quickly know what a man of armes he was: and so, without reuerence to the Ladies, began to struggle with her.

But in *Zelmane* then Disdaine became wisdome, & Anger gaue occasion. For abiding no longer aboad in the matter, she that had not put off, though she had disguised, *Pyrocles*, being farre fuller of strong nimblenes, tript vp his feete, so that he fel down at hers. And withall (meaning to pursue what she had begun) puld out his sword, which he ware about him: but before she could strike him withall, he gat vp, and ranne to a faire chamber, where he had left his two brethre[n], preparing themselues to come downe to their mistresses. But she followed at his heeles, & eue[n] as he came to throw himself into their arms for succor, she hit him with his own sword, such a blow vpo[n] the wast, that she almost cut him a suder: once, she sundred his soule fro[m] his body, se[n]ding it to *Proserpina*, an angry Goddess against rauishers.

But *Anaxius*, seing before his eyes the miserable end of his brother, fuller of
 despite the wrath, & yet fuller of wrath then sorow, looking with a wofull eye
 vpon his brother *Lycurgus*, Brother, said he, chastice this vile creature, while I go
 down, & take order lest further mischief arise: & so went down to the Ladies, whom
 he visited, doubting there had bene some further practise the[n] yet he conceiued. But
 finding the[m] only strong in pacience, he went & lockt a great Iron gate, by which
 onely any body might mounte to that part of the Castle, rather to conceale the shame
 of his brother, slaine by a woman, then for doubt of any other anoyance, and the went
 vp to receaue some comfort of the execution, he was sure his brother had done

of *Zelmane*.

But *Zelmane* no sooner saw those brothers, of whom Reaso[n] assured her she was to expect reuege, but that she lept to a

target, as one that well knew the first marke of valure to be defence. And the
accepting the oportunitie of *Anaxius* going away, she waited not the pleasure
of *Lycurgus*, but without any words (which she euer thought vaine, whe[n]
resolutio[n] tooke the place of perswasion) gaue her owne hart the contentment to be
the assailer. *Lycurgus*, who was in the dispositio[n] of his nature hazardouse, & by the
luckie passing through many dangers, growne confident in himselfe, went toward her,
rather as to spoile, then to fight, so farre from feare, that his assurednesse disdained to
hope. But whe[n] her sword made demonstrations aboue al flattery of argume[n]ts, &
that he found she prest so vpon him, as shewed that her courage sprang not from blind
despair, but was garded both with cunning & strength: self-loue the first in him
diuided it selfe fro[m] vain-glory, & made him find that the world of worthines had
not his whole globe co[m]prised in his brest, but that it was necessary to haue strong
resista[n]ce against so strong assailing. And so between the[m], for a few
blowes, *Mars* himself might haue bin delighted to looke on. But *Zelmane*, who knew
that in her case, slownesse of victory was little better the[n] ruine, with the bellowes
of hate, blew the fire of courage, and he striking a maine blow at her head, she warded
it with the shield, but so warded, that the shield was cut in two pieces, while it
protected her, & withall she ran in to him, and thrusting at his brest, which he put by
with his target, as he was lifting vp his sword to strike again, she let fall the piece of
her shield, and with her left hand catching his sword of the inside of the po[m]mel,
with nimble & strong sleight, she had gotte his sword out of his hand before his sence
could co[n]uey to his imaginatio[n], what was to be doubted. And hauing now two
swords against one shield,

meaning not foolishly to be vngratefull to good fortune, while he was no more
amazed with his being vnweapned, then with the suddainnes therof, she gaue him
such a wou[n]d vpo[n] his head, in despite of the shields ouer-weak resista[n]ce, that
withal he fel to the grou[n]d, astonished with the paine, & agast with feare. But
seing *Zelmane* ready to co[n]clude her victory in his death, bowing vp his head to her,
with a countenance that had forgotten al pride, Enough excellent Lady, said he, the
honor is yours: Wherof you shall want the best witnes, if you kil me. As you haue take
fro[m] men the glory of ma[n]hood, returne so now againe to your owne sex, for
mercy. I wil redeeme my life of you with no smal seruices, for I will vndertake to
make my brother obey all your commadements. Grant life I beseech you, for your
own honor, and for the persons sake that you loue best.

Zelmane repress a while her great hart, either disdaining to be cruell, or pitiful,
& therefore not cruell: & now the image of humane condition, bega[n] to be an
Orator vnto her of compassio[n], whe[n] she saw, as he lifted vp his armes with a

supplia[n]ts grace, about one of the[m], vnhappily, tied a garter with a Iewel, which (giue[n] to *Pyrocles* by his aunt of *Thessalia*, & greatly esteemed by him) he had prese[n]ted to *Philoclea*, & with inward rage promising extream hatred, had seene *Lycurgus* with a proud force, & not with out some hurt vnto her, pull away fro[m] *Philoclea* because at entreatie she would not giue it him. But the sight of that was like a cyphar, signifying all the iniuries which *Philoclea* had of him suffred, & that reme[m]brance feeding vpo[n] wrath, trod down al co[n]ceits of mercy. And therfore saying no more, but, No villaine, dye: It is *Philoclea* that se[n]ds thee this toke[n] for thy loue. With that she made her sword drink the blood of his hart, though he wresting his body, & with a cou[n]tenace prepared to excuse, wold fain haue delaied the receiuing of deaths ambassadors.

But neither that staid *Zelmanes* hand, nor yet *Anaxius* crie vnto her, who hauing made fast the Iron gate, euen then came to the top of the staires, when, contrarie to all his imaginations, he saw his brother lie at *Zelmanes* mercie. Therefore crying, promising, and threatning to her to hold her hand: the last grone of his brother was the onely answere he could get to his vnrespected eloquence. But then Pittie would faine haue drawne teares, which Furie in their spring dried; and Anger would faine haue spoken, but that Disdaine sealed vp his lippes; but in his hart he blasphemed heauen, that it could haue such a power ouer him; no lesse ashamed of the victorie he should haue of her, then of his brothers ouerthrow: and no more spited, that it was yet vnreuenged, then that the reuenge should be no greater, then a womans destruction. Therefore with no speach, but such a groning crie, as often is the language of sorowfull anger, he came running at *Zelmane*, use of fighting then seruing in steed of patient co[n]sideration what to doo. Guided wherewith, though he did not with knowledge, yet did he according to knowledge, pressing vpon *Zelmane* in such a wel defended manner, that in all the combats that euer she had fought, she had neuer more need of quicke senses, & ready vertue. For being one of the greatest men of stature then liuing, as he did fully answere that stature in greatnesse of might, so did he exceed both in greatnes of courage, which with a cou[n]tena[n]ce formed by the nature both of his mind & body, to an almost horrible fierceness, was able to haue carried feare to any mind, that was not priuie to it selfe of a true & co[n]stant worthines. But *Pyrocles*, whose soule might well be separated fro[m] his body, but neuer alienated fro[m] the remembring what was comely, if at the first he did a little apprehend the dangerousnes of his aduersarie, whom once before he had something tried, & now perfectly saw, as the very picture of forcible furie: yet was that apprehension quickly stayed in him, rather strengthning, then weakning his vertue by that wrestling; like wine, growing the stro[n]ger by being moued. So that they both, prepared in harts, and able in hands, did honor solitarines there with such a combat, as might haue demaunded, as a right of fortune, whole armies of beholders. But no beholders needed there, where manhood blew the trumpet, & satisfaction did whette, as much as glorie. There was strength against nimbleness; rage, against resolution,

fury, against vertue; confidence, against courage; pride, against noblenesse: loue, in both, breeding mutual hatred, & desire of reue[n]ging the iniurie of his brothers slaughter, to *Anaxius*, being like *Philocleas* captiuitie to *Pyrocles*. Who had seen the one, would haue thought nothing could haue resisted; who had marked the other, would haue maruelled that the other had so long resisted. But like two contrarie tides, either of which are able to carry worldes of shippes, and men vpon them, with such swiftnes, as nothing seemes able to withstand them: yet meeting one another, with mingling their watrie forces, and struggling together, it is long to say whether streame gets the victorie: So betweene these, if *Pallas* had bene there, she could scarcely haue tolde, whether she had nurced better in the feates of armes. The Irish greyhound, against the English mastiffe; the sword-fish, against the whale; the Rhinoceros, against the elepha[n]t, might be models, & but models of this co[m]bat. *Anaxius* was better armed defensiuely: for (beside a strong caske brauely couered, wherwith he couerd his head) he had a huge shield, such perchance, as *Achilles* shewed to the pale walles of *Troy*, where-withall that body was couered. But *Pyrocles*, vtterly vnarmed for defence, to offend had the advantage: for, in either hand he had a sword, & with both hands nimble performed that office. And according as they were diuersly furnished, so did they differ in the manner of fighting. For *Anaxius* most by warding, and *Pyrocles* ofttest by auoyding, resisted the aduersaries assault. Both hastie to end, yet both often staying for advantage. Time, distance, & motio[n] custom made them so perfect in, that as if they had bene felow Counsellors, and not enemies, each knewe the others minde, and knew how to preuent it. So as their stre[n]gth fayled them sooner then their skill, and yet their breath fayled them sooner then their strength. And breathles indeed they grew, before either could complaine of any losse of bloud.

CHAP. 29.

1 *The Combattants first breathing, 2 reencounter, and*



SO consenting by the mediation of necessitie, to a breathing time of truce, being withdrawen a little one from the other; *Anaxius* stood leaning vpon his sworde, with, his grym eye, so settled vpon *Zelmane*, as is wont to be the look of an earnest thought. Which *Zelmane* marking, & according to the *Pyroclean* nature, fuller of gay brauerie in the midst, then in the beginning of da[n]ger; What is it (said she) *Anaxius*, that thou so deeply musest on? Dooth thy brothers exa[m]ple make thee thinke of thy fault past, or of thy coming punishme[n]t? I think (said he) what spiteful God it should be, who, enuying my glory, hath brought me to such a waywarde case, that neither thy death can be a reuenge, nor thy ouerthrow a victorie. Thou doost well indeede (saide *Zelmane*) to impute thy case to the heauenly prouidence, which will

haue thy pride find it selfe (euen in that whereof thou art most proud) punished by the weake sex, which thou most contemnest.

But then, hauing sufficiently rested themselues, they renewed againe their combatte, farre more terribly then before: like

nimble vaulters, who at the first and second leape, doo but stirre, and (as it were) 2
awake the fierie and aerie partes, which after in the other leapes, they doo with more excellence exercise. For in this pausing, ech had brought to his thoughts the maner of the others fighting, and the advantages, which by that, and by the qualitie of their weapons, they might work themselues; and so againe repeated the lesson they had said before, more perfectly, by the using of it. *Anaxius* oftner vsed blowes, his huge force (as it were) more delighting therein, and the large protection of his shield, animating him vnto it. *Pyrocles*, of a more fine, and deliuer strength, watching his time when to giue fitte thrustes; as, with the quick obeying of his bodie, to his eyes quicke commaundement, he shunned any harme *Anaxius* could do to him: so would he soon haue made an end of *Anaxius*, if he had not fou[n]d him a ma[n] of wonderful, & almost matchlesse excelle[n]cy in matters of armes. *Pyrocles* vsed diuers faynings, to bring *Anaxius* on, into some inconuenience. But *Anaxius* keeping a sound maner of fighting, neuer offered, but seeing faire cause, & then followed it with wel-gouerned violence. Thus spent they a great time, striuing to doo, and with striuing to doo, wearying themselues, more then with the very doing. *Anaxius* finding *Zelmane* so neere vnto him, that with little motion he might reach her, knitting all his strength together, at that time mainly foyned at her face. But *Zelmane* strongly putting it by with her right hande sword, comming in with her left foote, and hande, woulde haue giuen him a sharpe visitation to his right side, but that he was faine to leape away. Whereat ashamed, (as hauing neuer done so much before in his life)